This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

Digitized by Google

US 15479.36(2)

Harvard College Library

FROM THE

BRIGHT LEGACY

One half the income from this Legacy, which was received in 1880 under the will of

JONATHAN BROWN BRIGHT

of Waltham, Massachusetts, is to be expended for books for the College Library. The other half of the income is devoted to scholarships in Harvard University for the benefit of descendants of

HENRY BRIGHT, JR.,

who died at Watertown, Massachusetts, in 1686. In the absence of such descendants, other persons are eligible to the scholarships. The will requires that this announcement shall be made in every book added to the Library under its provisions.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

DR. EPHRAIM CLARK.

Digitized by Google

MORRIS'S
MEMORIAL HISTORY
OF
STATEN ISLAND
NEW YORK

VOLUME II

IRA K. MORRIS

PUBLISHED BY THE AUTHOR
WEST NEW BRIGHTON
STATEN ISLAND

Digitized by Google

HARVARD COLLEGE
SEP 25 1917
LIBRARY

Copyright 1900

THE WINTHROP PRESS
32-34 LAFAYETTE PLACE
NEW YORK

Digitized by Google

TABLE OF CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

PAGE

UNDER THE REPUBLIC. 1

The Dawn of Peace—Prominent Citizens—Great Changes—Dutch, French and English Descendants—Sectional Strife—Life Among Our People—Hamlets—Agricultural Pursuits—Gay Scenes Among Old Staten Island Families—County Abstract—New Era—Panics—Imprisonment for Debt—Flax Raising—Southerners Attracted Here—Celebrating the Fourth of July—Old-fashioned Programs—Patriotism at a Discount—Editorial Lecture—Rev. Peter I. Van Pelt's Address—The Last Celebration.

CHAPTER II

STATEN ISLAND MILITIA. 13

The First Militia—Dutch Company—English Militia—Origin of Militia—The Duke's Laws—Equipments—Training Days—The Code—Queen Anne's Order—Billopp's Commission—A "Petison"—Batteries at the Narrows—Henry Holland—Augustin Graham—Thomas Arrowsmith—Officers for 1735—Militia in 1775—Drafts—Loyal Staten Islanders—Prisoners—Billopp's Staten Island Militia—The Gunboat—Staten Island Regiment—Tompkins Guards—Richmond County Guards—Southfield Guards—Castleton Guards—Northfield Guards—Cavalry Troop—Review at New Dorp—The Old-time May Muster.

CHAPTER III

THE WAR OF EIGHTEEN HUNDRED AND TWELVE. 28

Cause of the War—Right of Expatriation—Naturalization Laws—General Scott's Bravery—General Hull—General Brook—The Indians—Line of Battle—Governor Tompkins' Services—Forts Tompkins and Richmond—Prominent Officers—Colonel Richard Conner—Arrest of Suspects—Battle of New Orleans—Captain Benjamin Wood—Governor Tompkins' Financial Troubles—Inspection of Forts in 1835—Beautiful Residence.

CHAPTER IV

IN THE OLD SLAVERY DAYS. 36

African Slavery on Staten Island Under the Dutch and French—Slavery in The Revolution—Abolition in the States—Public Sentiment—Quaker Opposition—Royal African Company—Slave Barracks—The "Rising"—Local Slave Records—Westfield the Wealthiest Town—"Cate," its First Free-born Negress—Slave Owners—Andrew Decker's Application—"Man," a Free-born Negro—Indenturing Colored Children—Slave Sale—Emancipation Celebration—Benjamin Perine, the Last Staten Island Slave.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER V

PAGE

THE WHIPPING-POST AT RICHMOND. 49

Originally Located at Stony Brook—Established at Cucklestown in 1710—First Victims—Worthless "Sam"—Power of the Devil—Holland's Hook Witch—Hessian Whipped—Marauding Band—Petty Criminals—Public Whippers—First Legal Execution.

CHAPTER VI

OLD STATEN ISLAND FAMILIES. 53

Negligence of By-gone Generations—Broken Links in Family Records—Important Biographies—Old Citizens and Old Records—Alston—Androvette—Arrowsmith—Barnes—Beatty—Bedell—Billopp—Blake—Bodine—Bogart—Braisted—Britton—Broileau—Burbanck—Burger—Bush—Butler—Cannon—Christopher—Cole—Colon—Conner—Corsen—Cortelyou—Crips—Crocheron—Cropsey—Cruzer (Kruzer, Krosen, etc.)—Cubberly—Decker—DeGroot—DeHart—Denyse.

CHAPTER VII

OLD STATEN ISLAND FAMILIES (*Continued*). 79

Depuy—Disosway—Dooland—DuBois—Dunn—Dustan—Eddy—Egbert—Ellis—Enyard—Fountain—Frost—Garrison—Gifford—Guyon—Hatfield—Holmes—Houghwout—Hillyer—Housman—Jacobson—Jacques—Johnson—Jones—Journeay—La Forge—Lake—Larzelere—Latourette—Lawrence—Lisk—Lockman.

CHAPTER VIII

OLD STATEN ISLAND FAMILIES (*Concluded*). 103

Manee—Martling—Martino—Merrell—Mersereau—Metcalfe—Micheau—Morgan—Perine—Poillon—Post—Prall—Pryer—Ryerss—Seguine—Sharrett—Simonson—Stillwell—Sprague—Taylor—Totten—Townsend—Tysen—Van Duzer—Van Clief—Van Name—Van Pelt—Wandel—Winant—Woglum—Wood.

CHAPTER IX

THE VANDERBILT FAMILY. 129

Jan Avertsen Van der Bilt—"Commodore" Cornelius Vanderbilt—Real Estate Owners—Making Money Early in Life—Married His Cousin—Builds Vessels—Staten Island Ferry—Many Business Enterprises—William H. Vanderbilt—Life on Staten Island—A Business Career—Jacob H. Vanderbilt—The Present Generation.

CHAPTER X

AARON BURR—SOLDIER, LAWYER, POLITICIAN. 141

Burr's Interest in Staten Island—His Boyhood—Enters the Continental Army—Goes to Quebec—His Mission—Montgomery's Aide-de-camp—Carries His General's Body—On Washington's Staff—Commands a Regiment—Plans Against British on Staten Island—Commands a Brigade at Monmouth—Westchester Lines—Leaves the Army and Studies Law—Marries Mrs. Prevost—Little Theodosia—Removes to New York—Alexander Hamilton—Richmond Hill—In the Legislature—Enters Politics—Appointed Attorney General—United States Senator—Organizes the Democratic Party—First Duel—Becomes Vice-President—Defeated for Governor—Duel with Hamilton—Resigns the Vice-Presidency—Tried for Treason and Acquitted—Goes to Europe—Theodosia Lost at Sea—Burr Marries Mme. Jumel—Brought Back to Staten Island—His Death—The Funeral—Witherspoon Cemetery.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER XI

PAGE

OLD STATEN ISLAND STRUCTURES. 160

Austin House, on the Narrows—Disosway-Cole Mill, at Tottenville—Old Place Mill—Old Dutch Reformed Churches—Bedell Homestead, at Green Ridge—Perine Homestead, at Garretsons—Guyon Homestead, at New Dorp—Vanderbilt Homestead—Van Duzer Homestead, at Tompkinsville—Britton Homestead, at Oakwood—Lake House, at Port Richmond—Housman House, at Port Richmond—Tyler Mansion, at West New Brighton—Ward Mansion, at New Brighton—Britton's Mill, at Clove Lake—Benham Mansion, at Green Ridge—Old Woolen Mill, at Richmond—Seaman Homestead, at Green Ridge—Scott House, at West New Brighton—Dutch Reformed Parsonage, at Port Richmond—Kruzer or Pelton House, at West New Brighton—Winant Homestead, at Woodrow—Fountain Homestead, at New Dorp—Latourette Homestead, on Richmond Hill—Old Red Jail, at Richmond—Van Pelt House, at Woodrow—Lake-Tysen Homestead, at New Dorp.

CHAPTER XII

OLD HOTELS OF STATEN ISLAND. 179

Governor Kieft's House—The "Rose and Crown" Farm-house, at New Dorp—Black Horse Tavern, at New Dorp—Cucklestowne Inn—Old House by the Mill, at Green Ridge—Purdy's Hotel, at Prince's Bay—Ferry Tavern, at Tottenville—Bull's Head Tavern—Union Hotel, at Tottenville—Red Horse Tavern, at Stony Brook—Old Oakley House, at Rossville—Swan Hotel, at West New Brighton—Port Richmond (St. James) Hotel—Fountain House, at West New Brighton—Bennett's Tavern, at Graniteville—Nautilus Hall, at Tompkinsville—Cliff House, at Clifton—Bodine's Inn, at Castleton Corners—Rossville Hotel—Richmond County Hall, at Richmond—Patten House, at New Dorp—Old Track House—Club House, at Oakwood—Planters' Hotel, at Tompkinsville—Belmont Hall, at New Brighton—Washington Hotel, at Richmond—Dock Hotel, at New Brighton—Windsor Hotel, at New Brighton—St. Mark's Hotel, New Brighton—Castleton House, at West New Brighton, etc.

CHAPTER XIII

DISTINGUISHED RESIDENTS AND GUESTS. 197

James W. Auten—Commander Timothy Greene Benham—Rear-Admiral Andrew Ellicott Kennedy Benham—Rev. William H. Boole—Hon. James A. Bradley—Hon. Erastus Brooks—Captain Richard Christopher—Dr. Ephraim Clark—General Jacob Dolsen Cox—Colonel Ichabod B. Crane—Hon. George William Curtis—Alexander Del Mar—Captain Clement Disosway—General Richard A. Donnelly—Dr. William Draper—General Alfred Napoleon Duffié—Thomas Robert Eagleson—Judge William Emerson.

CHAPTER XIV

DISTINGUISHED RESIDENTS AND GUESTS (*Concluded*). 216

General John Charles Frémont—General Joseph Garibaldi—General Joseph Kargé—Louis Kossuth—General Lafayette—Jenny Lind—John Lusk—Max Maretzek—"Middy" and Jane Morgan—Antonio Meucci—William Page—General Ely S. Parker—Delia Tudor Stewart-Parnell—Peter Pero—Lieutenant Sidney S. Simons—Rear-Admiral John Drake Sloat—General Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna—Gustav Struve—Henry D. Thoreau—Hon. Daniel D. Tompkins—Rev. Stephen Moffatt Vail—Erastus Wiman—General John M. Palmer—Governor Caleb Lyon—General Crittenden—General James Jourdan—William Winter—Rear-Admiral W. S. Schley, and others.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XV

PAGE

THREE CENTURIES OF POLITICS. 240

Kieft as a Politician—The Dutch and French Combine against the English—Independent Period—The Federal Party—The New Era—Richard Conner, Leader—Three-day Elections—Free Fights—Candidates in 1804—First Democratic Victory on Staten Island—Change of Sentiment—Factories—Influx of Citizens—Gun Factory—Corktown—Jackson Campaigns—John Quincy Adams—Celebrating a Victory—A Third-party Convention—The Whigs—Campaigns of 1835 and 1837—Newspaper Fight—Celebration at Richmond—Tribulations of 1848—Fight between the "Hardshells" and "Softshells"—The Know-Nothing Party—The Frémont Campaign—Slavery Question—John Brown—Political Changes—The Cleveland Campaign—Hon. Nicholas Muller.

CHAPTER XVI

OLD POST ROUTES AND FERRIES. 260

The First Ferry—Captain Ducket—Popular Route—Stage-boats—Joseph Richards—Blazing Star—John Burrowhill—The Watering Place—William Leake—John Stillwell—Brigadier-General Leslie—Frederick Simonson—Bergen Point—James Johnson—Adonia Schuyler—The "Boliver"—The Huguenot Line—The "Mouse of the Mountain."

CHAPTER XVII

FREEMASONRY ON STATEN ISLAND. 266

A Provisional Lodge—British Officers at Nautilus Hall—King George's Reward—Major Guyon's Hospitality—Governor Tompkins' Efforts—Organization of Richmond Lodge—Anti-Masonic Crusade—The Old Lodge Room—St. John's Day—Masonic Hall—Removal to Port Richmond—The New Building—Corner-stone—Dedication—Huguenot Lodge—Tompkins Lodge—Beacon Light Lodge—Other Masonic Organizations.

CHAPTER XVIII

THE DUTCH REFORMED CHURCHES. 275

The First Staten Island Churches—Rev. Samuel Drisius—The Waldenses—The Huguenots—Dominie Selyns—Governor Hunter—Rev. Dr. McKenzie—Port Richmond Dutch Reformed Church—Rev. Mr. Jackson—Jacob Rezeau—Rev. Peter Stryker—Rev. Peter I. Van Pelt—Rev. James Brownlee—Judge Mersereau—Judge Tysen—Paul Latourette—The Anniversary—Old Records—Rev. A. H. Demarest.

CHAPTER XIX

THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCHES. 283

The Presbyterians at Stony Brook—Worshiped with the Waldenses—The Jacques Cortelyou Deed—Presbyterian Society—Presented with Ground for a Meeting House—Nathaniel Britton—James Carman—Edward Jones—Edgewater Presbyterian Church—Rev. Wilbur Fiske Wood—Calvary Presbyterian Church—Rev. Thomas A. Leggett.

CHAPTER XX

THE MORAVIAN CHURCHES. 290

The Old Church at New Dorp—Captain Nicholas Garrison—David Bruce—Early Laborers—Jacobus Vanderbilt—Old Church Vacated—Many Changes—Captain Christian Jacobson—New Edifice in 1845—First Church Organ—An Old Sunday-school—Mr. Vanderbilt's Gift—Moravian Chapels.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER XXI

PAGE

THE METHODIST CHURCHES. 294

Introduction of Methodism on Staten Island—Francis Asbury—Peter Van Pelt—Thomas Morrell—Robert Cloud—Methodist Society—An Appeal—Subscriptions—New Church in 1842—Father Boehm—The Tabernacle—St. Paul's, at Tottenville—Asbury, at New Springville—Bloomfield Church—Graniteville Church—Trinity, at West New Brighton—Kingsley, at Stapleton—Bethel, at Tottenville—Summerfield, at Mariners' Harbor—Grace, at Port Richmond—St. Mark's, at Pleasant Plains—St. John's, at Rossville.

CHAPTER XXII

THE EPISCOPAL CHURCHES. 302

Richmond a Religious Centre—Rev. William Vesey—A Gospel Society—Rev. John Talbot—Dutch Reformed Hospitality—Land Donated in 1813—St. Andrew's—Rich Bequest—Chaplain Charlton—Bishop Richard Channing Moore—Rev. David Moore—Rev. Thomas S. Yocom—Church of the Ascension—St. John's, at Clifton—St. Paul's, at Tompkinsville—St. Luke's, at Rossville—Christ's, at New Brighton—Holy Comforter, at Ettingville, etc.

CHAPTER XXIII

THE BAPTIST CHURCHES. 310

The Old Clove Church—Services in Barns—Rev. Elkanah Holmes—Rev. Daniel Stears—Rossville Church—Graniteville Church—President Arthur's Father—Park Baptist Church—Mariners' Harbor Church—Kreischerville Church—South Baptist Church, at Tottenville—New Brighton Baptist Church.

CHAPTER XXIV

LUTHERAN AND CONGREGATIONAL CHURCHES, ETC. 317

St. John's, at Port Richmond—St. Peter's, at Kreischerville—Church of the Evangelists, at New Brighton—Church of the Redeemer—German Evangelical Church of Stapleton—Jewish Synagogue, at Tompkinsville.

CHAPTER XXV

THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCHES. 321

Early Catholics of Staten Island—Probably a Church at Cucklestown—Worshiping in the Dongan House—Services on Gifford's Lane—St. Peter's, at New Brighton—Rev. Patrick Murphy—Rev. John Barry—Rev. John Lewis—St. Mary's, at Clifton—Rev. James C. Campbell—Rev. J. C. Rigney—St. Joseph's, at Rossville—St. Patrick's, at Richmond—St. Rose of Lima, at West New Brighton—Rev. William C. Poole—Other Churches.

CHAPTER XXVI

THE BENCH AND BAR. 326

County Records Burned in 1698—Richard Stillwell, "Justes"—Chief Judge Augustin Graham—Judge Ellis Duxbury—Officials in 1739—Benjamin Seaman—Hon. Ogden Edwards—Hon. Joseph Barnard—Hon. Henry B. Metcalfe—Hon. Tompkins Westervelt—Hon. John J. Kenney—Hon. Nathaniel Marsh—Hon. Stephen D. Stephens—Hon. Thomas W. Fitzgerald—Hon. John Croak—Hon. Augustus Acker—John and William H. Anthon—Hon. Alvin C. Bradley—Hon. Lot C. Clark—Hon. George Cromwell—Charles L. Hubbell—Hon. Edward Sidney Rawson—Hon. Calvin D. Van Name, and others.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXVII

PAGE

THE MEDICAL FRATERNITY. 342

Stony Brook Physicians—Doctors Bigell, Mersous, and Seamans—Dr. Baker, "Tyrant"—Marines Swain—First Medical Society—Dr. Benjamin Parker—Reorganization of Medical Society in 1855—List of Physicians in Richmond County—Dr. Melvin L. Adams—Dr. John L. Feeny—Dr. George C. Hubbard—Dr. Samuel Adams Robinson—Dr. Samuel R. Smith—Dr. John Swinburne—Dr. Charles Wilmot Townsend—Dr. J. Walter Wood—Other Physicians.

CHAPTER XXVIII

STATEN ISLAND JOURNALISM. 351

The Early Press—The Richmond Republican—Charles N. Baldwin—Description of the First Island Paper—William Hagadorn—The Chronicle—Free Press—Staten Islander—Plaindealer—Richmond County Mirror—Francis L. Hagadorn—The Little Corporal—The Sepoy—Richmond County Gazette—North Shore Advocate—Staten Island Leader—North Shore Union—The Sentinel—Staten Island Star—Richmond County Democrat—Richmond County Herald—Richmond County Standard—Westfield Times—Richmond County Advance—The News-Letter, and several others.

CHAPTER XXIX

THE SCHOOLS OF STATEN ISLAND. 361

The First School—Teachers' Obligations—Perth Amboy Academy—New Springville School—The English Society—Richmond School—Regents of the University—Governor Tompkins' Aid—Gideon Hawley—Woodrow School—Castleton Corners School—Girls' Admission to Public Schools—Rights of Women—District Trustees—Better School Houses—Borough Schools—"Mr. French's School"—Spanish Academy—Dr. Fardon's School—Father Boehm's School—Dr. Van Pelt's Academy—Richmond College—Richmond Seminary—Staten Island Academy—Brighton Heights Seminary—St. Austin's—Trinity School—Westerleigh Collegiate Institute—Roman Catholic Parochial Schools.

CHAPTER XXX

THE QUARANTINE HOSPITALS. 375

The First Movement, in 1758—Yellow Fever—Plans for Removal—Imposing Buildings—Board of Health—Dr. Mundy—Dr. Thompson—Discord—Disease Spreading—Meeting of Citizens—The Conflagration—Emigrant Ships—The Crowd—Marines—John C. Thompson—Ray Tompkins—Judge Metcalfe's Opinion—Seguine's Point—People of Westfield Aroused—Hospitals Burned—Eugene B. Halle—Abram Latourette—Sheriff Isaac M. Marsh—Legislative Action.

CHAPTER XXXI

STATEN ISLAND DURING THE REBELLION. 387

April, 1861—Condition of the Country—Our First Interest—Mass Meetings—Call for Troops—Citizens Enlisting—Hon. George William Curtis Speaks—Encampments on the Island—Erastus Brooks' Address—War Committee—Recruiting Stations—Richmond County Regiment—Colonel Minthorne Tompkins—Town Quotas—Supervisors Busy—Repeated Calls for Troops—Violent Mobs—Issuing Bonds—Preparing for the Draft—Indignation Meetings—The Debt—Military Organizations—The Camps—Review by General McClellan—List of Recruits—The Drafted—Their Substitutes.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER XXXII

PAGE

THE BI-CENTENNIAL CELEBRATION. 408

County Organization—The Committee—Celebration a Great Success—Grand Procession—Large Meeting at Stapleton—Addresses by Dr. Ephraim Clark, Hon. Erastus Brooks, Hon. Algernon S. Sullivan, Hon. Henry J. Scudder, Hon. George William Curtis, and Hon. L. Bradford Prince.

CHAPTER XXXIII

THE SAILORS' SNUG HARBOR. 412

Honorable History—Captain Thomas Randall—Father of the Founder—Captain Robert Richard Randall—The Will—A Bit of Randall History—Alexander Hamilton—Daniel D. Tompkins—Why the Harbor Was Located on Staten Island—The Randall Monument—Large Tract of Land—The Buildings—Statue of Robert Richard Randall—Rules of the Institution.

CHAPTER XXXIV

CHARITABLE ORGANIZATIONS. 423

Seamen's Retreat—Dr. Moffatt's Report—S. R. Smith Infirmary — Ladies' Auxiliary—Mariners' Family Asylum—Home for Destitute Children of Seamen—Miss Anna M. Drew—Staten Island Diet Kitchen—Women's Christian Temperance Union.

CHAPTER XXXV

THE ISLAND'S POOR AND THEIR HOME. 431

Petition in 1692—Public Lot—Children Paid for Boarding Parents—First Alms House—Records Destroyed—Excise Moneys—Tax Quota in 1784—Poor Expenses in 1800—New County House in 1803—Political Issue—Public Meeting—Martino Farm Purchased in 1830—Old Place Sold—Old Records—Children at the Alms House—Political Hot-bed — Newspaper Warfare — Assaults—"Combine" Defeated—The Potter's Field.

CHAPTER XXXVI

STATEN ISLAND VILLAGES. 439

Oude Dorp (Old Town)—Stony Brook—New Dorp—Cucklestown (Richmond)—Long Neck (New Springsville)—Fresh Kills (Green Ridge)—Rossville—Linoleumville—Tompkinsville—Stapleton—Clifton — Concord — Castleton Corners—Garretsons—Grant City—Giffords—Eltingville—Annadale — Huguenot — Prince's Bay—Pleasant Plains—Richmond Valley—Kreischerville—Woodrow—Bogardus' Corner—Graniteville—Bull's Head—Willow Brook—Old Place—Chelsea—Travisville—Egbertville—Prohibition Park—Edgewater — New Brighton — Port Richmond, etc.

CHAPTER XXXVII

THE PUBLIC HIGHWAYS—PAST AND PRESENT. 447

Indian Trails—Old Town Road—Richmond Terrace—Old Road Records—Richmond Road—To Dongan's Mill—Amboy Road—Old-time Road-making—Editorial Comment—The New Era—Citizens' Movement—Hon. Henry P. Morrison—Many Miles of Macadamized Road—Maintenance.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER XXXVIII

PAGE

STATEN ISLAND BANKS. 456

A Memorable Business Period—The Banking Era—The First Staten Island Bank—Opposition—Other Schemes—Staten Island Savings Bank—Bank of Staten Island—First National Bank—Richmond County Savings Bank.

CHAPTER XXXIX

STATEN ISLAND RAILROADS. 461

The Staten Island Railway—Many Difficulties—North and South Shore Railroad—Rapid Transit Railroad—Belt Line Horse Railroad—Midland Electric Railroad—Staten Island Electric Railroad—Achter Kill Bridge, etc.

CHAPTER XL

STATEN ISLAND INDUSTRIES. 468

Old-fashioned Farmers—Old Staten Island Dyeing and Printing Establishment—Silk Factory—Wall Paper Factory—Ship Building—Coast Wrecking Company—Kreischerville Brick Factory—Jewett White-lead Factory—Linseed Oil Factory—Linoleum Factory—Windsor Plaster Mill—Dental Works—Breweries—Water Supply—Telephone—Oyster Industry—Brick Making.

CHAPTER XLI

THE FIRE DEPARTMENTS. 476

Factoryville Firemen in 1828—Richmond Bucket Company—Tompkinsville Fire Department—Edgewater Fire Department—North Shore Fire Department—Tottenville Fire Department—New Dorp Fire Department.

CHAPTER XLII

THE POLICE DEPARTMENT. 479

The First Staten Island Police Department, 1760—Tompkinsville Police Force, 1815—The Metropolitan Police System—Richmond County Police Force—The Greater City Force.

CHAPTER XLIII

SOCIAL AND BENEFICIAL ORGANIZATIONS. 482

The First Club—The Neptune Club—Staten Island Athletic Club—Kill van Kull Rowing Association—Clifton Boat Club—Cricket Club—German Association Erheiterung—Grand Army Posts—American Legion of Honor—Foresters—United Workmen—Catholic Benevolent Legion—Red Men—Odd Fellows—Knights and Ladies of Honor—Knights of Pythias—American Firemen—American Mechanics—Royal Arcanum—Sons of Veterans—Templars of Liberty—Building and Loan Associations—Silver Lake Commission—Chamber of Commerce—Natural Science Association—Staten Island Historical Society.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER XLIV

PAGE

THE BOROUGH OF RICHMOND. 488

Restlessness of the People—Separate City—Greater New York Scheme—Tidal Wave—Filling Offices—The First Step—The Commission—Its Work—Territory—Legislative Authority—Provisions of the Charter—The Borough Officials—Various Departments—The Future.

CHAPTER XLV

LOCAL BIOGRAPHY. 495

Christopher Archer—Owen Howard Barnard—Major Clarence T. Barrett—Hon. Gustav Barth—George Bechtel—Read Benedict—Benjamin J. Bodine—William Bowen—Guy Stephens Brantingham—Benjamin Brown—Abram Cole—John Linderman Dailey—Hon. Edward P. Doyle—George T. Egbert—John H. Elsworth—Frank Foggin—Thomas H. Harper—Cornelius A. Hart—Thomas Humphrey—James Kerr—William H. McCabe.

CHAPTER XLVI

LOCAL BIOGRAPHY (*Concluded*). 515

David Neilson Melvin—Hon. Henry Prentice Morrison—James E. Mulligan—John B. Newhall—Theodor S. Oxholm—Cornelius F. Timpson—Captain G. D. S. Trask—William H. B. Totten—Albin Warth—Henry Warth—John Westbrook—James Wheeler—James Wilkinson—Hon. Hubbard R. Yetman.

Digitized by Google

FULL-PAGE ILLUSTRATIONS.

Dr. Ephraim Clark ..... Frontispiece

FACE PAGE

David J. Tysen, Esq 119
Captain Richard Christopher 202
Hon. George Cromwell 338
Lewis Henry Meyer 513

ILLUSTRATIONS IN TEXT.

PAGE

De Vries-Benedict House 3
Silver Lake in 1820—Seat of Robert H. Rose, Esq 6
Mersereau Homestead, Butcherville 15
Vreeland Homestead, South Beach 24
Pero Homestead, Butcherville 30
Benjamin Perine, the last Staten Island Slave 38
Fountain Homestead, Clifton 43
Cole Homestead, Giffords 50
Egbert House, near Manor Road 56
Lockwood Homestead, Giffords 77
Daniel Corsen Homestead, Watchogue Road 81
Birthplace of Hon. James A. Bradley, Rossville 97
Old Woolen Mill, near Richmond 107
Purdy's Hotel, Prince's Bay 125
Cornelius Vanderbilt 131
Vanderbilt Mausoleum 136
St. James Hotel, Port Richmond 143
Aaron Burr 153
Theodosia Burr 156
Old Fountain Homestead, New Dorp (Remodeled) 162
Benham Mansion, Green Ridge 173
Nautilus Hall, Tompkinsville 181
Commodore Vanderbilt's Residence, Stapleton 213
Dr. Richard Henderson Homestead, near New Dorp 218
De Groot Residence, West New Brighton 235
Disosway-Cole Mill, near Tottenville 242
Hon. Nicholas Muller 258
Cubberly House, near Elm Tree Light 262
Masonic Hall, Tompkinsville 268

Digitized by Google

PAGE

Dutch Reformed Church, Richmond 276
Dutch Reformed Church, Tompkinsville 278
Port Richmond Dutch Reformed Church 281
Post Homestead, Holland's Hook 285
Moravian Church, New Dorp 293
Woodrow Methodist Episcopal Church 296
The Van Pelt House, at Woodrow 299
Daniel Jones Homestead, Old Place 304
St. John's Protestant Episcopal Church, Clifton 307
Residence of General Van Buren, Tompkinsville 312
Clinch Homestead, Richmond Road, near the Clove 319
Old Bedell Mill, Green Ridge 322
Planters' Hotel, Tompkinsville 324
Judge Henry B. Metcalfe 327
Hon. Stephen D. Stephens 329
Hon. John J. Kenney 331
Hon. Nathaniel Marsh 333
Hon. Augustus Acker 335
Hon. Thomas W. Fitzgerald 337
Charles Livingston Hubbell 339
Hon. Calvin D. Van Name 340
John L. Feeny, M. D 343
Samuel Adams Robinson, M. D 345
Charles Wilmot Townsend, M. D 347
J. Walter Wood, M. D 349
Rev. Dr. Van Pelt's Academy, Port Richmond 353
Tyler Mansion, West New Brighton 357
Hon. Hubbard R. Yetman, Superintendent Public Schools 364
Ward Mansion, New Brighton 377
The Townsend Castle, Clifton 384
Jacques Mansion, Port Richmond 389
Cortelyou Homestead, Green Ridge 393
Vanderbilt Dock, New Dorp 397
Old Housman House, Port Richmond 409
The Sailors' Snug Harbor, New Brighton 417
S. R. Smith Infirmary, New Brighton 425
Old Seamen's Retreat, Stapleton 427
Mrs. Sarah Roberts Morris, County President, W. C. T. U 428
Richmond County Alms House 433
Patten House, New Dorp 441
The Old Van Name Cottage, at Old Place 444
Hon. Henry P. Morrison, Deputy Commissioner and Chief Engineer 450
Staten Island Bank Building, Port Richmond 457
Richmond County Hall, Richmond 459
Power House of The Staten Island Electric Railway 464

Digitized by Google

PAGE

Linoleum Works at Linoleumville 470
Decker Homestead, Graniteville 473
Swan Hotel, West New Brighton 477
De Hart Homestead, at Holland's Hook 480
Lake House, at Port Richmond 484
County Clerk's and Surrogate's Offices, Richmond 486
"The Richmond," Municipal Building, Borough of Richmond ... 490
Residence of Ernest Flagg, Esq., Dongan Hills 492
Old House by the Mill, Green Ridge 494
John C. Thompson 495
Owen Howard Barnard 496
Major Clarence T. Barrett 497
Hon. Gustav A. Barth 498
George Bechtel 499
William H. McCabe 500
Old Post Road, Richmond 500
Read Benedict 501
Benjamin J. Bodine 502
William Bowen 503
Guy Stephens Brantingham 504
Benjamin Brown 504
Abram Cole 505
John Linderman Dailey 506
Hon. Edward P. Doyle 507
George T. Egbert 508
Thomas H. Harper 508
Hon. John H. Elsworth 509
Frank Foggin 510
Cornelius A. Hart 511
Thomas Humphrey 512
James Kerr 513
Thomas R. Eagleson (Thomas W. Keene) 514
David Neilson Melvin 515
James Wheeler 516
James E. Mulligan 517
John B. Newhall 518
Theodor S. Oxholm 519
Cornelius F. Timpson 520
Captain G. D. S. Trask 521
William H. B. Totten 522
Albin Warth 523
Henry Warth 524
John Westbrook 525

Digitized by Google

PREFACE TO THE SECOND VOLUME.

WHILE it is not customary to publish a "Preface" after the appearance of the first volume of a work, in this instance there are circumstances which render such an act absolutely necessary.

In accordance with the contract with the publishers, the manuscript for the second volume was ready for delivery in May 1899; but as the publishers were unable to meet their obligations with the author, the manuscript was withheld, by advice of counsel.

This delay, however, has been a great benefit to the book. The entire volume has been re-written in the meantime. Superfluous matter has been omitted, many valuable additions made to the various chapters, and several photographs of historic houses added to the collection.

The publishers still being unable to fulfil their obligations, the author has purchased the right, title and interest of the work, and brings out the second volume himself.

The venture is one of considerable risk; yet the author, appreciating his moral obligation to the people of Staten Island, assumes the responsibility unhesitatingly, regardless of cost and labor.

Hoping that the book will meet with the desires and expectations of the subscribers, who have waited so patiently for its coming, the author is pleased to announce the completion of the work, so far as the contracts are concerned.

I. K. M.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER I.

UNDER THE REPUBLIC.

THE dawn of peace—the twenty-fifth of November, 1783—now remembered as Evacuation Day—came under such peculiar circumstances to the people of Staten Island that they were, for the time being, dazed and bewildered.

For almost seven years Staten Island had been in the possession of the British, and it had been the haven of safety for all the various elements which opposed the independence of the Colonies, and which for very conceivable reason had failed to take part in favor of the Revolution. All had suffered alike.

Under the Republic, the public interests to be considered demanded leaders far more liberal and unselfish than those who had given a directing hand in Colonial times. Men were called to the front who were capable of developing new ideas, making new experiments for the public weal, and of advancing such practical measures as the necessities of the hour demanded. Remarkable as it may seem now, comparatively few were of the opinion that any change from the long-established laws and customs practiced by the English authorities would prove a success. It was indeed many years before this theory, so firmly imbedded in the public mind, could be thoroughly removed.

Immediately prior to the Revolution we find prominently mentioned in the affairs of the Island, the names of Thomas Seamans, Peter Winant, Lewis Dubois, Richard Harris, David Tison, George Barnes, Adam Clendenney, Johannas Houseman, Jacob Mersereau, Cornelius Mersereau, Joseph Rolph, James Lisk, John Giffords, Hendrick Garretson, Dower Wogolum, Abraham Moore, Joshua Mersereau, Bornt Simonson, Jacob Rezeau, Peter Perine, Richard Cole, John Burbanck, Francis Johnson, John Cannon, James Egbert, James Latourette, John Simonson, Henry Holland, Jacob Belue, Lambert Jinner, Roger Barnes, Richard Crips, Peter Housman, Daniel Lake, Richard Conner, John Van Pelt, Samuel Broome, Jacob Javerough, William Duglass, John Hillier, Aaron Cortelyou, Nicholas Dupuy, John Poillon, Matthias Enyard, John Androvett, Hesekiah Right, Donald Drummond, William Sprag, Peter Egbert, Nicholas Larzelere, Samuel Holmes, Samuel Brooms, Benjamin Parker, Samuel Merrill, Silas Bedell, Anthony Fountain, John Beagle, William Reckhow,

Digitized by Google

Isaac Johnson, Moses Egbert, Benjamin Brittain, and Abraham Jones. Notwithstanding some of these took part in the struggle against the fortunate victors, almost all adapted themselves to circumstances and remained on the Island.

But perhaps no locality in the whole country witnessed more material changes among its people at that period than Staten Island. There were the old families—the direct descendants of the early Dutch, the French, and the English. Generally speaking, those of Dutch and French extraction favored the American cause, and as far as possible openly sympathized with and aided it; while the English element naturally and almost exclusively stood by the British. It was no easy matter to remove this "national" line, even after the establishment of peace. The strife had been too bitter and long.

Many Hessians and British soldiers settled here and became industrious and prosperous citizens. They were chiefly deserters from the army, encamped here at the close of the war.

Truly the first days under the Republic were dark. A feeling of absolute unrest pervaded every home on the Island. At every turn there were the keenest reminders of the war. Desolation marked every locality. The charred remnants of old homes, which the British had destroyed; fenceless farms, uncultivated fields, dangerous public highways, storm-beaten breastworks, tumble-down huts that had been used by the military, mutilated trees, bridgeless creeks, and general devastation—all conspired to add gloom and disquietude to the scene.

Added to all this was a greater cause still for the unrest and dissatisfaction of the people. The bitter feelings engendered by the war found no abatement here when peace spread her white wings over the land. No war on earth, perhaps, ever found families so divided upon the issues of the day. Friends had become enemies during the conflict, never to be reunited under any circumstances. From every hearthstone someone had gone—gone to strange scenes and untried customs—gone among strangers who were jealous of their coming.

"Tory" and "Rebel" were ready epithets to be applied in the roadside smithy, the village store—aye, at the very church door, or wherever, perchance, the people might incidentally meet to discuss the questions of the Revolution. Persecution crept into the daily acts of both sides. Neither would forgive anything that the other had done, nor for the moment extend the right hand of fellowship.

The successful "Americans," smarting under the wrongs which they had suffered, lent no sympathy, no aid, no friendship. This strife indeed continued unto the third and fourth generation. In many instances, however, families were reunited in a measure by the general sympathy of the people of the Island during the War of 1812. Some of the most ardent supporters of our country in that conflict came from the families that were intensely "British" in their proclivities during the Revolution.

Digitized by Google

Isolated from the mainland, with no organized system of ferry traffic, Staten Island was a little world by itself. No one came to it except for mercenary purposes, and no one living here ever thought of going to the city, or even across the Kills or Narrows, unless actuated by the most pressing business. This had a tendency to make the people narrow in their opinions of affairs in general. Many of the people grew up to look upon the Island as the center of the universe —those living outside its borders having no rights here, they believed, in common with the natives. Its effects are keenly felt even at this day!

The reconstruction of the local government in 1783, it is thus seen, was a task of no mean importance. To reconcile a mixed population of about three thousand souls, many of whom opposed everything that the successful element was about to undertake, built up a barrier to all forms of progress that for a time threatened to bring a most ignominous failure to every forward movement.

DE VRIES-BENEDICT HOUSE, NEAR ROSSVILLE, BUILT ABOUT 1640 ; DESTROYED BY FIRE, 1858.

A political division was the reasonable outcome, and we can trace the ancestry of several families residing here to-day directly back to the Loyalist element in those dark and uncertain times. We can go an important step further: In the political divisions of the present day, we find the descendants of those same men adhering to the faith of the party which has, through the various, changing scenes of political strife and triumph, kept intact the many-named organization which stands as the legal heir of the old Federal party. So also, can we go back a century or more with the Democracy.

The little village of Richmond, the county-seat, showed the effects of the war more than any other locality on the Island. The old Court House, Dutch Reformed Church, and many of the main dwellings had been destroyed by the British torch, while old St. Andrew's Church, the central figure in two lively battles, was pretty well shattered and disfigured. The County Jail was still standing (the old red structure recently destroyed by fire), as was also the main tavern, the "Cucklestowne Inn." In fact, there was so little left of the hamlet that the people of the Island wanted to remove the county-seat back to Stony Brook.

The people of Staten Island in 1783, while not progressive—the re-

Digitized by Google

sult of the untoward circumstances that had surrounded them for almost a decade—were nevertheless hospitable to their friends. Once assured of their friendship, their homes indicated a cordial welcome, and heart and hand bent every energy to make the guest happy and comfortable. But to the opponent—to those who had been "on the other side" in the sad conflict—there was no sympathy, no welcome, and no comfort. Many interesting traditions come down to us from the period that made up the first years under the Republic.

The people generally employed themselves in agricultural pursuits, and every home of any importance was characterized by its immaculate sand-scrubbed floors, whitewashed walls, and large, open fireplaces, while the indispensable spinning-wheel occupied its appointed place in the corner, the flintlock musket and powder-horn rested over the high mantel, and the Colonial sideboard, laden with seasonable "goodies" and spirits, lent its part to the hospitality of the host.

Gay scenes, in after years, were those which awakened the old Staten Island farmhouses. As the mind goes back to it now we see, amid the honest simplicity which then characterized our people, a refinement worthy of the society of this more enlightened period. The shining brass buttons on the dress coat, the scarlet waistcoat, the kneebreeches with their silver buckles, and the powdered heads of the rustic, though fashionable, gentlemen—so unlike the plain costumes of the women folk—made up scenes worthy to be recorded in the annals of our Island home. To have known and fully appreciated all this, when sentenced by the misfortunes of war to exile and poverty, must have driven many a native Staten Island Loyalist with broken heart to the grave!

We insert here a copy of the county abstract at the close of the eighteenth century:

ABSTRACTS OF THE VALUATIONS AND ASSESSMENTS IN THE COUNTY OF RICHMOND IN THE YEAR 1800

SPECIES OF PROPERTY	VALUATIONS AND ASSESSMENTS IN EACH TOWN			
	SOUTHFIELD	NORTHFIELD	WESTFIELD	CASTLETOWN
Real estate	144,470	148,198	169,193	128,863
Oxen of four years and upwards	1,110	285	1,650	205
Bulls of four years and upwards	60	.....	.....	.....
Cows of four years and upwards	3,240	3,740	4,020	2,790
Neat cattle three years old	720	678	732	552
Neat cattle two years old	608	608	716	548
Horses or mares one year old	200	128	152	176
Horses or mares two years old	210	345	450	210
Horses or mares three years old	460	340	440	440
Horses or mares four years old, not exceeding eight years	2,880	1,890	2,910	2,400

Digitized by Google

ABSTRACTS OF THE VALUATIONS AND ASSESSMENTS IN THE COUNTY OF RICHMOND IN THE YEAR 1800—*Continued.*

SPECIES OF PROPERTY	Valuations and Assessments in Each Town			
	SOUTHFIELD	NORTHFIELD	WESTFIELD	CASTLETOWN
Geldings or mares above eight, and not exceeding twelve years	860	1,300	960	1,008
Geldings or mares above twelve, and not exceeding sixteen years	224	240	232	160
Stallions of more than four years old	900	300	300	.....
Mules one year old	.....	.....	.....	.....
Mules two years old	.....	.....	.....	.....
Mules three years old	.....	.....	.....	.....
Swine one year old	.....	.....	.....	.....
Coaches	.....	.....	.....	.....
Chariots	.....	.....	.....	.....
Post-chaises	.....	.....	.....	.....
Phaetons or coaches on steel springs	.....	600	.....	300
Other four-wheel phaeton carriages	200	200	900	200
Two-wheel top-carriages	200	700	200	200
Other two-wheel pleasure carriages	1,550	550	1,500	750
Clocks with brass or steel wheels	760	240	280	560
Gold watches	.....	500	.....	50
Other watches	660	588	768	396
Slaves above twelve, and not exceeding fifty years old	12,100	6,200	10,500	4,300
River sloops or vessels above thirty, and not exceeding sixty tons	.....	.....	.....	.....
River sloops or vessels above sixty tons	.....	.....	.....	.....
Residue of the taxable personal estate	14,405	10,451	10,780	3,855
	185,817	178,081	206,683	14,796

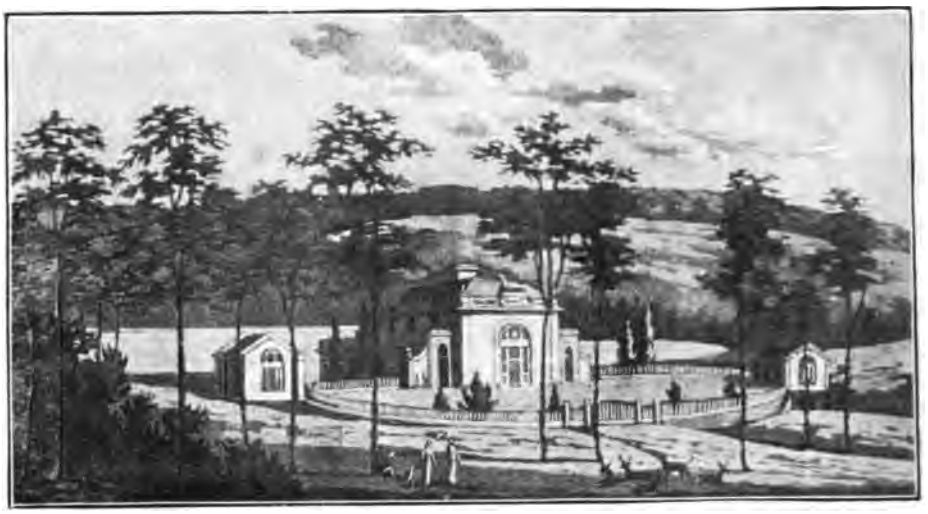
It was fully thirty years before "outsiders" in any considerable number began to settle on Staten Island, and the place lay dormant, until the close of the second war with England. Gradually then, at odd intervals, men of wealth, some of whom had been attracted here during the war, began to turn their attention to the place. Occasionally an old farm and homestead were sold and passed into strangers' hands, a modern residence was erected on the site of the old Holland cottage, the traditional stone-heap line-fence gave place to a more improved arrangement, and on every hand there were indications of the dawn of prosperity.

From the period last mentioned for a full decade there was little to excite the people of Staten Island. The years came and went, and a new generation had grown up to take the place of those who had mingled in the exciting scenes of the Revolution. Every churchyard told the old, old story of mortality, and names that had figured prominently in public affairs were now read on the oddly carved brown gravestones, many of which were destined ere long to crumble and be forgotten.

Digitized by Google

Some of our older citizens vividly recall the wrecking financial panics that began with the closing of the period known as "the twenties," including the memorable banking troubles, and continuing for many years. It proved a most serious barrier to the progress of Staten Island.

One of the most serious questions of the period which agitated the minds of our people was imprisonment for debt. Some of the most respected residents of the Island became involved, through no fault of their own, and were thrown into jail, and not a few were kept within "jail limits" (it being the circle of a mile around the County Court House), until circumstances arose permitting their release. The newspapers took up the subject, congressmen and legislators expressed themselves in emphatic terms, and everywhere it was the absorbing



SILVER LAKE IN 1820. THE SEAT OF ROBERT H. ROSE, ESQ.
(From an old print.)

topic of conversation. And yet, it is remarkable to state, the law was not abolished until near the close of the century.

It may be interesting to recall one of the chief industries of Staten Island about 1828. A clear idea is given in an advertisement in the *Richmond Republican*, of March 3, of that year:

"FLAX—*To Farmers.*—The citizens of this Island have formerly paid considerable attention to the cultivation of flax; but this branch of agriculture has been generally neglected of late years, because there has been no good market for the sale. This was a subject of regret to our farmers, peculiarly on account of the actual low prices of most of the productions of our soil.

"We are happy to state, that it is now in the power of our Farmers to engage anew in the cultivation of this important article. Frederick Roumage is in possession of a secret for dressing Flax without

Digitized by Google

rotting, and who, since last spring, 1827, has had a very extensive establishment of that kind in full operation, at Elizabeth-town (New Jersey), has bought last year from our neighbors of the Jersey more than 300 tons, after the seed had been threshed off, and without other preparation, at $15 per ton, cash down.

"Very judicious Farmers say, and that experiment has demonstrated, that there is no branch of agriculture so favorable as this cultivation, which may realize a nett profit of from $12 to $18 from one acre of land, and this with the double advantage, 1st, of being relieved from the troublesome and very unhealthy process of rotting and dressing; 2d, of being sure of a ready market, where they can instantly realize a reward for their industry.

"Mr. Roumage has already made arrangements with several respectable landholders on this Island, amongst whom are Mr. Joseph Bedell, Jessy Morgan, John Crocheron, &c., &c.; and, as the time for sowing is pretty near at hand, it is important that the attention of our agriculturists should be immediately directed to this subject. The subscription for this year being for 800 acres of land, Mr. Roumage binds himself to accept all and every engagement in this Island, and for any quantity, until the middle of April next.

"The Blazing Star Ferry is conveniently situated, so is some other way of communication for crossing the Sound; and in order to encourage our Farmers, Mr. Roumage will allow $1 more per ton for this expense.

"As a guarantee for the performance of his engagements, Mr. Roumage offers the large establishment, propelled by a steam engine, he erected last year at very great expense, and will give references to Col. Kean, President of the Essex Agricultural Society, and Messrs. Meeker and Britton, Elizabeth Town; Major Edgar, Woodbridge; Joseph Barron, Brighton, and all his last year's subscribers.

"For further explanations, gentlemen are referred to the Hand bills and Printed subscriptions to be found at Mr. Bedell Johnson's Grist Mill; G. C. Hamilton's Tavern; W. M'Commic's Grocery, Mersereau's Ferry; Joseph Bedell's store, at the Mill; Henry Fountain's Tavern, Northside; T. Butler's Tavern, on the Turnpike; John LaForge's Tavern, on the Turnpike; H. Cropsey's Tavern, Richmond; Edward Edwin, Blackhorse; John Fountain's Tavern, Tompkinsville, and at this Office."

From a period dating back to near the close of the War of 1812, Staten Island and its surroundings were quite attractive to wealthy Southerners. It continued to grow in this direction until the outbreak of the Rebellion, in 1861. Back in "the twenties" farms were purchased, and many of the old dwellings arranged for summer residences. The Pavilion Hotel, at New Brighton, the Planters' Hotel, at Tompkinsville, the Fountain House, at Northside, and the La-

Digitized by Google

tourette House at Bergen Point, on the opposite side of the Kills, were patronized chiefly by Southerners for many years.

While the Revolution was ever the popular theme for discussion with the people of Staten Island, those who rejoiced at its success did comparatively little, so far as any public record enlightens us, to honor the event by public demonstrations, until about the time of the semi-centennial anniversary. Then there appears to have been a great effort to honor "the heroes of '76." We attribute the chief cause of this patriotic movement to the establishment of a newspaper on the Island at that time. As a matter of history, important in this connection, we reproduce the proceedings of this celebration, from the columns of the *Richmond Republican:*

"FOURTH OF JULY.—At a meeting of the Committee of Arrangements for the purpose of celebrating the approaching anniversary of our National Independence, held at Richmond County Hall on the 25th inst. (June, 1828), the following order was adopted:

"The citizens of the County of Richmond to assemble at the Hall at eleven o'clock a.m., to join in procession with the uniformed, attended with martial music, and march from thence to the Court House.

"1st. The exercises of the day will open with a petition to the Throne of Grace.

"2d. The Declaration of Independence will be read by Lewis R. Marsh, Esq.

"3d. An oration will be delivered by Thorn S. Kingsland, Esq.

"A National Ode will be sung by a select choir.

"After which the procession will again form and march back to the Hall to partake of the good things of our happy land.

"Richard D. Littell, Harmanus Guyon, Jacob Crocheron, Walter Betts, Dr. Melancthon Freeman, Committee."

"FOURTH OF JULY, 1828.—The inhabitants of Staten Island are respectfully invited to join their fellow-citizens at Tompkinsville, in celebrating the fifty-second anniversary of American Independence.

"*Order of the Day.*—The National Standard will be displayed at the Pavilion, Mount Tompkins (now known as Pavilion Hill), and at other public places at sunrise, when the day will be ushered in by the ringing of bells and firing of cannon. A national salute will also be fired at noon, and at sundown.

"The citizens, and all who feel disposed to unite with them in celebrating the day, will assemble at Mr. Thomas Drumgold's, Nautilus Hall, at eleven o'clock a.m.; from thence they will repair to the (Dutch Reformed) Church at twelve o'clock precisely. The doors of the church will be opened at eleven o'clock, for the reception of ladies, and such as do not join in the procession.

"The exercises in the church will be as follows: 1. Music by the band. 2. An address to the Throne of Grace by the Rev. John E.

Digitized by Google

Miller. 3. Music. 4. The Declaration of Independence will be read by Charles N. Baldwin. 5. Music. 6. An oration will be delivered by Dr. Charles H. Havens. 7. Music. 8. A concluding prayer by Rev. A. R. Martin. 9. Music.

"The ceremonies at the church being concluded, the citizens will retire to the Pavilion, on Mount Tompkins, where dinner will be on the table precisely at three o'clock.

"Caleb T. Ward, Esq., Dr. John S. Westervelt, Henry F. Heberton, Griffin Tompkins, Stephen Kettletas, Committee."

"CELEBRATION OF THE FOURTH OF JULY AT RICHMOND.—The annual return of this eventful day was celebrated at Richmond in so zealous a manner as to evince that the spirit of '76 was not extinct," says the *Republican*. "A National Salute was fired at sunrise. The citizens assembled at Richmond County Hall at 11 o'clock, and at twelve formed and marched to the Court House. A prayer to the Throne of Grace was offered by the Rev. Mr. Hartman. The Declaration of Independence was then read by Lewis R. Marsh, Esq., which was succeeded by appropriate music. After which an oration was delivered by Thorn S. Kingland, Esq., which drew upon the orator the plaudits of all present. Music concluded the exercises in the Court House, and the citizens again formed and returned to the Hall, where they sat down to a sumptuous dinner prepared by Mr. Cropsey. Major J. N. Tooker, the officer of the day, presided, and Richard D. Littell, Esq., officiated as Vice-President. The following toasts were offered:

"1. The United States of America—On the Fourth of July, 1828, Free, Independent and Happy. One gun. 'Hail, Columbia.'

"2. Memory of Washington—the Father of his Country. One gun. Washington's March.

"3. The Patriots of the Revolution. Their heroic deeds live in the memory of a grateful people. One gun. March.

"4. The Militia. The standing army of the nation, and the Bulwark of Freedom and Liberty. One gun. Song—'The Drum.'

"5. The Navy of the United States. The pride of Freemen, and a terror to their foes. One gun. 'Star Spangled Banner.'

"6. The President of the United States. One gun. President's March.

"7. The State of New York. Rich in resources, and an enterprising population; she shines like a star of the first order in our political hemisphere. One gun. Quick step.

"8. The Officers of the State of New York. Executive, Legislative and Judicial. One gun. March.

"9. The memory of DeWitt Clinton. Once the pride of our State; now a National loss. One gun. Dirge.

"10. The American Fair. The pride and honor of the country; ex-

Digitized by Google

amples of virtue and industry. One gun. Three cheers. Song—'Bonnets of Blue.'

"11. The Constitution of the United States, more valued the older it grows, it has put to blush the maxims of Tyrants, that mankind can not govern themselves. One gun. March.

"12. Education, Agriculture, Commerce and Manufactures, each meriting the fostering care of our country. One gun. Song—'Home, Sweet Home.'

"13. Our Common Country. May the blessings we this day enjoy be perpetuated to all future generations. One gun. Liberty Tree.

"Volunteers.—By Jacob Crocheron.—The Orator of the Day. One gun. Six cheers.

"By T. S. Kingsland, Esq.—Gentlemen, for the honor you have this day conferred upon me, I return you my sincere thanks, hoping that my conduct will ever be such as to merit your esteem and confidence. Permit me, Sirs, to propose as a toast—The memory of our departed Statesman, Patrick Henry, who was the first by his eloquence to rouse his countrymen to arms—the first to point out the bright path to Glory. One gun. Three cheers. 'Auld Lang Syne.'

"By Major J. N. Tooker.—Bolivar—the Washington of his country; the intrepid warrior; the friend of Man and of Liberty. One gun. 'March to the Battle-field.'

"By Judge Daniel Crocheron.—Our late ministers at Ghent; may their services be ever kindly remembered by every sincere American. One gun.

"By Walter Betts, Esq.—The National Barque, managed by a skilful pilot; she will keep clear of all shoals and quicksands, and arrive safe in port on the fourth day of March, 1829. One gun.

"By Daniel Mersereau.—Andrew Jackson, matchless hero, incomparable man; brave and skilful in war, generous in peace. The records of chivalry, the pages of history, do not furnish a more exalted character than thine. One gun. Six cheers. 'Hail to the Chief.'

"By Major James Guyon.—Chief Justice Marshall, and the Associate Supreme Judges of the United States; they form the first and highest court in the known world, a pattern to all nations. One gun.

"By Lieutenant Timothy Greene Benham, U. S. Navy.—The Memory of Oliver H. Perry—the hero of Lake Erie, who gave up his ship in exchange for a fleet. One gun.

"By Jacob Crocheron, Esq.—The memory of Daniel D. Tompkins. It was his delight to celebrate and maintain the Independence of his country. One gun.

"By L. R. Marsh, Esq.—Thomas Jefferson, the immortal author of the Declaration of Independence. One gun.

"By Dr. M. Freeman.—The Spirit of '76. May it be disseminated throughout the earth, and be perpetuated to the latest ages. One gun. Six cheers. 'Hail, Columbia.'

"By P. P. Van Zant, Esq.—The celebration of the anniversary of

Digitized by Google

the American Independence by the inhabitants of the County of Richmond; their exertions merit the highest encomiums.

"By Richard Crocheron, Esq.—The good old days of our Independent Daddies, when bean porridge was turtle soup, new cider sparkling champagne, and bread and molasses wedding cake. One gun. 'Yankee Doodle.'

"As the sun sank beneath the horizon the company arose and retired; the room was again soon filled with fashion and beauty, and the festivities of the day were concluded with dancing and other amusements by a large assemblage of young persons."

It was evidently the intention of the people of the Island to celebrate the Fourth of July in an enthusiastic manner whenever the day should come; and so, in June, 1829, the following arrangements were made for the occasion:

"At Richmond the American Standard will be raised at the dawn of day, and a National Salute will be fired by the company of Horse Artillery, under the command of Captain Daniel Clawson. The citizens of the County are respectfully invited to assemble at the Richmond County Hall at eleven o'clock, a.m., when they will form and proceed to the Court House (accompanied with martial music), under the direction of R. D. Littell, Esq., who will act as officer of the day."

The local newspaper was animated by the same patriotic fire, and appealed to the people of the Island to "cherish with increasing zeal the remembrance of that proud day. Let every returning anniversary bind our country still nearer to our hearts, and add new honors to the brows of those who gave us a name and a place among the nations."

The celebration was a failure on account of a storm and the effect was never fully removed. True, on the following year the usual preparations were made to "celebrate American Independence at Mount Tompkins, village of Tompkinsville." A procession was to have formed at ten o'clock at the house of Denyse & Simonson, and escorted by Captain Tompkins' company of Richmond County Guards, and march to the Dutch Reformed Church. Major-General B. M. Van Buren was announced as the marshal of the day, and Messrs. Hazard, Ward, Swan, Tompkins, and Wood were the committee of arrangements.

The citizens of Westfield assembled at the Blazing Star (Rossville). "A Stage was erected in front of the house of Jacob Winant, where the Declaration of Independence was read by Mr. F. Garrit, and an oration delivered by T. S. Kingsland, Esq. Mr. Harman Cropsey, Sr., a patriot of the Revolution, presided, assisted by Mr. Shea."

It is quite evident that the "unbounded patriotism" of our people had somewhat subsided in the immediate years that followed, as the *Richmond County Mirror*, under date of July, 1837 (issued a few days after the Fourth), after quoting from Shakespeare the words, "Blush, oh! ye men of Richmond!" had this to say on the subject:

Digitized by Google

"FOURTH OF JULY ON STATEN ISLAND.—The once Glorious Fourth has passed! and as far as we have been able to learn, there has been no oration delivered in any one of the many villages of this whole county! and the sacred, age-enduring Declaration of Independence was nowhere publicly read! Ye patriotic shades of Washington and of Hancock, of Jefferson and of Adams, of Willett and of Tompkins! if yet ye hover o'er your once loved country, let the admiration with which ye have looked down upon the cheerful tribute paid to your brilliant deeds and hallowed memories, in every section of our land, from the lakes to the Gulf, blot out the iniquities of this degenerate people."

As time wore on, each revolving year found a portion of our people in favor of celebrating the day that would perpetuate the memory of the founders of the Republic; but there was a lukewarmness that was at times very discouraging. Although throughout "the forties" there were celebrations in various parts of the Island, the first notable event in connection with it was that in which the venerable Rev. Peter I. Van Pelt delivered a patriotic discourse in the old Dutch Reformed Church at Port Richmond, in 1858, and citizens generally did the rest. The committee of arrangements were Dr. Eadie, Capt. S. Squires, Dr. Gale, Abram Wood, John F. H. King, Mr. Usher, and Dr. Harrison.

The next and, we might say, final celebration of the Fourth of July occurred at Port Richmond on the Centennial anniversary, in 1876. Clute's "Annals of Staten Island" gives the following account of the event:

"It was the only celebration on the Island. It took place under the shade of the beautiful trees which overreach that splendid thoroughfare known as Heberton avenue. The services consisted of an opening address by Hon. Sidney F. Rawson, who presided. The Rev. Dr. Brownlee offered the opening prayer. The Rev. J. T. Bush read the Declaration of Independence. John J. Clute, Esq., then read an historical address relating to the village of Port Richmond and the town of Northfield. He was succeeded by the Hon. George William Curtis, who delivered an eloquent, patriotic address, which was universally admired and applauded. The closing prayer and benediction was pronounced by the Rev. S. G. Smith, of the Park Baptist Church. The services were interspersed with vocal and instrumental music. It was, on the whole, the most creditable and patriotic celebration that ever took place on the Island."

And now history must record the lamentable fact, a quarter of a century later, that the celebration of 1876 was practically the last one in which the people of Staten Island have deemed it worthy to revert their attention to the scenes that were enacted in the Revolution, and to revere the hallowed memory of the men and women who made it possible for the generations that followed to live under the Republic.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER II.

STATEN ISLAND MILITIA.

STATEN ISLAND was one of the first locations in what is now the United States to possess an organized military force. Its headquarters were in the little block fort that stood on the heights of Fort Wadsworth, on the Narrows. It was composed exclusively of Dutchmen.

The English, soon after taking possession, organized militia everywhere they could find men to take up arms. The first English militia had a detachment on Staten Island.

Becoming a separate county and judicial district, Staten Island, under English rule, was compelled to provide protection for its own citizens and property. Civil authority, however, was insufficient for the times, and the militia was depended upon to a great degree. Every citizen of a certain age and ability was compelled to drill and become proficient in the manual of arms, so that when war came and troops were needed, Staten Island could always be counted upon to furnish its quota.

The meaning of "Militia" is "the military force of a nation"; and in this connection it may not be inappropriate to trace this branch of the public service from its inception down through Colonial times. The militia of this continent had its origin in a law promulgated in 1664, by James, Duke of York and Albany. "The Duke's Laws," as they are still called, covered numerous subjects.

As to militia, they provided that, "all males above the age of sixteen shall be enrolled and be subject to military duty. Each person must provide himself with a good serviceable gun, to be kept in constant fitness, with a good sword, bandoleer and horn, a warmer, a scourer, a priming wire, a shot bag, a charger, one pound of good powder, four pounds of pistol bullets, and twenty-four bullets fitted for the gun, four fathoms of serviceable match for matchlock gun, and four good flints for the firelock gun."

Four local and one general training days per year were prescribed for each "Ryding," and once in two years, a general day "for all the soldiers within the government." In case of failure of anyone to appear for duty, he was to be fined, and the fines were to be divided; one-third going to the commanding general and the remaining two-thirds to be divided among the other officers.

Digitized by Google

The code seems to have held, in most of its features, until 1702, when Queen Anne modified and amended it. She ordered that all males between the ages of sixteen and fifty be liable for military duty and, in case of an invasion, all between fifteen and sixty. She generously allowed, even ordered, each captain to furnish drums, bugles, and colors for his company, and emphasized the order by a fine of £2 for each month he was in default.

It was also provided that, "Every soldier belonging to a troop of horse shall appear twice a year for a drill and muster, provided with a good, serviceable horse, not less than fourteen hands high, covered with a good saddle, housings, breast-plate and crupper, a case of good pistols, a good sword or hanger, one-half a pound of good powder, and twelve sizable bullets, a pair of boots, and suitable spurs, and a carbine well fixed with a belt, swivel, and blanket, under penalty of twelve shillings for the want of a sizable horse, and ten shillings for want of each or either of the other articles." The Staten Island Troop wore blue coats and breeches and scarlet waistcoats, and their hats were laced with gold.

"Every foot soldier must provide himself, and appear and muster in a good, well-fixed musket or fuzee, a good sword, belt and cartridge-box, six cartridges of powder, a horn and six suitable bullets. At home, he must always have on hand one pound of good gunpowder and three pounds of sizable bullets." For want of these articles a fine of twenty shillings, and prison charges until the fine was paid, was imposed. At his discretion, the captain was allowed and authorized to levy upon and sell the delinquent's goods. "In case the offender be unable or refuse to pay and he have no goods to distress, he shall ride the wooden horse, or be laid on the neck or heels in a public place for not to exceed an hour."

For seventy-three years, or until 1775, nearly the same law was re-enacted each year, the title almost invariably being, "An act for settling the militia of the Province, and the making of it useful for the security and defense thereof." No mention of compensation for military service was ever made, and when the number of articles which each soldier must furnish are taken into consideration, it will be seen that the tax was by no means an inconsiderable one. This was the condition of the militia when the war cloud of the Revolution threw its shadow over the land.

On January 10, 1687, according to the Colonial manuscripts in the State library, at Albany, there was an "order for a commission for Captain Billopp."

On December 18, 1689, commissions were issued to Jaques Poillon, as captain; Thomas Morgan, lieutenant, and Seger Garretson, ensign, of Staten Island militia. In December, 1690, Cornelis Corsens was commissioned captain; John Theunissen, lieutenant, and Cornelis Nevis, ensign.

Digitized by Google

On October 22, 1691, a "Peteison" was presented to the Colonial government, signed by John Gamacktlick, William George, Cornelis Naphew, Joseph Staes, and Henry Jackson, of the County of Richmond, "to have the priviledge of having a captain and other military officers over the North quarter of said Island restored to them." The Colonial manuscripts (English) the same year contain the "Roll of Major P. Scales' Company" and also that of "Captain Bradshold's Company."

On February 5, 1703, a "message of the House of Representatives, requesting a committee of conference on the bill for building two batteries at the Narrows," to be in charge of the Staten Island militia, was presented, and was evidently favorably considered.

In 1703, Lieutenant Henry Holland and Lieutenant Charles Oliver, were on duty with a Staten Island company up the Hudson River. In several places the Colonial manuscripts speak of Henry Holland. It was he who owned the land in Northfield where the Holland's Hook ferry is located. That place is named in his or his father's honor.

MERSEREAU HOMESTEAD, BUTCHERVILLE; ERECTED ABOUT 1680.

On March 26, 1705, orders were issued to "Captain John Anderson and others, of the Staten Island militia." The same year, a commission was issued to "Augustine Graham, to be captain of militia on the north side of Staten Island; vice Stillwell." In 1705, the Colonial government issued an order for the enrollment of all men for militia service, between the ages of sixteen and sixty-one.

In 1710, a company of Staten Island militia accompanied the expedition to Canada, under the command of Captain Thomas Arrowsmith. June 20, 1729, Barrent Christopher was captain, and Thomas Borrobank was lieutenant of the "North Precinct Company of Richmond County."

The following are the names of the militia officers of Staten Island for the year 1739: Colonel, Jacob Corsen; Lieutenant-Colonel, Christian Corsen; Major, Thomas Farmar Billopp.

North Division.—Captain, John Veghte; Lieutenant, Frederick Berge; Ensign, Jacob Corsen, Jr.

South Division.—Captain, Cornelius Stoothoff; Lieutenant, Jacob Berge; Ensign, Aris Ryerss

Digitized by Google

West Division.—Captain, Nathaniel Britton; Lieutenant, Mathias Johnson; Ensign, Abraham Manee.

The Troop.—Captain, Peter Perine; Lieutenant, Garret Crosse; Cornet, Wynant Wynants; Quartermaster, Daniel Wynants.

On April 26, 1756, a draft was ordered on Staten Island for men to serve in the militia, in the expedition against Crown Point, which led to a disturbance. Captain James Guyon was commanded to arrest the "disturbers of the peace." Captain Guyon commanded one of the Staten Island companies.

On August 16, 1757, John Hillyer, Sheriff of Richmond County, ordered Archibald Kennedy to arrest and "confine in jail all neutral French, except women and children." The militia of the county were ordered to assist him, if necessary. Captain Thomas Arrowsmith's company was in the Colonial service in 1757. A warrant was issued in favor of Captain Arrowsmith, April 26, 1759, for £784, "being the amount of bounty and enlisting money for forty-one volunteers from Richmond County."

In April, 1760, Captain Anthony Waters commanded a company of Richmond County militia. It was attached to the Second New York Regiment of Infantry. A warrant was issued to Captain Waters for a considerable amount. Myndert Roseboon, lieutenant-colonel of the regiment, was credited to Richmond County.

The Staten Island militia were called out in full force in January, 1762, to aid the justices of the peace in stopping Indians, who were coming up from Philadelphia. A draft occurred the same year.

It is interesting at this time to review the militia system of the Province of New York, of which Staten Island was then a part, at the commencement of the Revolution. The military forces of the colony were divided into three classes, viz.: The Line, which regiments were in the United States service under General Washington; the levies, which were drafts from the different militia regiments, and from the people direct as well, and which could be called upon to serve outside the State during their entire term; the militia, which then, as now, could only be called out of the State for three months at a time. Of the Line, there were nine organizations; of the levies, seven; and of militia, sixty-eight—eighty-four in all.[1]

Associated exempts were a unique class, and were authorized by act of April 3, 1778. They comprised: "All persons under the age of sixty who have held civil or military commissions and are not or shall not be reappointed to their respective proper ranks of office, and all persons between the ages of fifty and sixty." They could only be called out "in time of invasion or incursion of the enemy."

[1] The statement is made in Chapter XXXIV of the first volume of this work, that but 17,781 men served in the Continental Army from the Colony of New York during the Revolution. The statement was made on such authority as General Knox, in his official report as Secretary of War. It has very naturally been copied by all histories treating upon the subject. The statement, however, is an error. Hon. James A Roberts, late Comptroller of the State, has discovered that New York furnished 41,633 men. He has positive proof in the records at the State Capitol.

Digitized by Google

Nepotism, or family influence, was most marked, and some regiments contained as many as seven officers of the same family. Counties were divided into districts, and the colonel of the regiment in each district was given almost unlimited jurisdiction in military matters. He was required to see that every male between the ages of sixteen and fifty was enrolled. Later, the age limit was extended to sixty. Quakers and Moravians were enrolled, but exempt from service upon payment of money, which varied in amount as the war progressed until, in 1780, they were obliged to pay £160 a year.

One miller to each grist mill, three powder-makers to each powder mill, five men to each furnace, three journeymen to each printing office, and one ferryman to each public ferry, were also exempt.

Rum, sugar, and tea were regular rations, and the amount was gauged by the rank. A major-general was deemed to require, and was allowed each month, four gallons of rum, six pounds of sugar, and half a pound of tea. A brigadier-general three gallons of rum, four pounds of sugar, and six ounces of tea. A colonel, a lieutenant-colonel, and a major, two and one-half gallons of rum, and the same amount of sugar and tea. A chaplain the same quantity of sugar and tea, but only two gallons of rum. The scale was continued until a non-commissioned officer and a private received one pound of sugar, two ounces of tea, and one pound of tobacco, but no rum.

A colonel's pay $75 a month; a lieutenant-colonel's $60; a major's $50; a captain's, $40; an adjutant's, $40; a lieutenant's, $26.50; an ensign's, $20; a sergeant's, $8; a corporal's, $7.50; and a private's, $6.67. Nor was this, by any means, always in money. It was sometimes in State notes and sometimes in authority to "impress" articles or animals under supervision of some designated officer, who should give receipt, in the name of the State, to the impressee.

As late as 1784, the large majority of the soldiers were still unpaid for their services from 1776 to 1782. On April 27, 1784, the Legislature passed "An act for the settlement of the pay of the Levies and Militia for their services in the late war."

The following citizens of Staten Island served in the various organizations of the New York militia during the Revolution. The list has been collected from many sources:

Colonel Goose Van Schaick's First Regiment.—John Bedle, Moses Bedle, Abel Buel, Ezra Buel, John Decker, Abraham Deforest, Jonathan Eldridge, David Force, Thomas Gleeson, John Haycock, Thomas Hynes, Abraham Lambert, John Lambert, John Merrill, John Pearce, David Reany, Christian Rynders, John Rynders, and Samuel Totten.

Colonel Philip Van Cortlandt's Second Regiment.—Richard Barnes, William Biddle, George Boyd, Christopher Darrow, Christopher Decker, Edmund Frost, John Hanes, Obidah Holmes, Stephen Holmes, Simon Lambertson, Nathan Lewis, John Lusk, Peter Mayhew, Cor-

Digitized by Google

nelius Post, Henry Post, John Sprague, Abraham Weeks, and Harmanus Wandall.

Colonel James Clinton's Third Regiment.—Obadiah Ammerman, John Banker, Thomas Banker, Henry Barnes, Stephen Barnes, John Beedle, Thomas Beegle, George Brady, Richard Brady, Thomas Elting, John Fountain, Henry Hopping, Joseph Hopping, Francis Lusk, Richard Post, Daniel Seaman, Michael Seaman, Edward Tobin, and John Turner.

Colonel John Holmes's Fourth Regiment.—Jacob Banker, William Banker, William Bentley, Thomas Duncan, John Egberts, Peter Garrison, Abraham Garrison, Joseph Merrill, Moses Seaman, and John Stephens.

Colonel Lewis Dubois's Fifth Regiment.—Nathaniel Bancker, Christopher Decker, Mathew Decker, Daniel Doty, Francis Drake, Ephraim Seaman, and John Willis.

Captain Alexander Hamilton's Provincial Artillery.—Lawrence Farguson, Isaac Johnson, and John Wood.

Colonel Levi Pawling's Regiment of Ulster County Militia.—Jacob Coddington, Jaquin Depew, Jacob Depew, Moses Depew, Josiah Drake, and William Drake.

Colonel James McGlaghry's Regiment of Ulster County Militia.—Elijah Barton, Francis Lusk, James Totten, Thomas Totten, and Benjamin Woods.

Colonel Johanness Hardenburgh's Regiment of Ulster County Militia.—Charles Cole, Abraham Decker, Abraham Decker, Jr., Elias Decker, William Drake, Abraham Johnson, John Lawrence, Daniel Masters, and Jacobus Miller.

Captain Samuel Clark's Independent Company of Ulster County Militia.—Jacob Cropsey, Jacob DeGroot, and John Stillwell.

Colonel Joseph Drake's Regiment of Westchester Militia.—Nicholas Bancker, Henry DePew, Samuel Drake, David Martling, Peter Martling, Hendrick Romer, Hendrick Romer, Jr., James Romer, Hendrick Ryerss, John Ryerss, and Tunis Ryerss.

Colonel Thomas Thomas's Second Regiment of Westchester County Militia.—Abraham Bancker, William Brown, James Campbell, Joseph Clark, Abraham Egbert, Abijah Fountain, Jonathan Jessup, Sylvanus Merritt, John Merritt, and Daniel Merritt.

Colonel Samuel Drake's Regiment of Westchester County Militia.—Samuel Bedel, William Brown, Jacob Clawson, Stephen Curry, Garret DeGroot, Abraham DePew, Henry DePew, John DePew, Jeremiah Drake, John Drake. John Farguson, Elijah Fuller, Daniel Hatfield, Joshua Hatfield, Obadiah Hunt, George Jones, Nathaniel Lane, James Morrel, Elijah Mundy, William Oakley, Ward Smith, John Stephens, James Townsend, Stephen Travis, and Moses Ward.

Colonel Thaddeus Crane's Fourth Regiment of Westchester County Militia.—Ephraim Clark, Gilbert Drake, William Frost, John Holmes,

Digitized by Google

Luke Merritt, Reuben Smith, Jacob Travis, Abraham Wandel, and Jonathan Wood.

Captain Jonathan Horton's Separate Company, Westchester Militia. —William Dalton and Isaac Oakley.

Staten Islanders who served in the war, but organizations unknown.—Abraham Ferdon, James Drake, Gerard Decker, Reuben Jones, William Merrill, John Stillwell, and Ephraim Taylor.

Among the native prisoners known to have been kept on Staten Island for a time by the British were Abraham Winants, John Stewart, Daniel Wandel, and John Noe. The latter died at his home "near Factoryville," in February, 1829.

A large number of Staten Islanders served in New Jersey regiments, especially in those from Essex County (that part now known as Union), just across the Kills. They performed very efficient service in Colonel Heard's regiment, when that organization came to the Island, about the time that General Howe landed with his army. Among the Staten Islanders who were credited to New Jersey, we find the following:

William Cole, served in General Forman's Monmouth Brigade; died March 15, 1778, while a prisoner in the British lines.

Jacob Cole was in the Continental Army, probably the Third New Jersey Regiment. He was captured at Hackensack, and it is thought died in prison.

Abram Cole served as a private in Captain Martin's company in the Fourth Battalion (second establishment), New Jersey troops. He afterward served in Captain Dayton's company in the Third New Jersey Regiment, and later still in the First Regiment.

Josiah Cole was a captain in the Second Sussex Regiment of New Jersey.

The following are all believed to have been from Staten Island, being driven away because of their sympathy for the Revolution: Aaron Cole, First Essex Regiment; Abraham Cole, First Essex Regiment; Daniel Cole, First Essex Regiment; Henry Cole, Captain Lyon's Company, Second Essex Regiment; James Cole, First Essex Regiment; John Cole, Joseph Cole, Samuel and Samuel Cole, Jr., served in Bergen and Essex Regiments.

John Woglum served as a private in the Middlesex militia. According to General William S. Stryker, the New Jersey historian, "John belonged to the militia called out in case of sudden alarm," "tours of duty," etc., being assigned where most needed. His age accounts for this. He was doubtless in the First Regiment, New Jersey Line, Colonel Nathaniel Heard commanding, it being stationed close to the Staten Island shore. The flint-lock musket which he used in the service is still preserved by his descendants.

Captain John Woglum, of the Second Regiment, was a nephew to

Digitized by Google

the John Woglum above-mentioned; but it is not known that he was a resident of Staten Island.

Benjamin Woglum served as a sergeant in Captain Phillip's company in the Second New Jersey Regiment.

Abraham Woglum served as first lieutenant in a New Jersey regiment.

Captain Benjamin Winants, John Winans, Moses Winans, Mathew Winans, and Lewis Winans, all members of the Essex County regiments, are believed to have been from Staten Island. Colonel Elias Winans, commander of an Essex regiment, belonged to this family.

An important soldier in the Revolution was Colonel Joshua Mersereau, who was born on Staten Island, September 26, 1728. He was a lawyer, and a member of the Provincial Assembly from this county, which met at Poughkeepsie and Kingston from 1777 to 1786. He was also Deputy Commissary of Prisoners, serving at Rutland, Massachusetts, and at Elizabeth, New Jersey. His services were continuous in various capacities during the entire war, which is proved by numerous manuscript records. One of these letters speaks of the British threatening to hang him on Staten Island; also his brother Cornelius, who accompanied him here when he came to arrange an exchange of prisoners. He was on intimate terms with General Washington, Hancock, and Adams. His name appears in Staten Island records of transfer of land from 1762 to 1789; and then, as other soldiers, he secured grants of land in the western part of the State. After the war he removed to Tioga County, where he became a judge.

John Mersereau, of Staten Island, served with his brother Joshua during the Revolution. He was once instrumental in saving the retreat of Washington's army.

In 1776, two full companies of infantry were organized on Staten Island, pledged to join General Washington's army, while other companies were in contemplation. They would undoubtedly have reached their destination and performed patriotic service, had not the army of Sir William Howe landed on the Island, and by persuasion and threats secured many of the terror-stricken militia for its own ranks. There were many organizations of American Loyalists in the service of the king that had Staten Islanders in their ranks.

The following are the organizations to which we have just alluded, having been organized and recommended by the Committee of Safety. Some of the names will be recognized in the muster rolls of Colonel Billopp's Staten Island Militia:

"Committee of Safety of Staten Island to the New York Committee of Safety. (Official Military Returns.)

"STATEN ISLAND, March 29, 1776.

"GENTLEMEN: Undernead you have the names of the persons appointed in each destrict, for the officers in the Militia Companies, in

Digitized by Google

Richmond County, whom we recommend to you for farther approbation and commission, &c., &c.

"For the West Devission.—Daniel Winand, Captain; Abraham Woglum, First Lieutenant; James Randolph, Second do.; Joshua Wright, Ensign.

"For the Manor.—Peter Housman, Captain; Lawrence Hillyer, First Lieutenant; William Blake, Second do.; John Wright, Ensign.

"North Devission.—John Simonson, Captain; Abraham Rolph, First Lieutenant; Cornelius McKlean, Second do.; Richard Corsen, Ensign.

"South Devission.—William Scobey, Captain; Samuel Holmes, Jun., First Lieutenant; John Garrison, Second do.; Richard Luckerman, Ensign.

"We are, Genl your most Obidt Humbl Servt, &c.

"By order of the Committee.

"CHRIST JACOBSON, *Chairman.*

"To Messrs. Adrain Bancker and Richard Lawrence."

On the back of the above return is the following:

"Abraham Jones, Esq., 1st Coll.; Cornelius Van Wagener 2d Do; Cornelius Corsen, 1st Major; Jacob Mersereau, 2d Major; Harminus Garrison, Quartermaster; Nicholas Stillwell, Adjutant."

The following is the muster roll of Colonel Billopp's Staten Island Militia. Quite a number of these men came from Elizabeth and Perth Amboy, but were credited to Staten Island:

Colonel Christopher Billopp's Battalion of Staten Island Militia.—Lieutenant-Colonel, Christopher Billopp; Major, Benjamin Seaman; Adjutant, John Bedell; Surgeon, Lawrence Barrows; Chaplain, William Charlton; Quartermaster, Jacob Manee.

First Company.—Captain, David Alston; Lieutenant, Richard Coleman; Ensign, Jacob Housman; Enoch Ackerman, Joseph S. Ackerman, Thomas Burbanck, John Bedell, Jr., Anson Bedell, Samuel Brown, Bornt G. Randall, Dewitt Conner, William Conner, Hampton Conner, Joel Conner, Horace Colter, Patrick Doyle, Thaddeus Edgerton, Ichabod Elders, Tunis Egbert, Abraham Egbert, Sylvanus Grover, Asher Grover, Garret Housman, George Housman, George Irons, Lambert Inman, Abraham Latourette, Richard Latourette, James Latourette, John Laforge, Stephen Martino, Abraham Manee, William Manee, David Moore, Hans Nanson, Ephraim Nicholson, Jaques Oliver, Edward Perine, Jacob Rickhow, William Rowland, Simon Swain, Thomas Sprag, Nathaniel Stillwell, Isaac Simonson, Abraham Simonson. DeWitt Simonson, Bornt Simonson, Ephraim Totten, John Totten, and Cornelius Van Wagener.

Second Company.—Captain, Abraham Jones; Lieutenant, Joseph Billopp; Ensign, Joseph Simonson; Stephen Anderson, Freeman Bedell, Joseph Bedell, Adrian Burbank, Samuel Brown, Isaac Blake, John Bodine, Lewis DuBois, Bolton Carroll, Patrick Curry, William

Digitized by Google

Curren, Isaac Cubberly, Daniel Corsen, Richard Christopher, Ralph Conner, Enoch Corsen, Richard Crips, Isaac Doughty, Nicholas Dupuy, Moses Egbert, Anthony Fountain, Nathaniel Grover, Peter Housman, John Housman, Milton Hatfield, Ichabod Horner, Jack Hatfield, Stephen Isaacs, Ferrel Jackson, John Journeay, John Lisk, Nicholas Latourette, Nathaniel Lockermann, Daniel Lake, David Laforge, Charles Laforge, Jaques Laforge, Lewis Mitchell, Lambert Merrell, Enoch Norton, Aaron Orlando, John Poillon, Oscar Poillon, Joseph Rolph, Lawrence Romer, Bornt Stact, Anthony Stoutenburgh, William Storer, Jacob Sprag, Joseph Simonson, David Simonson, Levi Simonson, John Simonson, Thomas Taylor, Gilbert Totten, Lawrence Vroom, Zachariah Van Dyke, and Daniel Winants.

Third Company.—Captain, Richard Conner[2]; Lieutenant, Willett Billopp; Ensign, Samuel Wright; John Ackerman, Henry Butler, John Baker, James Burger, John Beatty, Cornelius Barcalo, Jerry Campbell, Freeman Campbell, Peter Dooland, Thomas Dorothy, Matthew Decker, Freeman Decker, John Erreckson, Samuel Forman, Harmon Garrison, Henry Haycock, John Hilliard, Samuel Holmes, Abraham Harris, Peter Inman, James Jackson, Sr., James Jackson, Jr., Peter Jackson, Ephraim Kettletas, James Kelley, Forman Lee, Stephen Lawrence, Asher Manee, Jonathan Manee, William Manee, Jr., Oberly Manee, Ephraim Newgate, Patrick O'Grady, Enoch Lippincott, Theodore Poillon, Frederick Romer, Barent Simonson, Lewis Simonson, William Scobey, Rufus Totten, Ephraim P. Totten, Charles Van Name, Freeman Van Name, and Abraham Woglum.

The Staten Island Troop.—Captain, Isaac Decker; Lieutenant, Aris Ryersz; Ensign, Derby Doyle; Trumpeter, Alfred Poillon; John Androvette, Abner Burbanck, Benjamin Barton, Daniel Corsen, Edmund Christopher, Benjamin Crips, Joseph McDonald, Mathew Decker, Samuel DeHart, Isaac Johnson, Jonathan Lewis, Nicholas Larzelere, Abraham Lake, Abram Moore, Edward Perine, Isaac Prall, Jr., Lawrence Romer, Bernard Spong, William Smith, John Stillwell, John Simonson, Samuel Van Pelt, and Edward Woods.

The Gunboat.—Throughout the Revolution the British employed a small sailing vessel, upon the deck of which were mounted two small cannons. Its mission was to perform patrol duty, principally along the Kills, sometimes running up the creek to Richmond Village. It prevented intercourse between neighbors on both sides of the Kills, and caused a great deal of annoyance. This boat was supported by the taxpayers of Staten Island, and its claims were paid out of the "contingencies" account, as the old records show. John Bedell was the County Treasurer. The following items of expense appear:

[2] "Last Wednesday night, Captain Randall, from Elizabeth Town, came over to Staten Island with a Party of about fourteen Men and fired upon some of the Militia that were on Guard, wounded Mr. Richard Conner in the Arm, and one Asher Tappen in the Leg, but neither dangerously. The Militia pursued the Party, but they got into their Boat in a great Hurry and made for the Jersey shore with all expedition."—*Gaines's Mercury, June 24th*, 1778.

Digitized by Google

"Richmond County Sept. 28th 1797

"Received of John Bedel Esq the sum of Fifty one Pound Six shill: for the use of the Gun boat as appears by the following receipt & Fifty one Pound 5-9, gained by Exchanging one hundred of the Loan office monny for Loan office Bill, to replace it."

"Richmond County Sept. the 28: 1779

"Received of Messrs. Richard Conner, Christian Jacobson, Henry Perine, Cornelis Corson, suppervisors for Said County the Sum of Eighty four Pound, being in full for my Selfe & Eight men, belonging to the Gun boat commencing the fourteent of august last and continued for one month "by me James Stewart

"£84.0.0. "Capt N J V."

"Richmond County Sept. the 28: 1779

"Received of Mess. Richard Conner, Christian Jacobson, Henry Perine, Cornelis Corson the sum of Five Pound Fourteen Shilling in full for My Selfe and Joshuah Wilson for servis done onboard the gunn boat being 19 days.

"£5.14 "by me William Scobey."

"Richmond County Sept. the 28: 1779

"Received of the Suppervissers the Sum of Six Pound four Shilling being for Planks for repair of the Gun boat.

"£6.4.0. "by me Richard Conner."

"Richmond County Sept. the 28: 1779

"Received of the Suppervisors for said County the Sum Five Pound Seven Shill: & 9d being in full for Carpenters: Nails & Smiths work done for the use of the gunnboat:

"£5.7.9. "by me Stephen Bedell."

This paragraph follows the above, in the official records, and is of interest in connection with this subject:

"At a Meeting of us, the Suppervissors for the County of Richmond, Did examen the accounts of our late Trussuer, John Bedell Esqr Deceased, and found in the hands of the Exiecutors of said Treasurer Fourtyseven Pound in Continental, Pensulvany, Jersey, Newyork & Conecticute Bills, and Two Pound three shill & 7d in silver, for which sum a recipt was given by us to the above executor and the monney for the present put into the hand of Christian Jacobson til such time and other Treasurer can be Chosen."

There is no record, so far as we are aware, to show what became of the gunboat. Tradition says it was surrendered to the Americans after peace was declared; also, that it was captured and destroyed.

The men who were employed on the gunboat were, Captain James Stewart, Lieutenant Bornt G. Randall, Mate William Scobey, Quartermaster Stephen Bedell, and privates Joel Simonson, Ebenezer Conner, Robert Stewart, Obadiah Bedell, Paul Latourette, Asher Jacobson, Alonzo Latourette, and Peter Laforge. It is said that the original crew were from Elizabeth, and that they were finally superseded

Digitized by Google

by Staten Islanders. Those named in this list, with the exception of Captain Stewart, were natives.

From a period beginning shortly after the War of 1812, and running up to the commencement of the Southern Rebellion, Staten Island had its own regiment. The regiment was known for a time as the One Hundred and Forty-sixth. At one period Nathan Barrett, of Castleton, was its colonel; he succeeded Minthorne Tompkins; he Denyse Denyse, and he B. M. Van Buren. These officers were each lieutenant-colonel for a time, and John N. Tooker, of Northfield, was the major. Dr. Ephraim Clark, of Southfield, was the surgeon. Colonel Van Buren became a major-general; he was a graduate of the West Point Military Academy. Colonel Denyse became a brigadier-general. Colonel Tompkins was a West Pointer. Colonel Francis L. Hagadorn, at a later period, commanded the regiment.

There were six companies in the regiment. The Tompkins Guards were from Castleton; its commandants were in turn as follows: Nathan Barrett, Thomas Barker, John Laforge, David V. N. Mersereau, Richard Christopher, Smith B. Freeman, and Abram C. Wood. Captain Richard Christopher, now eighty-six years of age, is the only surviving member.

The Richmond County Guards were located at Tompkinsville, and were the chief rivals of the Tompkins Guards. The first commandant of this company was Minthorne Tompkins, and when he was promoted to major on the staff of General Van Buren, he was succeeded by Jacob B. Mersereau as captain. He was succeeded by Francis L. Hagedorn.

VREELAND HOMESTEAD, SOUTH BEACH; ERECTED ABOUT 1685.

The Southfield Guards were located in Clifton, although its members were generally distributed throughout the town. It was commanded by Captain George T. Headley.

The Castleton Guards were commanded by Captain Edward Egbert. The headquarters of the company were at Factoryville.

The Northfield Guards were organized by Captain Tooker, who afterward became major. It was later commanded by Captain Perine, a gentleman who had seen considerable service.

Digitized by Google

The Westfield Guards were commanded by Captain Abraham J. Wood, of Prince's Bay.

From the earliest settlement by the English on Staten Island, the county maintained a troop of cavalry. During the period of which we have just written, the troop had its headquarters at New Springville, and was commanded by Captain Bedell.

The Civil War broke up the old militia system on Staten Island. Since the war there have been portions of companies of the National Guard located on the Island. Company C, of the Fifth Regiment, had a detachment at Tottenville, and Company B, of the Ninth Regiment, was partially located at Stapleton.

In 1884, an attempt was made to organize a battalion of zouaves on the Island; but the movement met with such opposition on the part of some of the officers of the National Guard in New York City, that it was abandoned.

From among the military incidents reported in the local press, we copy the following from the *Richmond County Mirror*, October 14, 1837:

"The parade and triple review of the One Hundred and Forty-sixth Regiment, on Wednesday of last week, was the performance of a division order of Major-General Van Buren, of whose scattered command this regiment is all which is drawn from this Island. * * *

"The ground for the review was well chosen on the extensive lawn which spreads out its varied carpeting upon either side of the New Dorp lane, and the display of military tact and promptitude greatly exceeded our anticipations. The gay, the young, the beautiful, were there. The line of beauty was drawn up on the right flank of the battalion, while bright eyes were glancing along the lines, and many a snowy 'kerchief waved a token of recognition from camp to camp.

"The review of the young colonel, on first taking command of his regiment, was very prettily and accurately performed.

"The review, by Brigadier-General Denyse, was also his 'first appearance in this character.' The General himself and his new staff looked well, and performed their enviable task with all that ease for which the General is proverbial among his intimates.

"The third review, by Major-General Van Buren, was of course performed in a more soldier-like manner than those of his younger and inexperienced subordinates. The time-worn and war-worn features of the General were lit up with the memory of his younger days, as he rode along the lines and rested the flickering energies of his eye upon the presented arms of this small portion of his command.

"A well-furnished dinner at the Patten House came next in order; and we scarcely need add that it met with a warm reception."

The *Staten Island Star*, of May 14, 1898, had this to say about the annual "May Muster at New Dorp"—a fitting comment for the closing of this chapter:

"These chilly mornings and warm noons, filled with the steam and

Digitized by Google

smell of newly turned earth, must bring back to all middle-aged people who had the luck to be born on Staten Island one of the greatest events of their childhood. Spring-planting, then, was indissolubly connected in the mind of every boy here, with the pomp and circumstance of glorious war.

"The militia companies, in their nicely starched white trousers and parti-colored coats glittering with gold braid, were all that the country knew of war for well-nigh half a century, and their grand assemblage for parade on the plains of New Dorp in May the sole means taken to reassure the minds of this 'greatest nation on the globe' of its security against a foreign foe.

"It is safe to say that the regular army, in popular estimation before 1860, was regarded as a sort of costly national police to restrain the Indians, and West Point but a public crib where aristocratic families found support and education for their sons at the expense of the nation. It never entered the mind of the ordinary citizen that either one or the other could be of the slightest possible use to him personally.

"The legends of the Revolution were household words to the Staten Island boy from the cradle—the farmer who left his plow, the blacksmith his anvil, to beat the trained British legions. If the country were ever in danger it would doubtless be saved by just such means, and it was the British soldier who was again to fall. Who else could 't be?

"In the May musters at New Dorp the Staten Island boy saw the whole Revolutionary war fight its battles over again; and what idea of patriotism had he beyond reverence for its heroes, hatred for the red coats, and a bragging belief in the present bigness and power of his own country? How blind was this belief, and how boastful, even among educated men, it may do no good now to remember.

"The American was a braggart in the press, in Congress, at home and abroad. The May muster did its own part toward nourishing the national self-conceit. For weeks all the people of Staten Island—and let us add, the whole country—was in a fever of preparation. Every matron finally prepared for the entertainment of the warlike hosts. And when the day arrived, with what proud beatings of the heart did the 'women folks' watch father set out in his colonel's uniform, with Joe, as a lieutenant, by his side.

"The gallant colonel on week days perhaps served out sugar and molasses across the counter; but he looked none the less a hero for that. And Joe, who had been casting sheepish, hopeless glances at the Squire's pretty daughter, for a year, met her undaunted now, in his glitter of blue and gold, and by his martial bearing won the day.

"There was sure to be good weather all that week; the schools were dismissed; Tom and Bob disappeared at dawn and were seen no more till night. Was not New Dorp plains a tented field where the

Digitized by Google

rattle of sabres, the tramp of battalions, and the scent of hot gingerbread and pop-beer made the day enchanted? Was not Uncle So-and-so, paunchiest of tailors, there himself as an officer, drilling his men all day long? Had not General Bedell's cavalry just arrived with all the terrific tramping which fifty horses could produce? The City Guards, in blue and silver, and the Newark Rangers in frogged hunting shirts (always invited guests), were there, too.

"This last attire, we are told by old citizens, was looked upon as a daring innovation, hardly in accordance with the solemn pomp of war; but was forgiven on account of the fine effect produced by the gray horses of the Rangers and the Roman helmets, from each of which streamed a horse's tail.

"Excitement rose to its height when the General of Division (an office held for some time by Neighbor Van Buren, of Tompkinsville), arrived with his staff gallantly mounted and in the Continental blue and buff. Dr. Whatshisname rode beside him in navy-blue coat and green sash, as surgeon. Anybody could know by his bearing that he was used to cutting off arms every day under fire!

"On the last great day the ladies of the Island repaired to New Dorp in all their pink and yellow lawns and fluttering ribbons in buggies, gigs, and spring wagons, and the great sham battle was fought with the British. Some of the manœuvres were masterly, especially when Joe's company deployed behind the barn, and took them in flank! For a year afterward the conduct of the battle furnished discussions at the grocery, and old men asserted that certain movements were not in accordance with military tactics. But the British were whipped—always!

"The May musters are long since over, with many other follies of our youth. New Dorp plain is covered with pretty cottages and echoes no more with martial music. Since the day the Staten Island boys marched away to the sunny South, the sounds of the fife and drum have a different meaning. So many of them never came back. The old Doctor saw some of them die, and he perhaps sleeps among them at Chancellorsville.

"Tom and Bob went through the war and came back home again. They saw it was a savage business, but it made men of them. It brought them and all Americans out of their village bigotries face to face with the reality of things; taught them an humbler estimate of themselves, a juster one of their own and other countries. Whatever harm it wrought, it has lifted us, they think, in a measure, out of our childish self-conceit and hatred of a people whom we did not know.

"There is less prejudice against the South than before the war, and the people have learned to look at broad ideas and principles as they never did in the days of the May muster."

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER III.

THE WAR OF EIGHTEEN HUNDRED AND TWELVE.

IN 1812, England held that a person once a subject was always a subject, and denied the right of expatriation. In fact, they denied the right of emigration at all, especially of artisans or skilled workmen.

Congress first fixed the naturalization laws in 1790, so as to require only a two years' residence; but in 1795 the period was made five years; in 1798, fourteen years, and four years later it was reduced to five years. England claimed that citizenship was perpetual and allegiance also, and if this was true it followed that a person born in Great Britain, no matter if he had been naturalized in another country, could be seized if found in a foreign vessel, or incur the penalty of treason if found fighting against his birth-country. We have always claimed the right to naturalize a foreigner, and have and will protect him after we have done so.

When Napoleon was at the height of his power, England, no doubt believing that she would need all of her men, issued a proclamation calling home all seamen and sea-faring men from foreign service, and declared that no foreign letters of naturalization could divest her natural-born subjects of their allegiance. The British cruisers were authorized to search American vessels and take therefrom all persons suspected of being British subjects. More than six thousand persons were impressed in this way. As most persons of Irish, or Scotch, and many of English birth can be detected by their speech, it fared ill with them when found on an American vessel.

Those acts were highly exasperating to the Americans, and when Britain proposed, by the action of her troops, to serve as traitors her former subjects who were captured in battle, the highest point was reached. Among the soldiers who were captured with General Scott at Queenstown, were a number of Irishmen, who were sent to Quebec, thence in a cartel to Boston. When they were about to sail from Quebec, Scott was in the cabin, but hearing a bustle on deck he hastened up. He found the British officers in the act of mustering the prisoners and separating from the rest such as by confession, or by the accent of the voice, were judged to be Irishmen. The object was to send them in a frigate, then in waiting, to England to be tried for treason, they being taken in arms against their native allegiance.

Digitized by Google

Twenty-three had been thus selected when Scott reached the deck, and he knew that there were many more of the same birth in the party. They were all in deep affliction at the prospect before them, and many of them had been naturalized and some had left families in their adopted country. The British were acting under the orders of the Governor-General of Canada, and as soon as Scott saw what was being done he shouted to his troops to answer no more questions and to remain absolutely silent, so that no more could be selected by the test of speech.

The Irish obeyed and closed their mouths in spite of the threats of the officers. General Scott was repeatedly ordered to go below, and high words ensued. He called to the twenty-three and explained to them their situation, assured them that the United States would not fail to avenge their gallant and faithful soldiers, and pledged himself in the most solemn manner that retaliation, and, if necessary, a refusal to give quarter in battle would follow if anyone of their number was hung. Scott was frequently interrupted by the officers, but they failed to silence him. Twenty-three were put in irons and sent to England.

As soon as Scott was exchanged he went to Washington and reported this affair to the President and Secretary of War. Congress soon passed a retaliatory law, and in a little while Scott, at Fort George, captured a large lot of British soldiers. He immediately selected twenty-three, being careful not to include a single Irishman, and sent them to be confined and held to abide the fate of the twenty-three sent to England. The same course was pursued by other officers, and these vigorous measures stopped the practice of the enemy in setting apart prisoners of war to be tried for treason.

Earl Bathurst threatened to select double the number of Americans to be held to await the fate of the twenty-three, and gave instructions to prosecute the war with unmitigated severity if any of those held as hostages were put to death. These threats were never executed. The men on both sides were finally released, and England retreated in practice, if not in theory, from the bold ground she had taken, and has never returned to it.

When the war was over General Scott was in New York, and passing along the East River side of the city one day, he heard loud cheers on one of the piers. It was the shouts of his old Irish friends who had just landed after their long confinement in England, and they nearly squeezed him to death. Twenty-one were present, two having died natural deaths.

At the time of the declaration of war, General Hull was at Dayton, Ohio, with a small American force, destined for Detroit. On the 12th of July he crossed into Canada, and taking post at Sandwich, issued from that place a proclamation.

On the 1st of August, intelligence was received by the American

Digitized by Google

general of the fall of the fortress at Mackinaw on the 17th of July. Until the moment of a demand for surrender, no intelligence had been received by the garrison of the declaration of war.

On the 5th of August a council of war was held; on the afternoon of the 7th, his army returned to Detroit. An order to the officers and army so unexpected as this—at a moment when they were anticipating a victory and the honors due from it—was like a thunderbolt upon them. The murmurs of the volunteers and regular troops were loud. They upbraided their commander with pusillanimity, and even treachery.

On the 14th, a British force, under command of General Brock, took a position opposite Detroit, where he proceeded to erect batteries. On the 15th, he sent a flag, bearing a summons to the American general to surrender.

On the morning of the 16th, the British crossed the river. A capitulation was agreed to, without stipulating the terms. Words are wanting to express the feelings of the Americans, in being thus compelled to surrender to an inferior force, without firing a gun, when they were firmly convinced that that force was in their power. The British took immediate possession of the fort, with all the property it contained.

PERO HOMESTEAD, BUTCHERVILLE; ERECTED ABOUT 1680.

This act of General Hull caused great depression throughout the country. It was, in a measure, however, relieved by the great victory which the old frigate "Constitution" won over the British "Guerriere." These events were soon followed by other battles, and the people were wrought up to a feeling of intense excitement. New York, as a matter of course, was considered one of the objective points for British attack, and the defenses of the harbor were next to nothing. It was indeed a time for definite action.

Thus the year 1812 was one of great importance to the people of Staten Island. While they felt gratified over the naval victories, they were confronted by the humiliating fact that, on the land, not a single achievement had been made worthy the American valor. Every day the British fleet was expected here, and the terrible experience of Staten Islanders during the Revolution was recounted with a shudder.

Digitized by Google

Daniel D. Tompkins was the governor of New York State. He knew the demands of the hour. He felt the necessity of immediate protection for the metropolis. The forts in the harbor at that time were next to nothing considering the then modern implements of war. It was no time to meditate but to act. But how could fortifications be built? The governor's only resources were from his own property and that of personal friends. And yet, determined, noble character that he was, he personally caused to be erected on the heights of the Narrows, on the Staten Island side, two stone forts, resembling in style of architecture old Castle William, on Governor's Island. They were named Forts Tompkins and Richmond, respectively.

The British redoubts on "Quarantine Heights" (now known as Pavilion Hill, at Tompkinsville), were repaired, so as to become serviceable; and at least half a dozen other old relics of the Revolution on the Island were fitted up for the occupancy of troops, if necessary. At one time Captain Ephraim Clark (father of the late Dr. Ephraim Clark, of New Dorp), and Captain Beniamin Wood, who commanded a company in the Twenty-seventh United States Infantry, commanded these forts. The forts on the heights at Quarantine were commanded for a time by Captain Perine, of the Staten Island militia. The small redoubt, still standing on Fort Hill, was occupied by Staten Islanders, under the command of Captain Mersereau. The fort at Red Hook (a point several feet out from the heights where the lighthouse now stands at Prince's Bay), at first was commanded by Lieutenant Eage, who afterward became a major-general; later it was garrisoned by Staten Island troops.

Colonel Richard Conner commanded the Staten Island militia. His position, during the War of 1812, was to the Americans what Colonel Christopher Billopp's was to the British during the Revolution. He was the provost marshal of Staten Island, and his troops, being all Staten Island men, performed patrol duty.

There were repeated alarms on Staten Island during that period; yet there was no battle in which blood was shed. Innumerable arrests of "suspects" were made, which may have prevented open hostilities. On more than one occasion small boatloads of British sailors landed on Staten Island, with the evident intention of destruction, but they were prevented from carrying out their designs by the vigilance of the Staten Island militia.

As there was no particular struggle in this vicinity, we shall refrain from giving further details of the war in general. The battle of New Orleans, which practically closed hostilities, is known to everyone. The Americans, under General Jackson, added new glory to the American nation, and the British, under Sir Edward Packenham, did nothing on that occasion to disgrace the great nation which had failed a second time to whip the United States. The British, who

Digitized by Google

were in the open field, lost two thousand and six hundred, while the Americans, who were behind breastworks, lost but thirteen.

We deem it but proper here to make special mention of Captain Benjamin Wood, who commanded Fort Tompkins for a time. He was born in New City, Orange (now Rockland) County, New York, July 30, 1780, and lived a few weeks beyond his ninety-fifth birthday. He came to New York at fourteen years of age, to seek business, and engaged himself first as an apprentice to a silversmith in Maiden Lane. In 1812, having been some years established in business of his own, he raised, at his own expense, a company of volunteers, one hundred in number, in the war against Great Britain. He was stationed first at Ellis Island, then at New Utrecht, then at Fort Tompkins on Staten Island, and finally at Sandy Hook. He served until June 15, 1815, when the army was disbanded.

Captain Wood mounted and fired the first gun put into Fort Diamond (now Fort Lafayette), at the Narrows. He was officer of the day at Sandy Hook, and boarded the vessel that brought the news of peace, in 1815, and was the first man in the country to receive the good news. He was the boarding-officer in the revenue service at Quarantine, from 1821 to 1841, and during that period exerted almost a controlling influence in the politics of Staten Island, and it was an influence never tarnished by an unworthy act.

The building of the forts on Staten Island finally led to financial embarrassments on the part of Governor Tompkins. His claim against the State became a matter for the Legislature to settle. A lengthy controversy arose between Governor Tompkins and Controller Archibald McIntire, mainly out of the different constructions which the parties respectively gave to the first section of the law for the final settlement of accounts of the late governor, passed the 13th of April, 1819. The controller on the one hand being of the opinion that it had not been made to appear to him that any moneys whatever had been borrowed and obtained by the governor on his "personal responsibility," and that, therefore, no premium or profit ought to be allowed to him under that section.

While on the other hand it was maintained by Governor Tompkins that all moneys obtained by him for the Government of the United States, acting in the capacity of agent to that Government, and under its direction, and by the hypothecation of treasury notes belonging to that Government, and for its account, in every instance where his personal responsibility was at all concerned, were meant and intended to be included by the law, by which construction, if it had been admitted by the controller, the governor might have drawn from the treasury, or been allowed the sum of $330,208, including interest, or $204,578 over and above the sum due by him to the State—a sum which could not have been paid without a resort to loans or extraordinary taxes for that purpose.

Digitized by Google

The governor finally assented to relinquish, as against the State, all claims excepting that for the premium on the $1,095,000 claimed under the law for the final settlement of his accounts. The committee claimed that the governor still owed the State, according to the controller's accounts, $125,629.50. At the time in question, Tompkins was Vice-President of the United States.

As the controversy progressed, the committee claimed that Governor Tompkins had admitted that he owed the State $125,000, and then he accused the controller with suppressing vouchers for expenditures to the amount of $55,723.65, being part of $155,874.56, which he had reported to the Assembly. The committee claimed that this was unsupported by proof.

"But," to quote from the report of the Committee on Ways and Means, "if there were any reason whatever to suppose that any vouchers had been lost, yet it is apparent that those vouchers could not account for $66,311.21 of the deficiency in his accounts; because a deficiency to that amount arises out of appropriations made long after the 3d of April, 1813.

"Thus, under the act of 18th April, 1815, authorizing the purchase of muskets, rifles, powder, &c., there remains in his hands unaccounted for, $22,200.00.

"And under the act of the 21st October, 1814, making appropriations for pay of militia, volunteers, sea-fencibles, &c., there remains in his hands, $24,743.00.

"Under the act of 12th of November, 1816, making appropriations for completing fortifications in the harbor of New York, $13,368.21.

"And returned to him by the Government of the United States for account of the same fortifications, $6,000.00.

"Total, $66,311.21. Which amount was appropriated and drawn by the late governor, long after the vouchers are alleged to have been lost."

The committee continues: "Had it been the unavoidable duty of the late governor to draw into his own hands the moneys which were appropriated by the State for the public service, it would not, in the opinion of your committee, have afforded an excuse for his charging to the State a commission or profit therefor, for his private emolument. But the committee are of opinion, that the moneys might have been drawn, and ought to have been drawn from the treasury, from time to time, directly into the hands of persons performing public service, or into the hands of paymasters or agents. . . .

"Moneys, however, were drawn from the treasury of this State to the amount in the aggregate of $1,075,021.88, often in large sums, and nearly to the whole amount directly into the hands of the late governor, and by him from time to time, thereafter, paid out (excepting the sum of $125,629.50, remaining in his hands unaccounted for). This novel course of proceeding, your committee are of opinion, must

Digitized by Google

have added greatly to the ordinary duties of the late governor; and for which, your committee do not perceive in the case the least necessity."

The amount which Governor Tompkins borrowed for the general Government was as follows: Manhattan Company, $50,000; Bank of America, $150,000; Mechanics' and Farmers' Bank of Albany, $50,000; Corporation of New York, $400,000; City Bank, $50,000; and Manhattan Company, $100,000.

The committee stated finally that the State of New York owed Governor Tompkins nothing. It was a great blow to the governor, and from that day he was never able to recover from his financial embarrassments. The committee used language not familiar to the people of Staten Island to-day, who simply revere the memory of Daniel D. Tompkins.

It is interesting to read the following, from the *National Trades' Union*, of New York, September, 1835, under the caption of "A Visit to Forts Richmond and Tompkins":

"On the 17th instant the writer availed himself of an invitation from Commissary-General Arcularius, to accompany him and Captain Shaw to inspect the above named forts, located at the Narrows, on the Staten Island side. This is a very important and strong military post. There our State expended, about the period of the late war (1812), upwards of $500,000 in erecting breastworks and fortifications.

"In the half-moon battery there are twenty-five thirty-two pounder and two twenty-fours. My friend informed us of what, I could hardly realize, that these noble cannons, with but one exception, were fabricated in our own country upwards of forty years ago. They have a rough exterior, but are pronounced by him to be excellent guns. The carriages must have cost a great sum; by their appearance they are well made, but have been left exposed to the storms, the weather and sprays of the sea until they have sunk to the floor by decay and under the weight of their burthen. The iron work about them is good yet. The floor or platform, on which they are placed has yielded to the destroying elements, and there is nothing now fit for use in or about the works, except the interior of the barracks and a few implements for the service of the gun. There is not a single piece that could be used with effect, if the safety of the city depended upon a single shot!

"A great quantity of thirty-two pound shot scattered about the fort rusting and corroding away, invites pilferers to help themselves, and enough embraced the invitation and bore away many a shot and sold them for old metal. The Commissary-General secured the embrasures, gathered upward of six thousand thirty-two pound shot (worth at least $8,000), secured them in the old magazine, and has as

Digitized by Google

far as the means allowed him by the niggard policy of our State, placed the public property thereabouts in a much safer condition.

"The General pointed out to us one piece of cannon, whose history is very interesting. It formerly held a position in and looked out of old Fort Amsterdam, afterward called Fort George, on the Battery, at the lower end of this (New York) city. It is a double fortified thirty-two pounder, and was used by the subjects of George II."

On February 15, 1847, the Federal Government purchased the premises from the State of New York. The old forts were demolished and the material sold. This was purchased, and with it was built a handsome residence adjoining the post grounds.

The entire post, including all the forts, etc., is now known as Fort Wadsworth. Two of these forts—the one on the heights and the one directly in front on the water's edge—are known respectively as Forts Tompkins and Richmond. Battery Hudson and recent additions are located in a commanding position to the west of the other structures.

The old reservation, purchased from the State, included two tracts of twenty-five and twenty-two and one-half acres, respectively. On July 8, 1854, the Government also purchased five and one-half acres from Peter Jacobson. Again, on May 28, 1856, it purchased seventeen acres from W. H. Aspinwall.

On March 14, 1892, another important purchase was made. It included the handsome residence and grounds of Josef a de la Hegewisch, and contained fourteen acres, besides land under water, which was condemned. On November 25, 1892, about fifteen acres, belonging to J. Henry Alexandre, were condemned and taken by the Government, as were also six and one-half acres, together with one acre under water, from James J. Alexandre, nine acres from Ellen Lee Mayo, and fifty acres from Serena P. Appleton, at the same time.

On February 1, 1895, six and one-half acres were purchased from Mrs. Sarah Schuyler Martin; March 11, 1898, seven acres from James B. Whitney, and on August 30, 1898, about six and three-quarters acres from Henry Ockershausen.

Under the present plans of the War Department, it is proposed, ultimately, to acquire the A. L. King, the Haxtun, and the Monquin tracts. And so, it will be seen, the scene of the little Dutch blockhouse and trading-post of 1614, and later, the castle-like forts of 1812, has become one of the most important military posts on the continent.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IV.

IN THE OLD SLAVERY DAYS.

AFRICAN slavery was common on Staten Island shortly after the English took possession. It had then spread to every Colony under British rule. The number of slaves imported into the colonies down to 1776 is computed at 300,000. At the first census in 1790 the slaves in the whole country numbered 697,897, all the States but Massachusetts, which then included Maine, having some. There was a large increase noted every succeeding census down to 1860, when the census showed that they numbered nearly 4,000,000. At the time of the adoption of the Federal Constitution the feeling in the United States was generally averse to slavery, and in some of the Southern States that feeling was stronger than it was in most of the Northern States. The ordinance of 1787, excluding slavery from the northwestern territory, was supported by Southern men, and some Southern States abolished the slave trade with Africa while Northern States continued to carry it on. New York adopted a gradual emancipation act in 1799, at which date she had 20,000 slaves; and in 1817 she passed another act, declaring all slaves free on the 4th of July, 1825.

About 1770, African slaves were bought and sold on Staten Island as horses or cattle, or other chattels, are now bought and sold. In many instances slaveholding had became unprofitable. An elderly gentleman, familiar with that period, said: "The farmer employed his negroes in raising corn and hogs. He fed the corn to the hogs, and the hogs to the negroes, and when Spring came around he had nothing left but the negroes." That was the general experience on Staten Island.

During the Revolution all slaves killed in the service were to be paid for. In time of invasion, any slave, not in the military service, found one mile from his master's abode, without a certificate from his master showing his business, might be "shot or otherwise destroyed without fear of censure, impeachment, or prosecution for the same." In 1781, it was provided that any slave who should enlist and serve "for three years, or until discharged," should be declared a freeman of the State. Any master or mistress who should deliver an able-bodied slave to serve, was presented with one Right (a tract of five hundred acres of State land).

Digitized by Google

Whether any slaves were actually brought to Staten Island under the concessions, is uncertain; but if so, they must have been few in number, and after the provinces passed into the hands of subsequent proprietors, it is very doubtful that any were introduced. The records throughout do not designate any of the "servants" brought over as "slaves," and in all documents referring to the distribution of land, the word is no longer made use of, which would not have been the case had there been slaves to receive a less quantity per head than other servants.

Barracks of considerable size once stood in Perth Amboy, just across the Raritan Bay from Staten Island, in which the slaves were immured as imported; and there, as in almost every place, the labor of families, with very few exceptions, was exclusively performed by blacks for many years previous to the Revolution.

In 1772, the people of Staten Island and East Jersey were greatly excited. An insurrection was anticipated, but was prevented by due precautionary measures. In connection with this "rising," a sort of colonization abolitionist made his appearance in the public prints, urging the passage of a law by Parliament, obliging the owners of slaves to send them all back to Africa at their own expense.

The assertion was often made, in the complaint against the assessors, that poor people had no "negers," yet the number of slaves owned by a single individual was not always an indication of wealth. Many of the residents had many children of both sexes to help them in their agricultural labors, thus rendering the assistance of slaves unnecessary.

The following is a list of the owners of slaves in the "North Company" of Staten Island, as returned by Jacob Corssen, Jr., in 1755: Thomas Dongan, Jacob Corssen, Sr., Jacob Corssen, Jr., John Veghte, Gerardus Beekman, Henry Cruse, Anthony Walters, Cornelius Cruse, Simon Simonson, Johannis de Groet, John Rolf, Christain Corssen, Joshua Merseral, John Deceer, Garret Crussen, Garret Post, John Roll, Janor, Barnet Martling, Richard Merrel, Otto Vantuyl, Bastian Ellis, John Veltmon, Abraham Prall, Charles Macleen, Margaret Simonson, Joseph Lake, John Roll, Elenor Haughwout, Abraham Crocheron, Barent De Pue, John Crocheron, David Cannon, Aron Prall, Charyty Merrill, Joseph Begel, and Cornelius Korsan. In the list the names of the slaves are also given.

A writer on this subject says: "As the life of a slave was doomed to be one of labor, intellectual cultivation was deemed unnecessary; some few, however, were taught sufficiently to enable them to read the Bible, and as they were admitted to be responsible hereafter for the deeds done in this life, religious instructions in pious families were not neglected. It was not unusual to see master and slave working together in the fields, apparently on terms of perfect equality. In the kitchen, especially in the long winter evenings, the whites and blacks

Digitized by Google

indiscriminately surrounded the same huge fire, ate apples from the same dish, poured cider from the same pitcher, and cracked nuts and jokes with perfect freedom."

Saved from the mutilated and charred records of the town of Castleton, at the fire in the village hall, in the winter of 1896, was an old book of the most unique pattern. The title page bears this inscription:

"Richmond County. This is a Tow Book Made for Castleton for Entering all the Black Children that are Born of Slaves after the first Day of July In One Thousand Seven hundred and Ninetynine 1799. R.S. Cary, T Clk." Some of the entries read as follows:

"This is to certify that a male child Named Mink was born January the 16th 1800 of Said wench Named phoebe and is Given Up to town Clerk according To Law.

"Castleton October the 14: 1800. "JOHN BARNES."

BENJAMIN PERINE, THE LAST STATEN ISLAND SLAVE; AGED ONE HUNDRED AND FOUR YEARS.

"I do hereby certify that Male negro child named Nicholas the father of whom named Sam belongs to me, and the Mother named Bett belongs to Cornelius Cruser, was born in my House at Castle Town the eight day of may, in the year of our Lord one thousand Eight hundred, and I request that this return of the birth of the Said Child may be Entered agreeable to the directions Contained in a late act for the gradual Abolition of Slavery.

"Castletown January 15th, 1801. JOHN MERCEREAU."

"To the Clerk of Castle Town:

"I hereby certify to you that a female negro Child Named Mary born of my slave Jane the fifth day of February last which was given up to be recorded I do hereby Manumit and give up all my right and title to the service thereof given under my hand at Castle Town the third day of February 1804. JACOB LOZIER."

Nathaniel Britton manumits two children, Henry Garretson one, Cornelius Cruser one, John Mersereau one, and John Tysen, Jun., one, in 1805; Benjamin Martino one, Richard S. Cary one, Cornelius Buskirk one and John Tysen one, in 1806; Richard C. Corsen one and John Barnes one, in 1807.

This agreement is entered by John Housman, Town Clerk: "We

Digitized by Google

the overseers of the Poor of the Town of Castle Town, In the County of Richmond, Do certify that John Corsen, heretofore the slave of Hendrick Garrison, of the Town and County aforesaid, farmer, and whom he hath agreed to Manumit, appears and is known to us to be under the age of Fifty Years, and of sufficient ability to provide for himself.

"TUNIS EGBERT } overseers
"JOHN DORSETT } Poor for sd Town.

"I do agree to the above Sighning by the overseers of Said Town.
"BENJN. PARKER Justice.

"Dated 29 Jany 1808."

"A True & Correct Copy of the Certificate Entered by me as Town Clk of Sd Town. JOHN HOUSMAN."

Births were recorded by Benjamin Martino and John Tysen in the same year, and by John Martling in 1809.

The following certificates are of interest:

"State of New York, Richmond County.

"I do hereby certify that Henry Ryers a Black Person is free according to the Laws of this State and That he is twenty two years of age & that he was Born in the Town of North field in said County and that he obtained his freedom on the twenty fourth day of April 1811. I do therefore allow this certificate to be Entered on the Records of the Clerk of the town of Castletown in said County Agreeable to an act of the Legislature of the State of New York in such case made and provided as Witness my hand at Castletown the thirteenth day of April 1811. DAVID MERSEREAU Judge."

"State of New York, Richmond County.

"To whom it may concern Know ye that Joseph ryerss A Black man hath on the 24 day of April one Thousand Eight hundred and Eleven produced unto me David Mersereau one of the Judges of the Court of Common pleas in and for Said County the Copy of the last will and testament of gozen ryerss Esquire deceast whearein it is fully Spesefyed that The Said Joseph Ryers Shall Be free after the death of the Said gozen Ryers Esq I do tharefore think the Said proof sufficient to Entitle him the Said Joseph Ryers to his freedom as witness my hand at Castletown The day and date above.
"DAVID MERSEREAU, Judge."

"Richmond County, Town of Northfield.

"To whom it may concern Know ye that on the 24 day of April in the year of our Lord one thousand Eight hundred & Eleven I Joseph Ryers a free Black man do by thease presence Manumit and abandon all My Rite and title to the Service of my son Harry and he is hereby

Digitized by Google

pronounced By me to be a free man agreeable to the Laws of the State of New York as witness my hand

his
"JOSEPH X RYERSS"
mark

"JOHN GARRITSON,
"JOHN HARRISON."

"This to Certify that Gozen Ryerss of the County of Richmond Deseast in his Last will and Testament as it is Recorded in this office order his two Black men Joe and James Thare freedom at his Deceas

"JONATHAN LEWIS Surrogate.

"April 29, 1811."

John Mersereau, Abraham Egbert, John Tysen, Eder Vreeland, Richard Corson, Walter Dongan, John Hileker, Edward Beatty, Richard C. Corson, James Guyon, Rev. Peter I. Van Pelt, and John Barnes each filed certificates of birth with Vincent Bodine, Town clerk, between the years 1811 and 1825.

"Whereas Thomas Hazard of the Town of Castletown in the County of Richmond and State of New York Gentleman, by a certain Instrument of writing did manumit make free set at liberty his male slave, Named Samuel Price and did thereby declare that the said Samuel Price, shall and may at all times hereafter exercise, hold and enjoy all and singular the liberties, rights, and priviledges and immunities of a freeman to all intents and purposes, as if he had been born free. And further the said Thomas Hazard on the ninth day of December in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and twenty five did appear before Richd. S. Cary, Commissioner, and acknowledged that he executed the above mentioned instrument, as his voluntary act and Deed for the uses and purposes therein mentioned. Now We John Barnes and Garret Martling, Overseers of the Poor, in and for the Town of Castletown abovesaid, for the time being, having examined the said negroman, and do hereby testify that he is about Forty years of age and strong and healthy and capable of maintaining himself by his laboar, and that he is an inhabitant of the said Town of Castletown and is a proper subject to be manumitted, and we do hereby manumit him accordingly.

"Given under our hands at Castletown aforesaid the fourth day of March in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and Twenty five (1825).

"GARRET MARTLING, } Overseers
"JOHN BARNES, } Poor.

Another old book of considerable interest comes from Northfield. On the fly-leaf is written this sentence: "John Dunn Bought this Book for the Poor of the Town of Northfield, In the year 1804." John Dunn and John Wood were the Poor Masters for that town the year ending May 1, 1804.

Digitized by Google

The record then shows that beginning with September 23, 1801, new-born negro slaves were abandoned by the following masters: Cornelius Bedell, Joseph Wood, Daniel Crocheron, Sarah Prall, Captain John Crocheron, Ann Ryerss, John Tysen, John Dunn, and Matthew Decker.

A century ago Westfield was the wealthiest town in the county, and consequently contained more slaves than either of the others.

The first colored child born in freedom there was "Cate," belonging to Captain Journeay, on October 7, 1799. The same year children were born to slaves belonging to Charles Morgan, Philip Laforge, and Winant Winants.

As the years rolled along children were born to slaves of the following owners: 1800—Gilbert Totten, Lawrence Hillyer, Benjamin Larzalere, John Marshall, Sr., John Journeay, Sr., John Androvette, Albert Journeay, David Latourette, Charles Drake, William Journeay, Stephen Seguine, Patience Cole, Daniel Winant, John Seguine, and Jesse Morgan.

1801—Peter Androvette, Cornelius Disosway, Nicholas Journeay, Charles Morgan, Philip Laforge, David Coddington, John Dubois, and John Journeay, Sr.

1802—Paul Micheau, Stephen Seguine, Winant Winants, John Androvette, Benjamin Larzalere, Patience Journeay, Catherine Seguine, Benjamin Swaim, Alexander R. Cairns, and Jesse Oakley.

1803—Sarah Latourette, Gilbert Totten, Cornelius Dissosway, estate of Cornelius Cole, Daniel Winants, Paul I. Micheau, Albert Journeay, Ephraim Johnson, Bornt Lake, Philip Laforge, Jesse Morgan, and William Journeay.

1804—David Winants, Jr., D. Coddington, Charles Morgan, Anthony Butler, James Seguine, John Seguine, and Thomas Butler.

1805—Gilbert Totten, Nicholas Journeay, James Butler, Jesse Bedell, Israel R. Dissosway, John Van Dyke, John Seaman, and Cornelius Dissosway.

1806—Isaac Stuart, Daniel Winants, Jr., Henry Seguine, Jesse Oakley, Laird Codington, and David Codington.

1807—William Cole, Cornelius Dissosway, Daniel Van Clief, and Philip Laforge.

1808—John Van Dyke, Gilbert Totten, Edmund Kearney, Daniel Winants, William Micheau, Anthony Butler.

1809—Mary Latourette, William Cole, and David Codington.

1810—Edmund Kearney, William Seaman, Daniel Van Cleft, Joseph Lockman, William Micheau, Mary Latourette, and Cornelius Dissosway.

1811—Edmund Kearney, John Van Dyke, Jesse Oakley, and Stephen Seguine.

1812—Estate of Paul Micheau, Jesse Oakley, and Isaac Butler.

1813—Joseph Seguine and William Cole.

Digitized by Google

1814—Israel Oakley, Isaac Butler, and James Seguine.

From this date the records are lost. There are, however, two other documents of interest in connection with slavery, viz.:

"Whereas, andrew Drake of the town of Westfield hath made application unto us the Subscribers being overseers of the poor of said town to manumit his Negro man James by way of Certificate now we do give it as our opinion that he is under the age of fifty years old and of sufficient Abilities to get his living given under our hands the Eleventh Day of February one thousand eight hundred and seven 1807.

"HENRY PARLEE
"JOHN LATOURETTE } PoorMasters
"HENRY PARLEE, Town Clerk."

"Town of Westfield, Richmond County, State of New York, ss. We the subscribers overseers of the poor of the town of Westfield county and state aforesaid have this day examined into the health situation & ability of a certain slave Named Jack late the property of Christain Winant deceasd of the same town county & state and do adjudge that he is of sufficient ability to provide for himself & that he is under the age of forty-five years given under our hands and Seals this Twenty-sixth day of August in the Year eighteen hundred and fourteen 1814.

"HENRY PARLEE,
"JAMES TOTTEN.

"Recorded the 26th Augt 1814.

"HENRY PARLEE, Clerk."

The town of Southfield also had its quota of slaves. The faded and mutilated records tell this "old, old story." For instance:

"This Indenture made this Tenth day of January, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and four, witnesseth that Joseph Perrine and Isaac Cubberly, Overseers of the Poor of the Town of Southfield, in the county of Richmond & State of New York, by and with the consent of William Journeay and Gilbert Totten, two of the Justices of the Peace of the said county, having put and placed, and by these presence do put and place Man, a free-born negro boy, of the said town, by being abandoned, aged four years, two months and three days, unto William Lakerman, of the said County, with him to dwell and serve from the day of the date of these presents until the said negro boy (Man), shall accomplish the full age of twenty-one years, according to the statute for the gradual Abolition of slavery, during all which term the said negro boy (Man), his master faithfully shall serve on all lawful business, according to his power, wit and ability, and shall, honestly, orderly and obediently, in all things demean and behave himself towards his said master and all his executors, administrators or assigns during the said term, and the said William

Digitized by Google

Lakerman, for himself, his executors and administrators, doth covenant and agree to and with the said overseers of the poor and each of them, their and each of their heirs, executors and administrators, and their and each of their successors for the time being by these presents and during all the term aforesaid, find, provide and allow unto the said negro boy, (Man), competent and sufficient meat, drink and apparel, washing, lodging, mending and all other things necessary and fit for a servant, and also shall and will provide for the said negro boy (Man), that he be not any way a charge to the town of South-

FOUNTAIN HOMESTEAD, CLIFTON; ERECTED ABOUT 1700.

field nor county of Richmond or inhabitant thereof, but of or from all charges shall save the said town of Southfield, county of Richmond, harmless and indemnified throughout the said term.

"In witness whereof, the parties to these presents have hereunto set their hands and seals the day and year first above written.

"Witnesses present:
"JOHN G. WOOD.
"JOHN SIMONSON.

JOSEPH PERINE,
ISAAC CUBBERLY,
WILLIAM LAKERMAN."

The form of indenture, in the case of a female, appears to have been different from that of a male, as the following will show:

"This indenture, made this twenty-second day of March, in the year

Digitized by Google

of our Lord one thousand, eight hundred and six, witnesseth that John A. Van Pelt and Edward Perine, overseers of the poor of the town of Southfield, in the county of Richmond and state of New York, by and with the consent of Jacob Garretson and Richard S. Cary, two of the justices of the peace of the said county, have put and placed, and by these presents do put and place a free-born black, named Neat, of the town of Southfield, aged five years, four months and twenty-two days, an apprentice or servant to Anthony Fountain, to dwell with, and serve from the day of the date of these presents, until the said apprentice or servant shall accomplish the full age of eighteen years, according to the statute in that case made and provided: during all which term the said apprentice or servant her said master shall serve faithfully on all lawful business, * * and the said Anthony Fountain * * * shall teach the said apprentice or servant in the trade of housework which he now useth and shall and will instruct or cause to be taught and instructed. * * * At the end of the said term, he shall and will provide and deliver unto the said apprentice or servant, good common wearing apparel and a new Bible.

"Sealed and delivered in the presence of

"JOHN A. VAN PELT,
"EDWARD PERINE,
"ANTHONY FOUNTAIN."

Other indentures of the town of Southfield were those of George Reynolds, aged thirteen, to John I. Poillon, signed by William Journeay, Gilbert Totten, and Isaac Cubberly, 1802; Peter Howel, aged eighteen years, "to Abraham Egbert, son of Abraham of the same name," 1804; a black girl named Deyon, aged five years, to Dr. Joseph Bailey, 1805; a black boy named Prince, aged four years, to Nicholas Crocheron, 1805; a black girl named Mary, aged four years, to Cornelius Fountain, 1806; a black boy named Tom, aged four years, to George Barnes, Jr., 1806; a black girl named Luce, aged six years, to John Morgan, 1806; a black boy named Nicholas, aged five years, to Jeremiah Simonson, 1806; a black girl named Bet, aged five years, to James Guyon, 1806; a black boy named Jack, aged six years, to Joseph Bedell, 1806; a black boy named Tom, aged five years, to Nicholas Burgher, 1806; a black girl named Mary Ann, aged five years, to John P. Poillon, 1806; a black girl named Dinah, aged six years, to Abraham Van Duzer, 1806; a black boy named Jack, aged five years, to Stephen Kettletas, 1806; a black girl named Mary, aged seven years, to John Dubart, 1808; a black girl named Sarah, aged seven years, to James Egbert, 1808; a black boy named Dick, aged four years, to Jacob Barger, 1808; a black girl named Judeth, aged five years, to Jacob Crocheron, 1808; a black girl named Phebe, aged four years, to William B. Gifford, 1808; a

Digitized by Google

black girl named Jean, to Mary Barger, 1808; a black girl named Frances, to Abraham Egbert, 1808; a black girl named Sary, aged four years, to John Miller, 1809; a black boy named Man, to Margaret Lake, 1814.

"Richmond County, Town of Southfield.

"This is to certify that on application being made to John A. Van Pelt and Edward Perine, by Cornelius McLean, an inhabitant of said town, that he, the said Cornelius McLean, intends and wishes to manumit and abandon, make free and set at liberty his female slave, Mary, * * Given under our hands at said town, the 30th day of March, 1809.

"J. A. VANPELT, } Overseers of the
"EDWARD PERINE. } Poor."

"This is to certify that Abraham Cole has regularly and according to law, manumitted his two slaves Delia and Sarah, and we do hereby discharge him from all costs and expenses whatever that may occur for the support of the said slaves.

"Dated at Southfield this eleventh day of September, in the year one thousand eight hundred and twelve.

"ISAAC HOUSMAN, } Overseers of the
"ABRAHAM EGBERT. } Poor."

A colored woman, named Phebe, was also set free by her master, Samuel Lockman, of Southfield, in 1815.

The following account of the "sale of an old slave," which occurred in 1817, is taken from the county records.

"Know all men by these Presents that We, Sophia Crocheron, John Crocheron, and Abraham Crocheron of the Town of Northfield, County of Richmond and State of New York, For and in consideration of the sum of one hundred and Sixty two dollars and fifty cents of lawfull money of the United States to us in hand paid by Henry Crocheron of the same Town, * * * A Colored man named Prince aged fifty-five years or thereabouts. * * * Witness our hands and Seals this Third day of May in the Year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and seventeen.

"SOPHIA CROCHERON,
"JOHN CROCHERON,
"ABRAHAM CROCHERON.

"Sealed and delivered in the presence of

"JOHN SAIDLER."

The celebration in honor of the abolition of slavery on Staten Island, was one of the happiest events known to the residents of that period. The particular location in West New Brighton, between Broadway and the postoffice was known as the "North Shore bend." On the Fourth of July, 1825, the scene was one of great animation. The

Digitized by Google

old shingle-sided dwelling, standing nearly opposite the postoffice, at that time stood on the corner now occupied by a large brick building. It was then known as the Swan Hotel.

At the time of the emancipation of the slaves on Staten Island, there were, in Westfield, 230; Southfield, 154; Northfield, 182, and in Castleton, 132. A gentleman who resides in West New Brighton at the present time, informs us that he attended the celebration with boyish curiosity, and has never witnessed anything since that compared with it for genuine happiness. Almost every colored man, woman, and child on the Island participated in the festivities of the occasion. They sang the old songs; they "praised de Lo'd;" they fired off firecrackers, and they scattered all along the shady embankment of the Kills far up and down the shore. They were joined by crowds of emancipated slaves from Long Island and New Jersey.

Speeches were made by both Democrats and Whigs, and scores of prominent officials were present. The committee of arrangements, which consisted of the more prominent colored men, entertained, with all the respect and dignity that the occasion demanded, the officials and leading citizens of the county. The official reception took place in the parlor, and there were present: Harmanus Garrison, Member of Assembly; Judge Jacob Tysen, County Clerk Jonathan Lewis, Surrogate Tunis Egbert, Sheriff Walter Betts, District Attorney Henry B. Metcalfe, Supervisors Isaac R. Housman, of Castleton; Nicholas Crocheron, of Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, of Southfield, and Gilbert Totten, of Westfield.

The sky never seemed so bright to those simple-minded people as on that day; the world was never so big and important, and life never before seemed so real.

Scores of old masters mingled in the crowds of happy negroes, sharing the pleasures of the occasion and extending the hand of friendship. It is a fact worthy of recording in this connection, that scarcely an emancipated slave sought a new home, but returned to their masters to serve them no longer as bondmen, but as freemen. Many of them remained throughout the years that followed in the old homes, and were placed at their death alongside of their old white friends in the family burial plots of the Island.

The celebration consumed the better part of two days, for it was long before sunrise that the happy throngs began to gather at the scene, scores of them having walked all the way from the vicinity of Billopp's Point. And it was long past midnight when many of them attempted to retrace their steps across the wooded hills of the Island, reaching their homes only when broad daylight had come again. It is said that one reason why there was such a large attendance, was a rumor that had been circulated among the colored people to the effect that all those who did not attend the celebration might be taken into slavery at any time, without a moment's warning. Weeks had

Digitized by Google

been consumed in making preparations, and many old and decrepit negroes and their wives had given out through fatigue, on their way to the North Shore.

The celebration had a double meaning. For some time previous to it there had been almost a panic among the superstitious people of the Island. Somebody had predicted that the Island was going to sink, and among the colored people especially the characteristic apprehensions of such an event were intensely exciting. It was the subject of conversation in every house, and wherever the people, white or colored, chanced to meet. Many old residents became so excited over the matter that they sold their property at a discount and removed from the Island. It is said that many crossed over to New Jersey, and stood along the shore almost breathless, momentarily expecting to see the Island sink down into the water and go out of sight forever.

The slaves had reasoned among themselves that this "punishment by de Lo'd" was caused by their bondage, and that it had been abandoned in consequence of the abolition of slavery. They sang over and over a song that had been written for the occasion, and their praises in that form were heard for many miles. One verse was repeated to the writer by an old citizen who heard it:

"De Lo'd am good to de culled folks,
Shout, glory, hallelujah!
He makes us free wid de mighty strokes,
Shout, glory, hallelujah!
He bresses all dat He t'inks deserves
Freedom from marsa what he serves;
So, brudder, exercise yo' nerves—
Shout, glory, hallelujah!"

Benjamin Perine, of Elm street, Port Richmond, had the honor of being the eldest resident of the Island. His mother was a slave, belonging to the Rev. Peter I. Van Pelt, who was for nearly half a century pastor of the Port Richmond Dutch Reformed Church. Her grave is in the shadow of that old church.

Benjamin was born at Dr. Van Pelt's house on Richmond terrace (where Mrs. Tainter's residence is now located), then Mersereau's Ferry, on December 2, 1796, and was therefore in his one hundred and fourth year. His mother had been a faithful servant for a long time in Dr. Van Pelt's family. Benjamin was born a little more than a year before the Legislature of this State passed a law declaring that all children born of slaves after 1798, should be free, as has already been stated in this chapter. He had a brother, named Fortune, born November 11, 1804, and on July 11, 1805, Dr. Van Pelt issued a certificate announcing the fact and relinquishing all claim upon him.

Digitized by Google

When Benjamin was about eighteen years of age, Dr. Van Pelt sold him to Mr. Ridgeway, whose old homestead still stands in a field at Long Neck, on the south side of the Richmond turnpike, between Bull's Head and Travisville.

Benjamin remained with Mr. Ridgeway until slavery was abolished, in 1825, and on the Fourth of July of that year attended the celebration in honor of that event.

In the old days when Commodore Vanderbilt ran a ferry between Staten Island and New York, Benjamin was a deckhand on one of the boats which the elder Captain Braisted commanded, and for which John W. Barnes was collector. He remembered leaving the old Commodore standing at the wharf once, because he did not get on the boat at the time it should start. Some thought Captain Braisted would lose his position, but instead he was complimented by the old Commodore for attending strictly to business.

Benjamin next worked for Dr. John T. Harrison, whose residence was at Elm Park. For several years prior to its demolition the house was known as "Brown's Elm Park Hotel." The grove of elm trees so familiar to the people of the Island to-day, Benjamin helped to plant, back in the early thirties. The old man next worked for Captain Garret P. Wright, of Mariners' Harbor.

For thirty-five years Benjamin was a trusted servant of the late Captain Christopher C. Jones, of Mariners' Harbor. The old man spoke of his kind employer with the utmost reverence. "De Lo'd neber did make such anuder man as dea' ol' Cap'n Chris'y! Wh'y, sah, dat man used to put t'ousands o' dolla's in dem ol' han's. He trus' me wi' eb'rythin', he did. I los' a fr'en' w'en Cap'n Chris'y died, I did." Captain Jones made provision for the old man in his will.

The old man did not give up work entirely until within about one year ago, when serious illness kept him in his room for a long time. He was an interesting old man to chat with—was kind and respectful. He remembered many events of the passing generations with whom he has mingled, and had a kind word for all. He was the last person that lived under the ban of slavery on Staten Island—the last native citizen that knew not the blessings of liberty at his birth. He died on October 3, 1900.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V.

THE WHIPPING-POST AT RICHMOND.

THE whipping-post is an institution unknown to the present generation of Staten Islanders; yet the fact remains that it existed near the county jail at Stony Brook, about 1694, but was abolished in the early part of the following century. The inference is that there were so few criminals to be punished, that it "did not pay ye public whipper to come all ye way from New Amsterdam to Staaten Islandt" to perform that duty.

About 1710, a whipping-post was established at Cucklestown, and was located on the elevation, between St. Andrew's Church and the roadway leading up the steep side of Richmond Hill, on or near the spot where the public school building now stands. It was evidently erected to meet an emergency, for in the same year in which we learn of its existence there were two "public whippings." One was to punish a German who had "refused to aid a constable in conveying a drunken man to the County Gaol." His sentence was to "receive fifteen lashes on ye bare back, and to remain a criminal in ye County Gaol for a term of fifteen days."

The other was "a slave belonging to Mr. Ryerss, who h'd maliciously & stealthfully enter'd upon the premises of Mr. DuPuy, and appropriated unto himself a number of choice and valuable fowl." His punishment was after this manner: "It is ye sentence of ye court of his majesty, ye king of Great Britain, Ireland, Scotland, etc., by ye grace, etc., that ye def't be ty'd to ye whip'g post at Cucklestown, and that ye public whip'r lay upon ye strip'd & bare back of ye s'd def't five and twenty lashes; that ye s'd def't be imprisoned for a term of twelve days in ye County Gaol, & then return'd to ye s'd whip'g post to rec. ten additional lashes."

A worthless sort of a fellow, known over the Island as "Sam," was repeatedly flogged there, and he rather prided in being the only person who could submit to the terrible ordeal without a murmur. He would wager with people who did not know him that he could accomplish the painful task, and it is said of him that he won a great deal of money by that means. In fact, it was his principal source of revenue. The story is handed down to us that the miserable fellow submitted to at least fifty floggings during a space of eighteen years. The secret of his strange conduct is revealed in the fact that he died in an insane asylum at the end of that period.

Digitized by Google

And would you believe it—right here on Staten Island witches were punished at the whipping-post. Men and women were charged with "bargaining with the devil, and possessing power to torment whomsoever they pleased." Many believed that the devil was very much like a man in form, only that he had wings like a bat, a tail, cloven feet, and horns; that he was able to confer great power on witches, enabling them by infernal arts to raise storms, sink ships, afflict children with fits, kill cattle, and set chairs and tables to dancing; that they had power to make themselves invisible, creep through keyholes, ride on broomsticks through the air, and that it was a special delight to hold their orgies in thunderstorms. With some, to doubt the existence of witches was to reject the teachings of the Bible.

During the early existence of this post not a few who were adjudged of witchcraft were carried over to Stony Brook and summarily punished. In the neighborhood of Holland's Hook there was an old lady who gave the superstitious people of that section a great deal of trouble; but the whipping-post cured her effectually. It was generally believed that she was in league with the devil. Many houses along the North Shore had horseshoes nailed over the front door, to prevent witches from entering.

COLE HOMESTEAD, GIFFORDS; NEARLY TWO HUNDRED YEARS OLD

Let us return to the old whipping-post at Richmond. One of Knyphausen's Hessian soldiers received thirty lashes at that post, by order of Sir William Howe, for having assaulted the wife of a Tory farmer who was friendly to the royal invaders. That was a few days after the landing of the British forces on Staten Island.

There is a story to the effect that an organized gang of desperadoes came to Staten Island about 1795, and made demands upon the people for money. They generally operated when the occupants of the houses were asleep and were unable to defend themselves, and if they refused to comply with their demands, they were subjected to all manner of insults, and sometimes were roughly assaulted. One night several of the neighbors, anticipating a visit from the ruffians, lay in ambush, and when they arrived succeeded in capturing the leader,

Digitized by Google

whom they carried off to the whipping-post and flogged until he revealed all the names of the gang, and the location of their headquarters.

For many years petty criminals, generally, were punished at the whipping-post. Perpetrators of small thefts received from five to twelve lashes, and greater ones in proportion. Laziness was not tolerated among the people of the Island in the old days, and the whipping-post was held up as a terror to the indolent and shiftless, not a few being sent there to pay the penalty.

It is remarkable that so few allusions are made to the whipping-post in the county records, while there is so much that is traditional surrounding it. The last flogging of which there is any mention was that of a negro who had attempted to secure the release of a prisoner from the Old Red Jail at Richmond. He was caught in the act, and it is said he received seventy lashes for his pains, besides serving a long time in jail.

We have failed to discover any record of the date of the abolishment of the whipping-post at Richmond; but we are sure that it was in existence as late as 1824. It was located on the border of the Town of Northfield. That town, at its April elections, made provisions for a whipper, but we have been unable to discover similar arrangements in any of the other towns. The first mention of a "whipper" was the election of Daniel Salter, in 1784. He held the double office of "Constable and whipper" until 1788. In the Northfield town records we find this statement:

"October 15th, 1788 then Elected Richard Merril In Keeper as constable for the remainin part of the ensuing year in Leau of Daniel Salter who has removed to Hackensack.

"Town Meeting being held at the house of Richard Merril for that purpose. RICHARD MERRIL, Collector."

Lewis Dey held the offices of constable, collector, and whipper from 1789 to 1792; Richard Taylor in 1793; John Nicholas and William Upton in 1795; the same in 1796, and probably in the following year. In 1798 John Christopher and Samuel Parker held the office; in 1799, Samuel Parker and Peter Decker; and in 1800, the title of "whipper" seems to have been entirely discarded.

Beside the spot where the whipping-post stood, were erected the gallows on which the first legal execution on the Island took place. The only record of the event is found in the minutes of the Board of Supervisors, as follows:

"Decemb'r 1, 1789.

"To Richard Scarrett, for digging a Grave, £0. 10. 0.

"To Lewis Dey, for Boarding the Carpenters when repairing the County House & Building the Gallows & Furnishing 100 shingles 1 Bushel of Lime a pair of hinges & For fetching Anthony Cornish from New York Gaol fees &c &c £6. 0. 0.

Digitized by Google

"To Lewis Ryerss (then sheriff) for two locks for the Gaol, for going to New York for to Report Anthony Cornishs Escape from Gaol, for going to New York when he was apprehended, for Fetching him from New York, Making the Gallows & Executing of Anthony Cornish, for Expenses of Apprehending of sd Cornish at New York, Gaol costs £16. 16. 0."

Cornish was a negro, and had committed murder on a vessel at anchor in the Staten Island Sound. A farmer and his sons took the law in their own hands and executed a negro on their farm, near the Elm Tree lighthouse, below New Dorp, about the same period, for killing their cattle; and notwithstanding the many criminal acts that have been perpetrated on the Island since then, there was not another execution at Richmond until 1878, when Rheinhardt gave his own life for the brutal murder of his wife.

The whipping-post seems to have vanished from Staten Island, as well as from other parts of the State, without any apparent opposition, we believe, by an act of the Legislature. Many looked upon the institution as a relic of barbarism, and those who advocate it now are considered far behind the times.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VI.

OLD STATEN ISLAND FAMILIES.

ONE of the most difficult tasks that the historian undertakes is that of collecting and deciphering the entangled genealogy of old families. For centuries it did not seem to be worth the effort to the average person to keep in mind the story of ancestors. It was especially so on Staten Island. However, this ground has been gone over pretty thoroughly during the last quarter of a century. We are greatly indebted to the efforts of the late Raymond Tysen, the late Professor Charles Anthon, the late Rev. Peter I. Van Pelt, the late Judge John J. Clute, the compilers of Preston's "History of Richmond County," Mrs. Bleeker Bangs, David J. Tysen, Esq., and others for the valuable material which we are enabled to place under the caption of this chapter. We have also interviewed scores of old citizens, here and elsewhere, besides perusing county and church records, and are thus enabled not only to add new material, but to correct some popular errors.

ALSTON.

The Alston family was originally Scotch, but there is one in this country which came from England. One of its most noted members was Charles Alston, a celebrated Scotch physician and author. He died in 1760. Joseph Alston, the son-in-law of Aaron Burr and Governor of South Carolina in 1812, was also of this family. The first of the name on Staten Island was David Alston, who came from the vicinity of Rahway, New Jersey, shortly after the commencement of the Revolution. He was a noted Loyalist. He owned the property recently belonging to the estate of Samuel Decker, deceased, in Northfield. The large stone house in which he lived and died was demolished a few years ago. He died between the 6th and 14th of May, 1805, for these are the dates of his will and its probate. He speaks in that document of his sons, Warren, Japhet, and David. His son Japhet, at the time of his death, which occurred July 31, 1842, at Castleton Corners, was the father of the late Moses Alston, who was twice sheriff of Richmond County, and his brothers were David, Japhet, Adam, George, and William. Counselor Lot C. Alston is the representative on the Island to-day.

Digitized by Google

ANDROVETTE.

This is one of the old French families of Staten Island, who appear to have confined themselves chiefly to Westfield. John is mentioned in the county records as having bought land of Tunis Egbert, on January 27, 1699, and as having sold land in 1705. Peter Androvette and Rebecca Cole had the following children: Daughter Rebecca, baptized March 27, 1720; daughter Elizabeth, baptized December 25, 1723, died in infancy; twins, Elizabeth and Anna, baptized January 1, 1726. John married Leah Swaim, and they had a son baptized April 7, 1729, and a daughter, Leah, baptized May 17, 1724; this John is mentioned as collector of the West Division, in 1767 and 1768. Peter and Caty, his wife, had a son Peter, born July 6, 1765; he made his will December 21, 1792, proved March 17, 1802, in which he speaks of his wife, Catherine, his daughter, Catherine, wife of Dow Storer; daughter Elizabeth, wife of Peter Latourette; daughter, Mary, wife of Joseph Totten; sons, Peter, Charles, and John. These three sons were married as follows: Peter and Elizabeth Slack, January 4, 1789; Charles and Margaret Slack, September 11, 1797, and John and Ann Cole, August 21, 1802. The family is at present represented by the brothers Cornelius C., John, and Benjamin; their grandfather was known as Major John, and their father as Young Major John. The family is still quite numerous in the western part of the Island.

ARROWSMITH.

This family is of English descent. Thomas and Edward lived on the Island during the first half of the eighteenth century. There is every indication that they were aristocratic in their manner of living. Thomas commanded a company of militiamen in the Colonial service, and was also a judge in this county. The Arrowsmiths were related to the Christophers by marriage. The name is entirely extinct at this time on Staten Island.

BARNES.

George and Roger Barnes were brothers. They came from England many years before the Revolution. Roger bought land in Southfield, in February, 1762; George, about 1770, bought land in Castleton, and settled upon it. This was a large tract lying at the southwest corner of the turnpike and the Manor road. Constanz brewery and the Child's Nursery occupy a part of it. Roger's wife's name was Ann, and they had a son named Robert, born May, 1760, and a daughter, Margaret, born April 8, 1766. George's wife's name was Dorothy, and they had the following children: Elizabeth, born July 18, 1767;

Digitized by Google

John, born October 11, 1768; Roger, born January 7, 1771. They had also a son George. Roger married Sally Lake, a sister of Bornt Lake, and after the death of Roger, she married Richard Wood. John married Margaret Perine, May 2, 1793, and they were the parents of the late Captain John W. Barnes, of Port Richmond, and grandparents of Barnes Brothers, of the same place.

BEATTY.

The founders of the family came here from England after the Revolution. It is quite probable that they were among the British soldiers who left the service at the end of the war and settled here. The name is very seldom mentioned in the county records. John is the first of which we have any knowledge. He had a son, named Edward, who died July 17, 1825, aged over eighty-one years. They owned the property lying between the Moravian Church and the Patten House, at New Dorp, and were prominent as supporters of that church. The name exists on Staten Island at this time; but the present family is not related to that which settled here long ago.

BEDELL.

The name of Bedell we find at an early date in this country; but not in connection with Staten Island. In 1673 we find Robert Bedell, Daniel Bedell, Matthew Bedell, and John Bedell enrolled among the inhabitants of Hempstead, Long Island. It is nearly a century after that date that we find the name in any of the records of Richmond County. In 1767, Silas Bedell rendered a bill for "doctoring." In the same year mention is made of John Bedell, who was county treasurer, when he died, in the early part of 1781. There is a Joseph Bedell mentioned also in 1770; but he is not the Joseph alluded to elsewhere as having been captured by the Americans when a boy; they were father and son. The father made his will October 28, 1793, proved November 19th of the same year, in which he speaks of his sons, Jesse and Joseph, and his daughters, Mary, Pattie, Peggie, Catherine, and Jane; his wife's name was Catherine; his son Joseph was born October 24, 1763; Jesse was born in 1773, and died August 28, 1852. Stephen married Catherine Latourette in May, 1766, and had a son David, born July 19, 1771. Silas (the doctor), and Mary, his wife, had the following children: Phebe, born November 19, 1770; James, born April 9, 1773; John, born March 28, 1775. James married Hetty Parker, January 12, 1806. There was another John, whose wife was named Catherine, and who had a daughter Hillite, born April 7, 1771.

Digitized by Google

Stephen Bedell and Mary Donnelly were married March 9, 1808; Israel died at Elizabethtown, New Jersey, August 30, 1830; he was the father of the Rev. Gregory Townsend Bedell, who became a bishop in the Episcopalian Church, and who was born in the "Rose and Crown" farmhouse at New Dorp, October 28, 1793, and died August 30, 1834. Rev. Dr. Bedell was the father of Rev. G. Thurston Bedell. The Bedells are numerous on the Island to-day.

BILLOPP.

This was one of the oldest families on Staten Island of which we have any authentic information. It was first known here in 1668, when Captain Christopher Billopp came to Perth Amboy, opposite the present site of Tottenville, in the ship "Bentley," in which he sailed around the Island in accordance with the requirements of the Duke of York, and thus decided that Staten Island was in the Province of New York. His daughter, Eugenia, married Thomas Farmer, her cousin, and their son was the famous Colonel Christopher Billopp, of the Revolution. A full account of this family is given in Chapters XVI. and XVII. of the first volume of this work.

EGBERT HOUSE, NEAR MANOR ROAD.

BLAKE.

One branch of this family is of English origin. The date of their arrival on Staten Island was, probably, just anterior to the middle of the last century. The first name of the family we find in the county records is William, who married Mary Woglom; they had the following children: John, born September 28, 1763, died September 30, 1852; William, born April 21, 1766, died January 16, 1852; and Edward, born 1773, and died December 14, 1845. John married Tibitha Merrill; William married Ann Corsen, and had the following children: Daniel (deceased), William (deceased), Richard C., Edward,

Digitized by Google

and George. Edward was the father of Mrs. Margaret Minott, of West New Brighton. John W. owned and occupied the property at the corner of Mill and Manor roads, West New Brighton, extending westward on both sides of Cherry lane, and embracing the site of the late dye works of Barrett, Nephews & Co. William owned and occupied the property on the Little Clove road, subsequently owned by D. Porter Lord. Daniel, son of William (deceased), had a son Daniel; he is the captain in command of the police force of the Borough of Richmond. The old family homestead is still standing at New Springville, and was built in the Seventeenth century. (See p. 339, Vol. I.)

BODINE.

The Bodine family is of French origin. The first historical allusion to the name that we have found, is a brief biographical account of John Bodin, who was a native of Angers. The date of the emigration of the family to this country must have been in the latter part of the Seventeenth century, for we find the name of John Bodine mentioned in the county records as having purchased land in 1701, and he was still living in 1744, as we find his name and that of his wife, Hester, mentioned as having sold land at that date. Mention is also made in the records at Albany of John Bodein, in 1707. It is probable that he was an emigrant, as we find him preserving the French orthography of his name, Jean, and of his son who came with him, François, a witness to a baptism in the Reformed Dutch Church, in April, 1720; he was, therefore, a Protestant, or Huguenot. François married Maria Dey, and they had a son, named Jean, baptized in the same church, November 29, 1719. Of this second Jean, or John, we find no account, except that his wife's name was Dorcas, and that they had several children baptized. They were the parents of John Bodine, who was born in February, 1753, and of James Bodine, born in January, 1759. John died in March, 1835, nearly eighty-two years of age, and James, in May, 1838, nearly eighty years of age. John married Catherine Britton, sister of the late Nathaniel Britton. Their sons were John (usually recognized in local history as "Squire John"), Jacob (the father of the late William H. J. and Edmund Bodine), the late Captain John, James, Jacob, Albert, and Vincent. There were three daughters, who removed from the Island. James was the father of the late Abraham Bodine, of Mariners' Harbor, and of several sons and daughters now dead.

There are several branches of the family on the Island at the present time. In various parts of the country we also find the name, probably perpetuated by the descendants of the brother who originally settled here.

Digitized by Google

BOGART.

The Bogart family is of Dutch extraction. The name was originally written Bogaert. The earliest mention of the name in the Province of New York occurs in an assessment roll of Breucklen (Brooklyn), dated 1673, where Theunes Gibertse Bogaert is credited with having the largest assessment on the roll. In 1715, the name of Simon Bogaert was enrolled among the militia of Kings County. It was thought that this Simon had a brother Tunis, and that they were sons of Gysbert, for in the assessment mentioned above, he is rated for three polls (himself and two sons). Simon Bogaert and Margareitje Ten Eyck had the following children: Elizabet, baptized October 18, 1719; Margareta, baptized December 3, 1722; Simon, baptized May 19, 1726; Gysbert, baptized January 19, 1729, and Sarah, baptized February 13, 1732. Tunis and Catherine Hageman had the following children: Isaak, baptized November 21, 1718; Adrian, baptized December 18, 1720; Abraham, baptized April 21, 1723; Maria, baptized March 28, 1725; Cornelius, baptized March 2, 1729; Simon (probably son of Simon), and Martha, his wife, had the following children: Mary, born December 4, 1746; Simon, born June 19, 1754; Richard, born February 22, 1757. Isaac and Rachel had a son John, born October 14, 1770; also a son Simon, who was the father of Timothy C. Bogart, of near Castleton Corners.

BRAISTED.

The oldest notice of this name in the old church records is that of William and Christina Bauwman, his wife, who had a son, Johannes, baptized in 1715, and a son Andries, baptized August 18, 1719. In the county records he is mentioned as having purchased land in 1730. Johannes, or John, son of William, married Trintje Haughwout, and had a son, Jan, or John, baptized August 18, 1741, and a son, Peter, baptized August 15, 1743. All trace of the family is then lost for thirty years; then it appears again in the name of Egbert, and Rachel, his wife, who had a son Egbert, born May 6, 1773. The next and only remaining notice we have of the family in the last century is the marriage of John and Nantchie (Anna) Martling, daughter of John Martling, February 14, 1790. They had a son, Abraham Braisted, who, in "the thirties," commanded one of the ferryboats, plying between Staten Island and the city. He resided in a little story-and-a-half house, still standing on Minthorne street, Tompkinsville. In this house his son, James W., was born: this son afterward became the superintendent of the Staten Island ferry. The family is still represented by four sons of Captain Braisted, who still reside on the Island. A daughter married Henry C. Britton.

Digitized by Google

BRITTON.

The Brittons were of French descent, and their name was originally written Breton. The earliest mention of the name in connection with Staten Island, is that of Captain, sometimes called Colonel Nicklas, and who was born in 1679, and died January 12, 1740. The following is a copy of the inscription upon the tombstones of Colonel Nicklas Britten and his wife:

"Here lies ye Body of Col. Nicklas Britten, aged 61 years, Deceased January 12, 1740.

"Here lies a man of tender heart
Unto the poor in every part
He never sent the poor away
Which well is nown unto this Day."

"Here Lyes ye Body of Frances, wife of Col. Nichlas Britten, aged 66 years deceased May ye 7, 1748.

"This Woman who is buried here
This county has nown for many a year
A loving mistress, a faithful wife
A Tender Mother all her life."

These stones are still standing in the Moravian Cemetery at New Dorp, a short distance west of the church. We are informed that they have repeatedly been referred to in the settlement of legal matters.

William Britton was defendant in a suit at law, October 3, 1680. Nathaniel was plaintiff in a suit in July, 1681, and again in a suit with Lewes Lakerman in the same year. These last two named were adults when "Colonel Nicklas" was an infant; but the consanguinity between them can not now be ascertained. There was another William, a son of William, a son of Nicklas, probably. There was a Joseph, perhaps a brother of William, who had a son James, baptized April 23, 1707, and a daughter in 1708. There was also a Richard, who purchased land in 1694. Nathaniel made his will in 1683, but was still living in 1695. He was probably the same individual who was a party to the lawsuit alluded to above. Nathaniel and Esther Belleville had a daughter baptized April 17, 1732. Nathaniel and Mary, his wife, had the following children: Joseph, born November 15, 1760; Richard, born March 22, 1766; William, born September 19, 1768. Samuel and Mary had the following daughters: Addra, born July 7, 1771; Mary, born July 31, 1773. Nathaniel and Catherine had a daughter Mary, born April 4, 1775; at her baptism the father was also baptized. Samuel and Polly Latourette were married May 24, 1797. The present representative of one branch of the family is J.

Digitized by Google

A. H. Britton, of New Dorp; his father, Nathaniel, whose place of interment is marked by a marble monument at the southeast corner of the Church of the Ascension. Nathaniel was born in 1764 or 1765; he was twice married; his first wife was a Van Buskirk, of Bergen, and they were the parents of Deborah, wife of Joshua Mersereau, born August 4, 1782, died March 26, 1840; Cornelius, born July 1, 1785, died April 3, 1867; he resided at Fresh Kill for many years before his death. Abraham, born August 20, 1787, died August 26, 1866, resided on the Clove road in Castleton, and was the father of Henry and Abraham, both deceased, who resided on the paternal property. Nathaniel, Jr., born in 1792, died February 13, 1841, owned and resided on the property on the east side of Broadway, West New Brighton, extending the whole length of that highway. He had also another son, John. Nathaniel's second wife was Margaret Bedell, who was born January 5, 1768, and died September 21, 1849; she was the mother of J. A. H. Britton, as before mentioned.

BROILEAU.

Jacob Broileau, a French Huguenot, lived on Staten Island in 1722. He had a son, Isaac, born here that year. This fact is stated on Isaac Broileau's tombstone, at Arlington, Pennsylvania. When quite a young man, he left Staten Island and went to that State. He became a large landed proprietor. Both father and son were members of the Presbyterian Church at Stony Brook. Isaac had a son, Nathaniel B., who was Secretary of State of Pennsylvania, from 1808 to 1817; he was a graduate of Princeton College. Jacob Broileau's wife's name was Ann; her maiden name is unknown.

BURBANCK.

Abraham, John, and Peter Burbanck and two sisters, came from the Netherlands, Holland, in the ship "Caledonia." The vessel was partly wrecked on the passage, and the sisters were lost. The brothers landed in New York in the latter part of the Seventeenth century, and Abraham settled on Staten Island. They were of French and German stock. Abraham married a French lady; Abraham, son of Abraham the first, was born November 20, 1745, and died May 12, 1823; had children as follows: Jacob, born April 9, 1771, died September 14, 1854; Abraham, born 1780, died 1838.

The descendants of Jacob Burbanck, son of Abraham the second, were as follows: Jacob Burbanck first married Ann Wandel, and later, Lucy Hennell in 1830. There were children by the first wife as follows: Ann, born May 3, 1794, died November 29, 1854; Abraham,

Digitized by Google

born August 13, 1797, died August 26, 1797; Jacob Lackman, born June 22, 1799, died April 6, 1885; John William, born April 4, 1806; Aletta Eliza, born December 6, 1809; Ann, daughter of Jacob and Ann Burbanck, married Abraham Egbert, born April 26, 1791, had children as follows: Jacob Burbanck Miles, born December 8, 1816, died August 14, 1879; Ann Eliza, born April 12, 1818; Margaret Jane, born January 25, 1820, died March 21, 1873; Abraham Edward, born October 12, 1821; Stephen Henry, born December 8, 1823, died February 11, 1865; Rebecca Maria, born March 30, 1826; Catherine Hannah, born January 29, 1828; James, born September 4, 1830.

Jacob Burbanck Miles Egbert, first son of Abraham and Ann Egbert, was twice married; his first wife was Maria Simonson, his second wife, Catherine Simonson, sisters. The first wife had children as follows: Mary Elizabeth, born November 4, 1845; James and Lavinia, dates of births not known; they reside at Clifton. By the second wife he had sons, Cornelius and Chester. Mary Elizabeth Egbert married James J. Garretson, October 1, 1868, and had children as follows: Mary Elizabeth, George Jacob, Margaret Corson, Alice May, Irene, Ella, Sarah Louise, Arthur, Susie Bird, Jessie, Henry. James Egbert, son of Jacob Burbanck Miles Egbert, married and had children, and resides at Clifton, Staten Island. Lavinia Egbert, second daughter of Jacob Burbanck Miles Egbert, married William Race, and has the following children: Ann Eliza Egbert, first daughter of Abraham and Ann Egbert, married Nathan Britton, and their children are: Anna and John. Margaret Jane, second daughter of Abraham and Ann Egbert, married Nathaniel Swain, and has a son, George. Abraham Edward, second son of Abraham and Ann Egbert, married Mary Jane Burger. They had one daughter, Marrianna, and they have one daughter, named Mabel. Abraham Edward resides at Stapleton. Rebecca Maria, third daughter of Abraham, married John Barnes. James, fourth son of Abraham and Ann Egbert, married Amelia Laforge, and had children as follows: Pauline, Alice, Herbert, Elizabeth, and Percy. James Egbert resides at Tompkinsville.

Abraham Burbanck, second, married Catherine Haughwout, and had children as follows: Margaret, married Nicholas Youngman; Catharine, Charlette (by a second wife), married James Mink, of Albany; Richard C. married Catherine M. Douglass, and has children as follows: Margaret, Louise, Emma, Sarah, and Catherine. George married Catherine Relyea, and resides in Albany. Ann married George Holt. Isaac Burbanck, son of Abraham, second, married Sarah Egbert, and had children as follows: Mary Ann, married Vincent Bodine, and had two sons, Jacob and Vincent. Her husband died; she then married Stephen Martling, and had two daughters. She died, and her second husband married her sister, Sarah Jane, and she had children, Elizabeth and Mary Ann. Isaac Burbanck had children: Mary Ann, Sarah Jane, and Edward. Edward,

Digitized by Google

son of Isaac and Sarah Burbanck, has a son Edward, married and living at New Dorp. Elizabeth Martling, first daughter of Stephen and Sarah Jane Martling, married James Vreeland, of New Dorp; resides at New Dorp. Mary Ann Martling, second daughter of Stephen and Sarah Jane Martling, married John Bogart. John Burbanck, son of Abraham the second, had children as follows: Ann, Mary, Daniel, Henry, John, and Catherine. John and Peter Burbanck, sons of Abraham, second, reside at New Brighton. Rebecca Burbanck, first daughter of Abraham, second, married Austin Barton, and had children, Sarah and another. Mary Ann Burbanck, second daughter of Abraham, second, married John Decker. Jacob Lockman Burbanck, second son of Jacob and Ann, married Martha Washington Graham, and had children as follows: Elizabeth Anderson, George Edgar, Margaret Ann, Frances Louise. William Dudley was married, May 17, 1870, to Susan Jane Wood, and has children as follows: Jacobson Lockman, William Dudley, George Graham, Mary Eleanor Wood, and David Moore Ware.

John William Burbanck, third son of Jacob and Ann, was twice married; his first wife was Gertrude Egbert, and his second, Ann Egbert, sisters. Ann had children as follows: Hiram A., Ferdinand, and Mary Adalaide; by second wife: Eveline, Anna, and John Alfred. John William resided at Castleton Corners. Hiram A. Burbanck, son of John William and Gertrude, married and had one son, John William. Hiram resides at Castleton Corners. Evelina Burbanck, daughter of John William and Anna, married William Alston, and has one son, Theodore. Anna Burbanck, daughter of John William and Ann, married Sylvester Cobb, and has children, Mabel and Edward. John Alfred Burbanck, son of John William and Ann, died March 28, 1873. Alletta Eliza Burbanck, second daughter of Jacob, first, and Ann, married Samuel Wood, and has children as follows: Caroline Ann, Ellen, Jane Louise, Benjamin, Jacob, Augustus B., and Beekman. Samuel Wood died; his widow resides at City Island, Westchester County. Catherine Ann Wood, daughter of Samuel and Alletta Wood, married Joseph Brown. Ellen Wood, daughter of Samuel and Alletta Eliza Wood, married Benjamin Van Clief; had a son Charles. The old Burbanck homestead still stands on Richmond Terrace, at the foot of Taylor Street. A sister of Charles, Mrs. Catherine L. Rogers, still resides in the old house. Benjamin Wood, son of Samuel and Alletta Eliza Wood, married and has children. Augustus B. Wood, son of Samuel and Alletta Eliza Wood, married. John Burbanck, Jacob Lockman Burbanck's cousin, resides at New Dorp Beach, and his son, Samuel, resided at New Dorp for many years, where he died.

BURGER.

There are two distinct families by this name. Johannes Burger, from Geisman, came over in the ship "Stettin," in September, 1662,

Digitized by Google

There was an Elias Burger and Susanna Whitman, his wife, who had a son, Nathan, baptized February 23, 1724, and this is the first record of the name on Staten Island. Colonel Nicholas Burgher, evidently belonging to another branch of the family, was born January 23, 1768, and died May 23, 1839; he was the father of Matthias, John, James G., David, and others. John was the father of David Burgher, of Edgewater, the present representatives of the family spelling their name with an "h." The other family, who dispense with the "h" and adhere to the original orthography, are of comparatively recent connection with the Island. David D. Burger was born in South Carolina in 1777, and settled on Staten Island in 1814, where he died in February, 1831. He left several sons, of whom Nicholas, of Castleton Corners, and Samuel, of Bull's Head, survive.

The old Burger homestead stood, until within a few years, on the now vacant lot on Richmond terrace, between Burger avenue and Elm court, West New Brighton. Burger avenue was named in honor of the family that resided there.

BUSH.

This name, written Bosch in the Dutch records, was found on Staten Island early in the Eighteenth century. Joshua, or Josiah, had a son, Samuel, baptized 1706; Nicholas Bush and Elizabeth Drinkwater had the following children: Edward, baptized November 24, 1728; Barent, baptized September, 1734; Nicholas, baptized July 13, 1740. Garrett had a daughter Mary, baptized September 30, 1787, and a daughter Elizabeth, baptized August 30, 1789. Joseph and Mary Johnson were married December 10, 1792. Lambert and Mary Stillwell were married January 27, 1795.

Among the emigrants who came over in the ship "Fox," in August, 1662, we find the name of Jan Bossch, from Westphalia. There was another family of this name descended from John Bush, an Englishman, who fought at Bunker Hill, on the side of the Americans, and subsequently took up his residence on Staten Island, where he married and had one son, whose name was William, who was the father of the late John Bush, of Watchogue, in Northfield, and of Mrs. S. D. Kennison, of West New Brighton. The name is still quite prominent in Northfield. Charles H. Bush, a representative of the family, holds a position under the Borough government.

BUTLER.

This was one of the royalist families which was here before and during the Revolution. The earliest mention of the name in the church records is in 1732, when James and Sarah Corsen had a son,

Digitized by Google

John, baptized March 26. In St. Andrew's records we find the following: Henry and Balaesha (Baletta) had a son James, born May 8, 1759, and a son Nathaniel, born March 23, 1768. Thomas and Mary had a son James, born October 19, 1758, and a son Antony, born November 17, 1769. John and Rachel had a son Daniel, born October 29, 1758. John and Mary had a son Henry, baptized March 11, 1776. Thomas and Susan had a daughter Maria, baptized May 13, 1790. Thomas and Mary Herod married December 20, 1789. Daniel and Elizabeth Pray married December 29, 1807. The family until recently was represented by Talbot Butler, of Port Richmond, whose father was Thomas, and mother was Eleanor Crocheron, daughter of Abraham. Thomas had brothers—James, John, Elias, and Henry, and they were the sons of John. Thomas was twice married, his second wife being a Widow Blake, whose maiden name was Wood. There are still numerous representatives of the family on the Island, especially in Northfield and Westfield.

CANNON.

This family was here as early as 1680. Andreas (Andrew) was plaintiff in a suit in 1680, and was probably the progenitor. John and Maria Egbert had sons Abraham and Jacobus. David and Aeltje (Alida) Prall had the following children: Arent, David, and Andrias. Andrew and Mary Wright were married in December, 1795. The name exists on the Island at present, but there seems to be no connection between the families of that name of the past and present.

CHRISTOPHER.

The original of this name is Christoffel, which is the Dutch for Christopher (and means "Christ bearer"). The earliest mention of the family occurs in a church record as follows: Barent and Anna Catherina Stillwell had the following children baptized: Nicholas, August, 4, 1703; Catharyna, April 23, 1706, died young; Rebecka, April 25, 1708; Maria, 1710; Susanna, January 11, 1719; they had twins, Catherine and Barent, baptized August 13, 1716. This Barent is mentioned in the county records as having sold land in 1704. Stoffel also sold land the same year. Catherine Christopher, widow of Albert Ryckman, had a son Albert, baptized October 26, 1729. Hans (John) and Jane Arrowsmith had the following children baptized: Johannes, April 16, 1732; Bornt, April 14, 1734; Joseph, August 8, 1736; Richard, September 30, 1739. Nicholas and Christina Bowman had a son Bornt baptized November 27, 1726, and a daughter, September 26, 1731. Richard (above) and Esther, his wife, had the following

Digitized by Google

children: John Garrison, born September 18, 1770; Jane Grover, born August 30, 1772; Joseph, born May 9, 1775. Joseph, son of John, had a son Joseph, who was the father of Captain Richard Christopher, of West New Brighton.

John, just referred to, built the old stone house which he occupied for many years, and which is still standing at Willow Brook. It was in this venerable structure that the Committee of Safety met in the early part of the Revolution, Joseph Christopher, Sr., being a member of that body. Joseph afterward inherited the property; but in the early part of the present century he removed to the farm opposite the Frederick White estate, on the Manor Road, where his son Richard was born in 1814. This son is familiarly known as Captain Christopher, and still resides at West New Brighton. He celebrated his eighty-sixth birthday on July 18, 1900.

The Christophers originally came from Holland. One day, several years ago, the writer called upon Captain Christopher, and among the relics which he exhibited was one of particular interest. Pointing to an oblong box that rested in one corner of the storeroom of his residence, the captain said: "That was the cradle in which I was rocked. My mother was rocked to sleep in it; so was my grandfather, my great-grandmother, and my great-great-grandfather when he was a babe in Holland."

Captain Christopher had a son, William L., who died a few years since. He also has two daughters, Mrs. H. H. Bush, of West New Brighton, and Mrs. Cadmus.

There is another branch of the Christopher family on Staten Island, although it is almost extinct. The two families do not claim relationship. The old homestead occupied by the latter family was located on the "Latourette Hill road." Joseph Christopher, who at one time kept the old Richmond County Hall, in Richmond, and his brother Richard, who lived in the old Billopp house, at Tottenville, were born in this house. Another brother settled in Tyrrell County, North Carolina many years ago. This branch of the Christopher family were in sympathy with the British, while the other branch were very ardent patriots.

COLE.

The name originated in England, subjects fleeing from there to Holland during the Reformation period. They settled near Leyden, descendants later on emigrating to America. "Kool" is Dutch. In America it became Cool, then Cole, as in England to-day. Cornelius Lambert Cool, the first of his name in this country, emigrated about 1639, being one of the earliest pioneers.

He married Altien Brackhonge, and died previous to 1664, as, on "Sept. 4, 1661, Altien widow of Cornelius Lambertse Cool, married,

Digitized by Google

second, William Brendenbent from Cologne." Their children were: Altie, who married, first, Gerret Couvenhoven, and, second, Elbert Elbertson. Pieterje Cornalis married Claes J. Van Purmerent.

Lambert Cornelisse (Lambert's Lane on Staten Island, leading to Watchogue, derives its name from the Lambert Cools, Lambert descending among many Staten Island families). Lambert Cornelisse's wife is not known, but he had a son, Abraham Cool, who, in March, 1695, married Rebecca Britten (born 1668), daughter of Nathaniel Britten, of Breuckelen. (This Britten owned property at Flatlands and New Utrecht; in 1664, he received a patent for one hundred and forty-four acres on Staten Island, where he is buried; the Britton or French Breton family thus originates.)

In 1695, Abraham Cole sold Staten Island land. The county records show that on "March ye 4th, 1712, Abraham Cool is appointed Court Juror." He was also a judge in 1739. His children were Rebecca, Cornelius, Abraham, and, probably, Stephen and Peter. Rebecca married Peter Androvette; issue, Rebecca, Ann, and Elizabeth. Cornelius leaves no record. Abraham married and died about 1798. He donated the land occupied by the Woodrow Methodist Episcopal Church and cemetery. It is claimed that that church was organized in his house. He had two children: Elizabeth, baptized in 1754, and Martha, who married Joshua Woglom, February 10, 1796. No record is left of the birth, marriage, or death of Isaac. But he had two sons --Edward, born April 8, 1770, and died in 1848; Abraham, born December 25, 1736, married Abigail Johnson. He was a private in the Third Regiment, New Jersey line, commanded by Colonel David Chambers. This regiment was organized at Perth Amboy, and had a number of Staten Islanders in its ranks. Abraham died April 23, 1815. The children of Abraham and Abigail were William, Isaac, Abraham, Lydia, Ann, Esther, and Phebe.

William, born September 22, 1769, married Elizabeth Ann Totten. Their children were Mary, Gilbert Asbury, and William Asbury. Isaac, born 1772-3, died June 9, 1839; he married twice; his second wife was Martha Swaim. Their children were Abraham, John Taylor, Ann, Lydia Woglom, and Isaac Washington. Abraham, born November 19, 1778, married Ann Johnson. They had one son, Winant Johnson Cole. He married Mary Journeay. Their children were Joseph Albert, James, Journeay, Isaac, Abraham Johnson, Eugene Rodolphe, and Clarence Augustus Cole. Winant Johnson Cole was lost at sea.

Isaac, just mentioned, born September 15, 1808, on Staten Island, married Sarah Jane Gibson. Abraham, born September 23, 1810, married Ann M. Dissosway. Their children were: Cornelius D., who married Harriet D. Robinson; Jacob W., who married Lizzie Yarrance; Susan Ann, born March 7, 1846, married Paul Van Name; James T., born August 12, 1849, married Mina DeHart; Abram, born

Digitized by Google

April 8, 1856, married Blanche Martin. Their children, Ralph M. and Abram make the eighth generation of this family on Staten Island.

Susan Ann Cole, sister to Abraham, father of the Abraham just mentioned, was born July 4, 1813, and married Bornt Parlee Winant; Harriet, born November 29, 1815, married Peter Woglom; Mary Johnson, born November 26, 1818, married William H. Rutan; Jacob Winant, born in 1821, married Mary Woglom; Abigail, born April 20, 1825, married Jacob Winant.

Lydia Cole, sister to Rev. William, born in 1776, married Cornelius Woglom; died in 1833. Ann married John Totten. Esther married Marshall Swaim, and Phebe married David Latourette.

There are several branches of the family residing on the Island. We have confined our research almost exclusively to the branch to which ex-Supervisor Abram Cole, of Westfield, belongs.

Another branch of the family, however, was represented on Staten Island. Colonel William Cole, colonial secretary of Virginia, emigrated from London about 1650, and his descendants settled early in 1700 in Maryland, from whence they later removed to Staten Island. In the direct line from this progenitor of the family was Abraham Cole, born in 1736. Among his children was John B. Cole, born in 1770, who was twice married. His two sons, by the first marriage, Henry and George Cole, each represented their district for two terms in the State Legislature, and were active in promoting the interests of Richmond County. His second wife was Mary A. Cole, a descendant of the Cool family, who emigrated from England to Holland, and about the year 1680, came to America. Her father, Rev. William Cole, was well known as the pioneer of Methodism on Staten Island.

William A., the only son of John B. and Mary A. Cole, was born October 15, 1836, at New Dorp.

COLON.

The Colons were among the Huguenot settlers. There used to be several gravestones in the old French graveyard at Fresh Kill (Green Ridge), that bore the name, as there were also in the Dutch Reformed graveyard, at Richmond. Once in awhile the name appears in the county records. James Colon, George Colon, and John (elsewhere written Jones) Colon, were naturalized in May, 1770. There was also a Peter Colon in this county in 1774. The family is still represented on the Island by George A., Isaac A., and Thomas, residing on Amboy road, Giffords, and James, residing at Rossville.

CONNER.

Richard Conner came to Staten Island from Ireland about 1760, and purchased his landed estate at that time. He was almost im-

Digitized by Google

mediately placed in responsible offices, and continued to serve the public in various capacities until the time of his death. He was born in 1723, and died February 1, 1792. His wife, Catherine, died June 24, 1798, at the age of sixty-two. He made his will February 6, 1792, in which he speaks of his daughter, Ann, deceased, and of Catherine and Elizabeth, and his son Richard. Their graves are in the Moravian Cemetery, at New Dorp. One of his daughters married into the Garrison family, and was the mother of the late John Garrison, of Garrisons. Richard's only son, Richard, universally known as Colonel Conner, was for many years a prominent surveyor in this county, and held various offices of trust. He was born in 1763, and died April 5, 1853, leaving several sons, of whom the late A. V. Conner, a former sheriff and county clerk, was one. The family were always attached to the Moravian Church. There was another family of the same name on the Island in 1761, as appears by a record of a baptism of Adam, son of Jeremiah and Ann, in October of that year, but they were of a distinct family.

The family is represented on the Island now by Crowell M. Conner, deputy county clerk, residing at Richmond, and Clinton Conner, of New Dorp.

CORSEN.

This is one of the oldest families on Staten Island. The first mention of the name in connection with Staten Island occurs December 30, 1680, in a patent bearing that date, conveying to Cornelius Corsen, Andries Juriansen, Derrick Cornelisen, and John Peterson, one hundred and eighty acres of land, sixty acres of which belonged to Corsen, and forty acres to each of the others. This land is referred to in the patent of Governor Dongan to Palmer, and mentioned as land belonging to Cornelius Corsen and Company. Another patent to the same parties, of the same date, conveyed three hundred and twenty acres of land, lying westward of and bounded by the Mill Creek, besides thirty-two acres of salt meadow, "where most convenient." This Cornelius is designated as captain in a record in Albany, dated December 21, 1680. He is mentioned again in the county records as being plaintiff in a suit in January, 1681. He died December 7, 1693. He had at least three sons: Christian, second judge, and lieutenant-colonel in 1738; Cornelius, a justice, and Jacob, who made his will October 8, 1742, in which he makes the following bequests: His homestead to the son Jacob; £70 to his daughter Suster, wife of Johannes Simonson; £70 to his daughter Mary, wife of Joshua Mersereau; £70 to his son Douwe E., £70 to his son Benjamin; £70 to his daughter Rebecca, wife of John Blom; to his sons Douwe and Benjamin, all his lands in Hunterdon County, New Jersey; to his daughter Suster, all his lands on the west side of Staten Island; to his son Jacob, his silver-hilted sword and silk sash, and

Digitized by Google

all his other goods to his children equally. Daniel Corsen, who was county clerk in 1739, was probably another son of Captain Cornelius.

In the churchyard of the Reformed Church, at Port Richmond, there are still to be seen two old headstones, in the Dutch (Holland) language, bearing the names of Cornelius Corsen, who died March 26, 1755, and Jannetia Van Buskirk, who died in 1749.

Cornelius and Jannetje Van Buskirk had the following children: A daughter, baptized November 24, 1723; Peter, baptized August 13, 1725; Christian, baptized February 26, 1727; Cornelis, baptized February 23, 1729, died an infant; Cornelis, baptized February 21, 1731; Jacobus (Jacob), baptized October 22, 1732; Daniel, baptized March 9, 1735, died May 22, 1801; a daughter, baptized September, 19, 1736; and a daughter, baptized September 23, 1738.

The following is collected chiefly from church records: Cornelius, son of Benjamin, baptized May 4, 1714; Daniel, born 1714, died January 26, 1761; Captain Jacob, born 1707, died 1722; Benjamin and Blaudina Vile (Viele) had a son Benjamin, baptized August 3, 1718; Jacob and Cornelia Cruser had the following children: Jacob, baptized October 13, 1747, and three daughters, between 1739 and 1754; Douwe (son of Jacob and Jannetje Corsin, had a child baptized October 5, 1755; Daniel and Maria Stilwell had sons Richard and Daniel, both baptized September 7, 1753; Cornelius, Jr., had a son Cornelius, baptized September 2, 1787, and a daughter Jannetje (Jane), baptized October 17, 1790; Richard had a daughter Catherine, baptized August 30, 1789; Daniel and Elizabeth Bogart had a son Cornelius, baptized September 17, 1758, and a son William Howe, born November 24, 1776.

Daniel and Elizabeth Bogart, his wife, had also three other sons, John, Daniel, and Richard; Richard married Elizabeth Egbert, and they were the parents of Abraham E. Corsen, of Mariners' Harbor. Daniel built the stone house, still standing near the Richmond turnpike, at the southern terminus of Jewett avenue, and for a long time the property of the late A. C. Bradley, Esq.; subsequently Daniel owned a farm on the Clove road, recently the property of Haynes Lord, where he died, and the place came into the possession of his son Richard. William Howe Corsen lived to have a family of his own. A short time previous to the War of 1812, he was murdered, and his body concealed under a bridge on the public road.

Jacob had a daughter, baptized March 25, 1701, a son Jacob, baptized October 21, 1707 (see Captain Jacob, above), and a son Benjamin, baptized April 1, 1710. The late Hiram J., of New Springville, was the son of Cornelius V. B.; he was the son of Richard, and he was the son of Cornelius, who married a daughter of Captain Abraham Jones, who owned the estate on which the representative of the family, Mr. John J. Corsen, now resides. The Corsen homestead is situated on Rockland avenue, New Springville.

Digitized by Google

CORTELYOU.

This name in some of the old records is written Corteleau. It is of French origin, but was changed through a long residence in Holland, previous to emigration to America. The family was in this country at an early date. Jaques Cortelleau (so written by himself), was the surveyor who, in 1657, laid out the town of New Utrecht, on Long Island, into twenty lots of fifty acres each, one of which was assigned to him for his residence. He came to America in 1652. In 1687, when the inhabitants of Kings County took the oath of allegiance to James II., the name of Jaques Corteljau is found among them, with a note attached, that he had then been in the country thirty-five years. He had four sons, all of whom had been born on Long Island. Their names were Jaques, Jr., Cornelis, Peter, and William; still, in the assessment roll of New Utrecht for the year 1676, neither of their names appears.

The family on Staten Island is descended from that on Long Island. A part of them remained on Long Island, as, in 1738, we find the names of "pyeter kartelijou," and "alite kurtelijou," still at New Utrecht. The first mention of the name in the church records of Staten Island is that of Jaques and his wife, Jacomynytie (Jemima) Van Pelt, who had a daughter Deborah, baptized December 26, 1720. Aaron, who was born in 1726, and died August 22, 1787, was the son of Jaques and Jacomynytie, as they appear to have been the only family of the name on Staten Island. Aaron had a son Peter, born December 27, 1768, and died February 3, 1857, and he was the father of the late Judge Lawrence H. Cortelyou. Aaron was one of the original members of the Moravian Church, at New Dorp. There was a Jacob, probably a brother of Peter, born August 26, 1760, and died February 7, 1817. There is a record of Peter, who married Sarah Van Pelt, December 31, 1801.

The family is now represented on Staten Island by David H. Cortelyou, son of the late Lawrence H., who resides on the Manor road, West New Brighton. He owns the old family estate at Green Ridge. In 1861, before he had reached his majority, he enlisted in the Sixth New York Cavalry, which was then being organized on Staten Island. He was immediately appointed to a non-commissioned office. Before the war ended, he had reached the rank of captain. He was in innumerable battles, and while in command of the brigade pickets at Cold Harbor, was shot in the left shoulder by a Confederate sharpshooter. He became paralyzed, and for a year was perfectly helpless. Upon his recovery, he was commissioned second lieutenant in the regular army, and served on the staffs of Generals Hancock and Sheridan, after which he was promoted and transferred to the Ninth Cavalry. He was again promoted to captain, and for a while acted as major. After serving through some Indian campaigns, his old wounds

Digitized by Google

rendered it necessary for him to quit the service, and he was honorably retired with nine years to his credit. After returning to his home on Staten Island, he was elected county clerk. He has also held the office of justice of the peace, and is now secretary of the Richmond County Mutual Insurance Company.

CRIPS.

In the early part of the century, there were many living here by that name. It is now extinct. The earliest notice of the name in this county, is the marriage of John Crips and Margaret Bety (Beatty) January 5, 1761. They had a son William, born April 28, 1764. William and Sarah had a daughter Elizabeth, baptized June 23, 1771. Thomas Crips and Mary Perrine were married in November, 1791. James and Elizabeth Blake were married October 1, 1801. There was a Richard mentioned in the county records in 1766.

CHOCHERON.

The first representative of the Crocheron family of whom we have any definite knowledge, was John, a planter, whose will was dated December 13, 1695, and he appears to have died within a year from that time, for the will is recorded September 3, 1696. His wife's name was Mary, and they had two sons, Nicholas and Anthony, the former being the elder. Henry Crocheron and Nannie, his wife, had the following sons: John, born April 13, 1770; Henry, born December 26, 1772; Jacob, born August 23, 1774; he married Mary Oakley, February 22, 1779, and was sheriff of Richmond County and held other positions of trust, and Reuben, baptized September 24, 1789.

Abraham Crocheron and Elizabeth, his wife, had a son Nicholas, born August 9, 1761, and died December 30, 1817. Henry was born March 22, 1766. There was another Abraham and Margaret, his wife, who had a son Daniel, born January 15, 1770. Daniel and Sarah had a daughter Mary, born April 8, 1775. John Crocheron and Jenny had a daughter Mary, born March 4, 1773. Abraham and Mary Prall had a son Abraham, born September 4, 1787, and a son Benjamin, baptized June 28, 1789. Benjamin died a few years ago on the Old Place road; his wife was Susannah Prall, his cousin. Abraham, the father, formerly owned the farm now a part of New Brighton. Another Daniel had a son Daniel, born June 9, 1788. John and Hannah Housman were married February 10, 1792. Daniel and Jane Jones were married November 29, 1798. Nicholas and Abigail Winant were married May 28, 1801.

Henry Crocheron was Member of Congress in 1829 and 1831; presidential elector in 1836; sheriff in 1802, 1811, and 1821. Nicholas was Member of Assembly in 1854. Richard was County Treasurer

Digitized by Google

and Surrogate in 1836, and for some time thereafter. The family is of French descent.

There is a thrilling incident in the tradition of John Crocheron, the founder of the family on Staten Island, whose residence is standing at New Springville, in a mutilated condition. (See p. 69, Vol. I.) It is said that John was a prominent Huguenot, and had spoken so freely against the persecutions to which his sect were subjected, that he had gained the envy of his opponents. He was marked for execution, and in order to make his escape, he was placed in a hogshead by friends, and carried on board the vessel that brought his neighbors across the Atlantic Ocean. He came directly to Staten Island, and, so far as is known, made his home at Stony Brook until he could secure title to land at Long Neck (New Springville).

CROPSEY.

This name is variously recorded in American history and legal documents, viz.: Kasparse, Casparse, Casperts, Caspersen, Crasper, Crepse, Crapsey, Cropsy, and Cropsey, which latter mode stands as final with all Eastern descendants.

The first Cropseys in America were Joost Casparse, or Kasparse, his brother, Johannes, and their mother, Geertje. They emigrated from Gronigen, Holland, in 1652, but were not Hollanders. There is every proof that Germany was originally the parental country. Joost and Johannes Casparse were, by name and complexion, identified with Germany—Holland having no "Caspers" unless they be of German extraction.

The name is forever preserved in the United States, where there exist three towns: Cropseyville, New York; Cropsey, Nebraska; Cropsey, Illinois, and New Utrecht's beautiful driveway, Cropsey avenue. Beside this, many descendants have conspicuously distinguished themselves in American history, both East and West.

Joost and Johannes settled on Long Island, but not till 1661 does record appear of their land, or public services. In 1663, on the old Bushwick muster-roll appear the names of privates Joost and Johannes Caspersen, Melle Caspersen, and Jan Caspersen, ensign. In 1683, Johannes Kasparse was assessed for five morgans of land and some cattle, amount of tax being £77. In 1687, Joost and Johannes took the oath of allegiance in Breuckelen.

Joost Casparse married, June 10, 1663, Catharine, daughter of Abraham Lothie, and widow of Peter Prae. His second marriage was to Magdalen Jans. His children were: Johannes Casperse, baptized March 16, 1697, at Flatbush. Cathren Casparse, baptized February 6, 1681, died an infant. Cathren (second), Casparse, married in 1700 to Johannes Taxsel. Jannetje Casparse, baptized April 6, 1684. Joost Casparse, Jr., the first, died May 21, 1729. (In English the Dutch

Digitized by Google

word "Joost" has become Jasper or Casper.) He married, first, Maria Storm; second, on August 9, 1693, Wyntje Jurex, and, third, on July 28, 1695, Jennetje Jacobs. His children were Derrick, Abraham, David, Gertrude, Melle, and Jasper.

Casper Casparse purchased lands originally owned by Michael Hans Bergen, located by the present Sea Beach Ferry, foot of Sixty-fifth street, Bay Ridge. The first Cropsey homestead was built there. Casper married, May 27, 1749, Margretje (Maria) Barkaloo. The children of Casper and Maria were: Jacobus or James, Andries or Andrew, Valentine, Hendrick or Henry, Johannes or John, Harmanus or Harmon, Willhelmus or William, Maria, Sarah, and Catherine.

Jacobus, just mentioned, lived until 1830. The Christian name of his wife, whom he married October 14, 1810, was Maria. Their children were Jaques, William, and James Edward. Andries or Andrew Cropsey was born in 1750, and died about 1800. He married Eida Ryerson, of the Wallabout, Brooklyn.

The children of Andrew and Ida were Jasper, married; Jacob, who died about 1718; Nancy, who married William H. DeNyse, and Jerome Ryerson Cropsey, who married Elizabeth Williams, of Staten Island. They had one child, Andrew Jackson Cropsey, born 1816, and died in 1893. He married Louisa M. Hardy. Their children were Jerome H., Andrew G., William H., Annie E., Ada H., Harry N., and Ella.

In the direct line from Joost, or Jasper Casparse, Jr., comes Andries, or Andrew, whose children are mentioned above; Harmanus or Harmon, born September 2, 1753. (He was a deacon in the New Utrecht Dutch Reformed Church; served in the Revolution, in Colonel Covenhoven's Kings County Militia as a lieutenant.) He married, first, Ann Covenhoven; second, Elizabeth Rezeau. Issue: Harmon B., Jasper, Maria, Sarah, Jacob R., and Elizabeth.

Harmon B., just mentioned, became a prominent man on Staten Island. He was for a long time manager of old Richmond County Hall, in Richmond. He was sheriff of the county in 1828; State Senator from Staten Island in 1832-5.

Jacob Rezeau Cropsey was born on January 16, 1801. He married Elizabeth Cortelyou, and lived for many years near Rossville. Their children were Jasper Francis, Cornelius, who died unmarried; Peter, who died unmarried; Emma E., who married Nicholas C. Miller; Sarah Ann, who married William Charles Moore; Ella B., who married Arthur Gillander, and Harmon B., who still resides near Rossville.

Jasper Francis Cropsey became celebrated as an artist, not only in his own country, but also in some of the leading countries of the Old World. He always loved his native Staten Island, and discovered many beautiful nooks upon it, the pictures of which he placed upon canvas. One of his most noted pictures, we are informed, was from

Digitized by Google

a scene very familiar to our people. It may be described as the beautiful expanse of tree-studded landscape lying west of Egbert avenue, between the little hamlet of Morganville and the deep ravine at the approach to Meisner's Hill. This picture was greatly admired in France and Italy, as well as in America. Mr. Cropsey died in June, 1900, and was buried at New Dorp.

CRUSER.

The family is of Dutch descent. In the county and town records the name is spelled Cruser, Cruise, Croes, Kroesen, Kruzer, etc. Garret was probably the first of the name in America. In 1676, we find him rated in Breucklyn. It is probable that he removed to Staten Island the following year, for then Sir Edmond Andros granted him a patent for one hundred and sixty acres of land on Staten Island. He had the following sons: Hendrick, Cornelius, Dirk or Derick, Garret, and Jan. Hendrick, who was perhaps the eldest, had several children baptized on Staten Island, between 1698 and 1716. Cornelius married Helen Van Tuyl, a daughter of Otto Van Tuyl, and had the following children baptized here: Hendrick, October 10, 1731; Abraham, July 29, 1733, died March 11, 1770, and Cornelius, August 8, 1736.

Derick had the following children baptized here: Nicklas, May 6, 1696; Derick, October 22, 1701; Hendrick, July 3, 1707. Garret had the following children baptized here: Cornelius, October 23, 1711; Derick, October 18, 1713; Garret, April 1, 1717. Jan had a daughter Elizabeth, baptized July 14, 1713. Cornelius, son of Cornelius and grandson of Garret, married Beeltje de Groot, and had a son Cornelius, baptized August 26, 1759. Abraham, son of Cornelius and grandson of Garret, married Antge Simonson, and had a son Johannes, or John, baptized June 4, 1760. (This John had a daughter Elizabeth, baptized May 10, 1789.) Garret, son of Garret and grandson of the original Garret, married Clareetje Blencraft, and had a daughter Cornelia, baptized August 27, 1740; a daughter Clarissa, baptized October 11, 1748, and a son Hendrick, June 24, 1752, and probably others. Garret, son of Hendrick and grandson of the original Garret, married Gertrude Van Tuyl, and had the following children: Hendrick, baptized December 8, 1723; Femitje (Euphemia), September 13, 1728; Abraham, August 6, 1732.

The late Morris H. Cruser and brothers were the direct descendants of John, mentioned above. The family was once numerous and prominent, but like many other of the old families has almost entirely disappeared.

During the Revolution and for many years afterward, the Cruzers owned and lived in what is now known as the Pelton house, at the Cove, West New Brighton.

Digitized by Google

CUBBERLY.

The Cubberly family is of English descent, but came to Staten Island from New Jersey. The name originally was Caverle. The first of the name on Staten Island was Isaac, who resided here in 1769. Probably he came here a young man, for he married here, in the Journeay family. His sons were Stephen, Joseph, James, Thomas, and Isaac. Isaac married an English woman named Broughton, and had two sons—William, now living in Jersey City, and James, once clerk of Richmond County; Mrs. Charles E. Racy, of West New Brighton, is also his daughter. Isaac resided at the foot of New Dorp lane, at the locality known as "The Elm Tree," where, though a large part of his property is now submerged by the waters of the ocean, his dwelling-house still stands. There is another branch of the family, viz.: Joseph and Ander (*sic*), his wife, had a son James, born October 18, 1776. This James married Eleanor Ralph, January 20, 1799. The late William Cubberly, of Port Richmond, was descended from this branch.

The old Cubberly residence, near the Elm Tree Light, is now the home of Dr. and Mrs. N. L. Britton. It was in this venerable building that Dr. Britton, assisted by his accomplished wife, prepared his popular botanical works.

DECKER.

The Decker family is one of the oldest on Staten Island. Its progenitor was Johannes de Decker, who arrived here in April, 1655. He was a prominent man in the Colony, filling various offices of responsibility, and after a public service of many years, finally settled down on his farm on Staten Island. His numerous descendants have so frequently intermarried, that at this day it would be difficult to trace their direct genealogy. Some of the elder members retained the prefix "de," but it has long ago fallen into disuse.

Mattheus de Decker, probably the son of Johannes, had John, baptized September 7, 1698; Abraham, October 21, 1707; Elizabeth, April 17, 1711; Mattheus, 1715; to this baptism Pieter de Decker was sponsor, who was also, probably, a son of Johannes. This Pieter and Susanna Hetfeel (Hatfield), his wife, had the following children baptized: Maria, September 21, 1718; Johannes, July 24, 1720; Susanna, May 24, 1724; Sara, October 20, 1726; Mattheus, June 10, 1728; Eva, March 20, 1732, and Abraham, April 17, 1735.

John (probably a son of Mattheus) and Maria Swaim had a daughter baptized July 3, 1726. John (son of Peter) and Nancy, or Anna, Merrill, had a son Johannes, baptized April 19, 1743, and a son Richard, April 26, 1748. Charles (above mentioned) and Lena Swaim had a son Matthys, baptized April 5, 1730; a son Mattheus, baptized March 16, 1733, and a daughter, January 8, 1738. Richard, known

Digitized by Google

as "Colonel," born May 15, 1747, died May 26, 1817; his mother was a Merrill. They had a son Richard, baptized October 26, 1788. Matthew (son of Charles) and Merriam, his wife, had a son Israel, baptized August 28, 1763, and Israel had a daughter baptized February, 1788. John (son of John, above) and Elizabeth, his wife, had a son Reuben, born August 6, 1766, and Reuben and Mary Swaim were married July 25, 1790. Abraham and Phebe, his wife, had a son Noah, born March 26, 1773, and a son Charles, born April 10, 1775.

Moses Decker and Elizabeth Wood were married in April, 1769. Matthias and Liddie (Lydia) were married in November, 1775. Isaac and Margaret Jones were married August 7, 1791. Jacob and Leah Depue were married June 5, 1796. Sylvanus and Sarah Parker were married October 24, 1800. Isaac and Elizabeth Christopher were married October 24, 1804. Matthew made his will April 26, 1787, proved September 15, 1787, in which he mentions his wife, Catherine, son Matthew, a minor, and daughters Margaret, Elsie, Elizabeth, Ann, and Catherine. The late Hon. John Decker, who was at one time chief of the Volunteer Fire Department of New York City, and who represented Richmond County several terms in the State Assembly, represented one branch of this family. He had brothers named Mathias, Benjamin, and David. Their father was David, and their mother Catherine Decker. David's brothers were John, Benjamin, and Abraham. They were the sons of Benjamin and Mary Egbert. The family is very numerous on Staten Island to-day.

DE GROOT.

Though originally French, and known as Le Grand, this family, for centuries past, has been regarded as Dutch, the name by which it is now known being simply a translation of the French name. The eminent scholar and advocate, Hugo de Groot, otherwise known as Grotius, was a member of this family.

There were two emigrants of this name to America, viz.: Willem Pietersen de Groot, wife and five children, came over in April, 1662, in the ship "Hope," and Staes de Groot, who came over in the "Spotted Cow," the succeeding April.

The name is not found in any of the old State documents, except on Staten Island and in Albany County. These emigrants settled in these places, the latter on Staten Island. The earliest notice in local records is as follows: Johannes (a son of Staes) and Elizabeth Seckkels had the following children: Peter, baptized April 2, 1729; Robert, baptized October 10, 1731; Johannes, baptized February 1, 1735. Peter married Claartje (Clare) Post, and had the following children: Garret, baptized August 25, 1751; John, baptized May 2, 1753; Katrina, baptized July 27, 1755; Gertrude, baptized July 17, 1758.

John, son of Peter, married Mary Wood, and they were the parents

Digitized by Google

of Jacob de Groot, who was a prominent citizen of this county for many years, and who died March 11, 1875, aged eighty-six years, and grandparents of Alfred de Groot, of West New Brighton, the present representative of the family in this county. He is the senior member of the law firm of DeGroot, Rawson & Stafford, of Port Richmond. He served one term as district-attorney of Richmond County.

DE HART.

But little is known of the ancestors of this family on Staten Island from the local records. It is known, however, that Daniel had a son Daniel, baptized October 22, 1707; a daughter, April 17, 1711; a son Matthias, baptized in 1715; a son Samuel, baptized in 1717, died May 17, 1798. Baltus and Mary Philippse had a daughter Catalin, baptized in 1746-7. Matthias, born August 21, 1749, died October 20, 1840. Edward had a son Jacob, baptized October 24, 1790. Stephen married Margaret Ryers in September, 1792.

The family is not so numerous as it was many years ago. In Westfield, Theodore DeHart is the present representative of the family, while in Northfield Henry DeHart has that honor.

DENYSE.

This name, originally French, should be written "de Nyse," the "de" and "du" of France equaling the "van" of Holland. It belongs to that blue blood, who, fleeing from France during early persecuting religious wars, sought refuge in Holland. These Walloons, or French Huguenots, were early settlers in America, yet so imbued with Holland's faith and customs as to be almost Dutch. The name of DeNyse is variously recorded in America, viz.: Nyssen, Dionys, Denys, Denice, Denyse, and De Nyse, which two latter are now used by descendants.

LOCKWOOD HOMESTEAD, GIFFORDS; ERECTED ABOUT 1700.

Teunis Nyssen, the first DeNyse in America, emigrated from Binnick, or Bunnik, Province of Utrecht, Holland, about 1638. He settled at New Amsterdam (New York City), marrying Femmetje Jans, widow of Hendrick the Boor and daughter of Jan Seales.

Digitized by Google

His children were as follows: Jennetje Nyssen, baptized December 22, 1641, married Jan Hansen Bergen. Marritje Nyssen, baptized April 3, 1644, married Derick Jans Woertman. Annetje Nyssen, baptized February 18, 1646, married Hieronemus Rapalye. Elsje Nyssen, baptized May 10, 1648, married Gerret Snedeker. Femmetje Nyssen, baptized April 3, 1650, married Michael Hannon Bergen. Jan Nyssen, baptized April 12, 1654, married Cataline Bogaert.

Dionys Nyssen, or Denys, baptized April 12, 1654, is the Long Island ancestor. He married, October 22, 1682, Elizabeth, daughter of Rev. Theodorus Polhemus, of Flatbush. He was a master carpenter. His second wife was Helena, daughter of Jaques Cortelyou and widow of Nicholas Van Brunt. Removing to the Narrows (Fort Hamilton), he resided where his wife owned lands. He also owned some Staten Island land, where he signed a petition, in 1701, relating to it. His death occurred before Helena's, she marrying Hendrick Hendrickson soon after her second widowhood. The children of Denys and Helena (adopting the surname Denys), were Jaques Denys; Theunis Denys, baptized April 24, 1687, died young; Neeltje Denys, baptized September 22, 1689, married Jacob Vander Bilt, of Staten Island. Issue: Aris, Denys, Hilitje, Jacob, and seven others. Last named, Jacob, married Mary Sprague. Issue: Seven children, a son, Cornelius, marrying Phebe Hand. Issue: A son, Cornelius, Jr., born 1794, died 1877, who was the famed "Commodore Vanderbilt." This originates the now wealthy family of this name.

Tunis Denys, second, baptized April 2, 1692. Femmetje Denys married Pieter Garretson, of New Jersey. Cornelius Denys, baptized April 26, 1696. Helena Denys, born 1700, married, March 9, 1717, Frederick Van Leeuwen.

The first-born, Jaques Denys, is the ancestor identified with New Utrecht history, his sons being patriots in 1776. Jaques married Reymeriga Simonson. They resided at the stone homestead by the Narrows, it being north of the present standing of the Cortelyou house. He died in 1739. His children were Denys Denys, born April 5, 1726; Isaac Denys, born October 2, 1728; Helena Denyse, born October 27, 1732; Antie Denys, baptized December 24, 1732; Jaques Denys, born November 28, 1735. The father signed his name to documents "Jaques Denys."

We omit considerable of the genealogy of this family, because it is of no particular interest to Staten Islanders. We now come to Denyse Denyse, who was born at what is now Fort Hamilton, on the Narrows, opposite Staten Island, September 12, 1766. He removed to Staten Island about the commencement of the present century. His son, Denyse Denyse, Jr., carried on an extensive business at Tompkinsville. He became a brigadier-general. Ex-Sheriff William C. Denyse, of Tompkinsville, is of this family. Mortimor Denyse, for many years connected with the county clerk's office, was a cousin to the ex-sheriff.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII.

OLD STATEN ISLAND FAMILIES—CONTINUED.

DE PUY.

IN 1662, Nicholas Du Pui, with his wife and three children, came to this country in the ship "Pumerland Church." He probably settled on Staten Island, and was the progenitor of the family here. John and Francis are mentioned in the Richmond County records as early as 1680. John was defendant in a suit in March of that year, and Francis as owning a tract of woodland near Freshkill, in December.

The name of Francis does not appear again until after that date; but we find the name of John again in the church record, as having a daughter Elizabeth, baptized October 22, 1707, and a son Moses, July 22, 1714. Nicholas (perhaps a grandson of the original) and Neeltje (Cornelia) Decker had the following children: A daughter, baptized April 6, 1724; and sons, John, baptized June 27, 1725; Matthew, baptized October 8, 1726; Nicholas, baptized June 4, 1730; Moses, baptized October 27, 1732; Aaron, baptized August 26, 1739; Nicholas, last mentioned, was supervisor of Westfield in 1766. John, last mentioned, and his wife, Sarah, had a son Nicholas, baptized in 1757. Moses, last mentioned, and his wife, Leah, had the following children: John, born January 10, 1759; Nicholas, born June 3, 1766; Moses, born January 17, 1769; Barent, who probably was another son of Nicholas and Neeltje, and his wife, Ellen Poillon, had the following children: Martha, baptized May 20, 1750, and Elsie, baptized December 9, 1739.

There was a Barent who made his will June 4, 1792, in which he speaks of his wife, Mary, and the following children: Nicholas, Barent, Daniel, Abraham, Mary, Elsie, Sallie, and Elizabeth. These two named Barent may be identical, but if so, he was twice married, and his daughter Martha was dead when he made his will. The family is quite extensive on Staten Island to-day; but the name is generally spelled Depew. It is said that Hon. Chauncey M. Depew is related to the families of that name residing here.

DISOSWAY.

Marc du Sauchay, the progenitor of the Disosway family, was a native of Picardy, from the valley of the Somme. The lords du Sau-

Digitized by Google

chay came from the House of Clermont in the Beauvaisis. One of them is known to have been with the Duke of Normandy at the conquest of Britain. Many Huguenots of Picardy were sentenced to banishment or impressment. Among this number was Marc du Sauchay. The nearness of the low countries offered facilities of escape, and thirty families made their home in Harlem, and from Holland, subsequently crossing the ocean, founded the new Harlem, on Manhattan Island, then a wilderness.

In 1665, Marc made his first voyage to New Netherland. He returned to Leyden, and married, March 11, 1657, Elizabeth, daughter of Guilliame Rossignil, and on April 2, again sailed from Amsterdam for Manhattan in the ship "Draetaat," taking with him his bride, two laboring men, and two boys over twelve years of age. The names of the men were Johannes Swedes, of Gelderland, and Jean Guenon, of Leyden. In 1657, he bought a farm in Brooklyn, and on April 10, 1661, transferred his church connection from New Amsterdam to Staten Island. July 2, 1675, we find his name as purchaser of a "book of martyrs and others," from the estate of Jean le Comte for eighty gilders. In November, 1679, he bought lots on Haarn's Hook, but sold them "presently." June 7, 1683, he and his wife took letters from the Dutch to the French church, newly formed, under Rev. Pierre Daille. He moved to Staten Island April 5, 1684, and was still living October 1, 1706. His children were: Madeline, who married Martin Hardewyn; Marcus, Jeanne, who married Conrad Hendricks, of Harlem; Jean and Marie. His son Marcus inherited his father's lands, and died in 1714, leaving each child a farm. Three sons were then living—Job, Israel, and Gabriel. His daughters were Elizabeth, wife of Peter Barbarie; Susanne, wife of Daniel Hendricks; Mary, wife of Thomas Eyres; Diana, wife of Hendrick Brees; and Sarah, unmarried. Part of the old stone house built by their ancestor is still owned by a descendant.

In the county records, often copied by careless or illiterate clerks, the name has received many curious changes from the original. In the Dutch baptismal records it was always written Du Secoy or Du Secay. The late Gabriel P. Disosway was a descendant of Israel du Sauchay, the son of Marcus, who died in 1714. He died July 9, 1868, leaving five sons and seven daughters. He married Diana F. Riddick, of Suffolk, Virginia. His eldest son, Wilbur Fisk, is living, from whom this genealogy is traced. (He recently served as trustee of the Fourth Ward of the village of New Brighton.) Wilbur Fisk, son of Gabriel Poillon and Diana Riddick, son of Israel and Ann Doty, son of Israel and Judith Poillon, son of Israel and Gertrude Van Deventer, son of Marcus du Sauchay, son of Marcus du Sauchay, of Amiers, Picardy, France.

Sons of Gabriel Poillon and Diana T. Riddick, born 1798: Wilbur

Digitized by Google

Fisk, Clement, Israel, Cornelius Doty, Mills Riddick. Richard Henly. Sons of Richard and Anne Doty, born in 1773: Israel Doty, Mark, Gabriel Poillon, Cornelius Ryers, William Phoebus.

Sons of Israel and Judith Poillon were Israel and Mark. Sons of Israel and Gertrude Van de Venter were: Israel (died 1738). Mark, Cornelius, Gabriel (died 1753); a daughter, Anniotie. Sons of Marcus du Sauchay were: Job, Israel, Gabriel; the daughters were: Elizabeth, Susanne, Marie, and Diana. Cornelius, the son of Israel and Gertrude Van de Venter, left six daughters and two sons, a mansion on Staten Island, slaves, plate, gold watch, sleeve-buttons, a riding-chair, with particular instructions regarding the education of his children. He died in 1786. Israel, his brother left four sons: Israel, Mark, Cornelius, and Gabriel, and one daughter.

The late Gabriel Poillon Disosway was his direct descendant. The grave of Judith Poillon is one of the oldest in the Moravian Cemetery, the date being 1776. She was twice married, her first husband being Israel Dusocay, and her second Judge Ryerss, of Northfield. Tradition says that "she was frightened to death by the arrival of the British troops on Staten Island.

DANIEL CORSEN HOMESTEAD, WETCHOUGE ROAD, NEAR PROHIBITION PARK; ERECTED 1735.

The descendants of Cornelius Dusocay remained in the stone mansion built by the ancestor, Marcus du Sauchay, for many years. It still stands, a substantial, comfortable home, the oak timbers bidding fair to outlast many modern structures.

DOOLAND.

Lambert Dooland must have been among the earliest settlers on Staten Island, as his name appears in the county records in the seventeenth century. He was a member of the Colonial Assembly in 1691. He frequently had accounts with the county. The name, so far as that family was concerned, became entirely extinct many years ago. It is now on the Island, but belongs to people who have come here, probably from Ireland, of recent date.

Digitized by Google

DUBOIS.

Antoine DuBois and some of his relatives fled from France to England as early as 1583. The earliest representative of the family mentioned in the church records, is that of Louis DuBois, Jr., whose wife's name was Catherine Van Brunt. They had a son Samuel, who was baptized December 11, 1737. They also had sons, Benjamin and John. Benjamin became a minister of the Reformed Dutch Church in 1764, and was immediately settled over the churches of Freehold and Middletown, in New Jersey, where he remained sixty-three years. John and Hester, his wife, had a daughter Mary, born June 27, 1766; he made his will January 17, 1793, which was proved February 1, 1794, in which he speaks of his wife, Hester; his daughters, Hester, wife of Lewis Prall; Martha, wife of Daniel Winants; Elizabeth, wife of Charles Laforge, and Mary, wife of James Laforge, and his son Richard.

There was another John, who had a son Nathaniel R., and who died at the age of eighty-seven; his son Nathaniel died in May, 1874, aged eighty-five years; his wife was Frances Butler. Lewis DuBois and Jane Mersereau were married, January 12, 1894. The family is almost extinct on Staten Island. A family by the name, to which the late Eugene DuBois belonged, purchased the old Walter Dongan farm at Castleton Corners in 1859, but sold it some time since. There is no connection between this family and the first one mentioned. The ancestors of the latter came from Artois, France, in 1675, and settled in Ulster and Dutchess Counties.

DUSTAN.

William and Peter Dustan were natives of Scotland. The former, locally known as Major Dustan, was born September 11, 1759, and died on Staten Island, May 23, 1841, nearly eighty-two years of age. He left one son, Isaac Kip, whose melancholy death is recorded on his monument in the Moravian Cemetery. He was lost at sea.

DUNN.

In the local records this name occurs only in connection with a single individual, who is designated as John Dunn, Esq. He was twice elected member of Assembly from this county, in 1804 and 1805. He died December 21, 1826, aged fifty-seven years. Mrs. Abraham Housman, of Port Richmond, was his only surviving child on Staten Island. The name is still here, but it belongs to another family.

EDDY.

This family has been identified with Staten Island for many years. Among its present representatives are Cornelius C., of Stapleton, and

Digitized by Google

his cousin, James, of Huguenot. The former is a son of William, who was killed by his horse falling on him, on the Richmond road, near where the Bechtel brewery now stands, in January, 1828. The latter is the son of John, also deceased.

William, John, and Andrew, who are still living near the Woodrow Methodist Episcopal Church, were brothers and the sons of William, the first of the name, who came here from New Jersey, during the Revolution. James and William R. Eddy, sons of Cornelius C., above mentioned, are prominent business men of Stapleton.

EGBERT.

Govert Egbert was probably the first emigrant of this name on Staten Island—perhaps the first who came to America. He came in the ship called the "Spotted Cow," in 1660. The first mention of the name in connection with the Island is that of Tunis, who bought land in 1698, and sold land to John Androvat in January, 1699. His will, dated July 6, 1721, mentions seven sons—Egbert, John, Abraham, Jaque, Isaac, Lawrence, and Tunis. He also had four daughters. Tunis married Petronella Dupuy, and his son John was baptized December, 1745. John had sons in the order of their birth—Joseph, John, Tunis, Samuel, Edward, Thomas, Holmes, Cornelius, Henry, and William. Of these there were still living, a few years ago: Edward, near Castleton Corners; Cornelius, near Giffords, and William, at Graniteville.

This Cornelius Egbert married the daughter of Bornt Lake, and resides in the same house which Lake occupied. His brother, William, married another daughter of Lake. Tunis had another son, named Abraham, born September 21, 1747, and died October 2, 1816, who was the father of the following sons: Abraham, Joseph, Tunis, Cornelius, John, Stephen, James, and Edward; there were also two sons and seventeen grandsons, besides daughters and granddaughters.

James is mentioned in the county records in 1724 and in 1766. Peter is also mentioned in 1767. Tunis, probably a son of the original Tunis, born in 1720, died May 19, 1805. Tunis, born January 11, 1759, died November 5, 1825. Moses and his wife, Caty, had a son Abraham, born November 8, 1768. Moses, the above, was born October 21, 1742, and died November 13, 1831. Jacus (James?) and Trientje Backer (Baker) had a daughter baptized October 11, 1743. Abraham and Elizabeth Gerresen had a daughter baptized April 17, 1744, and a son Benjamin, born August 25, 1768. Abraham and Francyntje (Francina) Perine had a son Abraham, born May 22, 1715, a son John, baptized April 10, 1720; a daughter Elizabeth, baptized June 17, 1722. Jacobus and Catherine Deny had a son Johannes, baptized July 14, 1723; a son Laurens, baptized March 24, 1724. Jaques

Digitized by Google

and Catherine Bakker had a daughter Susanna, baptized November 4, 1733, identical with the above Jacus. Anthony and his wife Mary, had a son Reuben, born September 13, 1770; a daughter Martha, born April 25, 1772; a daughter Eleanor, born August 7, 1774. John and Catherine, his wife, had twins, Tunis and Eleanor, born November 11, 1771. Barney and Ann Taylor were married October 4, 1801.

The family is largely represented on all parts of the Island at this time. The late Joseph H. Egbert, of Garretsons, was a representative in Congress from this district, and was also county clerk. George T. Egbert, of Mariners' Harbor, belongs to another branch of the family.

ELLIS.

There seem to have been three branches of the Ellis family, who emigrated to this country at an early date. Garret Ellis, of English ancestry, one of Staten Island's pioneers, was born in 1720, and died in 1797. His son, Captain Garret Ellis, a wealthy farmer, was born in Westfield, Staten Island, in 1756, and died at the age of seventy-one years. He was one of the heroes of the Revolution. During that struggle he was arrested at midnight, on Staten Island, and compelled to walk, shoeless, over frozen ground for many miles, and was imprisoned in old Fort Richmond.

Captain Garrett Ellis married Mary Tappen, of New Jersey, who was born in 1767, and died at the age of seventy-seven years. She was of Dutch descent, and both were members of the Dutch Reformed Church. They had ten children, five sons and five daughters. The three eldest died while young. Their eldest son, Captain Cornelius, married Bealy Butler; they had five children, two of whom, Jacob Ellis and Cornelius, reside in Tottenville. Their second son, Captain Garret, married Susan Butler; they had thirteen children. Their third son, Abraham, once sheriff of Richmond County, married Alice Murray; they had ten children. George W., the eldest, represented Westfield in the board of supervisors, and also served as police commissioner, and later as clerk to that board. He married a daughter of the late Balthaser Kreischer, and died recently at his home near Huguenot.

Captain Garrett Ellis's eldest daughter, Fannie, born in 1785, died in her eighty-second year; she married Captain Peter Winant, who died at sea in 1823. Leah married Jacob Simonson; Lany married Henry Butler, and Polly married James Johnson, all deceased.

ENYARD.

The name of Jollis Inyard appears in connection with the purchase of land on Staten Island as early as 1687, and he also sold land here in 1692. The names of Jollis, Yellis, and Gillis are the same, being

Digitized by Google

Dutch corruptions of Giles. He had a son Matthys (Matthias), whose wife was Elizabeth Garretson, and they had the following children: Matthy, baptized January 7, 1730; Gillis, baptized December 17, 1732; Susanna, baptized May 4, 1735; Catherine, baptized April 23, 1739; Elisabet, baptized April 18, 1743; Nichlaes, baptized April 22, 1746. Nicholas married Jemima Wood, in July, 1768. They had a son, Elias, who was the father of John Enyard, of Richmond, and grandfather of Rev. William T. Enyard, formerly pastor of the Reformed Church, Brighton Heights.

FOUNTAIN.

James Fontain, or de la Fontaine, escaped from France after the Revocation. Fontaine, the French fabulist, Sir Anthony Fontaine, the antiquarian, and others, eminent in science and the arts, are of this family.

The progenitor of those of the name in America was not driven from his native land by the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes, in 1685, for there is the notice of a "Charel Fonteyn, a Frenchman, and wife," who came to America in the ship "Golden Beaver," in 1658. There is also a record of Antone Fountain, aged thirty, who was a witness in a suit on Staten Island, in 1680. The late Vincent Fountain, of West New Brighton, was the son of Captain Henry Fountain, who was born in 1787, and died May 28, 1867. He lived for many years in the old hotel known as the Fountain House, at West New Brighton. Captain Henry Fountain and his brother John, of Tompkinsville, were sons of Vincent Fountain, who was born in 1748, and died December 11, 1819. Vincent was probably the son of Anthony Fountain, who was supervisor in 1767.

Besides the above there is mention in the county, or church, records, of the following: Antone Fontayne, who purchased land in 1686; Vincent both bought and sold land in 1697; Richard also bought in 1702; Anthony and Belitze (Isabella) Byvank, his wife, had a daughter, baptized May 11, 1729; Anthony and Annatje Geretson, his wife, had a son Antone, baptized November 3, 1754; a son John, November 20, 1757, and a son Cornelius, December 23, 1759; Anthony and Susanna, his wife, had a son Charles, baptized September 25, 1756. John Fountain and Catherine Fountain were married December 24, 1804. Cornelius Fountain died January 27, 1813, and his wife, Elizabeth, lived but four days later, having died January 31, 1813. They are buried, side by side, in a field a few rods south of the Old Town road, and east of the Staten Island Railroad. This man was the inventor of the centerboard in sailing vessels. A few years ago the field in which the graves are located passed into the possession of a stranger. The little cluster of trees that had long stood guard over the graves was removed, and the weather-beaten stones were carrid away. The ground was then leveled and cultivated.

Digitized by Google

There have been two branches of the Fountain family on Staten Island for many years—one on the north side and one on the south. Although there is a strong resemblance, they disclaim all relationship. The late William A. Fountain, who was for some time connected with the West New Brighton postoffice, represented the south side family. George Fountain, son of the late Vincent Fountain, of West New Brighton, represents the other. Counselor Harry W. Fountain, of the same place, and a nephew of the latter, represents the latest generation.

FROST.

The Staten Island Frosts came from England. During the Revolutionary period, Dr. Thomas Frost resided at Richmond, and from the fact that courts, supervisors' meetings, and other public bodies met at his house sometimes, we infer that he also kept an inn or tavern. He was a decided Loyalist, as is evident from the indictment found against him by the first grand jury which was impaneled after the evacuation of the Island by the British. The first court house built in the county after the formation of the new government was upon land purchased from him.

The baptismal record of St. Andrew's Church says that Thomas and Tamar Frost had a son named William Errell, born February 17, 1774. They had at least three more sons, viz.: Samuel, Henry, and John. Samuel continued to reside on the Island. He was twice married, the first time to a lady from New Jersey, and the second time to Catharine Bedell, by whom he had one son, the late Samuel H., who married Louisa, daughter of Stephen Ketteltas. Their children were Henry and Stephen K.

The late Samuel Frost, who resided at Green Ridge, belonged to another family. He represented this district in the State Senate, and the Town of Westfield in the board of supervisors. St. Michael's Home is located on his estate.

GARRISON.

Garrit Garritson and Annetje Heermanse, his wife, and one child, Gerret, then two years old, came from Wageningen in Gelderland. They arrived in the ship "Faith," December 23, 1660. He was the founder of the family now spread over Hudson, Bergen, Passaic, and Essex Counties in New Jersey and Staten Island. He brought a certificate of good character and Christian deportment from the burgomasters of his native city. He settled at Communipaw, and died October 4, 1696, his wife having died September 7, of the same year. They had seven children: Gerrit, Jannetje, Fitze, Harmanus, Aeltze, Hendrick, and Johannes. Six of these were married. Some of them took the name of the place their father came from for their

Digitized by Google

family name, others did not. Gerrit, the eldest, married Neesje Pieters, May 11, 1681, and had children: Elizabeth, Peter, Gerrit, Annetze, Johannes, Abraham, and Jacob. The Staten Island Garretsons are descendants of Johannis, of this family, who married Margaret Sip, May 22, 1713.

Johannis had children: Gerrit, Johannis, Cornelius, Jacobus, Hendrick, Abraham, Hermanus, and Hannah. The last was born on Staten Island, as is supposed, the family moving hither in 1732. His home place was on the Old Town road, lately occupied by H. Meyer. This he gave to his second son, Johannis, who, following the custom already alluded to, adopted the name of Van Wagenen. Cornelius, the third son, married Claasje Pieters, and settled in Metuchen, New Jersey. Jacobus married a Simonson, and settled at Clifton, on his wife's farm.

Hendrick married Catherine Paulerson, December 3, 1747, and lived on the John Britton place on the Richmond road. Garrison's Station is on property of his descendants. Abraham married and lived in Bergen.

Harmanus married Autty Simonson, April 26, 1759, and lived on the Old Town road till 1790, after which he moved to the farm recently owned by Erastus Wiman, on the south side. They had three children. These were Margaret, John, and Dinah. The first married Harry Guyon, and inherited the Guyon Place (below Gifford's); the second married Martha Cadmus, and had the Old Town farm, and the third married Joshua Mersereau and moved to Steuben County.

John Garretson and his wife, Martha, had children: Jane, Harmanus, Alida, Dinah, John, George, Richard, James, Garret, and Martha. Jane married Henry Seguine and had children: Joseph and John. Harmanus married a Miss Cadmus, had a son, Jasper, who lived in Bergen, the early home of his mother. Harmanus had three other wives, but left no other children. Alida married George Van Pelt; Dinah married John Tysen; John married Ann Crocheron and left two children, Jacob C. and John H., now of Green Ridge; George married Susan de Groot and had a son, George, and a large family of girls; Richard and James died unmarried; Garret married Mary Ann Clauesson and left children—John J., William, and three daughters, and Martha married twice—John Sawyer and James Laforge.

Jacob C. Garretson married Harriet N. Ketcham and had children: John, Philip, Henry, Jacob C., Erskine White, Sarah (married John Eadie), Ella (married Craig Ketcham), and Harriet (married Albert Serrell). The last named, Jacob C., had sons, Henry and Jacob, who are married.

GIFFORD.

William Bernard Gifford, son of Arthur Gifford, Esq., and Mary, his wife, was born December 27, 1750, at their country place in Ire-

Digitized by Google

land. He came to America shortly before the Revolution, and arrayed himself on the side of the Colonists. He joined the Third Regiment of the New Jersey line, was made captain, and, later, major, and served for a time on General Washington's staff. He married Annatie Van Voorhise, only child of Coert Van Voorhise, of Gravesend, Long Island, in April, 1780. They had five children—Mary, Coert Van Voorhise, Sarah, Catherine, and John. Annatie, his wife, died at their home at Gravesend, May 23, 1791.

Major Gifford moved to Staten Island, with his children, and married Frances Nicoll, daughter of John and Hannah Nicoll, June 20, 1792. They had three children—Arthur Nicoll, Leonard, and Frances Hannah. He bought the farm at New Dorp, known as the "Rose and Crown," from the Rev. Richard Channing Moore, in 1804, where he died February 7, 1814. He was buried in the Reformed Dutch Churchyard at Port Richmond. His grave is now under the sidewalk, owing to the widening of the street. He manumitted his slaves. He left a considerable fortune. His vendue, the list of which is now in the possession of one of his descendants, shows personal property amounting to £3,583 2s. 6d.

Mary Gifford, his first child by Annettie Van Voorhise, was born at Gravesend, April 4, 1781. She married Daniel W. Lake, of New Dorp. They had a large family, the last of whom, Mrs. David J. Tysen, died on January 25, 1898. Coert Voorhise was born April 12, 1783, and died July 17, 1820. Sarah Gifford was born December 26, 1785; married John Clark and moved to Rochester. They had a large family. Catherine Gifford was born January 26, 1788; married and moved in the neighborhood of Rochester. John Gifford was born May 8, 1790; married Maria Blauvelt, December 8, 1814. He participated in the War of 1812, was a lieutenant in Colonel Jessup's regiment, and was wounded in the battle of Lundy's Lane. He died August 4, 1851. Arthur Nicoll Gifford, a child by the second marriage, was born at the "Rose and Crown," May 11, 1793. He died a few years since in New York City, leaving a large fortune. Leonard Gifford was born August 23, 1794, and died June 26, 1796. Frances Hannah Gifford was born May 10, 1797, and died in June, 1819.

The *New Jersey Gazette* (published at Trenton), of May 17, 1780, publishes the following:

"Lately married at New Utrech, on Long Island, William Bernard Gifford, Esq., Captain in the Third New Jersey Regiment, in the army of the United States of America, To Miss Nancy Voorhies, A very amiable young lady, with a handsome fortune."

Commenting upon this marriage, the *Rochester Daily Democrat*, of April 7, 1841, says:

"This Captain William Bernard Gifford was the father of Lieutenant John Gifford, of this city. The son, 'a chip off the old block,' joined the army as an ensign in 1812, was in General Scott's Brigade,

Digitized by Google

in the regiment commanded by Colonel (now General) Jessup, in the hard-fought battle of Lundy's Lane, in which he was severely wounded—was promoted to a lieutenant—had for a while command at Buffalo while the army was in Canada.

"During General Scott's first visit to this city, after taking the command of the Northern division, Mr. Gifford called on him, and the recognition was full of the liveliest interest. After the interview, as he took his seat in the coach to leave, extending his arm through the door and taking our fellow-citizen cordially by the hand, the General remarked with characteristic nobleness of spirit, 'Lieutenant, if you ever come near my quarters or hear of my coming near you, be sure to give me a call, for there are but few of us left.' It is undoubtedly remembered with what sacrifice of life to Scott's Brigade the opening of that battle was attended."

While the family name has become entirely extinct upon Staten Island (although the blood is not), it is perpetuated here to-day by the village of Giffords, on the south side. This settlement took its name from Gifford's lane, being located at the junction of that thoroughfare with the Amboy road. Gifford's lane was named in honor of Major Gifford.

GUYON.

The Guyons were truly an ancient and honorable French Protestant family. William de Guyon de Geis fled to Holland, and took service under William of Orange.

There were two of the family who came to New York at an early date—Gregory and Jaques. The former lived at New Rochelle. The latter settled on Staten Island, and received a patent from Sir Edmond Andros, dated March 27, 1675, for about one hundred and seventy-five acres of land on the Island, at a quit rent of eight bushels of wheat. This patent is still in existence, and the old residence and a portion of the land are still owned and occupied by direct descendants of the original purchaser—the family of the late Joseph H. Clark.

In the county records there are notices of two lawsuits—one, "Jacob Jeyoung against Isaac See, in 1678"; the other, "Jaques Jeyoung against ffrancis Martinoe, March 6, 1781." He had a son James, born January 5, 1746, whose wife's name was Susannah, and they were the parents of Major James Guyon, father of Mrs. Dr. Ephraim Clark. Major James is known in our civil list as James, Jr.; he was born December 24, 1778, and died March 9, 1846. He was Member of Assembly in 1812-13, and Representative in Congress in 1819-20. He married three times—first, to Ann Bedell, the mother of Mrs. Clark; second, to Ann Perine, and third, to Martha Seguine.

Another Major James Guyon was the son of Harmanus and his wife, Elizabeth Holmes, married May 2, 1802. Harmanus—usually

Digitized by Google

called Harry—was member of Assembly in 1819-20. He was the son of James by his second wife, Margaret Garrison, and half-brother of James, Jr. In the old church records of St. Andrew's is the following: John Guyon and Elizabeth Butler, married January 12, 1800. Cornelius Guyon and Getty Mersereau, married May 16, 1807.

The name is still quite common on the Island, and those living here to-day belong to the old family who trace their ancestry back to France.

HATFIELD.

The tradition of this family is that James Hatfield and a brother came from England long before the Revolution; the brother settled in New Jersey, but James came to Staten Island. The career of the family during the struggle for independence is told on other pages of this work.

During the Revolution, however, it is said that one of the family, James Hatfield, attempted to influence his relatives to give their aid and sympathy to the Colonists, but to no avail. It is said that he was really a Whig, and was incarcerated by the British, his brothers being instrumental in his capture. He was released by the Americans. His sons were James and John D., the latter of whom was born April 5, 1777, and died December 3, 1856. He married Mary, daughter of Jacob Van Pelt, and they were the parents of the following children: John, Moses (both of whom were lost at sea in December, 1839), Maria, wife of Captain J. W. Barnes, of Port Richmond; Jacob, died in infancy; Jacob, born March 17, 1817.

There is a record of a Benjamin Hatfield, who married Nanne Merrill, January 10, 1765, and of Susanna Hatfield, who was the wife of Pieter Decker, and had a child baptized as early as 1718. (See the Decker family.) Whether these were members of the same family, it is impossible now to determine. The late Jacob Hatfield, of Northfield, was a descendant of the Hatfields who did such active service for the British. "Captain Jake," as he was familiarly called, was the largest real estate holder at one time on Staten Island.

HAUGHWOUT.

The earliest mention of this name in the church and county records is where Egbert Haughwout was sponsor at a baptism April 20, 1709, and where Peter Haughwout sold land in 1714, and Peter and Neltje (Cornelia) Bakker, his wife, had eight children baptized, between 1710 and 1736. Jan and Elizabeth Hooglant had a daughter baptized October 16, 1720. Peter and Aaltje (Alida) Bennett, of Long Island, had the following children: Neltje (Cornelia), baptized July 28, 1751; Peter, June 24, 1752; Nicholas, March 12, 1758, and Wynant, April 20, 1760. He owned a large property at the locality now known as Willow Brook, in Northfield. He made his will December 15,

Digitized by Google

1787, probated September 6, 1792, in which he speaks of his wife, Alle (or Altje), his sons Peter, Nicholas, and Wynant, and his daughters Alle Webb and Nellie Cozine, and his grandchildren, the children of his daughter Nelly, and Alettee, Garrett, Peter, and Jacobus.

His son Peter was the father of the late Peter N., of Port Richmond. His son Wynant was the father of Simon, of Graniteville, and his son Nicholas was father of Nicholas, now deceased.

Egbert Haughwout and Elenor Garebrantz had a son Daniel, baptized March 8, 1782. Nicholas had a daughter baptized August 6, 1786. Wynant had a son Isaac, baptized October 28, 1787. Peter had a son Daniel, baptized June 7, 1788. The family is still quite numerous on Staten Island, especially in Northfield and Castleton.

HILLYER.

John Hillyer, sometimes written Hilliard, lived on Staten Island in 1693, and married Elizabeth Dey in 1714; their children were: John, Elizabeth, Mary, James, William, Nathaniel, Simon, and Lawrence. The present families of the name are descended from the youngest son, Lawrence. His son John was born in July, 1763, and died in July, 1848. His wife, Elsie Merrill, was born in November, 1768, and died in August, 1858. Their children were Lawrence and John B., the latter the father of James A., Abraham C., and John B., Jr., of West New Brighton; there were also several other children.

Other Hillyers are mentioned in the records of St. Andrew's Church as follows: John and Esther had a daughter, born September 19, 1756; a son, Nathaniel, born October 2, 1765; a daughter, born November 14, 1768. John J. had a son Abraham, born January 20, 1759. William and Dinah, his wife, had a daughter, born December 24, 1748, and a daughter, born September 11, 1756. John and Mary, his wife, had a daughter, born March 29, 1774; a son, John, born April 18, 1776. Lawrence and Ann Larzalere married, December 4, 1808; he represented Richmond County in the Legislature in 1837.

John B. Hillier, Sr. (brother to Lawrence just mentioned), is still living, and resides on Rockland avenue, New Springville. He is ninety-three years old, and is a very remarkable man for one of his advanced age. He has held a number of important positions in the county, such as sheriff, clerk to the board of supervisors, etc. William R. Hillier, a prominent civil engineer and surveyor, is the son of Abraham C., who is the son of John B., just mentioned.

HOLMES.

This family was among the earliest settlers of Staten Island. The progenitor was Obadiah, or, as he sometimes wrote it, "o Badiah." He came from England in the latter half of the Seventeenth century,

Digitized by Google

and obtained a patent for a valuable tract of land in Southfield, which remained in the family for several generations. His name is found in the county records as early as 1678. There is no record of the names of his children. His grandson, Samuel, lived and died on the paternal estate, and had six daughters, and two sons, Baker and Samuel. The latter married Margaret, daughter of Stephen Cole, and had the following children: Samuel, James, John, Cornelius, Van Rensselaer, George W., Eliza, and Ann, wife of David Mersereau.

The first appearance of the name on Staten Island is in the following document:

"Thes are to giue notes to whome It may concarn that Richard Fathfull and Elisabeth Larans hath bin Publeshed A Cording to Law.

"by DANIEL STILLWELL, Oversear.

"on this 15th day of Jenewery 1682.

"The A Boue Mentioned Parsons Ar Mared By Me on the 25th day Jenewery 1682

"RICHARD STILLWELL Justes

"By order OBEDIAH HULMES Clarck."

Obadiah Holmes must have been the clerk of the court, and not of the county, as his name does not appear in the records in connection with the latter. As a proof of this fact, the records show that in 1682 the office of county clerk was held by Francis Williamson.

There was an Obadiah Holmes in the county in 1730, who may have been the son of the one mentioned above. He married Mary Clunn, about 1752.

According to tradition this Obadiah Holmes removed to Salem County, New Jersey, and had a son or grandson named Isaac, born at Trenton, April 29, 1764. Four older sons were born prior to the removal from Staten Island. They were named John, William, Obadiah, and Abraham.

The same family was represented in Rockingham County, Virginia, in 1667, and following generations scattered throughout the West. Colonel J. T. Holmes, who commanded an Ohio regiment during the Civil War, was a descendant of this family. He was an active Methodist and built a church of that denomination in Harrison County, Ohio.

Abraham Lincoln was a descendant on one side of the family of this Obadiah Holmes, of Staten Island. The family appears to be entirely extinct on Staten Island to-day.

HOUSMAN.

The first of this name came to America from Holland in 1675 and 1676. The earliest mention of the name in a church record on Staten Island is as follows: John and Wynje Symons (Simonson), had a daughter, baptized September 4, 1726; a son Aart (Aaron or Arthur),

Digitized by Google

May 24, 1730; a daughter, June 1, 1732; a son Dirk, February 29, 1736, died July 29, 1807; a son Abraham, December 9, 1739; a daughter Elizabeth, October 11, 1733, and a daughter Jemima, July 19, 1748.

Isaac, born November 4, 1775, died December 2, 1857; he was married to Hannah Perine April 9, 1807. Peter had a daughter baptized, August 6, 1785, and another, December 7, 1788. John was for many years one of the inferior judges of the common pleas, Member of Assembly in 1804, Surrogate in 1809, and Supervisor, repeatedly; Isaac R., also one of the judges, Member of Assembly in 1823, and Supervisor, repeatedly. The Sailors' Snug Harbor property was purchased from him.

Notices of the family are extremely meager in county records. James made his will November 1, 1801, which was proved September 22, 1803, in which he speaks only of his brothers Anthony and Jacob. There are several branches of the family living here.

JACOBSON.

Christian Jacobson was the first of this name on Staten Island. He was a seafaring man, and captain of a vessel belonging to and sailing for the Moravian sect. His nationality has been variously credited to Sweden, Denmark, and Holland. He bought a farm in New Dorp, where he lived. The house is still standing on the west side of New Dorp lane, a short distance below the railroad station. During the Revolution a party of British soldiers entered his house and shot him, his wound proving fatal.

Christian Jacobson had a son John Van De Venter, who was born at New Dorp in 1768, and died in 1826. He had sons, Peter, Cornelius, Bedell, Israel, and Abraham, and a daughter who became the wife of Israel Bedell. Cornelius married a daughter of Isaac R. Housman, and settled on Long Island. The will of Christian Jacobson bears date January 10, 1782, and is signed by his mark, attested to by sworn witnesses, from which circumstance it is thought probable that it was made after he had received the fatal shock. The will mentions his wife, Ann, his son John V., daughters Catherina and Elizabeth, and his brother-in-law, Cornelius Vandeventer. To the first of his daughters he gave £1,050, and to the second, £1,000. The will also contains the following item: "I give to the Brethren's Church on Staten Island (Moravian, at New Dorp), the sum of Twenty Pound, and to the Reverend Mr. Gambold the sum of Twenty Pound for the use of Missionaries among the Indians."

JACQUES.

Count Jacques, a French Huguenot, came to this country during the latter part of the Seventeenth century, and settled in New Jersey.

Digitized by Google

His grandson, David Jacques, was a resident of Staten Island prior to the Revolution. He built a cottage at the present Castleton Corners, which was afterward enlarged, and later became Bodine's Inn, and later still the residence of Thomas W. Keene, the actor.

David Jacques's grandson, Isaac Jacques, a wealthy New York merchant, built the large Gothic residence on Richmond avenue, Port Richmond, known as the Harrison house. The large willow trees in front of this house were brought from the isle of St. Helena, the boxwood came from Mount Vernon, Virginia, and the fence in front from the former residence of the owner on Whitehall street, New York City.

David Jacques's sister, Elizabeth, married John Tysen, the grandfather of David J. Tysen, of New Dorp.

JOHNSON.

The name is English; but some of the early settlers here who bore it were of Dutch extraction, having Anglicized the Dutch name of Jansen. The earliest is Peter, who was plaintiff in a suit in 1680. Thomas Johnson and Ann Bouwman had a son Casper, baptized June 30, 1728. Johannes and Jannetje (Jane) Glascow had a son Thomas, baptized February 29, 1736. Nathaniel and Sophia Van Gelder's son Hendrick was baptized November 19, 1738. Niers and Sara Morgen had daughters baptized in 1731, 1739, and 1740. Peter and Mary Taylor were married October 24, 1754. Isaac and Elender Bowman were married in 1764. Peter and Malli (Molly) Lister had a son Jouneton (Jonathan), baptized October 2, 1755. John and Cornelia Ceilo, son of Peter, was baptized November 7, 1753. Dowe and Margaret had a daughter born May 7, 1771. Dowe made his will November 10, 1783, proved June 7, 1788, in which he mentions his sons Dowe and James. Winant and Mary had a daughter Sophia, born December 17, 1772, and a son David, born April 13, 1774.

Winant, not the above, made his will June 18, 1803, proved June 30, 1803, in which he mentions his wife, Mary, and her sons Winant and Jesse. These sons married: Winant, Catharine Guyon, November 27, 1797, and Jesse, Rachel Totten, January 11, 1804. Mattice (Matthias) had a son William, born July 17, 1751, who was baptized in May, 1772, then an adult. George had a son Thomas, born August 17, 1771. Isaac and Ploney (Appolonia) Frome were married in March, 1772. Nathaniel and Catharine Woglom were married November 9, 1791. Louis and Phebe Van Pelt were married December 24, 1793. John (born in 1770, died June 2, 1832) and Patty (Martha) Bedell were married March 23, 1794. He was a potter and carried on his business in the vicinity of Elm Park. They had the following sons: John, a merchant at Port Richmond, born January 3, 1795, died December 19, 1859; Joseph B., merchant at Port Richmond, born in

Digitized by Google

November, 1786, died July 4, 1849; Israel D., merchant at Port Richmond, born April 15, 1803, died February 9, 1873, and James.

Jacob, brother of the potter, married Eliza Haughwout, July 28, 1795; their sons were Peter H., James, Isaac, Benjamin, and Jacob. William, brother of the potter, married Catharine Martling, April 28, 1802; their sons were: John, James, William, Edward, and Channing; they had also a daughter Sarah, who married Hugh Gibson, and died August 25, 1826, in her sixty-ninth year; their son John, born February 13, 1803, died November 3, 1865. Edward, brother of the potter, born October 12, 1776, died September 4, 1856. Abraham and Jane Jennings were married September 24, 1794. David and Jane Winant were married June 23, 1796. Ephraim and Catharine Laforge were married October 10, 1797. James and Letitia Totten were married February 20, 1805. Anthony and Fanny Oakley were married January 28, 1807. Esek, of Tottenville, was a grandson of James, and son of Abraham, who built one of the first houses on the Billopp estate, after the sale by confiscation.

JONES.

There is no name, perhaps, connected with the history of Staten Island, having more disconnected branches than this. Jones is a Welch name. The ancestor of one branch purchased land on Staten Island under the Dongan patent. The village of New Springville stands upon a portion of it.

The earliest settler of this name was Edward. He settled in New York before coming to Staten Island. His will bears date of 1650. Edward married Catharine Decker, and they had the following children: Edward, baptized July 20, 1718, died young; Mattheus, baptized November 2, 1719; Abigail, baptized April 22, 1722; Edward, baptized August 14, 1726; Mattheus, above named, married Margaritje (Margaret) Gowan, and they had a daughter Catharine, baptized June 7, 1743.

There was a John whose wife was Rachel Van Engelen, and they had the following children: Elizabeth, baptized April 10, 1732; Johannes, baptized March 9, 1735; a daughter, baptized in 1737; Lucreria, baptized March 30, 1740; Isaac, baptized April 22, 1747. Abraham and Janneije Persnet had a daughter Jane, baptized May 2, 1753. Edward and Martha had a son Abraham, born March 31, 1772.

Abraham lived on the ancestral homestead at New Springville. The dwelling was a low stone structure, and stood on the site of the square building erected by Dr. O'Neill, and afterward owned by the late Hugh Foster, south of the village. Notwithstanding the fact that Abraham Jones was selected for colonel of the Staten Island militia at the commencement of the Revolution, he was, a few months later, appointed a captain in Billopp's Battalion of native Loyalists.

Digitized by Google

Shortly after the close of the Revolution he went to Nova Scotia; but it is evident that he made lawful provision for the retension of his Staten Island property, as a portion of it is still in the possession of a lineal descendant, Mr. John J. Corsen. Captain Jones had evidently grown tired of Nova Scotia, and took passage for home; but was drowned at sea and his remains were lost. Mr. Corsen retains the sword which Captain Jones carried during the Revolution.

Captain Abraham Jones made his will while in Shelbourne, Nova Scotia. It was written on the 11th of August, 1791, and admitted to probate on August 14, 1792. It names "his widow and Relict Jane Jones the Executrix, and Abraham Jones and Edward Jones, his sons, and Abraham Crocheron his Grand Son Executors." They were with him in Shelbourne. The document is a curiosity, many of the words being in Dutch and others in bad English. After providing for debts and burial, he gives his daughter Jane, the wife of Peter Guyon, "six Pounds halifax Currency to be paid her yearly & Every year During hir nateral life by my two suns Abraham and Edward Each to pay one-half the sum." Also, "I give and bequeath to my beloved Sun Abraham my farm in the Manor purched from Thomas Donken & Daniel Simonson on Statenisland County of Richmond & state of New York & half the land purched from Beckman Joining the other & half the Salt medow and half the house in new york standing At wite hall slip." Also, "to my beloved Sun Edward my old farm at Carlesneck with the ten Akers of Salt medow thereunto belonging during his nateral Life & after his Deth the one quarter peart theareof to his Daughter Jane & Remainder of said farm my will & order Is that my Soun Edward shall have it in his power to Give it to Such of his Children as he shall think best."

Also, "to my beloved Sun Edward all the Remander of my Land in the manner purched from John Beckman & the half The Salt medow on the longneck after ten akers being furst Mesured of for my Sun Abraham & I furder Give and bequeath to my Sun Edward half the house in new york standing on the wite hall slip." After directing that "the land in the manner be sold part as he shall think best for his owne benefit the half the house in new york," as his "sun" shall think best, "I furder order & Direct that his present wife Phebe the Daughter of Silus Bedell shall have no share nor part Thareof." Also, "I furder will & order the house & lots Given to my Daughter Jane after her mother Deth to be devided among her Children—that is to Say Abraham Edward & Jane the wife of peter Guyon."

The witnesses were Nathl. Munro, Cornelius Rapelje, and Barnt Martling. The Probate Judge signed his name Ri: Combauld, and the Registrar was Archd. Cunningham.

Mr. John J. Corsen, the owner of the property to-day, represents at least the eighth generation that has possessed it, although it is not intact as in former years.

Digitized by Google

There is another branch of the Jones family which has long been prominent on Staten Island. The late Captain Christopher C. Jones, of Mariners' Harbor, son of Daniel, son of Abraham, traced his ancestry back for several generations. His son, George T., still resides on a part of the family estate. The latter has two sons, Christopher C. and La Grange.

JOURNEAY.

The first of this family of which we have any record was Moillart Journeay, from Pays de Vaud, who came to America in April, 1663, in the ship "Spotted Cow."

BIRTHPLACE OF HON. JAMES A. BRADLEY, ROSSVILLE.

John Journeay bought and sold land in 1700. St. Andrew's Church records, about 1750, say: John and Martha had the following children: John, born January 4, 1752; Albert, born March 8, 1755; Nicholas, born August 22, 1756; William, born August 6, 1759, and Richard, born August 7, 1771.

The above-named Nicholas is mentioned in the county records in 1791 as Nicholas, Jr. Nicholas, son of John, had a son Nicholas, baptized November 1, 1789. Joseph and Mary Winant were married December 29, 1807. John and Patience Cole were married in July, 1802.

Digitized by Google

John (not the last named, unless Patience Cole was his second wife) made his will March 2, 1803, proved April 21, 1803, in which he speaks of his wife, Patience, his sons, Albert, Robert, Abraham, John, William, James, and Richard, and his daughters, Martha Randolph, Catharine Fountain, and Maria, wife of Dr. Henderson. Maria Journeay was married to Dr. Henderson in 1792.

LA FORGE.

It is believed that this family came directly from France to this country. The name of De la Forge appears in the assessment roll of Boswyck (Bushwick) in 1676, and among those who took the oath of allegiance in Kings County in 1867 is the name of Adrian La fforge, who had then been in the county fifteen years. In 1738 there was an Adrian Laforge, who bought land on Staten Island. There appear to have been two branches of the family in Castleton and in Westfield, who may or may not have had a common origin. The present representative of the Castleton branch is G. M. Laforge, of Illinois. The late Peter D. Laforge, also of Illinois, and the late Captain John Laforge, of West New Brighton, were his brothers. Their father was David, and their mother Gertrude, daughter of John Martling. David's father was Peter, who was the son of Benjamin. David's brothers were Peter, John, Benjamin, Jacob, and Richard Channing Moore. Peter, David's father, was the father of Peter and David C., of Port Richmond.

Of the Westfield branch, we have only the following notices: David and Catharine had a son Henry Seguine, baptized May 15, 1790. John and Phebe Bedell married September 15, 1804. James and Catharine Winant married February 8, 1806. David and Ann Johnson married July 8, 1807.

The family name is well represented on Staten Island to-day, the principal one in Westfield being James Laforge, of Pleasant Plains. The family to which he belongs was a large one, but it is gradually diminishing.

LAKE.

The Lake family settled on Staten Island about 1670, and is of English origin. The records show that Daniel Lake applied for a grant of land in 1679. He had two sons, Daniel and William. Daniel died in 1723, leaving a son Daniel, who was born January 26, 1719, and died July 10, 1762, leaving a son William, born January 7, 1750, who died March 21, 1783, leaving a son Daniel W., born September 9, 1780, married Mary Gifford, daughter of William Barnard Gifford, March 31, 1803, died October 6, 1835. He left sons: John, still living at Buffalo, New York, and Arthur G., born October 14, 1811, died April 22, 1887. Joseph, born July 8, 1753, and his wife, Catharine, born

Digitized by Google

June 2, 1755, both died March 14, 1813, within one hour of each other. They had a daughter Patience, born May 30, 1790. There was another Joseph, also born in 1753, and died May 24, 1843, in his ninetieth year. There was still another Joseph, born in 1773, and died March 16, 1854. He lived on the Manor road, near Castleton Corners.

William Lake and Mary Tysen had the following sons: William, born November 16, 1769; Bornt, born March 25, 1771, killed October 27, 1815; Joseph, born May 12, 1777. Bornt had the following sons: William, Joseph, Daniel, and John. Daniel and Margaret, his wife, had a son Daniel, born May 12, 1777. Cornelius and Susan Androvet were married April 6, 1794. Joseph and Eliza Van Pelt were married January 20, 1798. Daniel and Margaret Jackson were married June 5, 1802. Daniel Lake made his will October 13, 1789, proved September 4, 1792, in which he mentions his wife, Sarah, his sons Daniel and Joseph, and his grandson Daniel, son of his son William, deceased.

The Lake family is pretty well scattered throughout the country, especially in the South. It has married into scores of families of other names. There are, however, several families on the Island who keep up the family name, and are lineal descendants of those who first came here to live. The venerable mother of Mr. David J. Tysen, of New Dorp, who died recently, belonged to this family. She was born, lived all her life, and died on the old Huguenot estate at New Dorp.

LARZELERE.

Jacob Larzelere bought land on Staten Island in 1686. Nicholas bought land in 1693; he was at one time the sheriff of Richmond County. There was another Jacob, probably a son of Nicholas, whose wife's name was Alice; they had a son Daniel, born June 16, 1757, and a son Benjamin, born October 22, 1761. Nicholas, probably a brother of Jacob, whose wife's name was Sarah, had a daughter Johanna, born January 7, 1768. Jacob and Elsy had a son Richard, born June 18, 1771. Benjamin (not the one mentioned above) was born July 6, 1740, and died October 6, 1802; he made his will June 17, 1802, in which he mentions his wife, Sarah, and his children, Benjamin, Jacob, and Catharine.

The Larzelere family was once one of great importance on Staten Island, but it is now almost extinct.

LATOURETTE.

The Latourette family was of French Huguenot origin. The first mention of the name here is as follows: Jean Latourette and Maria Mersereau had the following children: David, baptized April 24, 1726;

Digitized by Google

David Latourette, sponsor; Anthony, January 24, 1730, and Henry, January 24, 1731.

Pierre La Tourette and Marianne Mersereaux had a son Daniel, baptized March 3, 1728, and twin sons David and Jaques, October 31, 1730. David and Catharine Poillon, had a son Jaques, baptized March 19, 1732. James, probably one of the Jaques mentioned above, and Elizabeth, his wife, had sons, John, born December 11, 1764; Jonathan, born January 31, 1766, and Henry, born April 22, 1775. David and Elizabeth, his wife, had a daughter Catharine, born November 9, 1766. John and Susannah, his wife, had a son John, born September 30, 1764. James and Mary, his wife, had a son David, born July 7, 1786. David and Phebe Cole married November 12, 1808. Henry, of Fresh Kill, a weaver, made his will January 19, 1794, proved December 30, 1794, in which he speaks of his wife, Sarah, his brother, Henry, deceased, his sons, Henry, John, and Peter, and daughters Susan, wife of Peter Cole, and Ann, wife of William de Groot. Peter's wife was Elizabeth Androvette.

There are several branches of the family still residing on the Island. Latourette Hill (back of the village of Richmond, and a part of Richmond Hill), is named in honor of the family residing there. This particular family was at one time very large, but at present the estate is owned exclusively by Elizabeth, unmarried. There are several families of Latourettes in Northfield and Westfield.

LISK.

The Lisk family was but meagerly represented on Staten Island in the early history of the place. James, the earliest mentioned, had a son John, baptized March 25, 1701. He is also mentioned as having bought land in 1706. He had a son Thomas, who married Catalyntje Van Pelt, and had daughters baptized in 1729, 1731, 1739, and 1745.

John, son of James, married Rachel Haughwout, and had a son Jacob, baptized January 2, 1728. Matthias and Anastasia had a son Moses, born December 7, 1766. John and Mary had a son Thomas, born September 19, 1756. He made his will August 24, 1793, in which he mentions his children: Thomas, Franky, and Catharine. There is an Alexander Lisk mentioned in the court records in 1724.

The *Richmond County Mirror*, in 1838, published an account of John Lusk, which was copied from a Southern paper. John Lusk was a native of Staten Island, and related to the present Lisk family. He was born on the fifth day of November, 1734, at what is now West New Brighton, in an old stone house, whose last occupant was George Barrett. The exact spot where it stood is now marked by the residence of Captain Richard Christopher. The *Mirror* says:

"He was in the artillery service for fifty-eight years, and was the last survivor of the old French War in Canada. He was of Dutch

Digitized by Google

extraction, and an immediate descendant of the Huguenots. His name is pronounced 'Lisk' in the Dutch language. He commenced his career in the army in the war Acadie, commonly called the French War, when about twenty years of age, and served through the whole of it.

"He was a soldier at the siege of Quebec; fought in the memorable action of the Plains of Abraham, seventy-nine years before he closed his life; saw the brave General Wolf fall, and participated in all the sufferings and hardships of that arduous and memorable campaign. He was also at the conquest of Acadie, now called Newfoundland, by Generals Amherst and Shirby, and assisted in the dispersion of the captured French through the colonies of New England by the Anglo-Americans.

"Lusk early enlisted in the War of the Revolution, and he fought like a soldier and patriot till the close. He was attached to the expedition to Canada under General Benedict Arnold; was at the building of Fort Edward, and was there wounded. He was in the battle of Saratoga, where Burgoyne surrendered, and at Monmouth, Princeton, Trenton, and various other important battles, and was finally at the siege of Yorktown, and had the singular and remarkable fortune to see the surrender of Cornwallis to General Washington.

"On the restoration of peace the old soldier laid down his musket and his knapsack for a while, but he did not remain long in inactivity. He enlisted in the army under General Wayne against the Indians, nothing daunted by the terrors of the wilderness or the strategems of the powerful and wily foe, though he had already weathered the storms of sixty winters.

"At the close of this brilliant and successful campaign, he joined the regular army under General Butler, and was stationed at West Point, New York State (now called Kingston). But at last the brave old man, being worn down with age and infirmities, was discharged as unfit for duty, when near eighty years of age. He left the army in entire destitution, and subsisted for several years upon the cold charities of the world, together with the little pittance he earned by his daily labor as a broommaker. On the passage of the Pension law, in 1818, he availed himself of its privileges, and from that time forward was furnished with all the necessaries of life. He retained to the last all the faculties except that of sight, which for the last ten years of his life had been growing dim.

"Lusk was a man of remarkable strength of constitution and elasticity of frame, and never had a spell of sickness in his life. He was in the habit of walking to the Town of McMinville, a distance of seven miles from his home (his death occurring at Warren County, Tennessee, at the advanced age of one hundred and four years), and back again on the same day, and this, too, after he had reached one hun-

Digitized by Google

dred years of age—retaining the perfect upright form and firm step and movements of a soldier to the last.

"Thus lived and died one of the most remarkable men of the age. He was witness to more remarkable events, perhaps, than any other man living in his day. What revolutions rolled over the earth in the time that lapsed between his birth and death! He was almost coeval with the colonial history. He was an old man when the nation commenced its career, and during his life he saw empires rise and fall, thrones demolished, and new kingdoms spring to existence, and during that same period twenty-five millions of the race lived and died."

The name of Lisk still exists on Staten Island. The present representative of the family is John W., of Graniteville.

LOCKMAN.

The records show that this is one of the oldest Dutch families in the Province of New York. The first mention of the name is that of Govert Lockermans (sometimes spelled Lookermans), who arrived in America in 1633, in the carvel "St. Martyn." He was a minor when he arrived, and came as an apprentice, but was immediately taken into the service of the company. He soon contrived to make himself conspicuous, especially by leading attacks on the Indians on Staten Island and elsewhere.

According to the records, the earliest mention of the name was in 1680, when Abraham Lakeman is said to have owned a parcel of woodland on the south side of the Fresh Kill. (This may now be recognized as the Benham property.) About 1680, there were several of the name on Staten Island—Abraham, mentioned above, whose name is found again in the records in 1684 and 1692; Lewis, who was a defendant in a suit July 6, 1681, and Peter, who sold land in 1684. There was an Isaac, perhaps a son of one of the above, whose wife was Catharine Christopher, and they had a son Lewis, baptized May 23, 1731.

Abraham and Elizabeth had two daughters—Sarah, in 1762, and Margaret, in 1767, and a son Abraham, born April 4, 1772. Isaac and his wife Martha, had the following sons: David, born January 26, 1768; Jacob, born July 21, 1771, and Joseph, born October 7, 1772. William and Mary had a daughter Sarah, born October 4, 1772. Isaac and Margaret had a son William, born November 24, 1772. There was another Isaac, born 1758, and died May 1, 1814. Samuel and Catharine Crowal were married March 16, 1790. Nathaniel made his will December 12, 1795, proved May 24, 1803, in which he mentions his wife Martha, his daughter Susanna, and his sons Isaac and John.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VIII.

OLD STATEN ISLAND FAMILIES—CONCLUDED.

MANEE.

THIS name was originally written Manez. The family is especially identified with Westfield. Regarding it the records are very meager. Peter Manee and Mary Brooks had a daughter baptized August 8, 1725. Abraham and Anna Jansen had a son Abraham, baptized May 20, 1723. Abraham and Sarah du Chesne had a daughter Sarah, baptized March 30, 1740. Abraham had a son Isaac, baptized May 15, 1790. Peter and Mary Pryor were married January 4, 1804. William and Elizabeth Prier were married in April, 1808. Abraham and Mary Woglom were married October 8, 1808. Isaac made his will May 14, 1794, proved July 18, 1794, in which he speaks of his brothers Abraham and Peter, and his sister, Hannah Prior. His will is dated on the day of his death, at which time he was forty-six years old. The family is largely represented in the Town of Westfield at the present time.

MARTLING.

When the connection of this family with the Island began, is unknown. The earliest mention of it in the local records is in 1724, when Isaac Martling and Sarah Van Name had a daughter baptized January 10; a son John, January 21, 1731, a Barent Martling being present as a sponsor.

Although the family has been represented on the Island through succeeding generations, comparatively little is known of its history. The latest of the name who gained especial prominence, was Garret, who died a few years since. The Martling farm and Martling's ice pond will doubtless retain their names for many years to come.

MARTINO.

Gaston Martineau, a surgeon of Dieppe, settled in England in 1685, and was a French refugee. He had several sons, whose descendants still reside in England,

The family in America is a collateral branch, and were on Staten Island some time before Gaston left France. The name of Francis is found in the county records as defendant in a suit with Jaques Je-

Digitized by Google

young in 1681, and as selling land in 1691. Francisco Martino received a patent from Governor Dongan for land in Richmond County in 1686. At one time the family was a very flourishing one in this county, but the name has almost entirely disappeared.

Stephen Martino was born in 1727, and died May 9, 1801. He owned and resided on the property known now as the Poor House Farm. He was one of the corporators of the Moravian Church at New Dorp. Benjamin, brother to Stephen, was born in 1742, and died May 17, 1824. Benjamin, son of above, was born April 4, 1766, and died November 20, 1814. He was the father of Gabriel Martino, of Castleton Corners, and Stephen was the father of Gabriel Martino, of Bull's Head.

MERRILL.

The family by this name are descendants of Richard Merrill and Sarah, his wife, who were natives of Warwickshire, England, who emigrated to America about the year 1675, and settled on Staten Island. They had the following sons: William, Richard, Thomas, Philip, and perhaps John. In the Albany records appears the name of William as owning land on Staten Island in 1683. Philip bought land of Richard in 1781. The latter was either his father or brother.

Richard married Elsie Dorlant and had the following children: Richard, baptized September 22, 1709; Elsie, baptized April 1, 1708; Richard, baptized 1715; Lambert, baptized January 1, 1721, and Susanna, baptized September 13, 1724. Philip and Elizabeth Bakker had the following children: Catherine and Susanna, twins, baptized July 4, 1725; Philip, baptized February 24, 1727; Nicholas, baptized November 24, 1728; Elizabeth, baptized April 8, 1733, and Neeltje (Cornelia), baptized March 9, 1735. Thomas and Jenne Gewan had a son Richard. John and Gertrude Simonson had a daughter baptized September 18, 1726.

Richard, son of Thomas, had the following children: Margaretta, baptized January 1, 1738, and Annatje (Anna), baptized April 19, 1743. Jan and Aeltje (Alida) Bennet had a son Simon, and a daughter baptized May 6, 1745. Thomas and Eva Jones had a daughter baptized October 31, 1756. This Thomas made his will December 31, 1791, proved April 30, 1803, in which he mentions his wife, Eva, and his sons, John, Thomas, and Matthew. John, son of Thomas and Eva, was born in 1742, and died December 19, 1826. His wife's name was Charity. Thomas, son of John and Eva, had a son John, baptized August 17, 1788.

There was a John Merrill, Jr., who had a daughter baptized November 7, 1790, and John Y., who was born in 1770, and died June 6, 1858, but they are probably distinct persons; John, Jr., more probably was the son of Joseph and Martha, and was born April 4, 1765. Joseph also had a daughter Mary, born January 16, 1763. John and

Digitized by Google

Ann, his wife, had a daughter baptized November 7, 1753. Lambert (son of Richard and Elsie), and Tabitha, had a son Richard, born July 9, 1765; a son Jonathan, born May 24, 1774; a daughter Tabitha, born February 18, 1770, who married Captain John W. Blake, and died January 12, 1861, aged nearly ninety-one years; also a daughter Elsie, born 1768, married John Hillyer in 1785, and was the mother of Lawrence and John B. Hillyer.

William and Ann Merrill were married in August, 1776; Abraham and Ann Merrill were married October 3, 1790; Mary, widow, made her will January 10, 1789, proved November 30, 1789. The family is still very numerous.

MERSEREAU.

John Mersereau was a native of France, and was a Protestant. He studied law, but learned the trade of saddler. He left sons—Joshua, Paul, and Daniel—and daughters—Mary and Martha. The mother, accompanied by these children, fled from France to England in 1685, immediately after the Revocation, and subsequently, all except Paul, came to America. It is said that they were driven to New York by stress of weather. They at once settled on Staten Island, where the mother died, and was buried in the old French graveyard, at Green Ridge.

Daniel Mersereau was a tailor. Joshua married a Latourette, and died May 23, 1756, aged over ninety-three years. They had a son Joshua, who was born May 18, 1696, and died July 9, 1769; his wife was Maria, daughter of Jacob Corsen; she was born October 24, 1704, and died July 3, 1763. Their children were: Joshua, born September 26, 1728, died June 10, 1804; Jacob, born April 23, 1730, died September 7, 1804; John, born March 2, 1732; Elizabeth, born January 4, 1734; David, born November 10, 1735, died July 19, 1763; Mary, born January 14, 1738; Cornelius, born July 27, 1739, died July 27, 1814; Paul, born February 23, 1741, died January 26, 1823; Elizabeth, born November 26, 1742; Rachel, born February 27, 1746, died July, 1769.

Jacob made his will July 16, 1804, proved September 18, 1804, in which he speaks of his wife, Charity, and her children, John and Mary, wife of Thomas Cubberly; Elizabeth, wife of Daniel De Hart; Sophia, wife of John Crocheron; Jacob, David, and Peter. He was the Colonel Jacob Mersereau whose escape from the British during the Revolution is alluded to elsewhere in this work. His son was the father of John T. and Alfred Mersereau, of Graniteville. His son, Peter, born in 1788, was Member of Assembly in 1845. Colonel Jacob had also a son John by his first marriage, who married a Cruser, and was the father-in-law of the late Judge Abraham Crocheron.

Paul, son of Joshua Mersereau and Maria Corsen, married Elizabeth Barnes, born April 21, 1751, died May 26, 1833. Their children were: Joshua, born February 7, 1773, died March 7, 1847; Nancy,

Digitized by Google

born April 4, 1775, died November 30, 1851; Mary, born February 2, 1777, died June 6, 1858; Elizabeth, born June 20, 1779, died May 9, 1855; Rachel, born June 30, 1781, died February 23, 1863; Paul, born March 14, 1784, died July 21, 1856; Margaret, born March 27, 1787; Gertrude born November 30, 1789.

Joshua, son of Paul and Elizabeth, married Deborah Britton, January 7, 1801. She was born August 4, 1782, and died March 26, 1840. Their children were: Nathaniel, born October 18, 1802; Paul, born September 20, 1804; Mary, born January 29, 1807; Cornelius, born May 12, 1811; Joshua, born January 26, 1814; Elsey, born August 30, 1817; Elizabeth, born May 5, 1820; Debora, born April 7, 1823; John, born May 28, 1826, and Margaret.

John was mentioned in the county records in 1730; and he was probably the Jean whose wife's name was Craage; they had a son Joshua, baptized February, 1791, and subsequently a son Daniel. Daniel married Cornelia Vanderbilt, and had a son John, baptized March 4, 1859. Etienne (Stephen) Mersereau and Ann Mitchell had a son Daniel, baptized about 1832; a daughter, January 1, 1735, and a son named Richard, May 1740.

There was a Joshua, who had a son Harmanus, baptized June 8, 1788. There was a Paul Mersereau on Staten Island as early as 1728, who was sponsor at a baptism. Peter Mersereau and Rebecca, his wife, had the following children: Sarah, born March 23, 1769; Daniel, born August 27, 1771, died July 16, 1855, and John, baptized November, 1775. Peter, born 1734, died June 16, 1803. There was a John born December, 1737, who died July 30, 1811. John and Charity had a son John, born April 13, 1757; son Lawrence, March 28, 1761. Paul and Frances had a son John, born May 2, 1759. Stephen and Lydia had the following children: Sarah, born September 8, 1766; Daniel, born December 6, 1768, and Stephen, born February 14, 1774. Joshua and Mary had the following children: Stephen, born May 5, 1770, and Joshua, baptized September 6, 1772. Daniel and Susan had a daughter Ann, baptized July 6, 1789. Daniel and Ann had a daughter Cornelia, baptized June 26, 1791. Henry and Eliza Laforge were married September 6, 1790. Jacob and Mary Crocheron were married September 5, 1798. Daniel and Alida Lake were married October 6, 1798. Daniel and Eliza Winant were married February 8, 1800. Stephen and Lanah Winant were married November 21, 1802. John and Ann Parlee were married December 31, 1803. Joshua and Susanna Story were married December 10, 1805. Peter Mersereau made his will May 6, 1800, and it was proved July 25, 1803, in which he mentions his children Elizabeth, Rebecca, Catharine, Ann, Sarah, Daniel, and William.

David Mersereau was born on Staten Island about 1769, and died in April, 1835. His remains are buried in the Dutch Reformed Churchyard at Port Richmond. He married Cornelia, daughter of Abraham

Digitized by Google

Rolff. He removed to Virginia, where he managed a store and had other pursuits. He remained South for several years. On his return North he and his family embarked on a schooner, in which they encountered a violent storm. The vessel was capsized, and all except Mr. Mersereau were drowned. For forty-eight hours he clung to his precarious support on the keel of the capsized vessel, until a passing one, bound for Philadelphia, rescued him. He afterward became a judge in this county, and owned a great deal of property.

METCALFE.

Simon Metcalfe, the progenitor of the family on Staten Island, came from England in 1765, and settled in New York City. Subsequently he was appointed deputy surveyor of the colony. He had a son George, whom he left in England to be educated, until he was seventeen years of age, when he joined his father in this country.

OLD WOOLEN MILL, NEAR RICHMOND.

After studying law, George resided at Albany for a time, then went to Johnstown, Fulton County, in this State. Governor John Jay appointed him assistant attorney-general, in 1796, which office he held until 1811. He then removed to New York, where he practiced law until 1816, when he removed to Staten Island, and in 1818 he became district-attorney. He married the daughter of Commodore Silas Talbot, and his death occurred in 1826. His children were Maria, who married William S. Root, of Tompkinsville; Silas Talbot, Simon, Catharine, who was the first wife of John B. Simonson; Henry Bleeker, Georgianna, who married Daniel Fenn, of Massachusetts, and Louisa, twins, and George.

Henry Bleeker Metcalfe left a widow, who died recently at an advanced age. His sons, Henry T. and Charles, both became prominent citizens. The former died in 1896, and the latter in May, 1900. Henry T. left two sons—Henry T., Jr., present county assessor, and George, ex-Member of Assembly from Richmond County.

Digitized by Google

MICHEAU.

There were several families of this name on Staten Island during the last half of the Eighteenth century and the beginning of the following one. Paul Micheau, the first of the name, was sheriff of Richmond County in 1736, and member of the Colonial Assembly from 1748 to 1751. His son Paul was chosen to the Provincial Congress in 1775-76, county clerk for twenty years from 1761, county judge for eleven years from 1786, and State senator from 1789 to 1792. His son, Paul J., was member of Assembly in 1798-99, 1802-03, and another son, Benjamin, was county treasurer in 1787.

The family has disappeared. They were residents of Westfield, chiefly; but there were a few in Castleton and Northfield.

MORGAN.

Thomas Morgan was a member of the Colonial Assembly from Richmond County in 1692. This is the first occurrence of the name in the county records. The records of the Dutch Reformed Church show that Thomas had a son Abraham, who was baptized May 5, 1696, and a daughter Martha, September 7, 1698.

Thomas (probably a son of the former) and Magdalena Staats, had the following children: Elizabet, baptized February 7, 1725; Magdalena, baptized February 12, 1727; Peter, baptized March 9, 1729; Thomas, baptized October 10, 1731, and Sarah, baptized September 16, 1739.

The name does not appear again until December 16, 1754, when William Morgan and Elizabet Winter were married. It is probable that William was the son of Peter, mentioned above. William had a son John, who lived all his lifetime and died in the vicinity of New Springville. He had a son Charles, who married a Vroom, and they were the parents of Henry C. Morgan, of Travisville. The latter had a brother John V., who lived at Mariners' Harbor.

There are several families by the name on Staten Island to-day; but they do not seem to be in any way connected with early settlers.

PERINE.

This name was originally spelled Perrin. Count Perrin was a prominent Huguenot refugee from Nouere. The original emigrant was akin to him.

The very first occurrence of the name on Staten Island was in 1687, when Daniel Perine sold land, and he was probably the progenitor of the Perines of the present day. The family record is very imperfect up to the last two or three generations. The branch which is here traced, lived for fully two centuries in the same house, which is

Digitized by Google

still standing, on Richmond road, a short distance north of Garretsons Station.

The late Cornelius S. and Joseph E. were the sons of Simon S., who was the son of Joseph, born June 4, 1759, and died April 16, 1814. Joseph's brothers were Edward, born July 6, 1766, and Henry, born November 29, 1768, and Mary Winant, June 21, 1795. They were the parents of Elizabeth, relict of Richard Tysen. Joseph's parents were Edward and Ann. Edward died during the Revolution. It is thought that Edward was the son, possibly the grandson, of Daniel, believed to have been the original.

The following, relative to this old family, are found in the county and church records, on tombstones, etc.:

Henry and Susanna had a son Edward, born February 19, 1758; a son Peter, born May 22, 1764. Henry made his will April 10, 1788, which was proved June 7, 1788, in which he mentions his wife, Susanna, and his children, David and Cornelius, then minors, and his other children: Edward, Margaret, Susannah, Abraham, Henry, Nancy, and Mary. The younger Henry was a weaver, and made his will October 29, 1792, which was proved April 2, 1793, in which he speaks of his brothers, David, Cornelius, and Edward.

Henry and Ann, his wife, had a son Abraham, born February 1, 1766. Henry and Hannah, his wife, had a son Henry, born June 5, 1767. James and Nannie had a daughter Sophia, born July 17, 1767. William and Miranda, his wife, had a son Peter, baptized June 27, 1790. Edward and Patience Mersereau were married June 7, 1790, and had a daughter Mary, born October 9, 1791. Abraham and Sarah Rezeau were married August 24, 1790, and had a son, Peter Rezeau, born September 20, 1791. Peter and Mary Bedell were married December 31, 1788. Edward and Adrian Guyon were married January 20, 1791. Henry and Magdalena Simonson were married June 19, 1800. Cornelius and Mary McLean were married March 31, 1804. Edward, born in 1745, died November 22, 1818. James G., born August 29, 1796, died September 17, 1833. Peter was living in 1766, and a Henry in 1767, at which time they were interested in the transfer of real estate on Staten Island.

A picture of the Perine homestead is found on page 281 of Volume I.

POILLON.

The first mention of this name which has been found in connection with Staten Island was when Jaques Poullion was appointed a justice for Richmond County, December 14, 1689, by Governor Leisler. In after years the family became very numerous on Staten Island.

Jaques Poillon is frequently mentioned as buying or selling real estate, prior to 1703. After him we have no notice of any member of the family for fully half a century. Then it is discovered that John

Digitized by Google

and Margaret, his wife, had the following sons: John, born June 6, 1753; Peter, born January 27, 1763, and James, baptized November 3, 1772. James and Frances, his wife, had a son John, baptized November 14, 1762. Peter and Margaret, his wife, had a son John, born October 28, 1770, and a son Peter, born March 6, 1772. The records show that this Peter was a communicant in St. Andrew's Church at Richmond in 1792, after his father's death. Abraham and Susan Cole married June 17, 1790; he died young, but the date is not known.

John and Elizabeth Seguine married July 5, 1792. Abraham made his will July 20, 1791, which was proved August 8, 1791; in it he mentions his wife, Susan, and his son, Peter, a minor. John, who is mentioned above, made his will March 16, 1802, and it was proved February 18, 1803; he mentions his wife Margaret, his daughters Mary, Margaret, Ann, Sarah, and Catharine, and his sons Peter, John, and James, deceased. Each generation had a number by the name of John. The family is still represented on the Island, but not extensively. Albert Poillon has been repeatedly elected constable of the Town of Westfield, and was for many years an official in the county court.

POST.

The Post family were among the early settlers of Staten Island. Adrian Post, who was believed to be the progenitor of the family here, was the commander of a ship which brought emigrants to the colony before 1650. Some time after that he was appointed the superintendent of Baron Van de Cappelan's plantation on Staten Island.

The Indian massacre of 1655, by which all the inhabitants of Oude Dorp (Old Town), were either murdered or driven away, and the village destroyed, compelled Adrian Post to leave the Island temporarily; but he returned after a brief period. His family consisted of his wife, five children, and two servants.

John, who was probably a grandson of Adrian, married Anna Housman, and they had the following sons baptized: Abraham, April 19, 1743, and Adrian, April 26, 1748. Garret and Sarah Ellis had the following sons baptized: Garret, August 7, 1754, and Abraham, March 12, 1758. Abraham had a daughter Miriam, born July 31, 1790. There was also another Garret, born in 1720, and died March 31, 1797.

The family is still represented in Northfield. The old Post estate is located by Post avenue, which runs for a considerable distance through both the Towns of Northfield and Castleton.

PRALL.

This Huguenot family was on Staten Island during the closing years of the Seventeenth century.

The late Hon. Benjamin P. Prall, of Westfield, and his brother, Cap-

Digitized by Google

tain Arthur Prall, of New Springville, were long the principal representatives of this family. Their father was Peter Prall, born in 1763, and died November 1, 1822. His father was Benjamin Prall, born in 1733, and died in 1796. His father was Abraham Prall, born in 1706, and died September 28, 1775. His father was Peter Prall, whose name is recorded as a witness or sponsor at a baptism in 1708. He had an older son than Abraham, viz.: Arent, born 1698, and a younger, Isaac, born 1710. This brings us very near to the original of the Prall family.

There was an Arent Prall, who was probably either father or brother of the last-mentioned Peter. The name of Arent is on record as owning one hundred and twenty acres of land at Long Neck in 1694.

There were other members of the family, not in the above line. They were Peter, born April 9, 1735, and died February 28, 1822, and his brother Abraham, born 1740, and died May 6, 1820. He had two sons: Daniel, drowned October 10, 1817, and Ichabod, a merchant in New York; Daniel married Ann Mersereau January 22, 1794.

The following references to the family are found scattered through various records, it being impossible to properly classify them: Aron, Jr., and his wife, Antye Staats, had a daughter born May 21, 1715; a son Aron, in 1717; a daughter in 1719, and a son Peter in 1724. Aron, or Arent (not Jr.), and his wife, Maritje Bowman, had a son William Joris, born in 1730, and a son Hendrick, born in 1735. Isaac (probably the son of Abraham, above mentioned) and his wife, Maria Debaa or Dubois, had a daughter born in 1746, and another in 1748; a son Peter in 1744, and a son Lewis in 1751. Benjamin and his wife, Sarah Swaim, had a son Abraham, born in 1752, and a son John in 1766. John had a daughter born in 1719. Abraham and Sarah Cannon were married in August, 1776. John and Martha Latourette were married January 14, 1802. The family is still quite numerous on Staten Island.

PRYER.

Andries Pryer and Anna Stymets, his wife, came from Holland to this country some time prior to 1698, for in that year the death of Andries is recorded. They settled at Bergen, in New Jersey. Their children were: Jacob, Leah, Johannes, and Samuel.

Representatives of the second generation of this family came to Staten Island early in the Eighteenth century. For generations the family has made its home in Westfield. The thoroughfare now known as Huguenot avenue, running from Huguenot station to LaForge's corner, originally ran through the Pryer estate, the old homestead being located on it. Old maps and deeds describe the road as "Pryer's lane."

The family is represented on the Island to-day by James E. Pryer, who resides in the old Stephens mansion, near the Court House, in

Digitized by Google

Richmond. He is of the sixth generation of the family on Staten Island. He was born on March 25, 1828, and married Ellen J. Laforge in 1856. One of his sons, Andrew Eddy, born in 1859, married Elida Jessup in 1889.

RYERSS.

This name is found at an early date on Long Island. Arie Ryerse and Maerte Ryerse were assessed as owners of property at Middelmout, now Flatbush, in 1676, but when their connection with Staten Island began is unknown.

Adrian Ryerss was born in 1715, and died December 12, 1779. His wife was Hester Debaa (Dubois). Their son Lewis was born December 7, 1754, and died April 13, 1806. Aris, another son of Adrian, had a daughter baptized July 27, 1786, and a son David, baptized October 17, 1790. Gozen, also a son of Adrian, made his will October 21, 1800, proved January 13, 1802, in which he speaks of his son, John P., and his daughter, Margaret, his brother Lewis, and his grandsons, Gozen Adrian Ryers and Ryers De Hart. He dwelt for many years preceding his death at Port Richmond, in the house now known as the St. James Hotel.

The family, although at one time very numerous, has become nearly extinct on Staten Island. David Ryerss, a direct descendant, resides on Todt Hill, near New Dorp.

SEGUINE.

The earliest mention of this name in the local records is, that Jean Seguine and Elizabeth Hooper had a son Jonas, baptized December 12, 1725. Jaques and Lady Mambrut had a daughter Sara, who was baptized March 3, 1728. A son Jean was baptized March 19, 1732. Jean and Jaques stood sponsors for each other's children. They were probably brothers.

The following are from the records of St. Andrew's, at Richmond: James and Elsie had a daughter Sara, born April, 1756; son James, born December 10, 1760. John and Sarah had the following children: Elisha, born May 31, 1760; James, baptized July 18, 1762, and Henry, born February 4, 1764. Lawrence and Ann had a daughter Sara, born April 12, 1761. James and Caty had a son Stephen, born March 22, 1764, and a son James, born April 5, 1766. James made his will on June 13, 1795, and it was proved October 7, 1795; he mentions his wife, Catharine, and his children: Bornt, Joseph, Frederick, John, Henry, Stephen, and James.

John Seguine and Rachel Mitchel were married in November, 1775. John and Margaretta had a son John, baptized October 24, 1790, and Henry, October 27, 1793. James Seguine and Mary Guyon married, June 30, 1791. Stephen and Susanna Poillon married, November 8,

Digitized by Google

1792. Henry and Jane Garretson married, August 13, 1800. Stephen and Margaret Guyon married, March 5, 1805.

John G. Seguine was born June 14, 1805. On February 15, 1830, he married Harriet, daughter of Andre Mille. Their children are: Louise M., who married Henry Stewart Seguine; Henry J., who married Phebe A. Vail; John J., who married Cordelia Vail, and Andre, who married Catherine Jane Winant.

The late Henry Stewart Seguine represented another branch of the family. The family is of Huguenot antecedents. James Seguine, the father of Henry S., and the son of James Seguine, married Mary, daughter of Joseph Guyon, of Staten Island, who also descended from Huguenot stock. Their children were: Catherine, wife of John Guyon; Joseph G., James S., and Henry S. The last named was born near Annadale, in 1812. On January 7, 1857, he married Louise M., daughter of John G. and Harriet Seguine. Their children are Henry G. and Harriet M. Henry Stewart Seguine died on July 2, 1884.

SHARROTT.

The first of this name on Staten Island was Richard Sharet, who was a Frenchman, of Huguenot parentage, and for a short period after his emigration resided in New England.

Richard came to Staten Island either just before or just after the Revolution. He married Mary Heger. Their children were William, Richard, John, James, Susan, and Mary.

John married Mary Ann Burbank October 9, 1789. Their children were: Peter, who died in February, 1875, aged eighty-six years; John, Jeremiah, Richard, Abraham, William Henry, Mary, Susan, Catharine, Eliza, and Louisa.

There are two branches of the family still residing on the Island. The family is principally located in Westfield at this time.

SIMONSON.

The original name of this family was La Blant. It is of French origin. William, the founder of the family on Staten Island, was a son of Simon La Blant. He was sentenced to be executed because of his connection with the Huguenots. He managed to escape to Holland, and from thence to America in the ship "Fox," in 1662. In order to prevent identification, even after he had reached Staten Island, he wrote his name "Simon's son," omitting entirely his own name. Finally he became bold enough to write it "William, Simon's son," and in time he became known only as William Simonson. His descendants have become so numerous on Staten Island that it is difficult to trace the various branches.

The Simonsons of each generation have been large freeholders.

Digitized by Google

Aert (Arthur), in 1721, purchased an estate of one hundred and sixty acres at Carle's Neck, and a large part of this land up to within a recent period remained in possession of the family, having passed from father to son from one generation to another. David Simonson, a direct descendant and the last owner and occupant, was one of the largest freeholders on the Island. He died about three years ago, having never been married.

Isaac, a grandson of Aert, was an officer of the old Dutch Reformed Church, of Port Richmond in 1795, and John, a grandson of Isaac, served in the War of 1812. Jacob, a grandson of Isaac, purchased part of the original estate and erected a residence upon it. He lived there for the greater part of his life, and bequeathed the same to his children. He served as supervisor of the Town of Northfield, from 1833 to 1840, and in 1840 he was elected sheriff of Richmond County, and was again elected supervisor of his town in 1849. He died April 4, 1883, in the eighty-fifth year of his age. His children are: John, William, who died in 1882; Isaac J., a florist, residing at New Springville; Jacob, a dentist, in Newark, and Eliza J. Waters, residing in New York. John W., son of Jacob and Ann E. Bedell, his first wife, was born on the old estate December 23, 1826, and died at West New Brighton, December 28, 1882. He held various positions of trust. In 1851, he married Charlotte A., daughter of the late Stephen D. Stephens. Two of their children, Stephen D. and Charles E., are now living in West New Brighton.

Mulford D. Simonson, of West New Brighton, a member of the firm of Benedict Brothers, represents another branch of this large family. David F. Simonson, of Port Richmond, represents still another.

STILLWELL.

The Stillwell family was of English origin, and was among the earliest settlers of that nationality on Staten Island. The very first mention of the name, with reference to the Island, is in the Albany records, where a piece of woodland, on the south side of Fresh Kill, is recorded as belonging to Daniel Stillwell, in 1680.

There is also mention made in the county records of Richard in 1689, of John in 1695-96 and 1708, and Thomas in 1697 and 1704. At the close of the Seventeenth century there were at least four families of the name on Staten Island.

We add the names of those found in church records: Elias and his wife, Anne Burbank, had a son Thomas, baptized June 30, 1726, and a son Daniel, baptized March 24, 1728. Thomas married Debora Martling, and had a son Elias, baptized June 10, 1747. Nicholas, born January, 1747, died April 26, 1819. Abraham, born March, 1750, died September 12, 1824.

The Stillwells have filled many military and civic offices. There

Digitized by Google

are many of the name on the Island to-day, but what their connection is with the early settlers is not known. The late Captain Richard Stillwell, who for many years commanded boats connected with the Staten Island Ferry, and who resided at Clifton, was a representative of the old family.

SPRAGUE.

Joseph, Edward, and John Sprague emigrated simultaneously from England; but the date is lost. It is thought that Jacob Spragg must have been a son of Joseph, and born in 1729. Joseph came to Staten Island. William, whose name is found in the county records in 1767, and Joseph in 1772, are believed to have been grandsons of the original Joseph.

The original Joseph had three sons, Jacob, John, and Edward. The name at present is chiefly confined to Westfield. Notices of the name appear in the records of St. Andrew's Church as follows: Andrew Sprague and Catharine Pryor married June 28, 1800. Jacob Sprague and Margaret Wood married, July 12, 1800. Daniel Sprague and Annatje (Anna) had a daughter Susannah, baptized July 18, 1762. Daniel Sprague married Maria Poillon, and had sons: Jaques, baptized March 26, 1738, and Daniel, baptized April 4, 1736, whose wife was Ariantje; they had a son Jeremiah, born December 1, 1763.

Sarah Pareyn (Perine), wife of William Sprague, had twins, William and Daniel, baptized September 6, 1719. Jan Sprague and Elizabeth Parein (Perine) had a son John, baptized November 15, 1719. Thomas Sprague and Sarah Van Name had a son Thomas, baptized December 22, 1723. Daniel Sprague and Catharine Larzelere had a son Richard, baptized November 25, 1739. Joachim Sprague and Anna Tenners had a son John, baptized July 28, 1751, and a son Richard, May 23, 1759. Thomas Sprague and Nancy Fountain had a son Antone, baptized February 16, 1755. John Sprague and Helena Van Name had a son Elias, baptized June 24, 1752. Richard Sprague and Jenneke (Jane) Van Name had a son Nicholas, baptized September 21, 1735.

Nicholas (son of the last-mentioned Richard) and Effey had a daughter Catharine, born November 13, 1761. Jeremiah and Yetty had a son Peter, born April 30, 1764. John and Olly Taylor were married September 15, 1757. Samuel and Hannah Van Pelt were married June 9, 1755. Richard and Mary had a son Daniel, born February 7, 1770.

There are two distinct families by this name on Staten Island to-day. The one in Westfield represents the early settlers. The other has its chief representative in Dr. John T. Sprague, of Stapleton.

TAYLOR.

Abraham Taylor and Harmintje Haughwout are the first of this family of which we have any record on Staten Island. They had the

Digitized by Google

following children: Ephraim, baptized October 23, 1711, died young; Altje (Alida), baptized May 18, 1710, died young; Rachel, baptized August 21, 1720; Altje, baptized November 25, 1722; Peter, baptized July 4, 1725; Ephraim, baptized April 6, 1729, and Margaret, baptized November 23, 1715. Ephraim married Elizabeth Morgan January 4, 1756 Another Ephraim, probably father of Abraham, had a son Jan, and a daughter Marietta, both baptized in 1696.

The following are found in the records of St. Andrew's Church, and belong to another family: Oliver, born in 1687, died August 24, 1771. Henry and Judith had a son John, born September 20, 1770. Henry and Lydia had a son Abraham, baptized in 1775. John and Fanny had a son Oliver, born September 24, 1791. John and Sarah Yates married January 7, 1804. Benjamin and Ann Decker married September 9, 1791.

TOTTEN.

This name is found in the records of the county for considerably more than a century. It also occurs in the records of St. Andrew's Church, until the organization of the Methodist Episcopal Church at Woodrow, when it became identified with that denomination. The Tottens are of Welsh extraction. Gilbert Totten was one of the first, and was connected with the Methodist Society. The homes of the families bearing the name have been confined almost exclusively to Westfield.

The notices of the name in church records, other than those of the Methodist Church, are as follows: Silas and Charity, his wife, had two sons—Joseph, born August 10, 1765, and Ephraim, born February 24, 1768. Joseph Totten and Mary Cubberly were married December 11, 1804.

Going back a generation, we find that Gilbert and Joseph Totten settled on Staten Island in the latter part of the Eighteenth century. They were born at Hempstead, Long Island. Gilbert became an extensive landowner on Staten Island. He married Mary Butler and had the following children: James, John, Joseph, Rachel, Mary, Letitia, and Elizabeth. John, of this number, was born in 1771, and died in 1847. He married Nancy Cole, a native of the Island, and had twelve children, one of whom was the late Ephraim J., of Tottenville, who was born March 30, 1806, became a sea captain at nineteen, was a merchant in San Francisco, and later in Tottenville, served as supervisor for Westfield in 1846-47, Member of Assembly in 1848, and held several other positions. He was one of the projectors and an early director of the Staten Island Railroad, and for thirty-three years was recording steward and trustee of Bethel Methodist Episcopal Church. Ephraim was married on June 27, 1827, to Harriet, daughter of Jesse Oakley. Their children were Gilbert, John A., George O., William W., Frances E., John J., James B., and Ella G.

Digitized by Google

Rev. Joseph Totten, of Hempstead, was born on February 4, 1759. The inscription on his tombstone at Woodrow states that he was among the first members of the Methodist Episcopal Church on this Island. He was a farmer, and his associations with Bishop Asbury no doubt led him to enter the ministry, which occurred in 1792, when he was thirty-three years of age. In 1811 he was made a presiding elder of a New Jersey district. In 1818 he was pastor of St. John's Church, of Philadelphia. On Sunday, June 1, 1794, he preached the dedicatory sermon of the Sands Street Methodist Church, in Brooklyn, and in 1795 was appointed its first pastor. He received conference appointments for twenty-seven consecutive years.

After receiving his last appointment at Philadelphia, in 1818, he returned to his family on Staten Island, and on May 10th "preached in the meeting-house at Westfield" (Woodrow). On the following Sabbath he preached three times in Philadelphia, and "with great power again on Tuesday, and retired feeling perfectly well." In the morning he complained of feeling ill, but walked out in the yard. Presently the barking of dog attracted the attention of a lady, who discovered him lying on the ground. He was carried into the house and expired in a few minutes without uttering a word. This was on May 20, 1818, when he had reached his fifty-ninth year. "A mound was made over him on the spot he had selected, and there, in the churchyard at Woodrow, he awaits the resurrection of the just."

John C. Totten, the printer, whose name is on the title-page of many an old Methodist hymn-book, married Letitia, a daughter of Joseph Totten, and another daughter married John Pray. The Prays were members of the old Woodrow church many years ago.

TOWNSEND.

The family is of Norman and Saxon origin. The most noted member in the direct line was Charles, chancellor of the exchequer, under George III., whom Burke declared was the "official reproducer of this fatal scheme of 'American taxation.'"

In, or prior to the year, 1645, three brothers Townsend emigrated to this country, and settled on Long Island. One of them, John, received a patent from Governor Kieft for the Town of Flushing in that year. The other brothers were named Henry and Richard.

George, son of the above-mentioned John, was born at Oyster Bay about 1661. George, son of the last mentioned, was recorder of the Town of Jericho, Long Island, at which place he died in 1763. His son William was born at Oyster Bay in 1715. His son James died in 1793, leaving two sons, the immediate ancestors of two families of the Staten Island Townsends. These were John, born in 1765, and Walter W., born in 1762. Walter W. was, like his brother John, a flour merchant in New York City. His wife was named Charlotte Coles. He

Digitized by Google

died in 1793. His son, Walter W., born after his father's death, in 1794, married Anne Helme. He died in 1860. His children were: Benjamin, Wisner H., Joseph, Dwight, Charles H., Walter W., Charlotte, Maria, Annie, and Cornelia. Of this family there are now living: Wisner, who was for many years a citizen of Clifton, but who has recently lived in Manhattan; Dwight, who was a member of Congress for this district in the seventies; Annie, who is the wife of Townsend Cox, of Manhattan, and Cornelia, who is the wife of the Rev. Firth Jewett, of Skaneateles, New York.

Benjamin, now deceased, lived at Bay Ridge, Long Island; Charles H. died at New Brighton, on January 1, 1897. He had been for many years a resident of Clifton, where he owned and occupied the beautiful mansion and estate overlooking the lower bay known as the "Towers." This branch of the family is represented on Staten Island at present by Dr. Charles Wilmot Townsend, son of the above.

There is another family of the name, that of William B. Townsend, formerly of Clifton, father of the late Mrs. Nathaniel Marsh, Mrs. George S. Scofield, Sr., and of Mrs. George B. Ripley, Henry W., Kneeland S., and William B. Townsend.

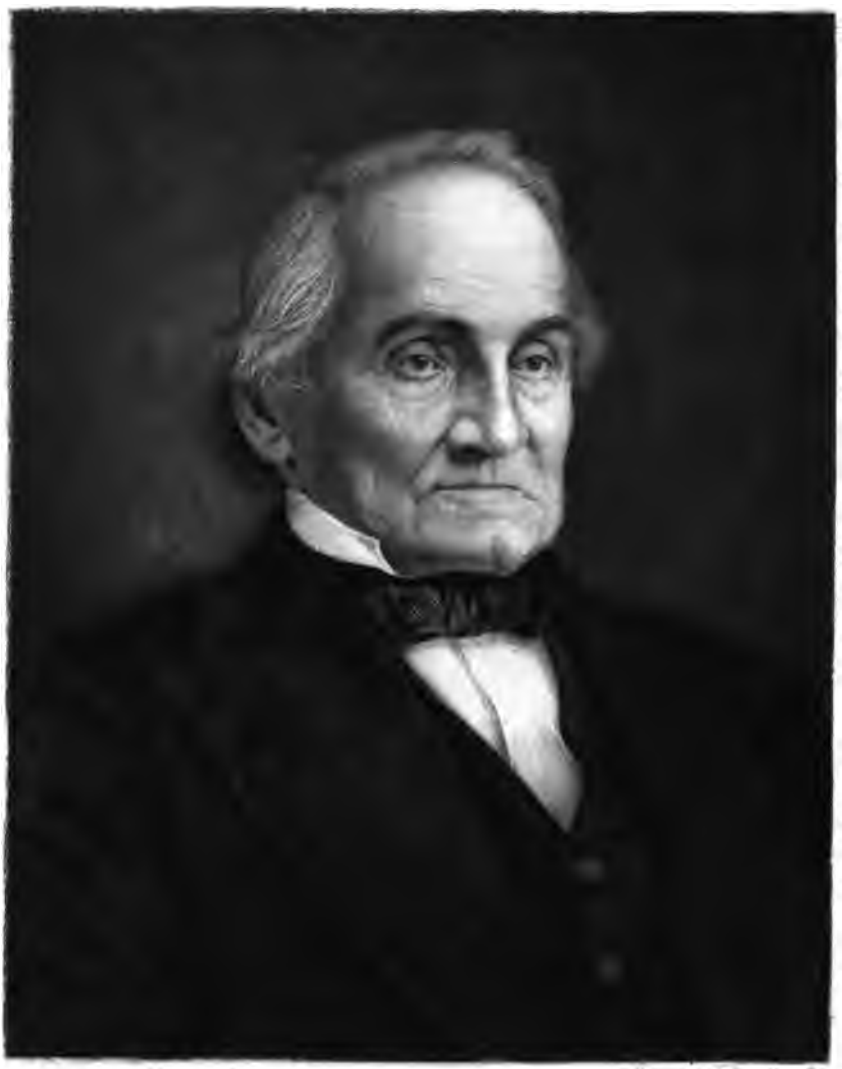
In 1835, that branch of the Townsend family represented by Walter Franklin, John Franklin, James W., Charles E., and William H., took up their residence on Staten Island. They were the sons of John Townsend, of New York City.

The brothers purchased the northerly half of the Charles McLean Simonson (or "McSimonson") farm, a considerable tract of land, extending westwardly from the shores of the bay. Their purchase comprised the water front known as Vanderbilt's Landing, and included the rising ground as far back as the Fox Hills. On the highest part of this tract, a quarter of a mile from the old "highway leading from Fort Richmond to Quarantine," the brothers erected a spacious, but quaintly designed residence, which, from its two flanking towers, became known as the "Townsend Castle." The accompanying view is from a sketch made at the time the house was built, by Charles E. Townsend, Sr. The "Castle" was destroyed by fire in 1885. An approach or avenue, one-quarter of a mile in length, was opened through their land by the brothers, from the site of their dwelling to the shore, intersecting the old "road leading from Fort Richmond to Quarantine." This was dedicated as a public way in 1837 or 1838, and was designated "Townsend avenue." The first residence erected on this avenue, and before the latter was dedicated, was upon the site of the present No. 45, and was built and occupied by William H. Townsend, one of the brothers mentioned above.

William H. Townsend had ten children. The sixth, Charles Edward, born April 30, 1836, outlived all the others. He died on April 8, 1894, at Clifton. Mr. Townsend was a familiar figure in the community. His widow, Louisa S. Townsend, and sons Arthur O. and Ferdinand

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



David Lyon

... Lucas Latham both and Mary, surviving children, and all possessed the ... qualities of their family name, at Clifton.

TYSEN

... Tysen, the immigrant ancestor of the Tysen family of Staten Island, ... was a native of Amsterdam, Holland, in 1630. He must have come to New ... Netherland between the years 1650 and 1660, as his name is not among ... those who applied for a grant of land on Staten Island in 1661. He ... received a grant for a tract on Fresh Kills Neck, from Governor Nicolls, ... in 1667. He married Maria Jacobse in 1672. Their first child, ... Jacob, sharing in the property granted to both by Nicolls, was ... born in 1680. He had two sons, Abraham and Cornelius, and ... Maria married, and had a son Abraham, who was ... baptized October 21, 1705; Cornelius was married to Catharine ... in 1703, and had a daughter Elizabeth, who was born May 2, ... and baptized August 2, 1705.

Abraham married Magdalena Morgan in 1695, and died in 1740. They ... had children, Barent and Sarah. Barent was born ... and married Elizabeth Swart on October 20, 1725. They had ... children Elizabeth, Cecil, and John. Elizabeth married John ... Van David died in infancy; Joan was born October 19, 1731. As ... only surviving child he succeeded to his father's estate, and became ... the property owned by Nicolls. He married Catharine ... on May 1, 1757. His name is at the head of a memorial who ... passed the Provincial Congress on December 15, 1775, concluding ... with "We wish and pray that if any hopes of reconciliation ... can measures might be adopted for the same, to obtain that ... blessed," etc. When all hope of reconciliation was gone he cast ... his lot with the cause of the Revolution. He was supervisor of ... Richmond in 1789-91-98. As supervisor he instituted the steps to ... secure a survey and map made of Staten Island, and ... to him belongs the credit of his efforts. It is also on record in the ... office of Secretary of State, at Albany.

... Tysen was also trustee and elder of the Reformed Dutch ... Church of Staten Island. He died March 7, 1808 and is buried in ... the family burying plot on the Tysen patent. Two sons survived him. ... Jacobus, his eldest child, was born March 17, 1758; he married Elizabeth ... Jacques on March 21, 1798. He resided on a farm near Probasco's ... Corners (the park including part of the farm). He was supervisor of ... the Town of Castleton from 1805 to 1809. He was elected deacon ... and treasurer of the "North Dutch Church," in 1802, and took a very ... active part in church matters, remaining treasurer until his death ... on January 6, 1827.

... a large family. His eldest son, David Jacques Tysen, was ... born August 28, 1787. Though but nineteen years old, he took

Digitized by Google

C., daughters Elizabeth and Mary, survive him, and all reside on the street that bears their family name, at Clifton.

TYSEN.

Barne Tysen, the founder of the Tysen family on Staten Island, came from Amsterdam, Holland, in 1660. He first settled in New Amsterdam, but what year he came to Staten Island is not known. He made application for a grant of land on Staten Island in 1674, and received a patent for a tract on Karle's Neck, from Governor Edmond Andros, in 1677. He married Maria Kroesen in 1672. The old stone house, still standing on the property granted to him by Andros, was built by him in 1680. He had three sons—Abraham, Cornelius, and David. Abraham married, and had a son Abraham de Decker Tysen, who was baptized October 21, 1707; Cornelius was married to Clymer Classen in 1703, and had a daughter Elizabeth, who was born May 28, 1705, and baptized August 2, 1705.

David married Magdalena Morgan in 1698, and died in 1710. They had two children, Barent and Sarah. Barent was born on February 4, 1699, and married Elizabeth Swaim on October 20, 1723. They had three children: Elizabeth, David, and John. Elizabeth married John Staats; David died in infancy; John was born October 10, 1731. As the only surviving child he succeeded to his father's estate, and resided on the property patented by Andros. He married Cordelia Bergen May 1, 1757. His name is at the head of a committee who addressed the Provincial Congress on December 15, 1775, concluding with, "We wish and pray that if yet any hope of reconciliation is left, that measures might be adopted, if possible, to obtain that desirable end," etc. When all hope of reconciliation was gone, he earnestly espoused the cause of the Revolution. He was supervisor of Northfield in 1789-91-98. As supervisor he initiated measures to have a survey and map made of Staten Island, and the first official map was largely the result of his efforts. It is filed in the office of the Secretary of State, at Albany.

John Tysen was also trustee and elder of the Reformed Dutch Church on Staten Island. He died March 7, 1808, and is buried in the family burying-plot on the Tysen patent. Two sons survive him. John, his eldest child, was born March 17, 1758; he married Elizabeth Jaques on March 21, 1798. He resided on a farm near Prohibition Park (the park including part of the farm). He was supervisor of the Town of Castleton from 1805 to 1809. He was elected deacon and treasurer of the "North Dutch Church," in 1802, and took a very active part in church matters, remaining treasurer until his death on February 6, 1827.

He had a large family. His eldest son, David Jaques Tysen, was born on August 28, 1807. Though but nineteen years old, he took

Digitized by Google

charge and successfully managed his father's estate. He married Elizabeth P. Lake December 29, 1831. He took great interest in public matters, though never holding office. Many lawsuits were avoided by his conciliatory advice. Though of great firmness of character, he was most kindly and sympathetic in his nature. He looked with charity upon the failings and shortcomings of others, but despised cant and hypocrisy. He was most hospitable. He died March 27, 1885. One near to him said to the writer: "His name is a priceless heritage, and his memory a precious legacy." His widow, Elizabeth P. Tysen, was a most amiable, generous Christian character. She died on January 25, 1898. She was a Daughter of the American Revolution.

Of a large family, six children survive this venerable pair—Daniel W., David J., Margaret L., Josephine, Georgianna, and Lauretta S. Daniel W. Tysen resides with his sisters on the homestead at New Dorp. David Jaques Tysen married Frances W., daughter of Abraham and Alice Ellis, January 7, 1891, and resides on Dongan Hills. He owns the tract patented to his ancestor in 1677, and is now the only descendant of the early settlers on Staten Island who owns the entire original patent.

Isaac Freeman Tysen, son of John, was born February 14, 1814. He married Cordelia H. Jackson, of New York City, January 11, 1837. They resided on the homestead near Prohibition Park. He died on March 26, 1886. His only surviving child, Robert F. Tysen, resides in the Borough of Manhattan.

Charles Tysen, youngest son of John, married Adeline Moore, of Richfield Springs, on July 18, 1855. He resided at Port Richmond, and died on November 1, 1884. He had one daughter, Jennie L. Tysen, who married Harry W. Lobb.

Jacob Tysen, son of John, Sr., was born October 8, 1773, and married Mary Housman on February 6, 1794. They resided in the stone house on Richmond terrace, near Sailors' Snug Harbor. Jacob succeeded his brother John as treasurer of the "North Dutch Church." He was supervisor of the Town of Castletown from 1811 to 1821, and was county judge, State senator, and Member of Congress. He died on July 16, 1848.

Judge Tysen left three sons—John, Richard, and Raymond M. John, the eldest, was born February 1, 1803, married Susan Antoinette Bailey May 11, 1826, and died August 3, 1888, leaving four children—William A., Mary, Antoinette, and Eugene Victor. Richard Tysen was born May 13, 1805, and married Elizabeth W. Perine May 19, 1830. He was many years an officer in the Reformed Dutch Church at Richmond, and died on February 2, 1866. His widow, Elizabeth W. Tysen, died on December 6, 1883. Four children survived them. Jacob Raymond Tysen, their eldest son, married Mary Foster Totten, daughter of Abraham C. and Mary Totten. They reside at Jacksonville, Florida. Mary Louise Tysen married J. W. Stephens, son of Stephen

Digitized by Google

D. and Elizabeth Stephens, and resides in Brooklyn. Edward P. Tysen married Eliza L. Dill, daughter of Judge James and Eliza Dill, of New Dorp. They reside in Manhattan. Amelia Tysen married A. Stewart Rowley. They reside in Brooklyn.

Raymond M. Tysen, the youngest son of Judge Tysen, was born on October 14, 1819. He graduated from Princeton College and was admitted to the bar, and was a most promising young lawyer. He collected considerable material for a history of the Island, which was never fully consummated, owing to his early death, which occurred on May 8, 1851.

VAN DUZER.

The Van Duzers came from Long Island about the close of the Revolution. They were originally from Holland. The old Van Duzer homestead, which stood at Tompkinsville, was demolished a few years since. Mrs. Van Duzer, mother-in-law of the late Judge Metcalfe, married a son of the original Cornelius Van Buskirk, and after his death married the late Daniel Van Duzer. Daniel Van Duzer left two sons—John H. and Daniel C., both deceased. The name has become almost extinct on the Island, it being alone perpetuated by a street in Tompkinsville. An illustration of the old homestead appears on page 316 of Vol. I.

VAN CLIEF.

Daniel Van Clief, of German extraction, settled on a farm near Garrisons Station, some time previous to the Revolution, and, taking the part of the Americans, was four times wounded during the struggle for independence. The family enjoys a record for patriotism and loyalty, members of it having served in the various wars. Benjamin Van Clief died on Staten Island of a wound received in the war with Mexico. He was a son of Jesse Van Clief, a ship blacksmith, employed in the construction of many famous warships, among which was the "Constitution." While working upon this vessel he broke his leg, and in order that its completion might not be delayed, he allowed himself to be transported from Staten Island to the Brooklyn Navy Yard on a couch, after which he superintended the rigging of the vessel in his invalid condition. Afterward he fought in the War of 1812, in which he had the misfortune to lose his hearing.

Jesse Van Clief married Margaret Moore, and they had ten children. The fourth son, John H., became one of the best-known citizens of the Island. His father died when he was but ten years old, and being thrown upon his own resources, worked in the daytime and attended night school at Tompkinsville. He established the lumber business in Port Richmond. He repeatedly represented the Town of Northfield in the board of supervisors and held other positions of trust. His son John H., Jr., served as county clerk for one term.

Digitized by Google

Another son, William S., carries on the business which his father established, and is one of the Island's most successful citizens to-day.

VAN NAME.

This name had its origin centuries ago. "Namen" is the name of a town in Southern Netherlands; the prefix "Van" means "from" or "of." Hence, Van Namen—from Namen, or of Namen.

Engelbert van Namen, a member of a family formerly of Namen, moved to Heusden, Brabant, Holland. He died in Holland, leaving a young son, Jachem Engelbert van Namen, born at Heusden, Brabant. This son came to this country in the ship "Hope," which sailed from Amsterdam on April 8, 1662. He was under age. He landed at Manhattan Island, where he remained for a number of years, and from thence went to Esopus, near Kingston, on the Hudson River.

At Kingston he married Elizabeth, daughter of Evert Pels, on November 3, 1678. They had several children, one of whom was Evert, born September 2, 1683, according to the baptismal register of the Dutch Church of Kingston. Evert married Wintje Benham, and among other children had a son Simon. He married Sarah Prall, and one of his children was a son, Aaron. He married Mary McLean, and one of their children was named Charles.

Charles married Catharine Van Pelt, and among other children they had a son named Aaron. He married Mary Decker, and they had several children, one of whom was named Cornelius. He married Rebecca Corson, and had among their children William Henry, who married Elizabeth Ann Decker, and had one child, Calvin Decker Van Name, who now resides at Mariners' Harbor.

Moses, son of Aaron, was born February 23, 1760, married June 9, 1782, and died October 16, 1811; Mary LaGrange, his wife, was born September 8, 1763, and died February 3, 1846. John (son) was born June 18, 1783, married Elizabeth Wright, and died on April 1, 1853. Mary was born July 19, 1785, married, April 15, 1803, to Edward DeHart, and died January 13, 1780. Moses was born April 9, 1788, married, January 28, 1811, to Mary Pierson, and died July 28, 1871. Elizabeth was born June 30, 1790, married to Matthias DeHart, and died July 25, 1873. Catharine was born February 16, 1793, married December 1, 1811, to Henry Simonson, and died July 27, 1869. Michael was born November 14, 1795, married, April 20, 1817, to Gertrude Cortelyou, and died June 5, 1883. Sophia was born August 29, 1789, married in October, 1816, to William Lake. Rachel was born March 10, 1801, married, September 4, 1821, to Peter Thatcher, and died in 1825. Aaron was born October 1, 1803, married, January 4, 1827, to Mary Mersereau, and died in July, 1882. Charles was born on August 25, 1806, married in November, 1832, to Elizabeth Mersereau (cousin to Mary), and died July 15, 1883.

Digitized by Google

Charles (son of Moses) and Elizabeth Van Name had the following children: Joseph H., born March 27, 1835, and married Caroline Gibson; Paul M., born June 12, 1837, married Elizabeth Scott, of New Jersey.

John (son of Moses), born June 18, 1783, married Elizabeth Wright. Their children were Mary LaGrange, born October 12, 1809; Caleb Halsey, born February 7, 1818; Judy Johnson, born September 2, 1815; Moses J., born March 9, 1818; Catharine, born October 27, 1820; Sophia Lake, born May 9, 1823; John Poiner, born February 2, 1826; Andrew Wright, born July 11, 1831, and Charles Joseph, born January 28, 1834.

David M. (son of Charles) was born January 1, 1840, married Sarah M. Wyckoff. Nancy M., born November 24, 1842, married John Todd Crittenden; George W., born October 20, 1845, married Kate A. Van Name. The children of David M. are: Travilla, Lizzie Irene, Ada D., Florence Adelaide, and Sara Viola.

Joseph Howard Van Name (son of Aaron and Mary) married Catharine Gibson, and had one son, George W., who married Louisa Ricard. Paul M. (brother to Joseph H.) married and had the following children: Alice Jane, who married Thomas Simonson; Charles Winfield, Edward Everett, Frances Marion, Paul M., and Charlotte. Nancy M. (sister) married Charles Crittenden. Their children were Pauline and J. Howard. George W. Van Name and wife had the following children: Edgar, Irving, and Pearly Louise.

The dropping of the final "n" in the spelling of "Namen" occurred early in this country. The first absence of the letter appearing in the records is on the baptismal register of the Dutch Church of Kingston. It is in the record of the baptism of one of the children of Jochem Engelbert Van Namen. The name of the child was Johannes, born October 8, 1682; the name of the mother, Elizabeth Pels, and the name of the father, "Jochem Engelbert Van Name."

The final "n" is not sounded by plain Dutch people. It was not sounded by the New Netherlanders. The "e" had the sound of "ar," and the pronunciation by plain people was "Van Narmar"; and this was the sound until the time of this generation. Now the English sound is given to each letter, and it is improperly called "Van Name." The family is to-day a large one in Holland, and the educated people there sound the "n" and spell the name "Van Namen," and pronounce it "Van Narmen."

VAN PELT.

There were people by this name residing in New Utrecht, Long Island, several years before it appeared on Staten Island. Wouter (Walter), Anthony, and Aert Van Pelt are mentioned in 1687, on Long Island. The first Van Pelt noticed in our records is Hendrick, who had

Digitized by Google

children born between 1696 and 1701. At or about the same time there was a Peter Van Pelt, who had a son Jan, baptized October 21, 1707, and a son Samuel, July 25, 1710. This John and Jannetje (Janet) Adams had a daughter, baptized March 28, 1736; a son William, April 13, 1742, and a daughter, April, 1744. Jacob and Aaltje (Alida) Haughwout, his wife, had a son John, baptized October 15, 1727, and a daughter Catalyntje, September 27, 1724. John Van Pelt and Susanna Latourette had twins, John and Susanna, baptized May 25, 1729. Tunis and Maria Drageau had the following children: Anthony, baptized October 9, 1729; Johannes, baptized February 14, 1731; Maria, baptized June 3, 1734; Joost, baptized May 19, 1737, and Tunis, baptized November 19, 1738.

Peter Van Pelt had a son William, baptized November 23, 1715; a son Samuel, April 16, 1717. Simon Van Pelt and Maria Adams had a son Peter, baptized May 23, 1749, and a daughter, April 18, 1743. John (Anthony's son) and Susanna Latourette, his wife, had Joost, baptized April 4, 1736, and Anthony, baptized April 30, 1733. This Anthony married Janneke Simonson, and had a daughter, baptized June 11, 1760. Peter Van Pelt and Barbera Houlton had a daughter, baptized April 18, 1743, and a son David, baptized October 12, 1755. Jan and Maria Bouman had a daughter, baptized September 14, 1742. Jan, Jr., and Catrina Bouman had a daughter, baptized May 6, 1745. John had a daughter, baptized October 29, 1787. Samuel, son of Peter, mentioned above, and Maria Falkenburg had a son Pieter, baptized July 19, 1748. Aart and Christian Immet had a daughter Maria, baptized December 10, 1721. John and Margaret had the following children: Tunis, born August 8, 1760; John, born February 10, 1765; James, born May 13, 1767, and Peter, born November 13, 1769. Peter and Phebe had a son Tunis, born June 6, 1768. Anthony and Susanna had a daughter Susanna, born May 10, 1766, and a son George, born March 1, 1769.

Joseph Van Pelt and Elizabeth, his wife, had a son James, born August 5, 1767, and a son Tunis, born December 2, 1771. John Van Pelt and Catharine Lawrence had a daughter Mary, baptized March 8, 1772. Jacob and Elizabeth had a daughter Mary, born March 11, 1768. Peter, son of John and Margaret, above, married Mary Colon, December 5, 1797. David Van Name and Hannah Wright married June 21, 1779, and died March 30, 1838. At the present time the family is a large one on Staten Island.

WANDEL.

John Wandel's name appears in the county records with that of his wife, Letitia, who executed a mortgage to one Groom, May 1, 1767, and cancelled it by payment the next year. John was a cordwainer by trade, and carried on the tanning business on Todt Hill.

Digitized by Google

Remnants of the old tannery are still visible at that place. John and Letitia had a son Peter, born January 10, 1776. Peter married Sarah Van Clief in March, 1789, and died May 17, 1857, over ninety-one years of age. His sons were: Matthew, Daniel, John, Peter S., and Walter I. The family still exists on the Island. Peter S. was county treasurer for a number of years. He had a cousin Peter, who represented the Town of Middletown in the board of supervisors at a recent date.

WINANT.

This name is Dutch. In America it was recorded as follows: Weijants, Wynantse, Winantse, Wynants, Winants, Winans, and, lastly, Winant, which latter now stands, only a few descending branches retaining the name of Winans, which is rare on Staten Island.

The first Winant in America was Wynant Pieterse (in English, Peter Winant), born in 1632, who emigrated from Betuwe, Guelderland, Holland, about 1655-60. Tradition has it that he was (or descended from) a famous Dutch musician and artist.

PURDY'S HOTEL, PRINCE'S BAY; ERECTED IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.

Wynant Pieterse, the emigrant, settled in Breuckelen, marrying, on December 4, 1661, Anneken Aukes (now Van Nyse).

Wynant Pieterse's children were as follows: First, Pieter Winantse, born 1653-4, baptized September 9, 1663; second, Ariaentje Winantse, married, 1693, Teuriaen Van der berg; third, Altje Winantse, married Jan Willemse Bennet, of Gowanus. Thus originate the Winant-Bennetts of Long Island. Altje married, second, Peter Haughwout, of Staten Island. Said Pieter Winantse, born 1653-4, is the Peter Winants who settled on Staten Island, having first resided in Breuckelen. He married Anna Marie Van Nyse, moving to Staten Island, where he is buried. His tombstone in Rossville reads: "Here lyes ye body of Peter Winants, born ye year 1654, who departed this life August 6, 1758, aged 104 years." A trial, believed to have been about 1734, related to a dispute of Gowanus fence boundaries, in which Peter Winans, of Staten Island, was a witness.

Digitized by Google

His family was the only one of the name then in Richmond County. The following were his children: Peter, who had a son Peter, baptized April 23, 1707. Winant (mentioned above), whose wife was Ann Cole, had the following sons baptized: Peter, March 27, 1720; Abraham, March 24, 1725; Jacob, October 9, 1726, and Daniel, April 22, 1728. John, whose wife was Lena Bird, had a son Peter, baptized March 19, 1732, and Cornelius, whose wife was Maria Cole, had a son Cornelius, baptized February 28, 1728.

The following are other members of the family whose names are found in the county and church records: Captain Peter, born December 4, 1784; he was the captain of the schooner "Thames," which was wrecked on Absecom Beach, November 4, 1828, when he lost his life. Peter, born October 5, 1802, died February 8, 1867. Abraham and Mary had a daughter Ann, born September 30, 1758, and a daughter Elizabeth, born March 3, 1770. Daniel and Rachel had a son Daniel, born May 10, 1760. Daniel and Susannah had a daughter Ann, born June 27, 1762. Daniel and Elizabeth had a daughter Rachel, born October 4, 1765. Peter and Christiana had a son George, born September 6, 1770. This George married Eliza Winant, November 15, 1794. John and Hannah (or Johanna) had a daughter Elizabeth, born July 29, 1774, and a son Jacob, May 15, 1776. Peter and Charity had a son Isaac, born February 1, 1775; this Isaac married Patty Winant, January 16, 1796. Peter and Ann had two children, Daniel and Ann, baptized November 20, 1785. Cornelius and Catharine, his wife, had a daughter Cornelia, baptized November 21, 1790. Peter and Mary Winant were married July 14, 1790. Moses and Catharine Winant were married August 7, 1800. Daniel and Eliza Oakley were married December 19, 1801.

Jacob Winant, of English ancestry, was born in Westfield, Staten Island, in 1749, and gave his life service to the Methodist Church as a traveling preacher, and died at the age of seventy-six years. He married in the Lawrence family, who claim to be remotely connected with the wealthy Townley family of England. Jacob Winant's wife's father, Dr. James Lawrence, was born in Newtown, Long Island, in 1732, and afterward lived on Staten Island. In 1753, he married Ann, daughter of Charles Jandine. They left two daughters. Sarah was born in 1759, married Joseph Ridgway, and died in 1823, leaving five children: Anne, Joseph, Mary, James, and Elizabeth. The second daughter, Catharine, born in 1763, married Jacob Winants, and died in 1820. They left five children, four sons and one daughter. His eldest son, Captain Peter, was born in 1784, married Fannie Ellis, daughter of Garret Ellis; she was born in 1785, and died in her eighty-second year. Captain Peter was an officer in the army, and served through the War of 1812. He left six children: Mrs. Mary Cortelyou, Mrs. Catharine Mills, Garret E., Mrs. Laney Appleby, Mrs. Sarah Ann Gough, and Sebastian. Jacob Winant's second son, Daniel, married

Digitized by Google

Polly Laforge, and they had three children. Jacob Winant's third son, Captain Winant Winants, married Mary Johnson, of Westfield; he died in 1872, aged eighty-three years. They left three sons: Captain James J. Winants, of Rossville; Captain Jacob, of Jersey City, and Cornelius, of Brooklyn. Jacob Winant's fourth son, Jacob, died in 1867, aged sixty-seven years.

Garret Ellis Winants (son of Captain Peter Winants, who was lost at sea) became a man of great wealth and prominence. He was born on Staten Island, and left an orphan when he was but nine years of age.

The family is still numerous on Staten Island. Prominent among its present representatives is ex-Sheriff Abram Winant, of Rossville. There are several branches.

WOGLOM.

This name is Dutch, and has been variously recorded in America, being spelled over two hundred ways. It is generally spelled Woglom to-day. The prefix "Van" was dropped in 1776. The name is identified with Holland's history, descending from the Baron Van Woggelum, of Woggelum, Netherlands.

From the market town of Woggelum, Jan Van Woggelum emigrated in 1643. He came in a vessel called the "Spotted Cow," which, it is believed, landed at Perth Amboy. Many of its passengers settled on Staten Island.

Jan Woggelum's removal to Staten Island was about 1696. He sold land on Staten Island in 1696, and thereafter his family is identified with Staten Island history. His wife was Grytie or Gryssie, and she and Jan Pieterzen Van Woggelum were witnesses at a baptism in 1696-8.

John Woggelum was a member of the Colonial Assembly from Richmond in 1698-9. He had two sons, Jan, Jr., Ary, or Adrian. Douwe Van Woggelum witnessed a baptism in 1718, residing on Staten Island in 1742, and in September, 1751.

The Woglom family married and intermarried with the Coles, the Cropseys the Denyses, and the Winants, and to this day are quite numerous on Staten Island, especially in Westfield. A noted member of this family was Cornelius Woglom, who was born August 20, 1800. He was employed by the United States Government as paymaster during the building of Fort Hamilton, in 1831; Forth Wadsworth, on Staten Island, and Fort Schuyler, on the East River. With Colonel James Cropsey, he established the first hotel on Coney Island, a then fashionable resort. He was a captain in the Seventieth Regiment, New York Militia. Afterward he was chosen for Guard of Honor, which body of soldiers acted as escort to General Lafayette when he last visited this country. Congress granted total exemp-

Digitized by Google

tion from land taxes and jury duties during his lifetime. He married, January 26, 1832, at Fort Hamilton, Sarah Ann Cropsey.

During the Revolution, the two John Wogloms (captain and private), with Abram Woglum as first lieutenant, and Benjamin Woglom as sergeant, place this family on the patriot side. After this period, the Wogloms do not appear as public officers on Staten Island.

WOOD.

The name of Wood is not alone common in this country, but also in several countries of the Old World. It is not known whether the Woods of Staten Island have descended from the one who came here from England.

Samuel B. Wood, of Garrisons, is the son of the late John B., who, with his brother Samuel, are the sons of Samuel. Samuel's brothers were: Joseph, John, Stephen, and Jesse, and they were the sons of John, the great-grandfather of Samuel B. We subjoin the names of such as are to be found in the various church records of the Island. Stephen and Geertje Winter had twins, Stephen and Obadia, baptized December 24, 1727. Stephen and Jemima Mott had a son Richard, baptized June 13, 1731.

The following are from St. Andrew's Church: Stephen Wood and Mary had a daughter Mary, born September 18, 1772, and a son Stephen, baptized June 5, 1785. John and Margaret had a son Stephen, baptized August 1, 1773, who married Damy Housman February 3, 1794. (This Stephen was one of the five brothers mentioned above as sons of John.) Stephen and Alice, or Elsy, had a son John, baptized June 15, 1783; he married Barbara Van Pelt December 23, 1804; and another son, Abraham, born September 22, 1788. Timothy and Sarah Rezeau were married in January, 1769. Isaac and Susan Lewis were married February 9, 1794. John and Sarah Lockman were married March 23, 1794. Richard and Catharine Lockman were married January 7, 1795. James and Esther Elston (probably Alston) were married June 1, 1799. Charles and Joanna Dongan were married December 11, 1806; she was the daughter of the late Walter Dongan, of Castleton Corners, and a mother of Walter D. Wood, of Mariners' Harbor. Jesse and Catharine Marshall were married July 9, 1807. James, mentioned above, lived at Long Neck, or Travisville, and his sons were: Charles, mentioned above, John, Peter, and Abraham; Charles was well known in his day as a local preacher in the Methodist Episcopal Church. John, brother to Charles, married Mary Jones, and was the father of James and Edward. The family is still a large one.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IX.

THE VANDERBILT FAMILY.

THE common ancestor of this family, Jan (John) Aoertsen Van der Bilt, arrived in America from (van) der Bilt or Bylt, the hill, in Holland, about 1650, and took up his residence near Flatbush, Long Island. Jacob Van der Bilt, a grandson of the latter, in 1718, purchased from his father, of the same name, a farm on Staten Island, to which he removed with his wife, Eleanor, and it was he who founded the Staten Island branch of the Vanderbilt family.

Cornelius Vanderbilt was born at the home of his parents, near what is now Prohibition Park, the exact site of the house being marked by the residence of Mr. Read Benedict. He was the son of Cornelius Van Derbilt and Phoebe Hand, and the great-grandson of Jacob Van der Bilt. His biographer says: "His boyhood and youth were spent very much after the manner of other farmers' sons, in the pursuit of amusements and the performance of minor tasks about the homestead. He did not love school, and early acquired a taste for a seafaring life. But his mother, a woman of sound common-sense, won him from his dreams with a practical proposal, the acceptance of which by him started her son on that wonderful career which finally seated him, if not in the highest, then in the most useful, position offered by modern civilization as a goal for ambition. The proposal was that, in case of his completing an almost impossible piece of work upon the farm before a certain date he should have one hundred dollars, with which to purchase for himself a boat. He accepted the terms, and with the assistance of other boys, whom he interested in the project by offering them the privilege of sailing with him, he won the prize. This took place in his sixteenth year, and shortly after he began the transportation business by carrying passengers to and from Staten Island for an established toll of eighteen cents. Often when he first started in this business he would forego his meals to ferry excursion parties to the city, and secure the extra reward sure to follow.

"At the end of the first year he gave the one hundred dollars to his mother for the boat, and one thousand dollars besides. At the end of the second he gave her another thousand dollars, and had secured a fractional interest in two or three more boats. The War of 1812 also furnished him many opportunities to add to his regular business.

Digitized by Google

"In his nineteenth year Mr. Vanderbilt married his cousin, Sophia Johnson, the daughter of his father's sister Eleanor. The ceremony took place November 19, 1813 (in the home of the bride, the Johnson farmhouse, now familiarly known as the old Union House, in Tottenville). Immediately after it he redoubled his efforts to place himself on a solid business foundation. From the profits of a contract with the Commissary Department of the United States for delivering food to the six forts in New York Bay, together with other moneys which he had accumulated, he built a small schooner for the coasting trade, which he called the 'Dread.' The following year he built a much larger one, named after his sister 'Charlotte,' and placed it on the line between New York and Charleston. About this time, also, he began to study the modeling and planning of vessels, which finally ended in his abandoning sails for the then modern invention, the steamboat.

"The end of 1817 found him twenty-three years of age, married, with nine thousand dollars in his possession, and out of business. He had heartily espoused the cause of Gibbons, proprietor of the steam line between New York City and New Brunswick, New Jersey, in the fight which that gentleman was conducting against the Fulton-Livingston New York steamboat monopoly (of which ex-Governor Daniel D. Tompkins was a prominent member). Mr. Gibbons offered Mr. Vanderbilt the command of the small steamboat 'Mouse of the Mountain,' which he accepted at a salary of one thousand dollars per annum."

This was the first steamboat that ever passed through the Kills. For twelve years Mr. Vanderbilt remained in the employ of Gibbons. During this period he purchased a hotel, known as the Half-Way House, at New Brunswick, where he made his home and several of his children were born. In the course of time the law was repealed, and Fulton, Livingston & Co. lost the sole right to run steamboats in the waters of New York State. Mr. Vanderbilt wanted to engage in business for himself, even though Gibbons offered him an equal partnership in his line, then paying a profit of $40,000 a year. He turned his eyes in the direction of the Hudson River and Long Island Sound traffic. He sold his hotel and removed to New York City with his family, in 1829. He resided for a short time in Stone street, also in East Broadway, after which he removed to Stapleton, Staten Island, and resided in the old-fashioned residence on Bay street, nearly opposite Police Headquarters, and later built the handsome residence now owned and occupied by George H. Daly.

Mr. Vanderbilt commenced running a line of boats in the spring of 1830, which he had built for him, and which contained many improvements of his own invention, on the Hudson River. He was at first opposed in this by the Stevenses, Daniel Drew, and Dean Richmond, all of whom, however, rapidly disappeared. He made $30,000 a year

Digitized by Google

for five years after leaving Gibbons, which he doubled after the expiration of that period. At the age of forty he had more than a score of vessels running in all directions, and the number was so rapidly increasing that he began to be called "the Commodore." Between 1840 and 1850 his receipts were enormous.

Commodore Vanderbilt commenced his famous battle with the Pacific Mail Steamship Company in 1849, by carrying passengers across Lake Nicaragua. In order to accomplish this, he was obliged to get a small side-wheel steamer ("The Director") up the San Juan River, which is full of cascades and rapids, which he succeeded in jumping, by tying down the safety-valve, to the great consternation of the accompanying engineers. He made more than one million dollars a year in Nicaragua, beside the income from his other enterprises at the same time. He sold out the route to the Transit Line in 1853, and started on his voyage in the "North Star," then the largest steam-yacht ever constructed. His wife and eleven children accompanied him.

CORNELIUS VANDERBILT.

On his return to America Commodore Vanderbilt became engaged in an altercation with the Nicaragua Transit Company, which, in his absence, had grown rich by systematically robbing him. The course which he took on that occasion was characteristic. He at first warned them of his intentions, and then put on an opposition line, and in one year the Transit Company was bankrupt. He continued nine years in the California business, accumulating not less than ten million dollars; but the filibuster Walker put an end to operations by seizing the Vanderbilt franchise and nearly capturing his steamers.

The next important venture of Mr. Vanderbilt was in the direction of the transatlantic traffic. It was divided at that time between the Cunard Line of English steamers and the Collins Weekly Line of American vessels. These furnished about half the service required. The Commodore offered to form a partnership with Collins, but he declined. The Commodore waged war for some time with his voluntary antagonist for the privilege of carrying the United States mails, which had theretofore been carried at an enormous rate. Mr. Collins had influence at Washington for a time; but when the Commodore offered to carry the mails for nothing, President Pierce vetoed the

Digitized by Google

Collins subsidy. Mr. Vanderbilt then placed the three steamers, "Vanderbilt," "Ariel," and "Harvest Queen," on the route, and with these he beat the Collins steamers nine times out of ten. The Vanderbilt line was soon made the favorite of travelers, and very soon succeeded in so monopolizing the trade that the Collins line disappeared from the ocean.

For years Mr. Vanderbilt continued the transatlantic traffic, and abandoned it only when he found the rapidly increasing railroad interests of the country provided a better investment for his money. He had built fifty-one steamboats and steamships, besides quite a number of schooners and other vessels, at the time he commenced to invest his money in railroad stocks. At that time he was the largest employer in the United States. He owned nearly a hundred vessels, and his powerful hand was felt in every commercial circle in the world.

From the very commencement of the war he interested himself in sending troops to the field. President Lincoln noticed his activity in the matter, and sent for him immediately after the sinking of the "Cumberland" by the "Merrimac," and offered to reward him with a large sum of money to stop the progress of the Confederate ram. Mr. Vanderbilt refused all compensation, but immediately returned to New York, received a sufficient number of Government seamen, which he took on board his favorite ship, the "Vanderbilt," which was soon steaming up the James River, ready to give battle to the "Merrimac." But the "Merrimac" did not put in an appearance, and Commodore Vanderbilt wrote to President Lincoln, offering him the loan of his vessel till the close of the war. Soon after this, Congress ordered a medal struck in his honor and presented it to the donor, and the "Vanderbilt," then probably the handsomest and best-equipped steamer afloat, passed into the possession of the United States Government. It was valued at eight hundred thousand dollars.

Commodore Vanderbilt made his first investment in railroad stock in the winter of 1862-63. It was thought that the intricate methods of Wall street would be too much for him at that time. "But the fact that in the next fourteen years," says his biographer, "he succeeded in withdrawing his immense fortune entirely from its maritime investment, and doubling it four times over, and obtaining for it the most solid of all security then known to the American financier, shows the mental power which he possessed and the clearness of his judgment. His first investment was in Harlem, then selling at from seven to nine. Under the impetus of his name it soon rose to thirty, and shortly afterward at par, on his obtaining from the Common Council of New York City a franchise for a street railroad to the Battery. The phenomenal rise thus given to stock excited the bears, who, after selling immense quantities of Harlem short, attempted to injure the Commodore by influencing the withdrawal of the street franchise.

Digitized by Google

They succeeded, by forming a combination with the aldermen, in having the charter repealed; but found soon that he had outdone them by purchasing all the stock and holding it in his possession. Some of it sold as high as two hundred and eighty-five, and from the millions which he realized in this cornering of Harlem, Mr. Vanderbilt began investing in Hudson River stock, then (in the fall of 1863) selling at twenty-five. His idea was, if possible, to control the road and secure its consolidation with the Harlem. For this purpose he secured the promises of a majority of the legislators that they would give their votes in favor of the measure. Again he found that duplicity was being practiced. The members of the Assembly and their friends were selling Hudson River short, preparatory to breaking their pledges and defeating the bill. This caused Mr. Vanderbilt to form a combination with John Tobin, afterward president of the road, and Leonard Jerome. They secured, as in the Harlem corner, nearly all the stock of the road. The legislators went on selling till they had disposed of twenty-seven thousand more shares of stock than existed, and when the time came to cover their shorts, there was a panic in Wall street. Hundreds were ruined outright, and Mr. Vanderbilt's reputation as a railroad manipulator was firmly maintained."

Commodore Vanderbilt's acquisition of the Hudson River Railroad gave him wonderful power over the transit of New York State, which was somewhat hampered by the arbitrary conduct of the New York Central, under the control of Dean Richmond and Peter Cagger. They refused to unite with him in any measure for the better accommodation of either passengers or freight, and caused him to retaliate by a bold movement, which finally gained him possession of the New York Central road. Richmond and Cagger had been in the habit of using Drew's river boats as an outlet for their freight in New York City during the summer months, but in the winter they were obliged to send it over the Hudson River road. The Commodore took advantage of the situation and refused to run any trains to Albany during the winter, thus reducing the stock of the Central more than fifteen per cent., after which he bought large amounts of it, and gained the management.

On November 1, 1869, just three years later, Commodore Vanderbilt secured the consolidation of the Hudson River with the new possessions, and thus was established the New York Central and Hudson River Railroad Company. "New difficulties," according to his biographer, "presented themselves in the senseless and ruinous rate-cutting of the Erie road, against which all his remonstrances were in vain. He accordingly commenced a rapid absorption of Erie stock, while Drew, Fisk, and Gould sold short. No one suspected the trick which Drew and his companions were about to put in practice, which was the issue of bogus stock. One hundred thousand shares of this were suddenly thrown on the market, and Mr. Vanderbilt unknow-

Digitized by Google

ingly bought the whole issue. Immediately on discovering the fraud, he put the machinery of the law in motion. Drew, Fisk, and Gould fled to New Jersey, carrying nearly seven millions of dollars in greenbacks with them. But they were finally pressed to such an extent by Mr. Vanderbilt's lawyers that they agreed to a restitution of several millions. A charter was obtained for an immense union depot at Forty-second street, and the building was constructed, together with the splendid system of viaduct tracks, forming the entrance to the city of the northern, western, and eastern railroads. This was accomplished at a cost of $6,500,000, half of which was borne by the City of New York.

In November, 1873, Mr. Vanderbilt found himself obliged, by the death of his son-in-law, Horace F. Clark, to purchase the Lake Shore and Michigan Southern road. The advantage secured by rival railroad managers through the combination of the Grand Trunk and Great Western Railroads also obliged him later on to secure the Canada Southern and Michigan Central, which, when added to his former acquisitions, composed the finest and best-equipped railroad property in the world.

The death of Mrs. Vanderbilt, on August 17, 1868, was a great blow. Her burial took place at New Dorp, in the presence of a large concourse of friends. Among the pallbearers were A. T. Stewart and Horace Greeley.

Mr. Vanderbilt married, a year later, another cousin, Frank A. Crawford, of London, Canada. She has the credit of influencing him in the establishment of the "Vanderbilt University," of Tennessee, at a cost of one million of dollars, and also that he purchased for the friend of his latter days, the Rev. Dr. Deems, "The Church of the Strangers," at a cost of $50,000.

Commodore Vanderbilt died on January 4, 1877, aged eighty-three years. A large concourse of people assembled in the old Moravian Cemetery at New Dorp, to witness the ceremony, and the incidents of that day were flashed to all parts of the world.

The Mausoleum, holding his remains, is in the old Moravian Cemetery, and the structure, together with its surroundings, cost nearly a million of dollars. Besides the resting-places for the dead it contains a chapel. The view from in front of the structure is most magnificent, while the driveway, with the entrance through a very beautiful stone archway, adds greatly to the scene. The choicest of flowers and shrubbery adorn the grounds.

Commodore Vanderbilt left a large family. William H., his eldest son, inherited the bulk of the fortune. According to the will, his share was about ninety millions of dollars. William H. was born at New Brunswick, New Jersey, on May 8, 1821. After a brief course in the public school at that place, the removal of his parents to New York City enabled him to enter Columbia Grammar School. At the age

Digitized by Google

of sixteen he began business as a ship chandler, and at the expiration of two years he entered the office of Drew, Robinson & Co., bankers, on Wall street.

The biographer of William H. Vanderbilt wrote thus of him: "The young man had been for some time considering the adverse opinion which his father seemed to have formed of him. He saw that it was an obstacle to his progress, and resolved if possible to remove it. With this end in view, he devoted himself unreservedly to his work, and as a result, his advancement at the bank was a rapid one. On entering it his salary was placed at $150 per annum. The second year it was $300, and the third it was $1,000. At the age of twenty he married Maria Louise Kissam, daughter of a Brooklyn clergyman of the Dutch Reformed Church, and with her he went to board in East Broadway. His father was then worth in the neighborhood of one million dollars, but he had made up his mind that his son was reckless and that helping him would be but wasting money; so he allowed him to live on as he had started, without his aid. At last the young man's health gave way, and the physicians notified his father that he must be taken from the bank, or the result might prove fatal.

"The Commodore looked about for some means of employing his son, which would at the same time enable him to recover his health. Finally he decided on purchasing him a farm at New Dorp, Staten Island, between the old Moravian Church and the sea, and to it William and his wife removed (in 1842), with the determination that they would make the best of the situation. The house to which they went was a plain, two-story structure, facing the sea, with a lean-to for a kitchen. It probably did not contain more than five rooms. The farm also was very small, and was a part of the neglected barrens of Staten Island. It needed to be carefully tilled and abundantly fertilized to make it fruitful.

"From the first Mr. Vanderbilt made a success of farming. As at the bank, he gave his undivided attention to the task before him, and got as much as possible out of his narrow acres. When he left Staten Island, on his father's accession to the control of Harlem, he had by his own efforts enlarged his farm to three hundred and fifty acres, rebuilt his house, now one of the finest farm-houses in Richmond County, and his produce was yielding him $1,000 a month, or $12,000 a year.

"The construction of the Staten Island Railroad shortly before the war, was a scheme in which Mr. Vanderbilt had deeply interested himself. Owing to bad management it was soon overladen with debt, and it became necessary to place it in the hands of a receiver. Through his father's influence, who was then a principal stockholder, he was appointed to the place. He had no experience as a manager, but he began by applying rules of common-sense to the task before him, and at last succeeded, by reducing expenses, stopping leaks, discovering new sources of patronage, and connecting the road with New York

Digitized by Google

City by an independent line of ferries, in placing the company on such a footing that its stock, from being valueless, rose to $175 a share. All this was accomplished in two years, and as a result Mr. Vanderbilt was made president of the road."

The antipathy of the old Commodore toward William H. was a familiar subject to the people of Staten Island in those days, and repeatedly certain residents pleaded with the father to be more friendly with the son. The late Dr. Ephraim Clark, of New Dorp, never missed

VANDERBILT MAUSOLEUM.

an opportunity to create a kindly feeling between the two, and there is no doubt that the kind-hearted old doctor did much to bring about the substantial reconciliation which came at last.

An amusing story is told about the real cause of the old Commodore's sudden change in his regard for the son. One day, the story goes, William H. went up to the city, and stated to his father that he wanted a load of manure, and asked him if he would sell it to him.

"O, go and get it, and don't bother me," said the busy old man, thinking that an ordinary wagon-load was the amount called for. But

Digitized by Google

it was a schooner-load that the junior Vanderbilt had in his mind, and which was delivered later at the dock, the moldering remnant of which may be seen at the foot of New Dorp lane to-day.

When the matter was reported to the old Commodore, a lively scene was expected; but all present were disappointed. He laid aside the paper which he was reading, placed his right hand on his head carefully, and after a few seconds in silent thought, quietly remarked, "W-e-l-l, there is something in William, after all!" It was noticed that from that time on, there was a marked intimacy between the father and son.

Mrs. William H. Vanderbilt was a woman of strength of character and refinement. She did much to help her husband, and gain for him the respect and confidence of his father. She always claimed that he was misjudged, because the father did not understand him. When, however, they once became acquainted, they were indeed the firmest of friends.

Commodore Vanderbilt sent William H. to Europe to look after a brother, Captain George Vanderbilt, whose health had been wrecked in the war of the Rebellion, and who had been spending a year in the Riviera. This young man was his father's favorite; he died in Paris, shortly after his brother's arrival. When his father assumed control of the Harlem Railroad, William H. was made vice-president, and the management of the Commodore's schemes for the improvement of the property were all intrusted to his care. He soon after became Vice-President of the Hudson River Railroad, and on the consolidation of the latter with the New York Central, he was elected vice-president of the combined system.

When the Commodore died, William H. was fifty-five years of age. He at once became president of all the roads of which he had before been vice-president; but his relation to affairs remained substantially the same.

An attempt was made by one or two of the Commodore's heirs to break the will. The interests which he had at stake compelled Mr. Vanderbilt to defend himself to the extent of convincing aspiring contestants that his position was entirely tenable. When he had gained this point, however, he brought the suit to a peaceable termination by compromise. To his epileptic brother, Cornelius J., he gave one million dollars, and to each of his sisters half a million, in addition to the amounts already given them by the will of their father.

After the Commodore's death, Mr. Vanderbilt completed the purchase of the Canada Southern Railroad. This, together with other acquisitons which he made, added considerably to his already immense income; and he soon began, at Fifth avenue and Fifty-first street, the construction of the elegant residence in which he died. The structure was completed in two years. Six hundred workmen were employed upon it, and sixty sculptors, brought especially from

Digitized by Google

Europe, were kept busy during the same length of time. The cost of the double home was two millions of dollars, and the art gallery was furnished at an additional expense of a million and a half. The collection of paintings, two hundred in number, representing the best modern artists of France, is said to be the most complete in the world. Mr. Vanderbilt gave much attention to its construction, as a result of which he probably secured for himself the finest private residence in America.

The love of Mr. Vanderbilt for outdoor exercises, and especially fast driving, was a theme of conversation in sporting circles, not only throughout this country, but also in Europe. After the decease of his father he essayed to take his place upon the road.

During the construction of the "Nickel Plate" railroad, Mr. Vanderbilt's interests compelled him to make every effort to prevent its completion. Finally, when these failed, he purchased the road. His second son, William K., carried on the negotiations, and was shortly afterward elected its president. After this transaction, on May 3, 1883, Mr. Vanderbilt resigned the presidencies of the various railroads of which for more than six years he had been the head. He was overworked and his health fatally impaired. December 8, 1885, three years after his resignation, he died at his home in New York City, of paralysis, a second attack.

At the time of the attack Mr. Vanderbilt was seated in his parlor. Robert Garrett, President of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad, was sitting beside him, and the only other person present was the late James R. Robinson, of Staten Island, who had long been on the most intimate terms with the family. Mr. Garrett's mission was to negotiate with Mr. Vanderbilt, relative to the entrance of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad into New York City. Mr. Vanderbilt was very much opposed to the scheme. Mr. Garrett became excited at Mr. Vanderbilt's opposition, and at what he considered a threatening attitude, and the two became considerably agitated over the matter. Finally, Mr. Vanderbilt advanced a theory which he hoped would effect a compromise. But it did not meet with favor on the part of Mr. Garrett. Mr. Vanderbilt became greatly excited, and rising from his chair, made a motion to an attendant who had just entered the room in response to a call, waved his hand and sat down suddenly. Presently his head rested on his breast and he made an unsuccessful effort to speak. Assistance was immediately summoned, but it was of no service; the busy life had reached its end.

Mr. Vanderbilt more than doubled the fortune left him by his father, and was reputed at the time of his death to be worth about two hundred millions of dollars. The manner in which this was invested admitted of a more equal distribution than his father had been able to make of his estate ten years before, and of the eight children surviving him, not one received less than ten millions of dollars. The

Digitized by Google

two eldest sons, Cornelius and William K., however, inherited the bulk of the fortune, amounting to nearly one hundred and twenty millions of dollars.

The children of William H. Vanderbilt were born on the farm at New Dorp, and their first schooldays were spent in the little red schoolhouse on Mill road. The boys and girls who used to study and play with them, remember them as friends only. The children of this family were: Cornelius, who married Miss Gwynn; William K., who married Miss Alva Smith (their daughter being the Duchess of Marlborough); Frederick W., who married Miss Anthony; George, who married Miss Dresser; Emily, who married W. D. Sloane; Louise, who married Colonel Elliott F. Shepard; Florence, who married Hamilton McK. Twombly, and Eliza, who married J. Seward Webb.

Cornelius succeeded his father, William H., at the latter's death, as the head of the family and its gigantic interests. The world soon learned to look upon him as a noble man, in every way an honor to his day and generation. His career, however, was limited, as he died a victim of paralysis, at his home, at No. 1 West Fifty-seventh street, Manhattan, on the morning of Tuesday, September 12, 1899, in his fifty-sixth year. On the following Friday his remains were placed in the mausoleum at New Dorp.

The names of the children of Commodore Vanderbilt are as follows: Phœbe Jane, who married James M. Cross; they resided at New Dorp for several years, and then removed to New York City; both have been dead a number of years. Ethlinda married Daniel B. Allen, and resided on the Little Clove road; both are dead. Eliza married George Osgood, and they resided on Osgood place, in Clifton; both are dead. Emily married William K. Thorne; they resided in New York City, where they died. William H. married Louise Kissam; both died in New York City. Frances was unmarried; she died at the age of forty, in consequence of an accident. Maria Louise married Horace F. Clark, of New York City. Alitia married L. B. Labau, and they had a beautiful residence on the Clove road, which was destroyed by fire; her second husband was named Berger, a Frenchman. Sophia married Daniel Torrance; she resides in New York. George died when a mere lad. George, second, died in Paris. Cornelius, Jr., was an invalid, and died a few years since. Catharine married Smith Barker, of New York City; later she married a man named LaFitte, in Paris.

Captain Jacob Hand Vanderbilt, a brother to the Commodore, became a prominent man. He was born on the eastern shore of Staten Island, on September 2, 1807. Under the influences of a domestic life, he grew up, acquiring the common school education of the times, and at an early age began to "follow the water." At the age of eighteen he had risen to the command of a steamboat, and from that time onward he rose steadily in the importance of his business engagements and adventures, which were chiefly connected with the conduct of

Digitized by Google

steamboat lines on Long Island Sound, the Connecticut and Hudson Rivers.

In 1834, he married Euphemia Maria Banta, a descendant of General Israel Putnam. Her death occurred in 1877. Three of Captain Vanderbilt's children are living: A son, bearing his own name; Ellen, widow, of Herman D. Caesar, and Clara, widow of James McNamee.

Shortly after the Southern war Captain Vanderbilt retired from active business, but continued to hold the presidency of the Staten Island Railroad. He had a beautiful residence on Clove Hill. He died in 1882.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER X.

AARON BURR: SOLDIER, LAWYER, POLITICIAN.

THE story of Aaron Burr's eventful career, is one of direct interest to the people of Staten Island, for it was here that a considerable portion of his life was spent, and here that it ended.

Aaron Burr was born in Newark, New Jersey, on February 6, 1756. He was the son of Rev. Aaron Burr, and grandson of Rev. Jonathan Edwards, each of whom became President of Princeton College. Removing from Newark to Elizabethtown, his early playdays were spent just across the Kills from Staten Island, although his parents removed to Princeton when he was very young. He was left an orphan when a child; but he and his sister returned to Elizabethtown, and became inmates of the family of the Hon. Timothy Edwards, their mother's brother. Tappan Reeve, afterward judge of the supreme court of Connecticut, was their tutor, and married the sister when she was but seventeen years of age.

At the age of eleven, Aaron Burr was prepared for college, and, applying for admission at Princeton, was rejected on account of his age. He set to work to learn out of college what he was not permitted to learn in it. At thirteen he applied for admission into the junior class, and more as a favor than a right, he was allowed to enter the sophomore class. He should have been fifteen years old. This was in 1769. He was but sixteen when he graduated, in September, 1772.

In the spring and summer of 1773, Burr was much at Elizabethtown. One of his favorite pleasures there was boating, and he frequently came over to Staten Island, becoming quite familiar with every part of the place. In the autumn of 1773, he went to live in the family of Dr. Jeremiah Bellamy, the eminent theologian.

As the winter of 1774 drew on, Burr's young friends were drawn from the light pursuits proper to their age, by the portentous aspect now assumed by the quarrel between the colonies and the mother country. He was a witness of the affair at Litchfield, and had only begun the study of law when the news of Lexington electrified the colonies.

Aaron Burr felt that he was formed to excel as a soldier, and although only nineteen years of age, his courage was perfect—he never

Digitized by Google

knew fear. He was a good horseman, a good helmsman, a tolerable fencer, and a fair shot. Moreover, he loved the military art; knew all of it that could be learned from books, and more highly prized the soldier's glory than that of any other pursuit.

On hearing of the battles of Lexington and Bunker Hill, Burr could bear inactivity no longer. He mounted his horse, and rode in hot haste to Elizabethtown, where he aided his friend Matthias Ogden to prepare for the campaign, and the two friends made their way to the American camp at Boston. They arrived in July, 1775, only a few days after General Washington had assumed command.

After passing a month of most wearisome idleness, Burr was stricken with intermittent fever. and was confined to his bed for several days. One day, as he was tossing about, he overhead Ogden and others talking in the next room concerning an expedition that was on foot. Colonel Benedict Arnold was about to march with a thousand volunteers through the forests of Maine to attack Quebec, and thus complete the conquest of Canada.

Instantly Burr declared his determination to join the expedition; and, quietly disregarding Ogden's remonstrances, began, enfeebled as he was, to dress himself. No argument nor persuasion could move him when his mind was made up. Go he would. In a very few days he was ready to proceed to the rendezvous at Newburyport, distant thirty miles from Boston. Accompanied by a squad of stout fellows, whom he had equipped at his own expense, he shouldered his knapsack and marched the whole distance.

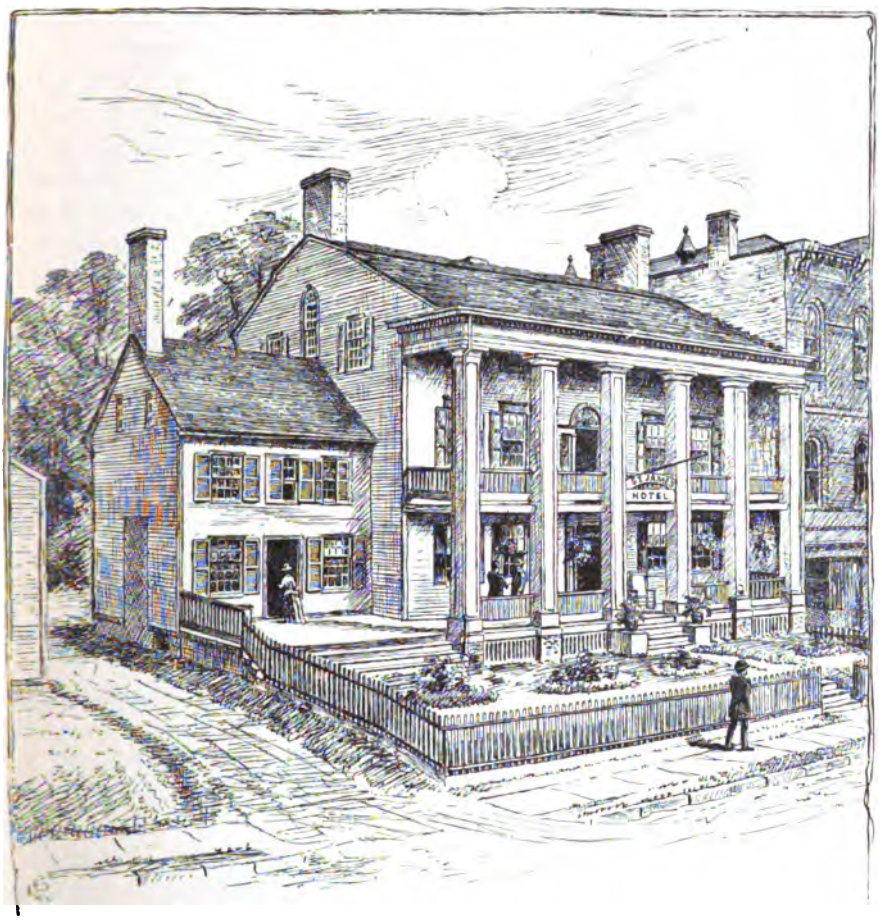
On the 20th of September, the troops, eleven hundred in number, embarked at Newburyport, and, at the mouth of the Kennebec, found two hundred light batteaux in waiting. Soon the little army had gone by the last outpost of civilization, and was working its way through the wilderness. For forty-two days they saw no trace of the presence of human beings. Thirty times or more, the boats, with all their contents, ammunition, provisions, and sick men, had to be carried by main strength, around rapids and falls, over high and precipitous hills, and across wide marshes—until, after toil, under which a tenth of the army sank, and from which another tenth ran away, the boats were launched into the Dead River, where a sudden flood dashed many of them to pieces, and destroyed one-half of the provisions. Then all the horrors of starvation threatened the devoted band. In a few days more, they were reduced to live upon dogs and reptiles and, at length, to devour the leather of their shoes and cartridge-boxes, and anything, however loathsome, which contained the smallest nutriment. It was fifty days after leaving Newburyport, before Arnold, with the loss of exactly half his force, saw the heights of Quebec. He had brought the gallant army six hundred miles through a hideous wilderness.

The student, bred in comparative luxury, who had come from a sick-

Digitized by Google

bed, bore the fatigues and privations as well as anyone in the party. Although skilled in managing a boat, he met with a serious mishap. His boat was precipitated over a fall of twenty feet, and with the loss of one man, Burr and his companions got ashore with difficulty.

As the force approached Quebec, it became a matter of the first importance to communicate with General Montgomery at Montreal. To Burr was confided the task of conveying, alone, one hundred and



ST. JAMES HOTEL, PORT RICHMOND—HOUSE IN WHICH AARON BURR DIED.

twenty miles, through an enemy's country, a verbal message from Arnold, informing Montgomery of his arrival, and of his plans.

Assuming the garb and bearing of a young priest, he went directly to a religious house near the camp, and sought an interview with its chief, who gave him aid.

At Three Rivers the guide found the people excited by rumors of Arnold's arrival, and the authorities on the alert to prevent connection between the two American commanders. When they reached

Digitized by Google

Montreal, Burr repaired at once to Montgomery's headquarters, gave the information with which he was charged, and narrated his adventures. That gallant soldier was so charmed with Burr's address and daring, that he requested him, on the spot, to accept a place on his staff. A few days after, Burr was formally announced as the general's aide-de-camp, with the rank of captain.

Montgomery soon marched, in a blinding snowstorm, to meet Arnold, whose troops were already shivering under the heights of Quebec. Arnold had already made an attack upon the city, and might have carried it with undying honors, and turned the course of Revolutionary history, but for the treason of an Indian to whom he had given letters for General Schuyler, but who conveyed them and news of the expedition to the British commandant!

Soon after Montgomery's arrival, a council of war was held, at which Burr and Ogden were present, and it was determined to make an attempt to take the place by assault. To Captain Burr, at his own request, was assigned the command of a forlorn hope of forty men, whom he forthwith selected, and began to drill.

By the 20th of December, preparations were complete. The little army was waiting for a storm as the time of attack. The last night in the year of 1775, the early part of which was brilliantly lighted by the moon, at midnight, witnessed the commencement of a violent snowstorm. The little army was soon under arms. About nine hundred men answered to their names. They were divided into four parties. Two were to fight; the others to distract the garrison by feints. One of the fighting parties was led by Arnold, the other by Montgomery. At five o'clock the signal of attack was given. Two lines of pickets were driven in by Montgomery. The troops in a blockhouse, seeing the Americans approaching, retreated. The failure of a hasty advance led one of the enemy's men to return to the blockhouse, and he touched off a grape-charged cannon.

Forward fell Montgomery, never to rise again. In fact, every man that marched in front of the column, except Captain Burr and the guide, were struck down to death by that shot. The column halted and wavered, and fell into incompetent hands. Burr attempted to reorganize the command and push on. "When dismay and consternation prevailed," testified Captain Richard Platt, who commanded a New York company, among the most advanced in the column of attack, "Burr animated the troops, and made many efforts to lead them on, and stimulated them to enter the lower town; and might have succeeded, but for the positive order of the commanding officer for the troops to retreat." The enemy opened fire from the blockhouse, and the retreat of the Americans became a disorderly flight.

It was then that Captain Burr made a noble display of courage and fidelity. There lay the body of his general in its snowy shroud. Down the steep, over the blocks of ice and drifts of snow, and along the

Digitized by Google

river's bank, his comrades were flying in disgraceful panic. From the blockhouse the enemy were beginning to issue in pursuit. The faithful aide, a boy in stature, exerting all his strength, lifted the general's body upon his shoulders, and carried it down the gorge, up to his knees in snow, the enemy only forty paces behind him.

The country rang with the name of Aaron Burr and his gallant conduct. Arnold assumed command of the army, and appointed Burr brigade-major. Burr did not like Arnold. In the spring the army retreated to Montreal, and Burr, against Arnold's will, gave up his position. He was warmly greeted at Albany, on his return, and soon heard that General Washington was so greatly pleased with his conduct at Quebec, that he sent word for him to come to him immediately, and stay in his family. In May, 1776, Major Burr reported to General Washington, who was residing at Richmond Hill. But inactive life did not suit him, and he thought of retiring from the service. John Hancock dissuaded him, and procured him an appointment as aide-de-camp on the staff of General Putnam. During the retreat of the American army from Long Island, Major Burr saved a frightened brigade from capture.

In July, 1777, while at Peekskill, with General Putnam, Burr was notified by General Washington of his promotion to the rank of lieutenant-colonel. He was the youngest man who ever held that rank in the Revolutionary army. He was soon placed in command of a regiment, which lay at Ramapo, in Orange County. Colonel Burr was soon the idol of his troops, for he knew how to command them. Exacting the most prompt and implicit obedience, he commanded only what was right and necessary, and was prompt to notice and applaud good conduct.

In September, a rumor reached Colonel Burr that a strong force of British were on the way to Orange County. In the night, Burr, personally, at the head of seventeen men, captured their pickets and made them prisoners, and succeeded in driving the main force away. In November, 1777, Colonel Burr was ordered with his regiment to join the main army under General Washington, near Philadelphia. At the same time Burr planned an expedition against the British posts on Staten Island. He proposed the scheme to General Washington, and asked for two hundred men of his own regiment as a nucleus, relying on his ability to raise the country in case he should appear here with a respectable body of troops. General Washington rejected the proposal; and when, afterward, he acted upon the idea, gave the command to Lord Stirling, and later, to General Sullivan, under both of whom it proved a failure.

The Continental army went into winter quarters, near a powerful enemy, at Valley Forge. Some distance from the "town of hovels" there was a pass called the Gulf, where an attack was expected. The timid militia were constantly giving false alarms. General McDougall

Digitized by Google

recommended that Colonel Burr be given command at that point, which he accepted, and the most rigorous discipline prevailed.

At the battle of Monmouth, June 28, 1778, Colonel Burr commanded one of the brigades of Lord Stirling's division. All through the sultry night that preceded the battle, he was on the alert, surveying the ground and preparing for the fight. From before the dawn of that eventful day until late in the evening, his men were under arms, either engaged or waiting orders, exposed to a sun so powerful as to be only less fatal than the enemy's fire. Toward noon, while Stirling was thundering away with his artillery at the enemy, Colonel Burr perceived a detachment of British issuing opposite him from the wood which hemmed in a small, marshy plain.

Before him was a morass over which a bridge had been thrown to the solid ground beyond. He instantly gave the order for his brigade to cross the bridge, and march toward the approaching enemy. When about half his force had crossed, and were within the enemy's fire, one of General Washington's aides galloped up to Colonel Burr and ordered him to halt his men, and hold them where they were until further orders. Burr remonstrated vehemently. The aide replied that the order was peremptory and must be obeyed, then rode away.

The cannon balls soon began to roar above the heads of his men, and to strike with threatening proximity. Colonel Burr saw his brave men begin to fall about him, in consequence, as he thought, of blundering generalship. In a few minutes, Colonel Dummer, second in command to Burr, was killed; and, soon after, at a moment when Colonel Burr had by chance thrown his leg forward, a ball struck his horse on the saddle-girth, killed the animal instantly, and tumbled his rider headlong on the ground. Burr was up again in a moment, uninjured. As no further order arrived, the men who had crossed the bridge rejoined their comrades.

Immediately after the battle, Colonel Burr was dispatched by General Washington to move about in the vicinity of New York, and procure information "respecting the motions and intentions of the enemy." Accomplishing this task, he was ordered to march with his regiment to West Point. The regiment, however, marched without him, as he was selected to conduct "certain influential tories within the British lines." During the winter Colonel Burr commanded the post at West Point. He was now in his twenty-third year.

In January, 1779, Colonel Burr was appointed to command the "Westchester lines," a region lying between the posts of the British at Kingsbridge, and those of the Americans, about twenty miles distant. An active campaign ensued. Innumerable skirmishes were fought. Colonel Burr destroyed a British fort and captured the entire garrison force, without the loss of a man.

On the 10th of March, 1779, Colonel Burr wrote to General Washington, resigning his commission, giving as the reason, his physical

Digitized by Google

inability to perform the duties of his command. General Washington, in accepting his resignation, observed that "he not only regretted the loss of a good officer, but the cause which made his resignation necessary." And so, after four years of active service, Colonel Burr ceased to belong to the army.

While visiting at Newburg, General McDougal requested Colonel Burr to cross the country and inform General Washington of the danger that section was in; and later, while sick in bed at New Haven, Connecticut, he heard of the landing of Governor Tryon's troops. The people were in dreadful alarm. He went out into the street to find the militia panic-stricken and unable to face the British. Then going to the college green, where the students were drawn up in line, he addressed them, and he was accepted as their commander. They marched into the town and were joined by a small detachment of militia, and their presence held Governor Tryon's force in check for some time.

In the autumn of 1780, his health having greatly improved, he began to study law in earnest, under Judge Patterson, of New Jersey. The following year he went with Thomas Smith, a city practitioner of note, at Haverstraw.

In November of that year, the Legislature of New York passed an act disqualifying all the Tory lawyers from practicing in the courts of the State. Burr at once resolved to make an effort to realize part of the benefits himself, and, a few days after, he was in Albany for the purpose of applying for admission to the bar. But difficulties arose. The rule of the court was, that candidates must have spent three years in the study of the law before admission, and Colonel Burr could scarcely pretend to more than one year's study. Nor could he find a lawyer in the State willing to make a motion for the court to set aside the rule. In these circumstances, the candidate undertook the management of the case himself.

Having first conciliated the good-will of the judge in private, and made him acquainted with the grounds of his application, he appeared in court at the proper time, and made the requisite motion. He said that he had begun his studies before the Revolution, and should long since have been entitled to admission to the bar, but for the services he had rendered as a soldier. "No rule," he observed, "would be intended to injure one whose only misfortune is having sacrificed his time, his constitution, and his fortune to his country." The court decided that the rule with regard to the period of study might, for the reasons given, be dispensed with, provided the candidate could show that he possessed the requisite knowledge. The examining counsel gave him no indulgence. They wished his failure. But after an examination, prolonged, critical and severe, which he passed triumphantly, he was licensed as an attorney. On the 17th of April following,

Digitized by Google

he was admitted as counselor. He was then twenty-six years of age. He began the practice of law at Albany.

On the 2d of July, 1782, Aaron Burr and Theodocia Prevost (widow of Colonel Prevost, of the British army) were married in the Reformed Dutch Church at Albany, by the Rev. David Bogart. They were forthwith established in an ample residence in that city.

At Albany, in the first year of his marriage, was born Colonel Burr's daughter, lovely little Theodocia. She had a joyful welcome into the world, the beautiful child who was to have so terrible an exit from it.

Colonel Burr practiced law in Albany for more than eighteen months, with great success. As soon as peace was declared, he made arrangements for removing to New York. A house was hired for him in Maiden lane, at two hundred pounds a year, the "rent to commence when the troops leave the city." That event occurred on the 25th of November, 1783; soon after which date Colonel Burr removed his family to the city. The city contained at that time twenty-five thousand people, and was the second city in importance in the United States. Philadelphia stood first, with fifty thousand. The State of New York had less than three hundred thousand.

Colonel Burr had few competitors for the higher business of the profession. The disfranchisement of the Tory lawyers, and the complicated suits growing out of the laws confiscating the estates of Tories, gave to an able and active lawyer, just after the Revolution, a most lucrative field of exertion. He came to New York, apparently, with no intention to take part in politics.

From 1783 to 1791, the practice of the law absorbed the greater part of his time and attention. He made a great deal of money, and his style of living kept pace with his increasing income. In a few years we find him master of Richmond Hill, the mansion where Washington had lived in 1776, with grounds reaching to the Hudson, with ample gardens, and a considerable extent of grove and farm. Here he maintained a liberal establishment, and exercised the hospitality which was then in vogue. Tallyrand, Volney, Louis Phillippe, and other strangers of distinction, whom the French Revolution drove into exile, were entertained with princely profusion and elegance at Richmond Hill. His library excelled all others in the city.

Colonel Burr's rise to eminence in the political world was more rapid than that of any other man who played a conspicuous part in the affairs of the United States, during the first half century of the Republic. In the spring of 1784, he was elected a member of the State Legislature, and re-elected on the following year. He stood alone, at first, in opposition to the land-grab bill, which was finally lost. At the same session a bill was introduced for the gradual abolition of slavery in the State. Burr was in favor of a speedier extinction of it, and moved to amend the bill so as to totally abolish slavery after a

Digitized by Google

certain day. His amendment having been rejected, he voted for the original bill, which was lost.

As there were three parties, so there were three groups of leading partisans—the Clintons, the Livingstons, and the Schuylers. The Clintons had power, the Livingstons had numbers, and the Schuylers had Hamilton! Neither of the three was strong enough to overcome the other two united, and any two united could triumph over the third.

A thousand influences enter into politics, and in a State where only freeholders had a vote, and where there were not more than twelve or fourteen thousand freeholders, the influence of great families, if wielded by men of force and talent, will be, in the long run, and in a great crisis, controlling. It was so in the State of New York for twenty years after the Revolution. For some years after coming to New York, Colonel Burr held aloof from these factions. And when, at length, he entered the political field, it was not as an ally of either of the families, but as an independent power who profited by their dissensions, and wielded the influence of the two to crush the more obnoxious third.

Colonel Burr had a party of his own, that served him, instead of family connections. These Burrites formed a fourth party in the State, and were a recognized power in it years after the leader had vanished from the scene. Consisting at first of half a dozen of Burr's personal friends, it grew in numbers with his advancement, until it became a formidable "wing" of the great Democratic party.

In 1788, Colonel Burr first appears in political history as the candidate of the anti-Federal party. In the following year, Governor George Clinton appointed him attorney-general of the State, although he had opposed that gentleman's election. This was a tribute to the lawyer merely.

In January, 1791, Colonel Burr was elected to represent the State of New York in the United States Senate. General Schuyler (Hamilton's father-in-law), was a candidate for re-election, and had the aid of Hamilton, then the confidential man of Washington's administration. Notwithstanding the Federalists had a majority in the Legislature, Schuyler was rejected and Burr elected on the first ballot.

The commencement of Alexander Hamilton's hatred for Aaron Burr dates from this event. Soon after, Hamilton's letters began to teem with repugnance for his rival. From this time, in whatever direction Burr sought advancement, or advancement sought him, his secret, inveterate enemy was Alexander Hamilton; until at length the politics of the United States was resolved into a contest between these two individuals.

In the United States Senate Burr at once became a leading figure. It had for some time been his ambition to write a history of the Revolution; but he was refused free access to the public documents while

Digitized by Google

in Washington, lest some of the schemes of political leaders might be exposed. The work was laid aside for the time being, and circumstances, which every writer experiences, prevented him from taking it up again.

Colonel Burr was appointed a judge of the Supreme Court, but refused it, and it seemed at one time as if he would receive the nomination for Vice-President at the second term under Washington. Hamilton again showed his hand—of hatred for Burr. He wrote very bitter letters. On the 21st of September he said "Burr was an embryo Cæsar," but on the 15th of October, he said his "opinion of the individual was yet to form." This may be accounted for in the fact that the first letter was private, while the latter was for the public!

For six years, Colonel Burr played a distinguished part in the Senate of the United States. He acted with the Democratic party. He contended for an open Senate, session after session, till, in 1794, the measure was carried by a vote of nineteen to eight. He was recommended for appointment as Minister to France; but President Washington, influenced by Hamilton, refused to nominate him. Nevertheless, Burr was all the time making surprising advances in popularity and importance. He was everywhere spoken of as the coming candidate for the Vice-Presidency.

In the spring of 1794, twelve years after their marriage, Mrs. Burr died. No one familiar with the subject will doubt that that event influenced the rest of his life. Little Theodocia, then a girl of eleven, was all that now made his house a home. From her infancy his heart and mind had been interested in that most fascinating of employments, the culture of a being tenderly loved. In her tenth year Theodocia was reading Horace and Terence, in the original Latin, learning the Greek grammar, speaking French, studying Gibbon, practicing on the piano, taking lessons in dancing, and learning to skate. She was really a child of superior endowments, and rewarded her father's solicitude by becoming the best educated woman of her time and country, as well as one of the most estimable.

It was the fortune of Aaron Burr to contribute, in a remarkable manner, to the triumph of his party. His tactics brought victory, through which many profited, and "rewarded" the man with ingratitude. It is no exaggeration to say that Jefferson himself was one of these. In 1795, Colonel Burr having left the Senate, seemed absorbed in law and speculation. He was no doubt planning for the coming Presidential campaign. He went back to the State Legislature. On the reorganization of the army, Burr was spoken of as a brigadier-general; but through Hamilton's influence he was defeated.

In the election of 1800 Burr was the Democratic leader, and the result of his management placed Thomas Jefferson in the Presidential chair. He came within one vote of reaching that office himself; consequently he became the Vice-President. Jefferson had, in fact, given

Digitized by Google

up all hope of success, saying that "he considered the contest more doubtful than that of 1796." Burr would not admit the idea of failure. Then it was that the party began to submit to that discipline which gave it twenty-five years of victory.

Hamilton had planned to rob the new party of its victory in the city; but Burr was posted, and every movement of the Federal leader was watched so closely that the scheme failed. Hamilton's intrigue was a design to frustrate the people's will by putting General Pinckney into the Presidential chair, in place of John Adams, by means of a trick in which he hoped to capture votes in the electoral college.

The 4th of March, 1801, was a day of rejoicing throughout the United States. The inauguration was happily achieved at the usual hour. In the evening President Jefferson and Vice-President Burr received the congratulations of gentlemen of both parties at the Presidential mansion. The inauguration speech had lulled the apprehensions of the Federals, and the new order of things was accepted with good grace.

At the same time the Democrats in Albany were holding a banquet, and the second toast offered was, "Aaron Burr, Vice-President of the United States; his uniform and patriotic exertions in favor of Republicanism eclipsed only by his late disinterested conduct."

Colonel Burr made a model Vice-President. He wore his honors with the dignity which belonged to the man. And yet, Aaron Burr should never have touched politics. He was now in several people's way, and measures were to be adopted to get him out of the way. He was not the man that Thomas Jefferson and the Virginia politicians wanted to be the next President, and two of the three factions in Burr's home State were disposed to unite their forces for the purpose of destroying him and his followers. Burr's friends were slighted by Jefferson. Newspapers were owned and controlled to injure him, and contained the vilest of falsehoods, which, unfortunately, he let stand unnoticed.

Bitter and deadly, beyond what the modern reader can imagine, were the political controversies at the commencement of the nineteenth century. Duels were fashionable at that time—apparently the only mode to which gentlemen were compelled to resort to settle an insult, a slight, or wrong. They were regarded as a matter of course. Many an "affair of honor" was settled on Staten Island.

Three years of Colonel Burr's Vice-Presidency passed in these contentions. His personal friends had resented the insults to him, and they told upon his popularity. As the time for selecting candidates for the Presidential campaign drew on, it became manifest that he could not secure the undivided support of his party for a second term. Calling upon the President, he informed him of his intention to resign. Jefferson's mind had been poisoned by Burr's enemies, and he acted

Digitized by Google

accordingly. His conduct in this instance has robbed Mr. Jefferson of not a little of the glitter that covered his name.

Colonel Burr then became the candidate for Governor of New York. The Federalists nominated Morgan Lewis. Hamilton came out with a catalogue of "Reasons" why Burr should be defeated. Viler abuse was never bestowed upon any man running for a political office. Burr was beaten. No one ever received provocation so oft repeated, so irritating, and so injurious as that which Aaron Burr had received from Alexander Hamilton. Cheetham, of the *American Citizen*, whose abuse of Burr was only such as a coward could employ, after allowing Hamilton to use his columns, asked: "Is the Vice-President sunk so low as to submit to be insulted by General Hamilton?"

At every step in Burr's political career, Hamilton, by open efforts and secret intrigue, had utterly opposed his advancement. His letters, for years, had abounded in denunciations of him, as severe and unqualified as the language of a powerful declaimer could convey. From Burr's own table he had carried away the unguarded sallies of the host for use against the political opponent. Finally, he had just succeeded in frustrating Burr's keen desire for vindication at the people's hands; and, in doing so, had made it only too evident to all the influential politicians, that for the success of any plans of political advancement which Burr might in future form, it was, all things else essential, that Hamilton's injurious tongue should be either silenced or bridled.

The two men had already been near collision. In 1802, Colonel Burr called Hamilton to account for his slanders. Hamilton apologized, and Burr believed that he would cease to speak of him in a disrespectful manner. From the hour that he learned that Hamilton was still slandering him with his former freedom, he ceased to respect him; he held him in contempt, as a man insensible to considerations of honor and good faith.

Burr's religion was fidelity to comrades. Men who proudly looked upon him as more than their political chief had fought in his quarrel, and fought with a reckless courage which he had first inspired, and then commanded. If the occasion should arise, could chief decline the encounter with chief, after the subalterns had so gallantly contended? And this consideration had weight with Hamilton. Besides having sanctioned the practice of duelling, and serving as second to Colonel Laurens in his duel with General Lee, his own son had fallen, three years before, in what the language of that day called "the vindication of his father's honor." In short, never since the duello was invented, were two men, if the requisite technical provocation should arise, so peculiarly and irresistibly bound to fight, as were Aaron Burr and Alexander Hamilton, in the summer of 1804.

A paper containing Hamilton's offensive remarks was taken to Colonel Burr, six weeks after the election, by William P. Van Ness. They

Digitized by Google

were in a letter written by Dr. Charles D. Cooper. At the request of Colonel Burr, Mr. Van Ness conveyed the letter to General Hamilton, with the offensive passage marked, and a note from Colonel Burr, which called attention to the passage, and concluded with the following words: "You must perceive, sir, the necessity of a prompt and unqualified acknowledgment, or a denial of the use of any expressions which would warrant the assertions of Mr. Cooper."

Hamilton had not seen Cooper's letter. Having read it, and the note of Colonel Burr, he said they required consideration, and he would send an answer to Mr. Van Ness's office in the course of the day. Late that evening he called at Mr. Van Ness's residence, and told him that a press of business had prevented his preparing a reply; but on the 20th he would give him a communication for Colonel Burr.

In that communication, Hamilton declined making the acknowledgment or denial that Burr had demanded. Between gentlemen, he said, "despicable" and "more despicable" was not worth the pains of distinction. He could not consent to be interrogated as to the justice of the "inferences" which others might have drawn from what he had said of an opponent during fifteen years' competition. But he stood ready to vow or disavow explicitly any "definite" opinion which he might be charged with having expressed respecting any gentleman. He trusted that Colonel Burr, upon further reflection, would see the matter in the same light. If not, he could only regret the fact, and abide the consequences.

AARON BURR.

Burr's reply was prompt and decisive. He said he had considered the letter attentively and regretted to find nothing in it of that sincerity and delicacy which Hamilton professed to value. "Political opposition can never absolve gentlemen from the necessity of a rigid adherence to the laws of honor and the rules of decorum," wrote Burr, "I neither claim such privilege nor indulge it with others." He continues to review the letter, closing with the remark that, "Your letter has furnished me with new reasons for requiring a definite reply."

Everything indicated that Hamilton read his doom in that letter. He claimed that it contained "offensive expressions" which seemed to close the door to reply. He wanted Burr's letter withdrawn. Mr. Van Ness detailed these ideas to Colonel Burr, and received a paper of instructions to guide him in replying, verbally, to General Hamilton. It read as follows:

Digitized by Google

"A. Burr, far from conceiving that rivalship authorizes a latitude not otherwise justifiable, always feels greater delicacy in such cases, and would think it meanness to speak of a rival but in terms of respect; to do justice to his merits; to be silent of his foibles. Such has invariably been his conduct toward Jay, Adams, and Hamilton; the only three who can be supposed to have stood in that relation to him.

"That he has too much reason to believe that, in regard to Mr. Hamilton, there has been no reciprocity. For several years his name has been lent to the support of base slanders. He has never had the generosity, the magnanimity, or the candor to contradict or disavow. Burr forbears to particularize, as it could only tend to produce new irritations; but having made great sacrifices for the sake of harmony; having exercised forbearance until it approached to humiliation, he has seen no effect produced by such conduct but a repetition of injury. He is obliged to conclude that there is, on the part of Mr. Hamilton, a settled and implacable malevolence; that he will never cease, in his conduct toward Mr. Burr, to violate those courtesies of life; and that, hence, he has no alternative but to announce these things to the world, which, consistent with Mr. Burr's ideas of propriety, can be done in no way but that which he has adopted. He is incapable of revenge, still less is he capable of imitating the conduct of Mr. Hamilton, by committing secret depredations on his fame and character. But these things must have an end."

Hamilton wrote a letter and placed it in the hands of his friend, Pendleton. He was not willing to make a definite avowal or disavowel, such as Colonel Burr desired. Hamilton gave Van Ness a paper, the purport of which was that if Colonel Burr should think it proper to inquire of General Hamilton the nature of the conversation with Dr. Cooper, he would be able to reply, with truth, that it turned wholly on political topics, etc. Burr said it was a "mere evasion." Other correspondence followed. Throughout the whole of it we see, on the one hand, an exasperated man resolved to bring the affair to a decisive and final issue; on the other, a man striving desperately to escape the consequences of his own too unguarded words.

Colonel Burr then wrote his "final recapitulation," and sent it to Hamilton. It concluded with the remark that the length and fruitlessness of the correspondence proved it useless "to offer any proposition, except the simple message which I shall now have the honor to deliver." The challenge was then given and accepted. Court was in session and Hamilton was busy. He required time to transact private affairs; and, therefore, delay was unavoidable. The seconds met on the following day; they conferred several times before arrangements were completed. The time was set—July 11th, at seven in the morning; the place, Weehawken; the weapons, pistols; the distance, ten paces.

Digitized by Google

On the 4th of July, Hamilton and Burr met, for the last time, at the convivial board. It was the annual banquet of the Society of the Cincinnati, of which Hamilton was president and Burr a member. The letters, which the two men wrote on the night before the duel, are full of sympathy and tenderness, and, we doubt, have ever been read but to awaken pity and regret for both.

The two chiefs met—each to be a chief no more! In the strict law governing the practice of dueling, they proceeded. Burr, cool, deliberate, took the position assigned him, while Hamilton, agitated and nervous, assumed his. And yet, who that has familiarized himself with the circumstances, will question that both were equally determined? But, the simple secret that Burr was a better soldier than his antagonist, stood him well in hand at the instant. Burr hit his mark. Hamilton tried to, but failed! It would probably have been better for both, if both had fallen; for it is invariably so ordered in this world's affairs, that the successful one in a contest involving so much, becomes the real victim in the public mind. It was so with Burr. The injustice that Hamilton had done him was all forgotten in the awful tide of public opinion that turned against him.

Hamilton lingered thirty-one hours. He was buried with all the honors the city could bestow upon his memory. His grave is in Trinity Churchyard, and can be plainly seen by the thousands who traverse Broadway every day. The feeling against Burr at once became most intense. The press was filled with letters from people from all over the country.

"Those preliminary letters," says Parton, "read by a person ignorant of the former history of the two men, are entirely damning to the memory of the challenger. They present Burr in the light of a revengeful demon, burning for an innocent victim's blood. Read aright—read by one who knows intimately what had gone before—read by one who is able to perceive that the moral quality of a duel is not affected by its results—read, too, in the light of a century ago—and the challenge will be admitted to be as near an approach to a reasonable and inevitable action, as an action can be which is intrinsically wrong and absurd. But not so, thought the half-informed public of 1804. They clamored for a victim, and they found it in Aaron Burr. He became the target from that time on for the vilest scandal that was ever implanted in the heart of man. Such vitality may there be in lies planted at the right moment, in the right place, and in the right manner, that these foolish tales have still a certain currency in the world. This duel, however, had the good effect of arousing the public mind against the practice. Since that day, no man in the United States has fought a duel without falling in the estimation of his countrymen."

Eleven days after the duel, Colonel Burr left his home at Richmond Hill, and passed by boat down the Staten Island Kills to Perth

Digitized by Google

Amboy. After a visit to Commodore Truxton, he proceeded South as far as Georgia, where the Society of St. Simon's bestowed every mark of consideration upon him. Later he went to his daughter Theodocia's home in South Carolina. In Petersburg, Virginia, he was given an ovation. He was received well in Washington, and Jefferson was really more friendly to him than before.

On the 2d of March, 1805, Colonel Burr resigned as Vice-President of the United States. After a farewell speech by him, the Senate adopted the following: "Resolved, unanimously, That the thanks of the Senate be presented to Aaron Burr, in testimony of the impartiality, dignity, and ability with which he has presided over their deliberations, and of the entire approbation of his conduct in the discharge of the arduous and important duties assigned him as President of the Senate."

During Colonel Burr's absence, Richmond Hill was seized and sold to pay his debts, and he was in danger of going to the debtor's prison himself, should he return. He was a ruined man. Everybody was asking, "What will Burr do now?" He was the subject of unnumbered rumors. The public mind was prepared to believe anything of him, provided only that it was sufficiently incredible!

THEODOCIA BURR (daughter).

Colonel Burr was looking Westward. All over the valley of the Mississippi, there were men who were ready to go all lengths in showing respect to a man whom they regarded in the light of a martyr. It is not our mission to go into details as to Colonel Burr's Western trip. He was arrested and tried for treason. He was acquitted, repeatedly, after trials lasting many weeks, in which everything that the politicians of the country could do to convict, to injure, and to damn him, was done. But his absolute vindication lies in the fact that, what was considered rank treason in Aaron Burr then, was, in after years, considered the very acme of patriotism and progress in others!

The real prosecutor of Aaron Burr, throughout the whole business, was Thomas Jefferson, President of the United States, who was made President of the United States by Burr's tact and vigilance, and who was able therefore to wield against Aaron Burr the power and resources of the United States. So anxious was he to prosecute, if not persecute, Burr, that he even denounced the Federal judges, of which John Marshall was the chief. The truth is, Jefferson and a great many others, were determined to get Burr out of their own way!

Digitized by Google

As an instance of the public pulse, we recall a Fourth of July celebration in Cecil County, Maryland, where, in the toasts, the crudest epithets were hurled at Aaron Burr and his counsel, Luther Martin. To these effusions, Martin replied with a spirit and audacity seldom found in a public man. "Who is this gentleman," said he, "whose guilt you have pronounced, and for whose blood your parched throats so thirst? Was he not, a few years past, adored by you next to your god? I mean your earthly god; for whether you believe in a deity who has any government over your 'republic of dust and ashes,' I know not. Were you not, then, his warmest admirers? Did he not then possess every virtue? Had he then one sin—even a single weakness of human nature? He was then in power. He had then influence. You would have been proud of his notice. One smile from him would have brightened up all your faces. One frown from him would have lengthened all your visages!

"Go, ye holiday, ye sunshine friends—ye time-servers—ye criers of hosannah to-day and crucifiers to-morrow—go, hide your heads, if possible, from the contempt and detestation of every virtuous, every honorable inhabitant of every clime!"

After Colonel Burr's acquittal and liberation, he sailed for England. While the ship on which he was to sail was in preparation, he spent almost all his time with friends on Staten Island. From England he went to several of the Continental countries, had some terrible experiences, and returned home in 1812. Landing at Boston, he soon made his way to New York. A friend in Nassau street let him have a suite of rooms, and he at once resumed the practice of law.

The announcement in the newspaper that he had returned, electrified the city. Before Colonel Burr slept that night, five hundred gentlemen called upon him. The feeling for the moment seemed to be general throughout the city, that he had been treated with undue severity, and that the past should be buried in oblivion. He at once had a splendid practice, and the sky began to brighten again.

But, alas! misery was impending over him. About six weeks after his return, in June, 1812, Theodocia lost her boy—what a calamity to Aaron Burr! And then, poor, gentle, brave-hearted Theodocia—how sad her fate! She boarded a vessel—the "Patriot"—at Charleston, but was never heard from again. It is thought that the vessel went down off Hatteras in a violent storm.

The most important act of Colonel Burr's later life—aside from his splendid exhibition of gratitude to old friends—was his suggestion of a course of political action which resulted, finally, in ending the supremacy of the Virginia politicians, and electing General Jackson to the Presidency. During the years left to him, Burr won some of the most important cases tried at that time. It is said that he never lost a case in his life that he had planned himself. He was never

Digitized by Google

heard to speak unkindly of anyone—not even of Jefferson, who had abused and persecuted him so roundly.

When Colonel Burr had become an old man, he married the wealthy Madame Jumel, her residence being the old Morris homestead near Fort Washington, still standing. A second attack of paralysis rendered him helpless. A recent history of Greater New York says that Colonel Burr was divorced from his second wife, which is untrue.

For about two years before his death Colonel Burr lived with a friend; but it chanced that the "old Jay house," in which they resided was to be torn down. Judge Ogden Edwards, then residing in the old Dongan Manor House, at West New Brighton, had him removed to the Port Richmond Hotel (now the St. James).

Rev. Dr. Peter I. Van Pelt, pastor of the Port Richmond Dutch Reformed Church, visited him daily, and they became warm friends. They talked freely upon religious questions, which Colonel Burr seemed to enjoy. During his sojourn at Port Richmond, Colonel Burr used to ride into the interior of the Island. His last trip was but a few days before his death. He went by way of New Springville, through Rockland avenue, to the residence of Colonel Richard Conner (now the site of the Dr. Rotten homestead), near the deep ravine back of Egbertville.

Colonel Burr died on Wednesday, September 14, 1836, aged eighty years, seven months, and eight days. On the Friday following his funeral was celebrated. A large concourse of gentlemen, among whom were Mr. Swartwout, Major Popham, Judge Ogden Edwards, Mr. Davis, the historian, Dr. Ephraim Clark, Dr. John T. Harrison, Captain Richard Christopher, Colonel Nathan Barrett, Dr. Edgar, Cornelius Vanderbilt, and many others prominent at that time. Rev. Dr. Van Pelt delivered an appropriate sermon (it being the second Vice-President at whose funeral he had officiated on Staten Island), and, at Colonel Burr's own request, his remains were taken to Princeton for interment. At that place a charitable and impressive sermon was preached by the Rev. Dr. Carnahan, the President of the College.

The Cliosophic Society, of which the youthful Burr had been one of the founders, voted to attend his funeral in a body, and to wear the usual badge of mourning for thirty days. A militia company of Princeton, the Mercer Guards, escorted the remains of the old soldier to the grave, and fired over them a military salute. Most of the students of the College, and a large concourse of the people of the village witnessed the ceremony.

The news of the death of Aaron Burr called public attention once more to his character and exploits, the newspaper comment upon which was what might have been expected. Absurdly false accounts were given of his life and death. The strife seems to have been which should heap upon his grave the greatest obloquy. The more bitter and

Digitized by Google

severe the falsehoods, the happier the authors. A typical fabrication is the following, which has gone the rounds of the press:

"We envy not the man who can, unmoved, gaze upon the grave of Colonel Burr. It is one of the most sad and desolate places we have ever seen. There is no monumental pile or sculptured marble standing over it, to evince the respect or affliction of a single living soul. Not even a rough, unhewn stone marks the head or the foot of him who once held such sway over the minds and feelings of men. Wild grass and poisoned weeds form the sod that partly covers him. The rest of the surface of the grave is a sterile clay yielding no verdant plant or shrub. The stranger treads upon the spot, and regards it not until he is told he stands over the remains of Burr."

While a school-boy at Princeton, the writer of these pages visited old Witherspoon Cemetery many times, and we remember the scene of Colonel Burr's grave as one of the most beautiful spots in that historic home of the dead. In the cluster of graves with Colonel Burr's, are those of his grandfather, the Rev. Jonathan Edwards; his father, the Rev. Aaron Burr, and his sainted mother. Further—shortly after Colonel Burr's burial, President John McLean, of Princeton College, and his brother, purchased a neat marble headstone, and with their own hands helped to place it into position. A daughter of the latter, whom we met in 1886, at Colonel Burr's grave, was our informant.

There is a tendency in human nature to heap obloquy upon a man who is *down*, and there never was a greater victim to this habit than Aaron Burr. He has had hard measure at the hands of his countrymen. By men far beneath him, in everything that goes to make the man, he has been most cruelly and basely belied. The closing year of the Nineteenth Century is the fitting time to correct its errors. It is the time to tell the truth about Aaron Burr. The fact is, we live in a different day than he did, and history vindicates him by proving that in intellect and purpose he lived many years ahead of his time.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XI.

OLD STATEN ISLAND STRUCTURES.

THE AUSTIN HOUSE.—A short distance north of the Quarantine station, at Clifton, stands a very old house, which was a home when Washington had scarcely reached the dignity of manhood, and which has outlasted revolution and the storms of two centuries.

The house is said to have been erected by a Dutch merchant in 1710, afterward coming into the possession of the Bartons, one of the oldest families of the Island. The interior of the cottage is as quaint as the exterior, the ceiling-beams being exposed to view, and the small-paned windows adding to the scene. Numerous pictures, objects of antiquity and curios adorn the rooms.

The ample fire-place that gapes in the cellar was surrounded in the evenings of many years by slaves in the old days. A few shots that missed the compliment they were no doubt intended to pay during the Revolution, have been unearthed at times from the grounds; but the building is in a sound condition, and is now known, after the family that has lived in it for about half a century, as the Austin house. (An illustration of this house appears in Vol. I., page 319.)

It is close upon the water, and the luxuriant lawn in front needs a strong sea-wall to protect it from the tidal encroachments. The outer door is a diamond-paned glass, and just inside of this there is another one made of oak, not a bit less than three inches thick, with an old-fashioned latch still attached to it, by which we pass into the cheerful hall. On the front door there is a knocker, whose hammer is wrought into a griffin's head. It was brought from an old chateau near Rouen.

Though the house itself is not especially historical, it contains numberless odds and ends that are reminiscent of momentous events in the country's progress. The stone walls are three feet thick, forming charming window-seats; the low ceilings are beamed with ponderous oaks, and the floors are of solid deal taken from the cabins of captured ships.

The grand old fire-place, with logs ready for lighting, stretched over brass and-irons, is about ten feet wide, and is surrounded by ancient tiles brought from Amsterdam two hundred years ago, the subjects being Biblical, and the treatment grotesque. Among a crowd of

Digitized by Google

objects upon the mantel-piece are two small candle-sticks that belonged to the Van Tassel family; and who will venture to say that they are not the very ones that revealed Katrina's pretty face to the school-master of Sleepy Hollow?

A centre-piece is formed of a small knocker taken from the house in Chester, which was occupied by Washington, and visited by Rochambeau, Lafayette and other celebrities; and below this is a link of the chain that stretched across the Hudson at West Point. It was Mrs. Austin's grandfather, Peter Townsend, who forged the metal.

DISOSWAY-COLE MILL.—The date of the erection of this building is not exactly known; but it is safe to assert that it stood before the close of the former century. It was located on the Disosway estate, near Tottenville. A portion of the account-book, kept by Cornelius Disosway, is still preserved, being in possession of ex-Supervisor Abram Cole, of Westfield. These accounts begin with June 9, 1800, and run to April 14, 1820. On one of the pages is the following:

"STATEN ISLAND, January 10th, 1801.

"This is to certify that Cornelius Dissosway and James Britton has this day Settled all Accounts in their Copartnership about Building the Gristmill and Mill Dam and things belonging or Appurtaining to them, and also for the Said Mill Grinding for them to the Eighth Instant all even.

"Witness our hands JAMES BRITTON,
"JAMES TOTTEN. CORNELIUS DISSOSWAY."

The pages of this old book bear the names of such residents of Westfield as Abraham Miller, (work on mill); Daniel Mersereau, Abraham Johnson, David Clark, Jacob Winant, (shingles); Bornt Slaight, (nails); Charles Cantin, (cedar rails); Abraham Ayers, (work); Henry Relye, (provisions); Daniel Winant, Lewis Everson, (plank); James Totten, Daniel Miller, John Mersereau, (mason work); Isaac Stuart, (schooling); Joseph Wright, George Compton, (blacksmith); George Jones, R. Henderson, M.D., (inoculation of the black children); Cornelius Johnson, (cedar rails); also, "the sum of three Dollars and a half for one half of fifty rods Bought In Partnership for the Mill lot."

1802.—"September 29. Received this 30 D of this Month of Cornelius Dissosway the Some of twenty Shillings for hire of a Scow that we had when we Built the Mill Dam In full By Me Abraham Woglom." October 12th—"Received of me Ann Dissosway Some of 20 Dalers in full on a Cubberd in full by me Ann Bond."

1803.—Dr. R. Henderson, Thomas Acorn, Robert Varington and John N. Oliver settled accounts. John Laforge did carting that year. "february 22—Received of Cornelius Dissosway the Some of Six Dollars for his part In Buildind the new flood gates and one pound one Shilling fer putting In the Coggs a New Set My Half By Me William Wood."

Digitized by Google

1804.—Caleb Ward sold two cows for Cornelius Dissosway, for £8, and in the following year he received £3 in cash and gave credit for a coffin.

1806.—April 14. "Received of Cornelius Dissosway the Some of three pounds Nine Shillings In full for rum he had for Building the Mill By Me Isaac Butler."

Following these dates we find the names of Peter Mance, Morris Reed, (mason work); Richard DuBois, Daniel Manning, Charles Cavileer, John and Ephraim Hadden, (various payments on account for building a sloop).

On July 19, 1815, Godfrey Sweeny gave a receipt for "Six dollars in full for one quarter's tuition to Peter and Gabriel Dissosway."

The old mill is still standing, but is in a condition that will soon necessitate its demolition. It now belongs to the Cole estate.

OLD PLACE MILL.—On the fly-leaf of an old book, worn with handling and stained with age, treasured beyond the value of gold or silver by Mr. George T. Jones, of Mariners' Harbor, is this inscription, as bold and plain as if written only yesterday: "Daniel Jones. His cyphering book. July the 5th, 1791."

OLD FOUNTAIN HOMESTEAD, NEW DORP; REMODELED, 1900.
See Vol. I, page 277.

Daniel Jones was the grandfather of George T. Jones, and was born in the neighborhood familiarly known as "Old Place," in Northfield, at a time when the Aquehonga Indians were among his nearest neighbors. There is a tradition that the neighborhood was sacred above all others on Staten Island to the Indians, because in one of the numberless battles in which the unreliable Aquehongas engaged with the celebrated "Seven Tribes," the native tribe retreated and hid in safety among the thickets of that place. It was the last regular settlement, or Indian village, on Staten Island. Long Neck creek ran through the reservation.

About what time the neighborhood assumed the name of Old Place is not definitely known. One writer claims that it was several years prior to the Revolution, which may be true. Historian Clute, in speaking of it, says:

"In the first, and for many years, the only house built on the road known by the name of Old Place, religious services were held for a

Digitized by Google

long time, its situation being central for a widely scattered population. After a while the house became so dilapidated as to be uncomfortable, and the place of holding these meetings was changed. This proved to be so inconvenient for many that the apartment in the old house was repaired, and notice was given that the meetings would be resumed in the 'Old Place,' and thus the vicinity became known by that name. Old Place road is now called Washington avenue."

The oldest landmark, however, at Old Place, was the grist mill, which was destroyed by fire about two years ago. Through the instrumentality of Daniel Jones' old "cyphering book" we are able to give the exact date of its construction. The entry to it reads: "John hilleker Raised the Mill May 26 on thursday, 1803." Originally it was but one story in height; but during the War of 1812, its owner leased it to the State of New York, through Governor Daniel D. Tompkins, and a second story was added. Colonel Richard Conner, who commanded the local troops during that period, was held responsible for its management, and a company of Staten Island militia was constantly on guard at the mill, lest the British, or those in sympathy with them, should capture it and either destroy it or utilize its service.

According to old records several Indians and slaves helped to build the mill and worked in it for a number of years. "Red Indian Pete" and "Black Sam" were paid "£0. 0s. 6d. a day f'r ye services as labor's."

Shortly after its erection a dispute arose between those two distinct races, over some trivial matter, and several attempts were made to take each other's lives. The mill served as a fort for the negroes, and the Indians kept up a siege until driven away by the militia. Several Indians and negro slaves were arrested, and made to tramp over the hills to Richmond, where they were imprisoned in the Old Red Jail until their cases were disposed of. The Indians were made to work for the county, as their punishment, and owners of the slaves were held responsible for their future conduct. The leaders, however, were sentenced to receive "Five and twenty lash's at ye whip'ing post."

John Hilleker, who constructed the Old Place mill, was the leading builder of Staten Island for many years. Several years after the War of 1812, the third story and attic were added to the structure, probably by its original builder. The original owner of the mill was Judge David Mersereau.

Old Place mill was managed for many years by Abram Decker, and later by Charles Wood, grandfather of Dr. J. Walter Wood, of Port Richmond. A New York firm by the name of Johnson subsequently managed it. Daniel and Thomas Mallett had it for a time. Andrew Pryor also managed it for several years.

Shortly after 1870 the building was converted into a mineral paint

Digitized by Google

factory, a portion of the material used being taken out of Todt Hill. Cocoanut shells were also pulverized there. Then it became a feed mill, under the management of W. L. Stephens. Thomas Smith was its final manager, and about eight years ago "its old wheel stopped, never to go again," and it remained idle to the day of its destruction.

An illustration of the old mill appears on page 378, Vol. I.

DUTCH REFORMED CHURCH.—It seems nothing short of sacrilege that an edifice hallowed with the memory of such associations as those of the old Dutch Reformed Church at Richmond, should become a store-house for vehicles. It was erected in 1808, and closed its doors more than a decade ago. It took the place of the Dutch Church, which was destroyed during the Revolution.

Another old church that deserves preservation, but which, too, has been converted into a carriage shop, is the Dutch Reformed Church at Tompkinsville. That once pretty edifice was planned by Daniel D. Tompkins, while Vice-President of the United States. It was long ago deserted by its friends.

BEDELL HOMESTEAD.—The old Bedell homestead, at Green Ridge, has become a most dilapidated wreck. For a few years past it has been occupied by negroes, and whenever they needed firewood, they pulled down a portion of the venerable structure.

The neighborhood now known as Green Ridge was a favorite resort with the Indians, and the very last of the native tribe were buried at that place. There is a tradition that a "peace convention" was held at this place by the famous Seven Tribes and their rivals, and that the old Bedell homestead sheltered the chiefs, while their less distinguished companions were quartered in wigwams upon the lawn. So important was the result of this "convention," that as long as the tribe continued to exist in this part of the country, annual pilgrimages were made to this old house in honor of the treaty. Prior to the Revolution it was one of the events of the year on Staten Island, and the white people residing here looked forward to it with almost as much interest as did the Indians themselves. It is said that the settlers used to aid the Indians by contributing provisions and articles of comfort for the rude visitors, and that for miles around their doors were opened to all who would enter and enjoy civilized hospitality.

The Bedell homestead is about two hundred years old, and was erected by one of the Huguenot settlers. In Colonial times it was one of the cosiest homesteads on Staten Island, and was occupied by the particular Bedell who is known in local history as a member of the firm of Bedell & Micheau, who kept a store in the building now known as the "Old House by the Mill."

The old Bedell homestead is one of the most familiar landmarks on Staten Island, and its total disappearance in the near future will be greatly regretted by all who reverence the past and delight in preserving the landmarks of our fathers.

Digitized by Google

During the retreat of the Continentals, after the first Battle of Richmond Court House, they were closely pursued by the British all the way to Smoking Point, (Rossville), where they crossed the Kill into New Jersey. Several times during the retreat the British were surprised by Continentals in ambush, and numbers were killed and wounded. Near the old Bedell homestead was a dense thicket, so large that the entire Continental force, when divided into three detachments ready for attack, was safely concealed.

The British were permitted to pass the first and second detachments; but just as they were approaching the hiding place of the third, the latter came out suddenly and sent a volley of musket-balls into the ranks of the red coats. This was followed by a second volley from the other detachments in the rear. The British outnumbering the Continentals, three to one, soon recovered from the shock and drove their foes some distance. In the skirmish several were wounded, and three British officers, including the colonel in command, were killed. The wounded were carried into the old Bedell homestead.

Marshland, as Green Ridge was called in those days, was an important military post during the whole time of the occupancy of Staten Island by the British, and a fort was located near the Old House by the Mill. The commandant, with his staff, made his headquarters in the Bedell homestead, but permitted the family to remain "at home" and care for their special wants! That was a very convenient fashion adopted by the British throughout the war.

The Bedells, who have occupied this house for generation after generation, have always been noted for their hospitality, and old people have related to the writer that they remember meeting there scores of men distinguished in their day. The last of the Bedell family who occupied it, is well remembered by the people of the Island at this time. "Uncle Henry," as almost everybody called him, was at one time a well-to-do farmer, and was noted for driving the handsomest and fastest team of horses in the county. He was noted, too, for his hospitality and kindheartedness. Adversity came to him, however, and blind and decrepit his last days were far from his happiest.

The Colonial mantel in the old parlor of the Bedell homestead was still intact the last time we visited it; but the hunting scene, painted perhaps two centuries ago above it, had been obliterated by some vandal hand. Almost every trace of former greatness has long since departed.

PERINE HOMESTEAD.—This picturesque old place is located at Garretsons, on the Richmond road, and we doubt that a person ever passes it without being especially attracted to it by its unique appearance.

The place is remarkable as having been the home of one family for over two hundred years. The original owner was Edward Perine, his son Joseph Perine, grandson Simon S. Perine, and great-grandsons, Cornelius L. and Joseph E., succeeding each other in living in the

Digitized by Google

old house, which is still in a fair state of preservation. In front of the dwelling rises the high hill called in old colonial documents the Iron Hill, and from which at various times ore has been extracted.

The rear of the house looks out upon a plain, stretching over a mile to the lower bay, and extending to the southwest as far as the eye can discern.

A curious old document was shown us recently. It reads: "Commission of Joseph Perine, Esq., as Clerk of the County of Richmond." To it is attached the Great Seal of the State of New York. It is composed of wax, a third of an inch thick, and nearly four inches in diameter. On one side is stamped a sun-rise scene, over the mountain tops. On the reverse side is a rock in mid-ocean. At the bottom it reads: "Passed the Secretary's office the 28th day of February, 1798. James Hopper, D. Secy."

GUYON HOMESTEAD.—About the year 1664, Jaques Guyon, with two brothers, came to this country. They were Huguenots. Jaques Guyon purchased the farm at New Dorp, a brother purchasing an adjoining farm, and the third settled at New Rochelle. The Jaques Guyon property passed from one generation to another, and remained intact until within a recent period, when all but the old mansion and about thirteen acres of land were sold to Messrs. Hughes & Ross, real estate brokers. The late Dr. Ephraim Clark, who married a daughter of Major James Guyon, inherited the property, and at his death it passed to his heirs. Surrounded by fine trees, the house stands at the end of the upland, looking out over the broad salt meadows and far out to the distant ocean.

The original deed of the Guyon estate at New Dorp is well preserved, and reads as follows:

"Edmond Andros, Esq., Governor general under his Royall Highness, James, Duke of York and Albany, of all his territories in America: To all whom it may concern, &c.: Whereas there is a certain part of Land on Staten Island the which for many years hath been possest, and by virtue of a warrant now laid out for Jaques Guyon, lying and being on the south side of said Island near the Great Kill. Bounded with the west side on the land of Peter Billican, with the east side on the now lots, the line running north-west and by north, being the breadth one hundred Rods, and containing sixty acres of land. As also the salt and fresh meadow, being on the west side of the Point near the plantation, being a certain creek and Bordwin's Point, being the quantity of about fourteen acres, with four acres of meadow on the east side of the point, containing in all one hundred and seventy-eight acres. As by the return of the survey under the hand of the Surveyor Gen'll doth and may appear. Now know ye that by virtue of the Commission and authority unto me granted by His Royal Highness I have given and granted, and by these presents do give and grant unto Jaques Guyon, his heirs and assigns, the afore described

Digitized by Google

parcel of lands, meadow, ground and premises, with all and singular the appurtenances. To have and to hold the said parcel of land, meadow and ground premises unto the said Jaques Guyon, his assigns unto the proper use and behoof of him the said Jaques Guyon, his heirs and assigns forever, and making improvements on the said land according to law, and continuing in obedience and conforming himself according to the laws of the Government, and yielding and paying the aforesaid yearly, and every year unto his Royal Highness, use as a Quit Rent Eight Bushels of good winter wheat unto said officer or officers in authority there, as shall be Empowered to receive the same. Given under my hand, and seal'd with the seal of the Province in New York the 25th day of March, in the twenty-seventh year of the reign of his Ma'ties Reigne annoq Domini 1675.

"Entered in the office of Records and examined by me.

(Seal of England.) "MATTHEWS NICHOLS, Secr."

In connection with the Quit Rent there are a number of receipts, one of which reads as follows: "Seven bushels of wheat in full for three years quit rent of two parcels of land on Staten Island," one granted to Hans Lawrence, the 29th of September, 1677, and another to James Guyon the 30th of August, 1708. They are signed by Richard Holmes.

THE VANDERBILT HOMESTEADS.—On a slight eminence and still preserving its acre of land with trees, shrubs and lawn, is the Vanderbilt cottage, at Stapleton. This house is very old, but is in an excellent state of preservation, kept up by George W. Vanderbilt, its owner.

Mrs. Vanderbilt purchased the cottage and lived in it a very long time, dying at an advanced age. She was a remarkable woman, of great executive ability, sterling integrity and sound sense, but kindly and courteous to all, reverenced and looked up to by her children, grandchildren and a large circle of friends. The Commodore owed many of his characteristics to her. Her portrait represents her late in life, with the old-fashioned cap and frill and the folded shawl about her.

The Vanderbilt homestead at New Dorp, also owned by George W. Vanderbilt, is kept up very neatly. It stood, until within a few years past, near the roadside on New Dorp lane; but it was moved back several hundred feet. The Vanderbilt farm is considered one of the very best on Staten Island.

The third building known as the Vanderbilt homestead, is located at Stapleton, but is not a very old structure.

An illustration of the old Vanderbilt homestead appears on page 327 of Vol. I.

VAN DUZER HOMESTEAD.—A short distance to the northward of the last Vanderbilt homestead, at Stapleton, stood until recently the old Van Duzer homestead, a great, rambling building, not at all pictur-

Digitized by Google

esque, but it showed antiquity. It stood on a slight eminence, and the domains of the family once stretched three-quarters of a mile along the shore northward. The house was probably one hundred and fifty years old, and was opposite the structure which was known as the Van Duzer dock. This ferry is mentioned in the laws passed by the Legislature of 1788, in the description of the town of Castleton. In a deed dated 1785 to Abraham Van Duzer, he was called the Admiral from the many boats and sailing vessels owned by him. The property is bounded by a brook on the south, a short distance from the house of Nathaniel Johnson, inn keeper. This house was evidently the old tavern, as the brook still runs near by. The communication with New York was by sailing vessels, and the Van Duzer ferry was well known. The Van Duzers were comfortable folks, showing their Dutch descent. The Vanderbilts and Van Duzers were rivals in boating, but intermarriage finally made them no longer so. An illustration of the Van Duzer homestead appears on page 316 of Vol. I.

BRITTON HOMESTEAD.—On the Amboy road, a few hundred yards north of the Oakwood railroad station, may still be seen a few crumbling ruins of the old Britton homestead, one of the very oldest structures on the Island. It was probably built somewhere between the years 1650 and 1660. This old house played its part in the dramas and tragedies of the Island's early history. Its builder was, beyond a doubt, one of the brave Waldenses or Huguenots who settled there in the earliest days of Stony Brook. It was built in the old Dutch style of architecture, on the side of a small embankment, of stone gathered from the surrounding ground, and had a long, sloping roof. It was one story in height, with attic and basement.

At the time of the building of the first County Court House and Jail, in 1683, the Britton homestead (as it was afterward called and has been familiarly styled for generations), was one of the few dwellings in the vicinity, being but a few hundred yards distant.

We have accounts of "publick tryalls" of "ye offenders against ye publick peace of his maj'sty's domayns," which were held in the old Britton homestead about two centuries ago. One states that "Isaac Von Flechton had fayl'd to sattisffie his majesty's clayme for rent of ye meddowe land adjoining ye Guyon grante." And "ye order of ye Court of his majistie" was that "ye sd. Isaac Von Flechton be directed to paye unto ye sayd Co't two (2) Bushells of ffresh wheate in additionall to the original clayme for rente of ye sayd meddowe land. And ye sayd Isaac Von Flechton will, by order of his majesty's Co't, be thrown into ye Richmond County gaol, at Stony Brook, by ye sheriffe of ye sayd county, and there be held as a common prisoner of cryme ag'nst ye sayd laws of his magisty's domayns until ye sayd debt is pay'd."

An Indian, who had become crazed with liquor, and having committed an assault upon a Dutch settler, named Hans Woolstonsen,

Digitized by Google

was also tried for his offense in the Britton homestead. Several members of his tribe awaited in ambush, a short distance from the house, and plotted to kill all the white men connected with the Court, provided they should attempt to punish the prisoner.

According to tradition, one of the tribe, who was on friendly terms with the judge, managed to give him information, and a company of militia was called out for protection. The Indian was convicted, and imprisoned in the "gaol" at Stony Brook. After serving out his sentence he, with others, repaired to the old house and attempted to destroy it with the torch. One of the number was shot, and the others became frightened and fled. There is a mystic tradition also that the old Britton homestead was the first Waldensian parsonage, and was, consequently, connected with the first church erected on Staten Island.

From manuscripts, written during the French and Indian war, it would appear that this was the scene of the massacre, by Aquehonga Indians, of an English family, consisting of husband, wife and several children. No one was punished, because the murderers were defended by the French, who at that time were in conflict with the English.

During the Revolution, the family living in the old house were driven out by the British soldiers. A cavalry camp was established at that place and we are informed that the colonel of the only mounted Hessian regiment on the Island made it his headquarters. It was afterwards used as a British hospital for contagious diseases, the small-pox raging among the soldiers at Richmond, about a mile away, during the winter of 1777-'78. It appears to have had occupants again before the close of the war, as a squad of Hessians attempted, by the aid of Tories, to lynch an old man, named Cornelius Varnum, residing there, "because they thought him to be in sympathy with George Washington."

The old Britton homestead has its pretty romance, too. It is said that when the British evacuated Staten Island, there was a sad heart left within those great stone walls. According to the story told us, a young girl living there, stood on the highest point of ground in the neighborhood, and watched the ships slowly move out from land, and then to return to her home in this old homestead to pray for her lover.

Years, however, dragged their slow way along, and one day there was a happy reunion in the old house. The British grenadier had come back to the girl he loved. They were married in the old Britton homestead, and the adopted American afterward became one of the most prominent citizens of Richmond County. Their sons and daughters helped to make our local history. Their grandchildren are well known in the walks of life, and their great-grandchildren are on the Island to-day. One of these, a highly-esteemed lady, residing on the

Digitized by Google

North Shore, narrated this little romance of her ancestors to the writer a few years ago.

The old homestead witnessed many changes and vicissitudes. Like many other structures of its class on Staten Island, there seems to have been little care taken to preserve it. The loose stone, the crumbling brick, and the mouldering window-frame, were, doubtless, never repaired or in any manner checked from going to decay. Each storm made its cruel inroad into the roof and walls.

At last it was vacated by its owner, and then, with its walls propped, its moss-covered roof patched with boards and rusty tin, it became a hovel wherein clustered a crowd of otherwise homeless negroes. Finally the props gave way, the roof fell in, and the poor negroes were driven out, to seek shelter elsewhere. Then the walls began to tumble down—one great stone after another rolling to the ground—until a mass of ruins marked the spot where so many stirring events transpired in the long ago. For illustration, see Vol. I., page 164.

THE OLD LAKE HOUSE, PORT RICHMOND.—This venerable structure has for several years past been known as the Croak house, it being the property of Hon. John Croak, of Elm Park. The date of its erection is not known; but on May 22, 1732, the records show that it was sold by Harman Bowman to Joshua Musshrow. The land connected with this building was a "part of a lot of land granted by Sir Edmond Andros to John Lee, December 16th, 1680." On March 22, 1739, it was sold by Joshua Mersereau to Annanias Turner; probably that was only a part of the estate, for on August 6, 1768, Joshua Mersereau sold to Cornelius Mersereau this same property. On August 28, 1794, Cornelius Mersereau sold it to Joseph Lake, who died in the old house in 1841, having lived there almost half a century. At his death the property was willed to his son Joseph. Many traditions of the Revolution are woven around the old house.

THE HOUSMAN HOUSE.—The quaint little stone structure standing on the Terrace, near the linseed oil works, at Port Richmond, is one of the oldest buildings on the Island, although the date of its erection is not known. A century ago it was occupied by Abraham P. Housman. In 1836, it belonged to the same estate as Sand's quarry, located further up shore. Some time prior to that it belonged to Vincent Bodine. It was during that period that the great wealth of granite was discovered in Northfield. Fortunes have been taken out of the quarries up there. The little, old house has for some time been utilized as a grocery. It is so substantially built that it will probably stand for many years to come.

TYLER MANSION.—The Tyler property, situated at the junction of Broadway and Clove road, West New Brighton, was originally a part of the Nathaniel Britton farm, and in 1835, was sold at a master's sale to Eliza Racey, of New York City, who subsequently erected a

Digitized by Google

residence on the property; but before it was occupied, was destroyed by fire. In 1837, Mrs. Racey commenced the erection of another building, which is the one now standing and familiarly known as the Tyler mansion.

Upon the death of Mrs. Racey, the property was sold to Charles E. and William H. Racey, and subsequently became the estate of the latter, who sold it to Mrs. Juliana Gardiner, mother of Mrs. Julia Gardiner Tyler, the widow of President John Tyler, to whom she was married in the latter part of 1843, shortly after the death of her father, who had been killed by the bursting of a cannon on the gunboat "Princeton," when on a pleasure excursion down the Potomac, with the President and other officials.

Mrs. Gardiner resided in the mansion until her death, and willed the property to her daughter, Mrs. Tyler. Her brother, John L. Gardiner, contested the will; but it was decided against him, and on the third day of October, 1868, he, with his wife, sold their interest in the property to Mrs. Tyler for a nominal figure. The cost of contesting the will had so depleted Mrs. Tyler's resources, that after being in possession of the property for about ten years, on January 16, 1878, it was sold at referee's sale, and was purchased by the Hon. William M. Evarts.

Mrs. Tyler and her family soon moved away, and the mansion became the residence of the Russian Consul-General, whose office was in the city. He lived there in great style. His coach and four-in-hand are still remembered by our older residents.

For a long time the property lay idle, and was finally purchased by Mrs. M. A. Baldwin Douglas. It was recently purchased for real estate speculation, and the park has been seriously mutilated by being cut up into building lots.

WARD HOMESTEAD.—This attractive structure is generally known as "The Cement House," and is located on the corner of Richmond terrace and Franklin avenue, New Brighton. George A. Ward, a wealthy gentleman, had it reared for his home near the early part of the century. He resided there for many years.

The old house is very attractive, and commands admiration, if not veneration, for it bears every mark of age and dignity. The walls are of solid blocks of cement or composition. These blocks were cast in moulds, and on being exposed to the sun, soon became as hard as the ordinary red sandstone. Thus the ornaments, such as the old lions in front, etc., necessary in the Gothic style, were easily and economically obtained; and in a more uniform and correct style than if executed by the most skilful sculptor.

The garden walls, and everything in the line of mason work about the premises, were modelled from this cement. We learn from the local paper of 1837, that "this building, of itself, is a sufficient curiosity to start half the world on a pilgrimage to Staten Island; it is

Digitized by Google

furnished throughout in the most chaste and elegant manner, and gives quite a picturesque character to the neighborhood. It reflects great credit on the taste and enterprise of its proprietor."

Mr. Ward has been described to us as "a typical gentleman of the old school." One may form a very correct idea of his appearance by looking at the popular picture of George Washington. Indeed, so closely did he resemble our first President that, we are informed, "the portrait of one would have served very acceptably for that of the other." In manner, too, it is said, Mr. Ward resembled President Washington.

The old building has had many changes since its original owner left it. For a time it was the home of a private school, but it is now vacant.

BRITTON'S MILL.—The Island has a peculiar ridge of hills running nearly its entire length. A deep cleft in these forms the only gateway from the plains on the southeast to the valleys and sloping ground to the northwest. This passageway forms the Clove road. On each side of this road for some distance the hills rise to the height of one hundred feet above it. On the west are several lakes and glens, in one of which lay nestled, long ago, Britton's mill. It takes the name from a family, some of whose descendants still remain on the Island.

The old mill, built many years ago, with its overhanging eaves and its slowly turning, overshot wheel, was the centre of many a gay picnic. Many times the echoes rang with the laughter of men and maids, or the wild shouts of children. It was pleasant of an afternoon in summer to sit in the shadowy nooks of this romantic spot, and to listen to the drip of the water as it poured over the wheel and the dam, to hear the song of the wild birds, or the hum of the bees, or to feel the breeze filtered through the forest trees, or to watch the declining sun making golden lances through the branches.

But, alas! modern invention spurned the mill-wheel; the old houses that bordered the lake have become storage for ice; the trees have mostly disappeared; the romance of the Old Time has departed. Only the picture remains, delineated years ago by one who used often to enjoy its beauty. For illustration, see page 331, Vol. I.

BENHAM MANSION.—This picturesque structure was built in the thirties, and stood on the Fresh Kill road, about a mile west of Richmond Village. It was almost hidden behind a thicket of choice trees and shrubbery, while great clusters of ivy crept up the rugged stone walls and concealed some of the windows. It was erected some years prior to the Mexican war, while its owner was a lieutenant in the United States Navy. It was built of stone gathered from the farm, and its massive walls seem to have been erected to battle with the storms of centuries. An air of comfort rested in the grand old hallway; the large, old-fashioned square rooms on either side of the hall

Digitized by Google

recalled to one's mind the festive scenes that transpired there in days of yore, when the genial old Commander, Timothy Greene Benham, retired from active service and resting upon his well-earned honors, was made happier by gathering around him his friends from all parts of the globe.

Every nook and corner of the mansion was filled with relics made interesting by association, and prized by the family beyond the value of gold. Swords, paintings, shells, spears, knick-knacks, and curiosities of every conceivable shape and meaning were there, each bearing its own little history.

In 1897, the Benham mansion caught fire from a defective chimney, and in less than three hours it was totally destroyed, together with a great deal of valuable property and relics. Two of Commander Benham's daughters resided in the old mansion at the time of the conflagration.

OLD RED WOOLEN MILL.—The exact age of this odd structure is not definitely known. There are many strange traditions connected

BENHAM MANSION, GREEN RIDGE.

(From a sketch by Mrs. Sarah Roberts Morris.)

with it. It is said that during the Revolution it was occupied by a Hessian officer, the huts of his men being near by along the foot of Richmond Hill.

The mill was located about half a mile west of Richmond Village, on the side of the steep embankment overlooking the head of Fresh Kill creek. Back of the mill used to be a large, artificial pond, which was fed by springs near by. Portions of the stone embankments that formed the pond still remain, as do also the flood-gates which used to regulate the flow of water which turned the wheel by the mill. The following advertisement appears in the *Richmond County Republican*, in May, 1828:

"CARDING WOOL.—The subscriber respectfully informs his friends and the public that he has taken Judge Bedell's mill at Richmond,

Digitized by Google

which has been repaired with new bolts, &c., and engages to manufacture as good wheat or rye flour as can be made on the Island.

"He has also got a complete carding machine with new cards, &c., and will card wool in the best manner, and at the shortest notice.

"BENJAMIN C. YARRINGTON."

A portion of the old building had long been occupied by farmers who have had charge of the grounds on which it stood. The building was destroyed by fire on the night of May 24, 1900.

SEAMAN HOMESTEAD.—The old Seaman homestead, at Green Ridge, stood, until within a few years, on the Fresh Kill road, just east of the road leading to Eltingville. It was originally of Dutch style of architecture and at some time had been partially changed to that of Gothic. How many generations of the Seaman family had occupied it, we are unable to say. We know, however, that it was the home of Judge Benjamin Seaman, the last Colonial Judge of Staten Island, and that after his departure with the Loyalists in 1783, it passed to other members of the family, probably by purchase, for it was seized by the Government and sold.

Judge Seaman was the father of the second wife of Colonel Christopher Billopp. Several years ago the writer conversed with an old colored woman, whose mother, a slave in the Seaman family, had witnessed in this old house the marriage of Colonel Billopp and Ann Seaman.

The Seaman estate was purchased by George W. White, in 1880, and, when a new residence was erected, the old Seaman homestead was demolished. It stood on historic ground, and adjoined the church and grave-yard of the "French congregation."

THE SCOTT HOUSE.—At the Clove, (Brooks avenue), Prospect and Columbia streets, West New Brighton, is a picturesque old homestead that was aged when the British soldiers found much comfort within its walls. About 1844, Judge Ogden Edwards, who had resided for several years in the old Dongan Manor House, near the Terrace, lost his property, and being compelled to leave it, removed to the old stone building now known as the "Scott house." Judge Edwards occupied it but a short time, and then removed to Long Island.

An illustration of this house appears on page 402, Vol. I.

OLD DUTCH PARSONAGE.—Close to the Port Richmond depot of the Rapid Transit Railroad, on the north side of the track, is an old brick building which the Rev. Peter I. Van Pelt occupied in the thirties; and after Dr. Van Pelt ceased to be the pastor, continued to be his home. Soon after his death it passed into other hands, and finally became a saloon. That this old building should have changed so greatly in its mission, will be regretted exceedingly by everyone who can remember its once pious owner.

Digitized by Google

The house standing on the opposite side of the tracks, similar in architectural appearance, was originally the residence of Judge David Mersereau, and is a fallen rival to the old parsonage.

KRUZER HOMESTEAD.—Of all the old residences on Staten Island, none is kept in better repair than this. It is familiarly known to-day as the Pelton house, and is located at "The Cove," West New Brighton. It was built in 1722, by Joseph Rolph, the head of that once influential family, and some time prior to the Revolution passed into the hands of the Kruzers. "The Widow Kruzer" occupied it during the war, at the time in which it was the headquarters of General Cortlandt Skinner, commander of Skinner's Brigade of American Loyalists. William IV., at that time the youngest admiral in the British Navy, stopped there.

The premises became the property of the late Daniel Pelton, Sr., in 1839, and the house shortly afterward underwent some changes. On the east end was originally a low part corresponding with the one on the west. This was removed and a two-story brick apartment erected in its place. It still belongs to the heirs of Mr. Pelton, and is occupied by his daughter, the widow of General Duffié.

A few yards south of the old house is the Kruzer vault, which has repeatedly been the subject of romance and history. An illustration of the Kruzer homestead appears on page 265, Vol. I.

WINANT HOMESTEAD.—This house still stands at Woodrow, although somewhat changed in appearance since the handsome pen-sketch was made by Mr. Frederick W. Kost, the artist, which appears on page 288 of Volume I. This house was built not later than 1690. Many of the early Winants were buried on the premises. Some of the family tombstones are yet standing, the plot being in a sad state of neglect. Here, in 1762, Peter Winant, who married Polly Winant, was born. So was his father, and doubtless the members of a generation or so back beyond that.

During the Revolution the house was occupied by Tory spies. There were many in the vicinity. Their operations were generally in the night time, when they foraged and otherwise assisted the British. At that time Woodrow was a very secluded spot, the main road through it being an Indian trail.

Several years ago a German workman discovered over $1,400 in Spanish coins, which had been buried in the cellar of this old house. He succeeded in getting away with his treasure.

THE FOUNTAIN HOMESTEAD.—Tradition tells us that the old Fountain homestead, at New Dorp, was one of the first houses built by the Waldenses or French Huguenots in the vicinity of Stony Brook, the first permanent settlement on Staten Island. It was originally a very small structure, but was repeatedly added to.

We take it for granted that this house was standing in 1670—probably earlier—and have sufficient proof to warrant the belief that

Digitized by Google

within its walls religious services, the county court, conferences with the Indians, and similar events were held in the Seventeenth and Eighteen centuries.

During the Revolution, the old Fountain homestead became quite a social centre. Adjoining the "Rose and Crown" Farm House, the headquarters of Sir William Howe, Sir Henry Clinton, General Knyphausen, General Percy, Sir Guy Carleton, and others, as they in turn commanded the British forces on Staten Island, they, together with other distinguished officers attended the receptions given there.

During a portion of the war the Fountain homestead was occupied by Major Montresor, of Sir William Howe's staff, the wife of whom had been on most intimate terms with Major Moncrieffe's family for many years. After Margaret Moncrieffe had attended a reception tendered by Sir William, in the "Rose and Crown," Mrs. Montresor obtained permission from the General to share her home with the motherless girl; and so, she remained for several months in the old Fountain homestead. It was in that old house that Margaret first met with Captain John Coughlan, of the British Army, whom she married.

The Fountain homestead has changed owners a number of times since the Revolution. Lieutenant Sidney Simons, of the United States Navy, the gallant young officer who, while attempting to save the lives of his men, on the stranded war ship "Huron," off Hatteras, lost his own, spent his school days in this old house.

For many years past the Fountain homestead has been occupied by an eccentric German, who lived as a recluse, and the building was rapidly going to decay.

In the summer of 1899, the premises were purchased by Mr. Justus J. Smith, a noted New England architect, who remodelled it for his own use, and made it one of the most attractive residences on the Island.

On the evening of Thursday, August 16th, 1900, the cozy parlor of this old homestead was the scene of the re-organization of the Staten Island Historical Society.

LATOURETTE HOMESTEAD.—The crumbling remnant of this old building is called "the Latourette house," because it is located on the Latourette farm, at Richmond. It is one of the oldest structures on the Island, and in its day must have been a pretty and comfortable home. We believe it no exaggeration to say that this relic of the Huguenot period is considerably over two hundred years old. During the Revolution it was the headquarters of Lieutenant-Colonel John Graves Simcoe, of the Queen's Rangers, and the officers who in turn commanded the redoubts on Richmond Hill. The location is most beautiful. From the brow of the hill the scenery is picturesque in

Digitized by Google

the extreme. But the old house is nearly gone. An illustration of it appears on page 241, Vol I. The following is a description of it written a few years ago:

With ivy clinging to its side,
Silent and dark the old house stands,
Its vacant windows staring wide
Toward the meadow's yellow sands.
The wild vines clamber up the doors,
And blossom on the mouldering floors.

With storm-wrecked roof and chimneys gone,
It stands, regardless of the years;
Frowning upon the ruined lawn,
Whose tangled depth is wet with tears;
For, through the rank grass scarce a ray
Of sunshine pierces, day by day.

A fire-place in a lonely room,
Yawns wide, the hearth with ashes strewn;
Round which some hearts, in hours of gloom
Beguiled the time with tender tune.
Some bride, perchance, with gentle face,
Found here her life's sweet resting place.

A mirror with a broken frame,
Dust-covered stands against the wall;
Here some fair cheek in girlish shame
Has matched the roses in the hall;
As, watched by dark and loving eyes,
Warm flushes to her pale cheeks rise.

A broken statue—Niobe,
Whose tears might well have overflow,
An unstrung harp, whose melody
Quickened some pulses long ago;
These are the sad memorials left
In this old room, of life bereft.

The oaken stairway, long and wide,
Worm-eaten, shakes beneath the tread,
Resentful at the careless stride
Of heedless strangers, idly led
To spy around in mute surprise,
To rooms once dear to fading eyes.

Touch lovingly the roses' bloom!
From out the rubbish and decay
They glide, and touch the funeral gloom
With sunshine of a by-gone day—
A day that made, through song and mirth,
A Mecca of that household hearth.

"OLD RED JAIL."—The Old Red Jail, which was built at the present County Seat when Richmond was known as Cucklestowne, was burned to the ground in 1895. The building adjoining, which was erected as a "fire-proof Clerk's and Surrogate's offices" in 1827, was also destroyed.

The Old Red Jail was built in 1710, after a long agitation in the county in favor of "a stronger gaol wherein to secure and retain ye criminals," the old Court House and Jail at Stony Brook being too small and insecure to meet emergencies. The following is the original order for the erection of this building, as taken from the minutes of the Board of Supervisors:

"Ordered that Mr. Lambart Garisone and Mr. Wm. Tillyer, (the late and the present Sheriff). See the prison House built at Cuckols Towne—ye Dimensions Twelve foot in breadth, fourteen foot Long, Two Story high, six foot ye Loar Room from beam to plank, and the upper Story Six foot, all to be built with Stone, and for building of ye sd. prison the Said Undertakers have hereby power To take the Moneys out of the Collectors hands for carrying on ye sd. work & ye order of ye sd. Undertakers & Receipts shall be a Sufficient discharge to ye sd. Collectors."

When the British entered the village of Richmond, on the Fourth

Digitized by Google

day of July, 1776, the Old Red Jail contained a solitary prisoner—a colored slave who had escaped from his master, and was serving out his sentence of alternate solitude and punishment at the whipping-post.

Upon the re-establishment of the County government, at the close of the Revolution, the Old Red Jail was again used for its original purpose. The old jail, however, was in constant use from 1710 to 1837, when the present Court House was built and the County Jail was located in that part of the new building now occupied as the Sheriff's kitchen.

THE VAN PELT HOMESTEAD.—The Van Pelt homestead, at Woodrow, was built by John Van Pelt, in 1717. At his death it became the property of Peter, his son, who was born there several years prior to the Revolution.

At Peter Van Pelt's death, it became the property of his daughter, who was born there on April 12th, 1809, and married Peter Nolan. Their son, Peter V. Nolan, of Richmond, was born there in 1838.

It was in this house that Bishop Asbury preached his first sermon in America, and for a century past has been the Mecca of Methodists from all parts of the world. It was vacated in 1857, and is now almost demolished. It still belongs to the Nolan estate.

THE LAKE HOMESTEAD.—On the broad level plain below New Dorp stands the old Lake homestead, one of the oldest homes on the Island, and it remains in the possession of the descendants of the original owner. It is the third, in point of date, of the buildings known as the "Lake houses," in that vicinity. The first is near Brandon railroad station, and the second is just south of Oakwood.

The third Lake homestead was erected about 1690, by Daniel Lake, who came to this country from England a few years prior to that date. He was the great-great-grandfather of Mr. David J. Tysen. Daniel Lake's son, William, was born there about 1700, and in time inherited the property. His son, Daniel W., was also born there and inherited the estate. Daniel W. Lake's daughter, Elizabeth P., married David Jaques Tysen, and in time the estate passed to her. Mrs. Tysen lived to be eighty-four years of age, and was born, married and died in this old house.

The old house contains many interesting relics. The clock which Major Gifford had made to order in Scotland, just after the Revolution, and which stood in one of the rooms of the "Rose and Crown" farm house, for many years, is ticking away in the old dining-room. After Major Gifford's death it passed to Mrs. Tysen, who was his grand-daughter. A pitcher, which once belonged to the dinner set of Count Jacques, is carefully treasured by the Tysen family. It is over two hundred years old.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XII.

OLD HOTELS OF STATEN ISLAND.

IT is generally believed that the first hotel on Staten Island, stood near the site of the Pavilion, at New Brighton. There is a tradition that it was built and managed by Kieft, the Director of the Province of New Netherlands, who also erected a distillery on Staten Island, in 1640, generally believed to have been located in the vicinity of Brighton avenue and Jersey street, New Brighton. It was the first distillery, for the manufacture of spirituous liquors, in North America.

"ROSE AND CROWN" AND "BLACK HORSE."—With scarcely an exception historians and other writers have claimed that the old "Rose and Crown" farm-house, at New Dorp, was a tavern. Colonel Benson J. Lossing, the historian, in his "Field-Book of the Revolution," says:

"The main body of Howe's troops landed near the present (late) quarantine ground, and encamped upon the hills in the vicinity. The fleet had anchored off Vanderventer's point, (the telegraph station at the Narrows), and three ships-of-war and some transports brought the English troops within the Narrows to the landing-place. Howe made his headquarters in the Rose and Crown Tavern, upon the road leading from Stapleton to Richmond, near New Dorp. The house is near the forks of the Richmond and Amboy roads, and overlooks the beautiful level country between it and the sea, two miles distant. It is now, (1852), the property of Mr. Leonard Parkinson, of Old Town, Staten Island. The house was built by a Huguenot, one of the first settlers upon that part of the Island." For illustration of the "Rose and Crown," see Vol. I., p. 212.

Historian Clute, in his "Annals of Staten Island," speaks as follows of this venerable house:

"We regret to add that since the above was written, the house has been demolished. It stood on the westerly side of the road, almost directly opposite the entrance to New Dorp lane. It was built of stone, and was but one story in height, having several dormer windows in the roof. It had a hall through the middle, with rooms on either side of it; a low stone kitchen was attached to its southerly end, and the whole shaded by an immense tree in front. Howe, him-

Digitized by Google

self, and a part of his staff, were quartered in this house, the remainder taking up their residence in the house, still standing, and known then, as now, as the 'Black Horse' Tavern. After the battle of Long Island [the council of war which planned that terrible conflict, being held in the Rose and Crown], and the capture of New York, Howe removed his headquarters to that city, and Dalrymple, who was left temporarily in charge of Staten Island, occupied the apartments vacated by his Commander-in-chief. The venerable Isaac Housman, who for many years owned and occupied the Black Horse property, and where he died, informed the writer that on several occasions, aged British officers from Canada, who had served on the Island during the Revolution, accompanied by their sons, or some other young companions, revisited these scenes of their early life, and so little change had taken place in the vicinity of the two taverns, that they readily recognized the particular localities where the events which were still fresh in their memories, had taken place."

We have it upon the authority of the late Rev. Dr. David Moore, of Richmond, that the "Rose and Crown" was never a "tavern," but that it was always a farm-house; and that the tavern belonging to the "Rose and Crown" estate, was the building now known as the Black Horse Tavern. From another source we learn that among the members of Sir William Howe's personal staff, stopping at this house, was a Lieutenant-Colonel Benton, ("my very dear friend, Benton," as Sir William called him), who owned a handsome black charger. It was generally believed to be the fastest running horse in the British Army at New Dorp, and won scores of races on old New Dorp lane. One day there was to be a general review of the army at New Dorp, on the occasion of a visit of Lord Howe, Sir William's brother and superior officer. Colonel Benton mounted his handsome horse preparatory to escorting Sir William. Immediately the horse took fright and ran away. A high rock stood a short distance from the hotel, against which the horse dashed and instantly killed both rider and itself. Fellow staff-officers who witnessed the accident, decided at that instant to change the name of the house to the "Black Horse Tavern." A sign, bearing the picture of a black horse, was painted by a British soldier and was placed in front of the house.

The old sign disappeared very mysteriously one night about 1850, and for very many years nothing could be learned of its whereabouts. But one day, while a neighboring resident was repairing his barn, and it became necessary to clear away some rubbish that had collected underneath, the old sign was discovered. It was presented to the proprietor of the old tavern, who immediately had it placed in its former position, and so proud was he of his possession, that he had placed underneath it the word "Original." It was recently taken down, however, because of its decay, and placed in a case. For illustration of the "Black Horse Tavern" and sign, see Vol. I., pp. 216, 220.

Digitized by Google

It was at this house that Hatfield, the Tory leader, used to report his depredations, and receive his instructions and rewards. It remained a public house, bearing the name of "Black Horse," until about 1870, when its doors were closed to the public, and for several years it was unoccupied. About 1885, a gentleman from New York purchased the property and remodeled the structure for a private residence. A year or so later it was purchased by Mr. Patrick Curry, who enlarged it and opened its doors once more to the public.

CUCKLESTOWNE INN.—The "Cucklestowne Inn" stood on the spot now occupied by the residence of Mr. Willis Barton, in Richmond Village. The Inn was erected in 1670. Other than being one of the first buildings erected on Staten Island, no particular importance is attached to its history up to the comencement of the Revolution. During the week or so following the Declaration of Independence, the British army rested on Staten Island. It was within a few days after this event that General Cleveland, the Chief Engineer of the British Army, selected various points on the Island, on which to build the redoubts or forts. He was the first British officer to occupy the old Cucklestowne Inn, and he remained there while superintending the construction of the fortifications around Richmond, one of which is still standing on the hill back of the village. Several other officers of high rank occupied this house at times; but the one most notorious of all was Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe, of the Queen's Rangers. Colonel Simcoe and Major André were very intimate, and while the latter was serving as a captain in the Twenty-second Regiment of Foot, and stationed at Richmond, both occupied rooms in this old house. Captain André (afterwards major), wrote his will in the Cucklestowne Inn, and he had the document recorded in the County Clerk's office, in New York City. Colonel Simcoe, as was the custom of the day with educated people, kept a "journal," and some of his comments upon the action of General Washington, written in the Cucklestowne Inn, are very ludicrous to the impartial reader of history.

NAUTILUS HALL, TOMPKINSVILLE.

Cucklestowne Inn temporarily became the County Court House, immediately after the close of the Revolution. In proof of this we copy two items from the original minutes of the Board of Supervisors:

Digitized by Google

"July 21, 1788.—Agreed with Lawrence Hilyard this Day Vz: That the Large room Call'd the Grand Jury room, is to be fited at his L Hilyard's Expense fit for a Cort Room, and that the County Shall at all times During his Continuance in said House Occupy said house for holding Courts and Doing all Public business for which The Said Hilyard Shall receive the amount of his Excise as Compensation. N. B. L. Hilyard is to Given at Least three months notice should he want s. house. Adjourned to the 4 Day of august next to meet at Deckers."

"Jan. 20, 1789.—Lawrence Hilyard for the use of his house, for 1 Year from the 4th of August last pass, £2."

The Cucklestowne Inn was demolished in 1819.

THE OLD HOUSE BY THE MILL.—The Old House by the Mill, at Green Ridge, was erected by one of the early Waldensian settlers. The exact date is not known; but from an old document describing the early homes of this vicinity, it is safe to assume that it was built about 1685—probably earlier. It was originally partially surrounded by a high embankment, or fort, as a protection from Indians and pirates, as both, in those days, used to make incursions up the Fresh Kill Creek. At the time of the erection of this building, the neighborhood was generally known as Kleine Kill (meaning Little River). The house became a hotel at a comparatively recent date. During the Revolution, this old structure was a "country store," and its proprietors were Bedell & Micheau.

PURDY'S HOTEL.—Purdy's Hotel, at Seguine's Point, Prince's Bay, is one of the oldest buildings on Staten Island. There is reason to believe that it was erected as far back as 1690, and was the home of a Huguenot that settled on Staten Island. It belonged to the Seguine estate, and by many residing here to-day is confounded with the original Seguine homestead. We find indisputable proof of this error in the *Richmond County Free Press* of 1835, which gives an account of the burning of the old Seguine homestead, and adds that "the building was totally destroyed." There was a military post at Seguine's Point during the Revolution, and Mr. Purdy's house was occupied as headquarters for a time by General Vaughan, the British commander. There was a spirited skirmish between the Americans and the British near this house, and an officer on Sir William Howe's staff, who was bearing a message from the Commander-in-chief to General Vaughan, was fatally wounded and died in this old house. The quaint old place has been the property of Mr. Purdy for several years, and is in a good state of preservation.

OLD FERRY TAVERN.—The Ferry Tavern was located on the bluff, near the terminus of the Amboy road, Manor of Bentley, (now Tottenville). A ferry was established at that point as far back as 1650, by the Raritan Indians, who were on friendly terms with the Dutch. Shortly after that period it was found necessary to have "a place

Digitized by Google

for protection of ye passengers in waiting," and a small log cabin was built. During the outbreaks of the Indians the building was repeatedly destroyed. The four generations of Billopps which lived in the Manor of Bentley, maintained this ferry. Thomas Farmar Billopp, who stood at the head of the second generation, caused to be built the little building, (which is still remembered by many of our older people as the Ferry Tavern), about 1740. At one time it was the only public house within several miles of Billopp's Point. Captain Delotz, a Hessian soldier, kept it for a time after peace was declared, and it was a rendezvous for many years for his former companions in arms. Nothing more is known of the house until 1825, when John Fountain became its manager. He continued with it until late in the thirties. William Coddington, of Woodbridge, was its next proprietor. He was the largest man in this part of the country, and it was only with a great effort that he could move about. Its last proprietor as a public house was Henry Biddle. It was for several years the club house of the "Clever Fellows," of New York City, an appendage of Tammany Hall, and in a very mysterious manner, after a night's skylark, in 1866, the old house was burned to the ground.

BULL'S HEAD TAVERN.—The Bull's Head Tavern, a long, shingle-sided building, stood near the spot on which the blacksmith shop of the little hamlet now stands. It was built in 1741, and was enlarged twice before the Revolution, when it became famous as the headquarters of the Tories for this part of the country. Clute, in his "Annals," speaks of it thus:

"The sign which swung between two high posts in front of the small, low tavern which stood on the north-east corner, gave name to the locality. Some rustic artist had evidently exhausted all his talents and resources in transmitting to posterity the picture of a very fierce looking bull's head, with very short horns and very round eyes, which looked very like a pair of spectacles. Long before, and during the Revolution, the locality was known by the name of 'London Bridge.' After the war, and the erection of the new sign, the tavern became somewhat noted as a place of rendezvous for such young men, and probably old ones, too, as had a propensity for gambling. * * * Within a few years the locality has been visited by conflagrations, which consumed the houses on three of the corners, the fourth corner being vacant, and now the people who reside there, or some of them, endeavor to call it Phoenixville, because these houses, perhaps, will some day arise from their ashes."

It is said that in one of the celebrations of the anti-royal element of the Island, there was an attempt to burn the Bull's Head Tavern; but the flames were extinguished. Its charred timbers were replaced by fresh ones cut from the woods near by, and it was re-opened by one Lynch, who kept it for a time. During the days of coaching it became very popular with people traveling between New York and

Digitized by Google

Philadelphia. People from all over the country made special trips to the old house, just to see the famous "Tory headquarters," and to listen to the stories that made up its eventful history. It was later on neatly fitted up as the residence of Judge Garretson, and some years later still it was re-opened as a hotel, and remained so until its destruction by fire.

An illustration of the Bull's Head Tavern appears on page 285, Vol. I.

UNION HOTEL.—The Union Hotel, at Tottenville, was for many years a farm-house on the Johnson estate, and was but a story and a-half high. It was erected in 1784. Abraham Johnson was its last occupant before it became a public house. The former parlor of the house is now the large, low-ceiled bar-room, and it was in this room that Commodore Cornelius Vanderbilt married his cousin, Sophia Johnson, in December, 1813. It was her home. Captain Latourette purchased the property from Mr. Johnson in 1865, and added two or three stories to a part of it, and then opened its doors to the public. It has changed managers several times since, but has ceased to be a public house.

"THE RED HORSE."—The Red Horse Tavern was the name of a small public house that stood near Stony Brook, about a quarter of a mile from the Black Horse, during and for many years after the Revolution. Like almost all of its Colonial companions it was permitted to crumble to the ground.

THE OAKLEY HOUSE.—The long, low building standing near the foot of Rossville avenue, (originally Ferry road, and for many years known as Shea's lane), in the village of Rossville, was standing long before this century was ushered in. In fact, it was built before the Revolution. In the early part of this century, it was the only tavern in the vicinity, and was kept by the father of the late Jesse Oakley. The house has been changed a number of times from hotel to private residence. Many incidents of an interesting nature have occurred in it, principally of a political form. It was the birth-place of James A. Bradley, the founder of Asbury Park. It is now a private residence, and is fast going into decay.

SWAN HOTEL.—The Swan Hotel is the venerable building on Richmond terrace, West New Brighton, for many years the residence of the late C. M. Pine. It originally stood on the adjoining ground now occupied by a large brick building. It was erected about 1792. An interesting event occurred in this old house on July 4, 1825, when the colored people of the Island held a grand celebration in honor of the abolition of slavery. Michael Tynan, the father of the late Mrs. John T. Barrett, was the last manager of the Swan Hotel as a public resort. The Federalists, Americans, Whigs, and all other political organizations working in opposition to the Democracy, used to hold their caucuses in this old house.

Digitized by Google

PORT RICHMOND HOTEL.—The Port Richmond Hotel was built shortly after the Revolution, and was the private residence of Judge David Mersereau. It stands on the site of the residence of Captain Decker, who held a roving commission and commanded a troop of mounted Loyalists. Decker's house was destroyed by fire during a raid by General Stirling. A small British fort was erected on its site. At the time the Mersereau house was built, it was considered the handsomest residence on Staten Island. A great deal of hand-carved woodwork ornaments the interior. The old-fashioned hall and large, square rooms remind one of the many gay scenes that have occurred there in days of yore. There was a lawn in front of the building which extended to within a few feet of the (present) opposite sidewalk, and many people residing in Port Richmond to-day, can recall to mind two large willow trees that stood in front, about where the middle of the street is now located.

About 1820, the house was sold and converted into the Port Richmond Hotel, and a few years later its name was changed to the Continental Hotel. Recently it was changed again to the St. James.

It was in this house that Colonel Aaron Burr spent nearly the whole of the closing year of his life, and many distinguished people called there to see the old soldier. On June 17, 1836, the anniversary of the Battle of Bunker Hill, which the Tompkins Guards always celebrated, the company, under command of Captain John Laforge paraded along the North Shore, and had their annual dinner at the Port Richmond Hotel. On behalf of the company, Captain Laforge invited Colonel Burr to dine with it; but, as the Colonel was too feeble to attend, he declined, and invited the officers up to see him. They accepted the invitation and had a very enjoyable time. The visitors were Captain John Laforge, Lieutenant D. V. N. Mersereau, Ensign Smith B. Freeman, and Sergeant Richard Christopher. It was in this house, in the room on the north-east corner of the second floor, that Aaron Burr died, on the 14th of September, 1836.

FOUNTAIN HOUSE.—About the year 1750, when what was originally a foot-path or Indian trail along the North Shore of Staten Island, was partially concealed from the Kills by a dense thicket of cedars and vines, a small, story-and-a-half dwelling was erected at the summit of the sloping bank. It was the original structure of what is familiarly known as the old Fountain House. It is believed that the founder of the once flourishing family of Macgregors on Staten Island was the first occupant, and it is possible that it remained the property of that family for at least three generations.

A small fort, or redoubt, was erected on the neighboring embankment now occupied by the Church of the Ascension, and the cottage (which afterward became the Fountain House), was utilized by the officers at the post. It was set on fire by order of General Sullivan, at

Digitized by Google

the time of his raid on Staten Island; but was saved from destruction by the British troops.

At the close of the Revolution the cottage was enlarged and converted into a hotel. Its situation gave a view across the Kills into New Jersey. In the early part of the present century we find the house referred to as "Macgregor's Inn," "Macgregor's North Shore Tavern" and "Macgregor's House." The proprietor was probably of the second or third generation of the family of that name. This is surely the same Macgregor that owned the old grist-mill which stood where the Rapid Transit freight depot at West New Brighton was recently located. Years ago it was purchased by the Staten Island Dyeing and Printing Company, and utilized for cutting up logwood for the factory. The artificial canal, by which the old factory pond was supplied with water, was built by this Macgregor.

Colonel Nathan Barrett rented the Macgregor House in 1821, and was its manager until 1828. It was then called the Shore House and sometimes "Barrett's." Colonel Barrett was the Democratic leader in the County, and his house became the political headquarters. Captain Benjamin Wood, connected with the Quarantine as boarding officer at the time, was Colonel Barrett's closest friend, and the two held many a council in the old house, which shaped the political future of Richmond County.

Captain Henry Fountain, who had rented and managed the Swan Hotel, for a number of years, then (1828), purchased the house which soon bore his name. The name was shortly afterward changed to the "Shakespeare Hotel;" but, in the course of a few years it was changed again to the Fountain House. Captain Fountain continued to manage the Fountain House until 1856. He died in 1863.

Vincent Fountain, a son of the old Captain, was his successor as manager of the Fountain House, and he kept it about one year.

In the political campaign of 1844, the adherents of Henry Clay had a grand demonstration in New York City, and the Whigs of Staten Island participated in the parade. They mounted a large oyster-boat on wheels, and Captain Henry Fountain held the reins over the twelve handsome horses that pulled it. It was manned by about thirty men in uniform. There was a troop of cavalry on Staten Island in those days, which was commanded by General Benjamin Bedell, who resided on Rockland avenue, in Northfield. He had seen service in the War of 1812, and was noted for his daring deeds and fine horsemanship.

The procession had been dismissed up town, and the Staten Island contingent was on its way down Broadway, enroute for home. In those days a street parade of any kind was not considered a success without a free fight. The party not parading always made the attack. When at Canal street, General Bedell discovered the Democrats piling up boxes and all manner of débris in the middle of the

Digitized by Google

street, a few blocks ahead. Riding back to Captain Fountain, to notify him of what was going on, he discovered that the rear also was being barricaded. It was impossible to turn into any of the side streets. Instantly the old General stood up in his stirrups, and shouted, "Fountain, will you follow me?"

"I will, Sir!" replied Fountain, and watching the old General carefully, heard his command, "Draw swords! Charge!" and away went the troopers, right over the temporary breastworks. Captain Fountain acted under the impulse of the instant, and swinging his long lash-whip over the backs of his horses, made it crack like a rifle; at the same time he shouted to them in a manner that they well understood. They instantly broke into a wild run, and when they reached the barricade, every team leaped over it without a misstep. When the front wheels under the boat struck it, boxes, barrels, and everything else in the way flew in all directions. The attacking crowd closed in on the rear, hurling all sorts of missiles; but the boat was going at too great a speed to endanger any of its occupants. That incident was the topic of conversation of the city, as well as of Staten Island, for a long time. A reception and supper were given the troopers and the inmates of the boat at the old Fountain House on their return.

The commencement of the war in 1861, found a great many Southerners in this part of the country. A number of them, desiring to be a little exclusive, formed a colony and settled down in the old Fountain House. The building was fitted up in fine style. But as the war continued, the personal interests of the inmates demanded their presence in the South, and one by one they dropped out until all were gone.

The old Fountain House ceased to be a hotel in 1859; but from that time on was a public boarding house. It experienced many changes in its management. In 1885, it was sold at a partition sale by County Judge Stephens, and was purchased by Frank W. Tompkins from the Fountain estate, and in 1896 it was demolished to make room for the large department store belonging to Mr. Tompkins.

While workmen were demolishing the fire-place in the sitting room, an original painting by the famous artist, Milburn, was discovered. He was at the Fountain House in 1840, about the time that he decorated the handsome residence of Edwin Forrest, the actor, on the Hudson. One day Milburn was the recipient of a kindness at the hands of Captain Fountain, and he painted the picture to show his appreciation. It was a nautical scene, and worthy of preservation, but being painted on the wall, rendered such an act impossible. Milburn and Captain Fountain became very warm friends. Milburn Fountain, a grandson, was named for the artist.

On the second floor, on the west side of the hall, were three rooms. In the old days these were all in one, and was the ball-room. It was

Digitized by Google

considered *the* ball-room of Staten Island. Professor Sky, a noted dancing master, of New York, in the first quarter of the century had classes there. The favorite dances in those days were the Virginia reel and the French cotillion.

Many a ball of note was given in the old Fountain House ball-room. In fact, the first invitation ball ever given on Staten Island was there, and it led to a great deal of trouble. A deep-rooted belief had prevailed on Staten Island that anybody had a right to go where-ever and whenever he pleased in a public house, especially when a ball was in progress; and so, to close the ball-room door against any resident of the Island was an act next to treason itself!

The ball in question was held in the winter of 1843, by the Tompkins Guards, the local military. Several attempts were made by uninvited parties to force an entrance into the ball-room, and the intruders were driven away. Finally they repaired to the back yard, and hurled stones through the ball-room windows. The company was then speedily formed, and with fixed-bayonets charged on the intruders and drove them into the street.

The back room was occupied in the thirties and forties by the Franklin Library—a circulating library that was supported by many bright men, and contained a large number of valuable books. Debates were held by the members, in which outsiders sometimes participated, and attracted the attention of some of the leading people of this section of the country, and on some of these occasions the old ball-room was unable to hold all the people who assembled to listen to the speakers. Among the members were Colonel Nathan Barrett, John T. Barrett, Rev. Dr. Peter I. Van Pelt, George Barber, Inman Hall, Dr. Ainsley, Smith B. Freeman, George W. Matsell, John Crabtree, James Wilkinson, Dr. Ephraim Clark, Dr. John T. Harrison, Edward Jones and Principal Gunnette, of the Factoryville public school.

There have been some interesting election scenes in and around the old Fountain House. In the old days, when the voters of "Castletown" took three days to deposit their ballots, the polls were located first at Nautilus Hall, Tompkinsville; then at Macgregor's or the Fountain House, on the North Shore, and finally at Bodine's Tavern, (now the Keene residence), at Castleton Corners. The same ballot-box did service at all three places and the one used from 1782 to 1810, is still preserved.

An old resident informed us that when he was a boy he remembered over five hundred dollars being paid for dinners for voters at an election in the Fountain House, when the selection of Collector and Constable (one office) of the town was made. The office was worth four hundred dollars. The Whigs dined in the dining-room, and the Democrats up stairs in the ball-room. The Democrats and Whigs were

Digitized by Google

both defeated, and Captain Edwin J. Flatt, the Know-nothing candidate, was elected by a small plurality.

One of the pleasant characteristics of old Staten Island was its unwritten social laws. Every man or woman who had a good, moral character and dressed carefully, no matter how humble a position he or she held, was admitted into the social events of the wealthiest people. There were no cliques in society here, and no attempt was made to set up a puny aristocratic circle. All respectable people were upon a common level of sociability. It was an uncommon thing for our people to go off of the Island, even to the city; with some a trip to New York was the event of the year. Consequently, social entertainments were frequently held, and the old Fountain House was the centre of attraction.

The local "fiddlers" were always in demand, and the good dinners served personally by the host and hostess lent their part to make public events a success. It was in the old Fountain House that Allen Dodworth, the famous band leader, began his career. With his father and step-brother, he used to furnish dancing music with the cornet, violin and bass-viol. Dancing would begin in the early afternoon and continue until late on the following morning. At the end of each dance Dodworth would strike his bow on the back of the violin, which was the signal to the dancers to walk up and pay the musicians. It was in that old ball-room that the by-word "fiddler's change" had its origin. Many an old-fashioned Fourth of July celebration was held in the Fountain House.

It was on the veranda of the old Fountain House that General Marcy made one of his campaign speeches, when a candidate for Governor of New York, in 1832, and a grand dinner was given in his honor on that occasion. The Factoryville Brass Band covered itself with glory! It played "Hail! to the Chief," as the old hero came out on the veranda and was introduced to the people by Colonel Barrett.

On this same veranda Wendell Phillips, after being introduced by George William Curtis, made one of his famous sensational abolition speeches, back in the fifties. Mr. Phillips was mistaken in his audience, and the speech came to a rude termination, and he departed without any special apology for haste.

Garibaldi, the Italian patriot, several times dined in the old Fountain House with friends. Santa Anna, the dethroned Mexican Emperor, visited it a score of times. Governor Tompkins often called there. General Scott repeatedly enjoyed its hospitality. Governor Ogden stopped there. Jenny Lind was its guest. Fred Douglass attended an abolition conference in the old parlor. And scores of others, whose names help to make the history of our country, have from time to time crossed the threshold of that old house. Its latch-

Digitized by Google

string was always hanging on the outside, and its welcome was known to the world. For illustration, see Vol. I., p. 374.

BUTLER'S TAVERN.—Butler's Tavern, at Graniteville, was one of the oldest public buildings on Staten Island. It was built many years before the Revolution; but the exact date is unknown. For a long time it was the headquarters of one faction of the sporting fraternity, while the other was at New Dorp. Old Place road, (now known as Washington avenue), which begins a short distance from the site of this old house, runs for a number of miles on an almost straight line. This was the favorite race course in the old days. Mr. Butler owned the celebrated running horse "Duke of Richmond," which made a fortune for its owner, here and elsewhere.

Butler's Tavern was occupied by British officers during the Revolution, and was not far from the scene of the battle, in 1777, when Lieutenant-Colonel Edward Vaughan Dongan, of the Third Battalion of Skinner's Brigade, was killed. It was on the Morning Star road. About 1805, it was known as Housman's Tavern, and was owned and managed by the grandfather of Captain Jacob I. Housman, of Mariners' Harbor. Shortly afterward it was purchased by Thomas Butler, and for many years it was known far and near as Butler's Tavern. The late venerable Talbot Butler, of Port Richmond, was born in this old house.

In 1835, the property was purchased by Alfred Mersereau, and an important addition was built in the following year. Mr. Mersereau died about twenty years ago, and his family occupied it at the time of its destruction by fire in 1892.

NAUTILUS HALL.—Nautilus Hall, at Tompkinsville, was built by Major James Guyon, father-in-law of the late Dr. Ephraim Clark, of New Dorp, in 1808. It very soon became a political resort. New York politicians held private meetings there. A grand reception was given to LaFayette in this house, on the occasion of his last visit to America. Kossuth was also entertained there. Garibaldi visited it frequently, while residing on Staten Island.

For the better part of a century its beautiful lawn and fine old well were great attractions for people from near and far. Both were destroyed by the building of the Rapid Transit Railroad. The house was enlarged by Francis P. Jones, in 1855. It was the first home of Richmond Lodge, No. 66, F. and A. M., which was organized in July, 1825. Like scores of other old Staten Island landmarks, it has been totally destroyed.

THE CLIFF HOUSE.—The Cliff House, a few hundred yards east of Fort Wadsworth, was standing in 1794; but the time of its erection is unknown. Richard Silva kept it at the commencement of this century, and continued with it for about twenty-five years. The wife of the late venerable Captain James Stillwell, of the Staten Island Ferry, was born in this house in 1807. She was the daughter of Mr.

Digitized by Google

Silva. The house was then known as Silva's Cliff Inn. The soldiers at Fort Richmond during the War of 1812, guarded the house for several weeks, to prevent its destruction. The Cliff House was for many years of late occupied by a German club, under the management of Joseph Kost, a well-known caterer.

BODINE'S INN.—Bodine's Inn, at Castleton Corners, was originally built by David Jacques about 1770. In the days of stage coaches it did its share of entertaining the traveling public. A famous well, which stood in the street nearly in front of the house, made this a popular stopping place. For generations man and beast were refreshed from its "old oaken bucket." In the old training days this house was the headquarters of the Castleton contingent. It was purchased several years since by the late Thomas R. Eagleson. (Thomas Keene, the actor), and there his family now resides. Mr. Keene delighted to spend his time there when off the stage. He made many improvements in the property, and aside from its historic interest, it is a place of considerable value. An illustration appears on page 407 of Vol. I.

THE PAVILION.—The Pavilion, on Mount Tompkins, (Pavilion Hill), at Tompkinsville, was a popular resort as far back as 1815. It was a delightful place in Summer. Staten Islanders used to hold entertainments up there for the benefit of churches, etc., and it was the mecca of New York excursionists. In the early part of its existence it was a favorite place at which to celebrate the Fourth of July.

Many years ago, the Pavilion, a long, wooden structure, caught fire in the night and burned to the ground. It was re-built, but in the course of time lost its popularity with the better class of people. A second time it caught fire and burned to the ground. Time has almost obliterated even the foundation of the old house. The following advertisement, taken from the *Richmond Republican*, of February 28, 1829, gives an idea of the structure:

"To Let.—The Pavilion, at Mount Tompkins, Staten Island. It is situated on a commanding eminence, in the rear of the village of Tompkinsville, about five minutes' walk from the steamboat landing. The house is 72x22 feet; two stories high, with a double piazza around the whole, forming a promenade on each piazza of nearly three hundred feet. The upper story is finished in one entire room, and forms a ball-room seventy feet in length. A cupola has been erected on the top of the building, with a staircase leading to the same, which renders it perfectly safe and easy of access. From this may be had a commanding view of Sandy Hook Light House, the Atlantic ocean, Prince's Bay, the Highlands of Neversink, Long Island, Long Island Sound, the North River for thirty miles, many of the principal towns and villages in New Jersey, and the Bay, Harbor and City of New York. For beauty of scenery and commanding prospect, this situation

Digitized by Google

is equalled by few, if any, and excelled by none in the vicinity of New York."

ROSSVILLE HOTEL.—The Rossville Hotel was built in 1825, by John Eddy and Robert Seguine. It was the property of Joseph Seguine, uncle of the late Henry Stewart Seguine. Its first manager was Israel Oakley. For many years before the hotel was built the location was known as "The Blazing Star Landing," and the house took its name from the place. It was one of the "voting places" for Westfield when the ballot-box was kept open for three days. A story is told of a general fight taking place there between the adherents of Andrew Jackson and John Quincy Adams, on the day of the first election of "Old Hickory." A portion of the building is still occupied as a hotel, and the post-office and village store are also in it. It belongs to the estate of the late Henry Stewart Seguine.

RICHMOND COUNTY HALL.—Richmond County Hall, at Richmond, was erected in 1819, by a stock company consisting of Lawrence Cortelyou, Richard D. Littell, Daniel L. Clawson, Harmon Cropsey, Samuel Frost and a few other prominent residents of the Island. At that time a good hotel in "Richmond town" was deemed an absolute necessity. There were three other public houses in the village—the Cucklestown Inn, which stood directly in the rear of the present County Clerk's office; the King's Tavern, which stood on the corner lot opposite the old Dutch Reformed Church, and the Washington Hotel, which was recently demolished.

The house, soon after its establishment, became the political headquarters of the Island, and in the hall on the second floor Democrats and Whigs for many years held their caucuses and conventions, and indeed did much that aided to form the history of Richmond County.

A remarkable suicide occurred in Richmond County Hall, several years ago, by a man who had at one time been one of the most prominent and popular citizens of the Island. Obadiah Bowne, who was a close friend of Mr. Lincoln, while in Congress, resided at one time in the handsome Banker homestead at Green Ridge.

The day on which Mr. Bowne died, he went up to the city, made a friendly call on the editor of one of the newspapers, and in the course of conversation incidentally remarked that an important event would transpire in Richmond that night, and he would very much like to have a representative of that paper present. The request was granted, and "Ben" Williams' old mail coach from Quarantine landed Mr. Bowne and the reporter at Richmond in time for supper. The doomed man seemed to be exceptionally happy. He directed Landlord Hodge to prepare a room with two beds, and then went up, requesting the reporter to follow soon. As he arose to go, one of the company addressed Mr. Bowne and invited him to attend some local event on the morrow. "O, I don't know about that," he replied; "possibly I'll be dead in the morning." And then he left the room.

Digitized by Google

The reporter went up to the room shortly, and discovered that Mr. Bowne had swallowed a dose of poison. He ran down stairs to give the alarm. Medical aid was immediately summoned; but before the physician arrived death had finished its work. The reporter soon disappeared, and somehow or other, worked his way back to the city and told his sensational story in truly Metropolitan style.

"Training day" used to be a great event on Staten Island, and notwithstanding the "training" was on New Dorp lane, and the military ball was held at the Patten House, Richmond County Hall was as surely expected to have its training ball and supper as the sun was to shine. Although these unique performances were directed by law, and there was a statutory fine of seventy-five cents for non-compliance, the fun which "the boys," old and young, used to have, was the real incentive for doing "military duty." Very few had uniforms, and fewer had muskets.

For a century or more—a period which terminated shortly after the establishment of a railroad on Staten Island—sleighing parties all hailed for Richmond, and they dined and wined and danced in Richmond County Hall. Stables and hotel yards were filled, and the streets of the village were lined on either side with blanketed horses.

Richmond County Hall had a strange career. Among its proprietors were Harmanus Cropsey, Joseph Christopher, Joseph Kost, Max Maretzek, the famous opera manager; Kipp, the celebrated tally-ho manager; David Ryers and O. P. Hodge. Its doors closed to the public about 1879, and after being vacated by Mr. Hodge, it became a free tenement for colored people. The premises were presented to the King's Daughters, and the Parish House of St. Andrew's Church now marks the spot.

PATTEN HOUSE.—The Patten House, at New Dorp, was for many years one of the main hotels of Staten Island. It was the military headquarters of the division in which Richmond County was located, and also of the One Hundred and Forty-sixth Regiment, New York State Militia, which was composed exclusively of Staten Islanders. Colonel Patten, a Southern planter, who had managed the old Merchants' Hotel, on Cortlandt street, New York City, was its first owner. It was built by Lawrence Hillyer, of New Springville, in 1837. Scarcely an issue of the County papers appeared in those days without some reference to the Patten House. Public meetings, balls, courts martial, officers' councils, and kindred events were constantly going on. Sporting men sought it, too. It witnessed many changes in time.

The last manager of the Patten House was Colonel Lux, commander of the Eleventh Regiment, of the National Guard, and its doors were closed to the public in a few weeks after his death in 1882. Shortly after that it was purchased by Father McGlynn, and fitted up for a home-school for waifs of the city. It continued to be used as

Digitized by Google

such until Father McGlynn had trouble with the Pope, and it was again made vacant.

For a few years past it has been a hovel for Italian rag-pickers and tramps. The bar-room and the dining-room—the scene where in days of yore the Vanderbilts and their friends used to participate in royal feasts—are now utilized as stables for horses belonging to contractors at work on the roads.

NEW BRIGHTON PAVILION.—The Pavilion Hotel, at New Brighton, has long been one of the most fashionable summer resorts in the country, and is known the land over. The central part of the original building was first projected as the private residence of Thomas E. Davis, President of the New Brighton Association, about 1828, but on being converted into a hotel, about 1832, "an immense saloon was erected in the rear and two wings were added, each of which," says a newspaper of the time, "is considerably larger than the original building." The main part was originally two stories in height. In 1837, we read that "the colonnade in front of the building affords a promenade more than two hundred feet in length." Mr. Milford was the proprietor of the Pavilion at that time. Many changes have marked its career. In 1884, the original centre building was demolished and the present (centre) edifice erected. For many years "before the war" the Pavilion was liberally patronized by wealthy Southerners. It is still open to the public as a Summer resort. For illustrations, see Vol. I., pages 351, 355.

OLD TRACK HOUSE.—The Old Track House was originally a farmhouse, and stood on the fair grounds, when the Agricultural Society was organized, near the beach, at the foot of New Dorp lane, in 1826. It was a favorite resort for horsemen for several years, and some of the best horses in the country were speeded on the track at that place. Its popularity did not wane when the Agricultural Society moved to its new quarters between the railroad station and the Patten House.

The Old Track House burned down many years ago. The land on which it stood is part of the homestead farm of William H. Vanderbilt, and is now owned by his youngest son, George W.

OLD CLUB HOUSE.—The Old Club House, on Clark avenue, near Oakwood station, was the first independent club house established on Staten Island. The club was organized in 1828, and the house was erected shortly afterward. Among the members of the club were Dr. Doane, Dr. John T. Harrison, Commodore Vanderbilt, Dr. Ephraim Clark, Colonel Conner, Minthorne Tompkins, and many others whose names have passed into history. When the club was disbanded many years ago, the house became a hotel; shortly afterward it was occupied as a private dwelling. It is now a public house.

PLANTERS' HOTEL.—The Planters' Hotel, on Bay street, Tompkinsville, a portion of which is now occupied by Mr. Loeffler, the photographer, was for many years one of the most aristocratic resorts in this

Digitized by Google

part of the country. It was built by a Southerner, about 1820, and patronized almost exclusively by wealthy Southerners for many years. Many of the distinguished people of the South have been entertained there. After it ceased to be a hotel it was converted into a boys' academy.

BELMONT HALL.—Belmont Hall, at New Brighton, was erected in 1832, and was the private residence of a Mr. Lawrence, who conducted a distillery nearly opposite on the bank of the river. After a few years it was sold and enlarged, and soon became a successful military academy. Major Duff, who was its principal, was a graduate of the West Point Military Academy, and had gained his title in the regular army. He was appointed Colonel of a New York regiment at the commencement of the Mexican war. Belmont Hall, shortly after being vacated by Colonel Duff, became a hotel. For several years it was a temperance house. Three churches have been organized in its parlor. It has been closed to the public for two years. An illustration appears on page 359, Vol. I.

WASHINGTON HOTEL.—The Washington Hotel, in Richmond, for nearly fifty years under the management of the late Patrick Curry, was originally a small private dwelling. It was enlarged from time to time, and was finally converted into a hotel, with a public hall and ball-room. A portion of the building was erected as far back as 1790. No event of any particular importance transpired here; but it was the scene of many a happy gathering of the young men and women of the Island for generations. The old building was demolished a year or so ago, and a small structure erected in its place.

DOCK HOTEL.—The Dock Hotel was built at New Brighton in 1834, and was managed by Thomas Carey. A portion of the building is still standing, and is now used by Mr. Herbert Crabtree, coal dealer. The ferry-boats "Sylph" and "Staten Islander" made two trips a day to and from New York City, and landed at the door of this house. It was the rendezvous of the Castleton politicians for a number of years. When the steamboat landing was transferred to the foot of Jersey street, the Dock Hotel ceased to be a public house.

WINDSOR HOTEL.—The Windsor Hotel, at New Brighton, was originally the residence of an English capitalist, who sold it to James Wilkinson, of the firm of Crabtree & Wilkinson, who owned the silk factory at New Brighton. The house became the property of the New Brighton Association. It was built about 1826. It was converted into a hotel about 1835. The house was once known as The Mansion. It was for a number of years quite a popular resort. It ceased to be a public house a few years since, and is now the private residence of Dr. William B. Wilkinson, a grandson of the former owner.

ST. MARK'S HOTEL.—St. Mark's Hotel stood where the Hotel Castleton now stands, on the heights of New Brighton. The "Marble House," which formed a part of the structure, was built by Gilbert

Digitized by Google

L. Thompson, a son-in-law of Governor Tompkins, in 1825. The "Marble House" was purchased by August Belmont, and the noted banker and his family resided there for a number of years. When it was converted into a hotel a large addition was built to it. It was a very popular summer resort for many years. St. Mark's Hotel was demolished in 1889, and the Hotel Castleton was erected in its place. For illustration, see page 363, Vol. I.

CASTLETON HOUSE.—The Castleton House is the large, square, frame building standing on Broadway, West New Brighton, opposite the public school building. It was built by Captain John Laforge, in 1837. Captain Laforge commanded the Tompkins Guards, and the house was more or less a military centre for the North Shore. It has long been occupied as a tenement.

THE STONE JUG.—"The Stone Jug," as the old Neville mansion near Sailors' Snug Harbor, is facetiously called, was, until 1882, a private residence, and was one of the most homelike places on the North Shore. This house was erected about 1770. It was originally a farm-house. Early in the century it belonged to County Judge Jacob Tysen. The farm attached to this old house once extended almost to "Brighton Corner." The house and the beautiful lawn used to be the pride of the venerable Captain John Neville, a retired officer of the United States Navy. The house has been the scene of many a gay reception, given in honor of representatives of the navies of our own and other countries.

More than a score of other old hotels we have learned about, while gathering material for these chapters, which have long ago faded from the sight and mind of the busy public; but as we could learn nothing of special interest in their history, have deemed it best to pass them by.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIII.

DISTINGUISHED RESIDENTS AND GUESTS.

IT has long been a source of wonderment to those who are unacquainted with the place, that so many distinguished people have become residents of Staten Island, and that so many others have here been entertained. The close proximity to the Metropolis—the social, commercial and financial centre of the continent—may account for this in part. But we think that a stronger attraction still was the beauty and healthfulness of the Island. From among the many who have either resided or been entertained here were the following:

JAMES W. AUTEN.—Mr. Auten was born in Richmond, Staten Island, about 1815, and while attending the public school in his native village in 1831, made arrangements with the proprietors of *The Shipping and Commercial List*, of New York City, to enter their service. In time he became one of the proprietors of the paper, and from 1848 to 1877, Auten & Bourne was the firm name. In 1882, Mr. Auten revisited his birth-place, and under the caption of "What Fifty Years Have Done," wrote an interesting article, from which we quote:

"I took a melancholy pleasure in viewing the old, familiar scenes of my youthful days. The house in which I was born, that in which I was brought up, the old play-grounds, the trees and running streams, the village churches and the old church-yard where

> "'Each in his narrow cell forever laid,
> The rude forefathers of the hamlet sleep.'

"But the point of greatest interest was the dear old District School House! There it stands now, just as it stood fifty years ago, when I first learned to spell and read.

"I took my stand where I had stood half a century previous, and tried to talk to the children there assembled. But it was a difficult task. The old scenes and associations rushed before my vision and choked my utterance. The whole scene seemed like reading a book of history, and as though the world was slipping from beneath my feet!

"The friends of my early days are nearly all gone; parents and children, old and young, having been swept away by the hand of death, and of the whole population living there fifty years ago, I

Digitized by Google

found less than a dozen surviving; young and old having gone to their long home.

"I bade a final farewell to the few surviving friends of my childhood, turned my back on the old church-yard and said good-bye to the boys and girls who are fast growing up to take their places on the stage of this world's activities. I turned away sadly, knowing that I should see their faces no more!"

COMMANDER TIMOTHY GREENE BENHAM.—Commander Timothy Greene Benham was born near New Haven, Connecticut, in 1796, and entered the Naval Academy at the age of twelve years. He graduated in 1810, and entered the service as a midshipman.

Mr. Benham's first commission was issued on November 30, 1814. His voyages after that were numerous and important, and many of them were exceedingly dangerous. He was with Commodore Porter's squadron for the suppression of piracy in the West Indies, and in one of the battles he received a bullet in his leg, which he carried ever afterward. He also came near being the victim of a pirate's knife, which, in a hand-to-hand struggle, he succeeded in capturing. He married Miss Julia, daughter of Samuel Lockman, who belonged to one of the oldest families on the Island.

When the Mexican war broke out, Lieutenant Benham was selected to superintend the landing of American troops on Mexican soil. The work was accomplished under the most dangerous and trying circumstances. He was always successful, however, and on several occasions he was complimented by superior officers and his services acknowledged by the Government. During that war he was given the command of the United States war schooner "Bonita," with which he gained the credit of the Navy Department for his gallant conduct at the bombardment of Vera Cruz and the Castle, Alvarado, Tampico and various other battles.

Shortly after the close of the Mexican war, Lieutenant Benham paid a visit to his home. A reception was given him which is still pronounced to have been one of the greatest social events in the history of Staten Island. In the forenoon of the day in question, the little village of Richmond was the scene of a large concourse of people from all over the country. Distinguished naval and army officers, statesmen and citizens were present. The Court room of the "new Court House," as the present structure was then called, was densely packed, and hundreds were unable to gain an entrance. The occasion was the presentation to Lieutenant Benham of two massive silver pitchers and goblets, as a testimonial of the worth and esteem in which his neighbors held him. The family still retains these handsome relics, with much pride and satisfaction. From them we copy the following inscription:

"Presented to Lt.-Commander Timothy Greene Benham, U. S. N., by his fellow-citizens of Richmond County, in token of their esteem

Digitized by Google

for the distinguished services and nautical skill on board the war schooner 'Bonita,' during and subsequent to the attack on Vera Cruz, on March 24 and 25, 1847, and of the admiration of his deportment in private life.

John S. Westervelt,
Nathan T. Barrett,
James M. Cross,
Lawrence Cortelyou,
Henry Cole,
John T. Harrison,
John C. Thompson,
Minthorne Tompkins,
Charles E. Leveredge,
Bornt P. Winant,
Richard D. Smyth,
Committee."

The presentation speech was made by Minthorne Tompkins, the manuscript of which is among the treasured relics of the Benham family.

After the presentation ceremonies, hundreds of the assemblage repaired to the Benham mansion, where a royal banquet was held.

In the course of time Lieutenant Benham was promoted to the rank of Commander, and continued, under every circumstance, to serve his country well. From long and arduous duties and exposures his health became impaired, and he rested in his splendid mansion at Green Ridge; but after a lapse of time his health was restored, and he was again ordered to duty as commandant of the Navy Rendezvous, in New York City.

In 1855, the active officers comprising the memorable "Board of Fifteen," retired Commander Benham from the service which for a period of forty-one years had been his pride and devotion. Commander Benham died on June 17, 1860, and was buried beside old St. Andrew's Church, in Richmond.

Rear Admiral Andrew Ellicott Kennedy Benham.—Admiral Benham is the son of the late Commander Timothy Greene Benham. He was born on the Lake estate, below New Dorp, on April 10, 1832. He attended school at Richmond when a lad, and later, when his family had removed to Green Ridge, he had Mr. Boehm for his instructor.

He was the first naval appointee from Staten Island, and entered the Naval Academy at Annapolis, in 1847, and graduated in 1851. When a midshipman he assisted in the capture of a piratical junk, receiving a wound on the hand in the engagement. Having reached the rank of lieutenant, he was in active service during the Southern Rebellion. He participated in the battle of Port Royal, and was on blockade duty on a number of points along the Atlantic coast.

With the rank of captain, he commanded the man-of-war "Richmond," which conveyed General Grant from China to his home in America, after retiring from the Presidency. While he was serving with the rank of commodore, he commanded the Light House Department on Staten Island for three years.

Admiral Benham reached the rank of rear-admiral in 1890. His

Digitized by Google

last active service was at Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, during the Brazilian rebellion. It was his splendid courage and fine executive ability that put a stop to the insults and dangers that constantly faced the American merchantmen in that harbor. After all friendly endeavors had failed to accomplish this end, Admiral Benham ordered the decks cleared for action, and the Brazilian rebels quickly came to terms.

Having reached the age limit in 1894, Admiral Benham retired from the service that year. During the war with Spain he was in the service of the Government at Washington, where he now resides.

Admiral Benham married Miss Seaman, of Green Ridge. He has a son, Harry S. Benham, in active service in the Navy, who has reached the rank of lieutenant.

REV. WILLIAM H. BOOLE, D. D.—Dr. Boole was a native of New York City. He studied law when a young man, immediately after leaving college, but its practice was distasteful to him. He soon gave it up and entered the ministry, and in 1856 was ordained a minister in the Methodist Episcopal Church. He always belonged to the New York Conference. He was pastor of a number of churches in New York, Brooklyn and Connecticut. During the war of the Rebellion he served as Chaplain of the Fortieth New York Volunteers, and always entered the battles with his men. His care for the wounded and the dying on the field and in the hospital, won for him the admiration and esteem of the rank and file of the old Army of the Potomac.

Dr. Boole was always an enthusiastic temperance advocate, and was one of the founders of the Prohibition party. For years during the latter part of his life, his entire time was devoted to lecturing and evangelistic work.

He was a business man of fine qualities. He was one of the founders of the camp meeting grounds at Ocean Grove, Old Orchard Beach, Sea Cliff and Prohibition Park. He was for two years Superintendent of the latter, and built the first residence there after it was decided to construct a park. Dr. Boole and his family resided for some time in the old Colonial building on the edge of the park, on the Watchogue road, and it was in this same old house that the kind persuasions of the Boole family led to the redemption of America's famous temperance orator. John G. Woolley. (For illustration, see Vol. I., p. 188.)

HON. JAMES A. BRADLEY.—James A. Bradley was born at Rossville, Staten Island, on February 14, 1830, in the quaint old Colonial dwelling still standing on New York avenue, near the Shore road. His first school days were spent at Woodrow, under the supervision of the venerable Father Boehm. He then entered the Madison Street public school in New York City. At the age of twelve he went to work on the farm of William Davies, at Bloomfield, New Jersey. He remained there for a time, and then went to New York City to learn the trade of brush-maker.

Digitized by Google

At the age of twenty-one, Mr. Bradley was foreman in the brush factory of Francis P. Fernald, in Pearl street, and in 1857, he went into business on his own account. He has been in business in the same building, at 251 Pearl street, forty years.

Mr. Bradley, in 1871, purchased five hundred acres of land on the Atlantic shore, in Monmouth County, New Jersey. The tract consisted of pine woods, briars and sand dunes. It was laid out with broad streets and many open spaces, and through the publicity given to the place by newspaper writers, it has become what is now known as Asbury Park, perhaps the best known and most popular seaside summer resort in the United States.

Mr. Bradley was elected to the New Jersey State Senate, on the Republican ticket, in 1893, and served on several important committees. Asbury Park is his home.

HON. ERASTUS BROOKS.—Mr. Brooks was born in Portland, Maine, January 31, 1815. Shortly before his birth his father, Captain James Brooks, who commanded a privateer during the War of 1812, had gone down with his vessel, leaving his wife and three children dependent for their support upon a Government pension. As a result of these straightened circumstances, Erastus, at the age of eight years, left his home for Boston with the object of earning his own living. He found a place in a grocery, and worked for his board and clothes, studying diligently the while, at a night school. Soon he entered a printing office and became a compositor, and with the money which he earned obtained enough education to enter Brown University. Here he pursued a partial course, at the same time supporting himself by working as a compositor. When he was eighteen, he started a paper, called *The Yankee*, after his father's brig, in Wiscasset, Maine, soon after which he purchased the *Haverhill Gazette*.

In 1835, Mr. Brooks went to Washington and became a newspaper correspondent, which he continued for sixteen years. In 1840, he became associate editor of the *New York Express*, with his brother, James, and remained in this connection for forty-one years. In 1843, he traveled through Europe and was wrecked off Sandy Hook on his return. He published his paper almost alone during the cholera epidemic. He was for years a member of the executive committee of the Associated Press, and for a considerable time its general manager.

Mr. Brooks was elected to the State Senate in 1853. Two years afterward he rendered his position prominent by a controversy with Archbishop Hughes, relative to the limits to be set to the acquisition of church property by the Roman Catholic church and the exemption of property from taxation, he holding that, as its title was vested in the priest, it should be taxed when it reached beyond a certain value. The controversy, first carried on through the columns of the *Courier and Gazette*, finally went into the State Senate, of which Mr. Brooks

Digitized by Google

was elected a member on the Know-nothing or American party ticket in 1853.

The position which Mr. Brooks took led to his being nominated by the Know-nothings for Governor, in 1856. An interesting incident in connection with this nomination was, that the messenger boy who handed Mr. Brooks the telegram announcing his nomination, was Chester A. Arthur, afterwards President of the United States. From that time onward, he was frequently in public office, taking part in political conventions and serving the State in Constitutional Conventions. He served four terms in the State Assembly from Richmond County.

Mr. Brooks was a benevolent man. He spent freely of his time, even in the busiest period of his life, and gave careful and regular attention to the management of such charities as the New York Institution for the Instruction of the Deaf and Dumb, the Nursery and Child's Hospital and the Smith Infirmary. In the National Charities Association, in the State Board of Health, in the national convention of Deaf Mute Instructors, as a trustee of Cornell University, in the Indian conferences and in the Constitutional conventions, he was recognized as a man of wisdom and power, of profound convictions, uniting industry and excellent judgment.

Mr. Brooks' life was long, honored and useful, his name will be cherished by many whom he befriended, and will be recorded among the editors, the statesmen, and the benefactors of this country. His last public service was in connection with the Indian conference at Lake Mohonk, in October, 1886, from which he returned seriously ill, and his last literary work was a review of that conference, which he wrote for the *New York Observer*. Mr. Brooks died at his home on Staten Island, on November 25, 1886. He went to his grave honored by all who knew him.

CAPTAIN RICHARD CHRISTOPHER.—Captain Christopher was born in 1814. The house in which he was born stood at the junction of Manor road and Egbert avenue, opposite the Frederick White estate. His father was Joseph Christopher, born 1775, and his grandfather was Nicholas Christopher, born 1723, and whose residence still stands at Willow Brook, and was the place of meeting of the Committee of Safety during the Revolution. His great-grandfather was Barent Christopher, (or Christoffel, as the name was then written in the records of the Port Richmond Dutch Reformed Church.) He was born about 1678. Captain Christopher's mother was Elizabeth Wood.

Captain Christopher first attended school at "The Corners," (now known as Castleton Corners.) The school-house stood a few yards in the rear of the present edifice, on the Dawson estate, and was a little, low, one-story stone structure, and is supposed to have been the third school-house erected on Staten Island. Richard's father was a farmer, and the lad attended school in autumn, winter and spring,

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN RICHARD CHRISTOPHER

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN RICHARD CHRISTOPHER.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

working on the farm in summer, until he was fifteen years of age. He was ambitious, and for his industry he was one day rewarded by being allowed to accompany his aunt to New York City. It was his first visit to that place, and occurred in 1825. The boats in those days made two trips a day between Staten Island and New York.

Having returned to the "Whitehall wharf," they had the better part of an hour to wait for the boat to start for Staten Island. Standing on the deck near the railing, Richard watched the people coming on the boat, when suddenly a coach, drawn by four cream-colored horses, came up to the wharf. Cannon near by began to boom, and there was much excitement. A plain, white-haired man, accompanied by others, entered a private barge that was in waiting. It was General LaFayette, and he was coming to Staten Island, as the guest of Governor Tompkins.

Richard entered the Dyeing and Printing Establishment, at Factoryville, in 1830, to learn the trade of silk printer, and remained there until 1848. He built a dock at Factoryville, and carried on the coal business for thirty-five years in the building now known as the Athletic House. He was Postmaster at one time, and the office was also located in that building.

Captain Christopher was married in 1843, to Mary L., daughter of Captain Henry Fountain, proprietor of the old Fountain House. He was fond of the military, and in 1831, joined the Tompkins Guards as a private. He was from time to time promoted, until, in 1848, he became captain. He was considered the best-drilled officer in the Staten Island regiment. The Tompkins Guards, while under his command, entered into competitive drills with the "crack" military companies of the country. This company was once the guard of honor to Martin Van Buren. In 1835, it paid especial honors to Colonel Aaron Burr, while the old soldier was stopping at the Continental Hotel, in Port Richmond.

Captain Christopher took an active part in politics long before he was a voter; but he did not hold office until 1841, when he was appointed collector of the Town of Castleton. They did not extend the time for collecting taxes then, as they have done since. The Collector had to go from house to house. Castleton then included the greater part of the Town of Middletown, yet the Town, County and State taxes amounted to only $2,750. The Collector's fees were $137.50.

Captain Christopher was elected to succeed himself as Collector in 1842, and served for four years. In 1846, he was elected Supervisor. He accepted the office "with fear and trembling, for the taxes were high, because the new Court House had not been paid for as yet, and the murder trials of Polly Bodine had cost the county so much."

It was while Captain Christopher was serving his first term as Supervisor that the project to build the present County Clerk's and Surrogate's offices came up, and he drew the plans for the building.

Digitized by Google

It was not until 1848, however, that the building was erected. It was originally one story, and contained two rooms. The second story was added in 1856, and was occupied by the County Treasurer, District Attorney and Sheriff. The Supervisors occupied the room in the Court House now utilized as a parlor by the Under Sheriff.

In 1849, Captain Christopher was returned to the Board of Supervisors, and was re-elected in 1857-8-9—'68-9—'74-5-6. The first Board of Health in Richmond County was organized in the Town of Castleton in 1856, through Captain Christopher's efforts. It consisted of the Supervisor and Justices of the Peace. It was the first effective step taken against the Quarantine hospitals.

After the greatest legal battle known in the annals of Staten Island, the Quarantine quarrel drifted into politics, and a local faction known as "The Taxpayers' Party" was organized. Like all "new parties" it went to extremes in everything. At the election, held in Nautilus Hall, in 1859, the ballot-box was stolen in a fracas and taken out of the town. It was found on the following morning a considerable distance away. No Supervisor was elected, as the ballots were not found. The Town Board met and appointed Captain Christopher to that office. Ray Tompkins was a rival candidate for the Supervisorship, and contested in the Courts for the possession of the office.

Captain Christopher was repeatedly tendered the nomination for the Assembly, but refused it. Once, however, he was nominated, but told his friends that he did not wish to serve, and so was not elected. He was appointed postmaster of Factoryville (now West New Brighton), in 1857, at a salary of $100 a year. He resigned before the end of his term.

For some time prior to 1853, the Town Boards granted hotel and saloon licenses; but in that year the Legislature passed a law providing for a Board of County Excise Commissioners. Judge Metcalfe appointed Richard Christopher, of Castleton; Daniel L. Clawson, of Southfield; and Lawrence Hillyer, of Northfield. Captain Christopher was made Chairman, and Richard Channing Moore, of Richmond, was appointed clerk.

Captain Christopher witnessed, in 1825, the grand jubilee of the slaves of Staten Island, on the occasion of their emancipation, at the old Swan Hotel. The first year of the war of the Rebellion Captain Christopher met with heavy financial reverses. Beside other losses, his large dock at West New Brighton broke down, and a vessel belonging to him was lost at sea.

Captain Christopher planned and advocated a scheme which, had it been successful, would have brought much wealth to Staten Island, and practically relieved the taxpayers of the burdens that have long and unjustly rested upon them. He was in favor of the county assuming absolute control of the ferries running between the Island and the City, and placing the proceeds in the County treasury. He actually

Digitized by Google

labored in its favor for years; but was unable to get the other officials of the County to see the matter in the same light as he, and the result was that private corporations were permitted to absorb the whole business.

For more than half a century many a heart had its burdens lightened by the kind impulses of Captain Christopher. One thing in which he prides himself, perhaps more than some others, is that of standing by his friends, especially if they are struggling against adversity. A notable case in point was that of Mrs. Tyler, widow of ex-President Tyler, who at one time graced the White House at Washington. Mrs. Tyler then occupied the old mansion at the junction of Clove road and Broadway, West New Brighton. There was a family disagreement, and the property was in the Courts. There was no prospect of a settlement. Lawyers alone profited by the law's delay, while the proud woman and her children daily grew poorer.

Captain Christopher at that time conducted a general provision store, and through pity and respect for the noble woman, permitted her to purchase whatever she desired at his establishment, and trusted to whatever turn the future might bring in her affairs for his pay. The writer was informed on good authority that Captain Christopher's claim against Mrs. Tyler at one time amounted to considerably over $2,000. Later on, Mrs. Tyler came into possession of property, and the debt, with the exception of "an interest of deep gratitude," was paid in full. They were always warm friends, and when the news of the death of Mrs. Tyler reached the venerable man, he received it with heart-felt sorrow.

One of his enterprises was the establishment of Richmond Park, containing a large tract of land lying on the North side of Richmond road, between Egbertville and St. Andrew's rectory. At the time of the establishment of this park, Richmond was one of the most flourishing villages on the Island. The building of the railroad at such a distance from the village, ruined the enterprise. Captain Christopher once owned the wall-paper factory lately the property of Mrs. M. A. Baldwin Douglas, in West New Brighton.

Captain Christopher, although in his eighty-seventh year, is a most interesting man in conversation. His mind goes back clearly to the events of the long ago, and when in a reminiscent mood makes a most charming companion. It is to him, more than to any other citizen of Staten Island, that the writer of this work is indebted for information and guidance in scores of incidents that would otherwise have been lost to the world.

Dr. Ephraim Clark.—Dr. Clark was born at Wheatsheaf, near Rahway, New Jersey, in 1795. His father, Captain Ephraim Clark, was in the United States Army, during the War of 1812, and his grave is in the Dutch Reformed Church yard, in Port Richmond.

Dr. Clark studied medicine with Dr. Valentine Mott, of New York,

Digitized by Google

and afterward graduated from the College of the State Medical Society at New Brunswick. He came to Staten Island in 1820, and married Miss Ann Guyon, daughter of Major James Guyon, of New Dorp. He erected the mansion now occupied by his son, Dr. James G. Clark, of West New Brighton, and resided there for many years. He also kept a drug-store at the corner of Richmond terrace and Taylor street, near his residence.

On the arrival of General LaFayette, on his last visit to this country, in 1825, Dr. Clark was a member of the committee that received the distinguished soldier at Nautilus Hall, in Tompkinsville.

At the reception given to Kossuth, the committee was composed of Dr. Ephraim Clark, Dr. Westervelt, Samuel French and Richard Adam Locke. The latter delivered the address of welcome. General Garibaldi was also present and made an address.

When General Andrew Jackson made his famous visit to New York City, in 1832, Dr. Clark was a member of the Reception Committee that met the old soldier at Mersereau's Ferry (Port Richmond). The other members of the committee were Colonel Nathan Barrett, Rev. Dr. Peter I. Van Pelt, Dr. J. T. Harrison and Colonel Barton. The committee escorted General Jackson to New York City, and landed at Castle Garden.

Dr. Clark was physician to Colonel Aaron Burr, while at Port Richmond. He was also a member of the Committee which selected the Rev. Dr. Brownlee as pastor of the Port Richmond Dutch Reformed Church.

During Dr. Clark's long life he held a number of important positions. He was appointed Surgeon of the One Hundred and Forty-sixth Regiment of Infantry, composed of Staten Islanders, by Governor Yates, in 1823, and, having resigned, was, in 1837, appointed Surgeon of the Sixty-fifth Regiment New York State Militia, by Governor Marcy. Afterward he was appointed aide-de-camp, with the rank of Colonel, on the staff of Major-General Van Buren, by Governor Seward. He was Post Surgeon at Camp Sprague, New Dorp, during the Southern Rebellion, and examined over four thousand men.

Dr. Clark was a delegate to the Charleston Convention, which nominated Breckenridge and Lane. He was one of the early members of Richmond Lodge, No. 66, F. and A. M., and a charter member of Tompkins Lodge, No. 401. He was one of the organizers of the Richmond County Agricultural Society, and was its first President. For many years prior to and at the time of his death, he was the physician to the County Jail. He served as Supervisor for Southfield, and Superintendent of the Poor for several years.

One day, in conversation with the writer, Dr. Clark said: "A man living to my age naturally sees a great deal. Some have very happy lives. What has given me good health and prolonged my life, is that I have always been of a happy disposition. I do not fret, but like to

Digitized by Google

be social. Always happy to see my friends. There is no man in the world I would step over my threshold to injure."

One morning, in the autumn of 1885, the noble old man arose from his bed and prepared for the usual duties of the day, in a world that was constantly growing smaller to him. Suddenly he sat down upon his bed, then rested his head upon the pillow of peace, and his gentle, loving soul went home.

JACOB DOLSEN COX.—Mr. Cox was one of the most honored of American citizens. He was a resident of Port Richmond for a long time, and was well known throughout Staten Island. In his youth he was a clerk in the office of Anthony Lane, in Wall street, New York City.

He became a Major-General of volunteers in the Union Army, during the Southern Rebellion, Governor of Ohio, Secretary of the Interior in President Grant's first cabinet, Representative in Congress, President of the Toledo, Wabash and Western Railroad, and Dean of the Cincinnati Law School. He came very near being United States Senator, in place of John Sherman.

Charles F. Cox, a brother, who was Secretary of the Canada Southern Railroad, also resided in Port Richmond.

COLONEL ICHABOD B. CRANE.—Colonel Crane was born in Elizabeth, New Jersey, on July 18, 1787, and after graduating from the West Point Military Academy, entered the United States Army as a second lieutenant when a very young man. He served in all the wars in which this country participated during the first half of the present century, and followed the line of promotion until he became Colonel of the First United States Artillery.

Shortly after the close of the Mexican War, Colonel Crane came to Staten Island and purchased a farm. It was located on the Richmond turnpike, a mile or so west of Bull's Head, and is now owned by Robert Ferguson. Colonel Crane built himself a fine residence on his farm, and during his sojourn it was the scene of much genuine "army hospitality." In fact, it was a social headquarters for army officers who found it possible to visit Staten Island. Scores of noted soldiers were there entertained by the venerable Colonel and his family.

Colonel Crane, however, did not live long to enjoy his Staten Island home. Five or six years at most of quietude with those he loved closed his brilliant and honorable career. He died in 1857, and was buried with military honors in the grave-yard of the Asbury Methodist Episcopal Church, at New Springville. General Winfield Scott, at that time Commander-in-chief of the United States Army; Captain May, the famous cavalry officer of the Mexican war; Commander Timothy Greene Benham, of the United States Navy, and a number of other distinguished officers were present.

A plain marble shaft was erected over Colonel Crane's grave, bear-

Digitized by Google

ing the insignia of the regiment which he commanded—cross-cannons, surmounted by a figure 1—and the following inscription:

"Sacred to the memory of Colonel Ichabod B. Crane, of the U. S. Army, who was born in Elizabeth, N. J., July 18, 1787; died on Staten Island October 5, 1857.

"He served his country faithfully forty-eight years, and was much beloved and respected by all who knew him."

On another side of the shaft is the following inscription: "Charlotte, widow of Colonel Crane, U. S. A.; born May 25, 1798; died September 25, 1874."

Within the enclosure, near the Colonel's grave, is a plain marble slab, which tells a pathetic story:

"Juan, an Indian boy, of the Umpga tribe, Oregon. Brave, honest and faithful. Died on Staten Island Dec. 27, 1856."

Colonel Crane left three children. One afterward became the Surgeon-General of the United States Army, and, it will be remembered, claimed the body of Guiteau, the murderer of President Garfield. He died a few years ago, and was buried on Shelter Island. The daughter married General Brennan, of the United States Army. The other son, William, was well known on Staten Island, and died at a recent date, and was buried in the family plot at New Springville.

Hon. George William Curtis.—Mr. Curtis was born in Providence, Rhode Island, on February 24, 1824, but he was partly of Massachusetts descent, his father having been born in Worcester, in that State, of which an ancestor was one of the first settlers. His mother was the daughter of James Burrill, Jr., at one time Chief Justice of Rhode Island, and afterward United States Senator.

In 1830, Mr. Curtis went to boarding school at Jamaica Plain, near Boston, where he remained for four years. Meanwhile he lost his mother; and, in 1839, his father, who had married again, removed with his family to New York, and, desirous that his son should pursue a mercantile career, placed him, after a year's study with a private tutor, as a clerk in a German importing house in Exchange place.

His talents were decidedly literary, and in the course of his reading he became deeply interested in the transcendental movement in which so many of the best minds of New England were at that time engaged. Accordingly, after about a year of uncongenial drudgery in the importing house, he went to "Brook Farm," in company with his eldest brother, who shared in his tastes and aspirations.

Mr. Curtis and his brother remained at "Brook Farm" until 1844, and then passed two years in Concord, Massachusetts, studying and farming. At that time Mr. Curtis became very intimate with Emerson, Hawthorn and Thoreau, forming warm friendships with them which were broken only by death.

In 1846, Mr. Curtis determined on making an extended tour of the Old World. In August of that year he sailed from New York for

Digitized by Google

Marseilles in the passenger packet. He traveled through many countries, reaching Alexandria before he attempted to retrace his steps. He was fortunate in reaching the land of the Pharaohs when the spirit of modern progress had scarcely begun its devastating work within the shadow of the pyramids. There he gained the inspiration for his "Nile Notes," which are full of the flavor and perfume of the East. A journey across the desert by way of Gaza to Jerusalem, ended Mr. Curtis's eastern travels. He spent the early summer in England, and returned home in August.

During Mr. Curtis's travels he wrote for the *Courier and Enquirer*, of which Henry J. Raymond was the editor, and for the *New York Tribune*, which was edited by Charles A. Dana. On his return he became connected with the latter, and his writings were one of the special features of that paper. He became one of the editors of *Putnam's Monthly*, in 1853. Later he wrote for *Harper's Magazine* and *Harper's Weekly*, of which he finally became the editor. He also became one of the most popular lecturers in the country. He took an active interest in the abolition of slavery, and spoke and wrote in favor of it when he had the opportunity.

Mr. Curtis entered politics on Staten Island in 1856, laboring very earnestly for the success of General Frémont. He was a delegate to the National Republican Convention in 1860, and was one of the men who formed its "platform." He was a most eloquent and forcible speaker, and it was his effort in the Chicago Convention of 1860 that turned the very large majority to favor the resolution adding the "life, liberty and pursuit of happiness" clause of the Declaration of Independence into the platform.

Mr. Curtis labored very hard to create and maintain a healthy popular sentiment on the subject of Civil Service Reform, and as editor of *Harper's Weekly* lost no opportunity to advance the theory. He was Chairman of the Civil Service Commission in 1871, and resigned in 1873.

Mr. Curtis cared very little for political office. By Mr. Seward he was offered the Consul-Generalship to Egypt. President Hayes urged him to accept the post of Minister to England, and afterward that of Minister to Germany; but he could not be tempted away from his editorial position. Once he accepted the nomination for Representative in Congress, knowing that his district was hopelessly democratic and that there was no prospect of his election. He frequently took part in debates, and favored the extension of the franchise to women.

Mr. Curtis was married in 1857, to a daughter of Francis George Shaw, the eminent philanthropist. For many years he resided in West New Brighton, at the corner of Bard and Henderson avenues, where have assembled at times some of the brightest minds of the world. Mr. Curtis died in 1892.

ALEXANDER DEL MAR.—Mr. Del Mar, the author of "A History of

Digitized by Google

the Precious Metals," "A History of Money in Ancient Times," "The Science of Money," and other works of a similar nature, probably the greatest ever written on political economy, and containing the ablest and most laborious, ever written by an American, lived both at New Brighton and Stapleton.

At one time he was financial editor of eight different journals, and founded also the flourishing "Commercial and Financial Chronicle and New York Daily Bulletin." As director of the Bureau of Statistics he reorganized the United States Commerce and Navigation returns so as to make them reliable, which was a herculean task: and by one sharp exposure he prevented, in 1868-9, the blunder of the United States Treasury to the extent of one hundred millions of dollars.

As originator and officer of the United States Monetary Commission of 1876, he brought the country back to the use of both silver and gold as currency.

CLEMENT DISOSWAY.—Clement Disosway was a son of the late Gabriel P. Disosway, and a brother to ex-Trustee Wilbur F. Disosway, of West New Brighton. Mis mother was Miss Riddick, of Virginia.

When the war broke out in 1861, Clement Disosway was living at West New Brighton, and enlisted in the Ninth New York Volunteers, in which he won a lieutenant's commission, and spent a season in Libby Prison, after which he was exchanged. Resigning from the Ninth Regiment, he entered the Fifth New York Heavy Artillery, and soon rose to the rank of Captain.

One day in 1864, Captain Disosway was in command of a detachment of troops en route for Harper's Ferry, and all were captured by Colonel Mosby. General Sheridan had been hanging Mosby's men whenever they were captured, and Mosby notified him that he would retaliate, and would hang man for man.

The capture of Captain Disosway and his men caused Mosby to issue an order for the execution of seven—that number of guerrillas having been hanged a day or so before. They were directed to "draw lots"—that is, pull straws; the short straws meant death and the long ones prison—worse than death.

Captain Disosway drew a long straw, while his drummer boy, a mere lad, drew a short one. The boy cried and begged for mercy, claiming that he had not taken up arms against the South, and was not entitled to be executed. Captain Disosway pleaded on behalf of the boy, that he might be given another opportunity, to which Mosby consented. The result was that Captain Disosway drew the short straw, and the drummer boy a long one.

The officer who was about to conduct the execution, placed the ropes around the necks of the seven victims and the party started for the scene where their lives were to be sacrificed—upon a hill a quar-

Digitized by Google

ter of a mile or so distant, and in full view of the Union line. Captain Disosway made up his mind that he would try to escape in the ravine through which they were to pass, because he would rather be shot than hanged. Just before the ravine was reached, however, a Confederate cavalry officer—Captain Montgomery—approached Colonel Mosby and enquired,

"What are you going to do with these men?"

"Hang them, to be sure!" replied Mosby.

"Well," added the Confederate Captain, "I'll be responsible for this man." Then, turning to Captain Disosway said, "Captain, follow me." Captain Disosway did as he was ordered, wondering what turn his fate had taken. He regretted being compelled to leave his companions; but there was no time to ask questions or express regrets.

Captain Disosway was escorted to Captain Montgomery's tent, still in awful suspense; but was treated with such kindness as to increase his curiosity. Still he asked no questions. He dined with the Confederate officer, and then the two sat down together in a tent. Conversation immediately took up the subject of the capture, the execution, and the peculiar escape of one of the number.

"When you were captured," said Captain Montgomery, "your overcoat and boots fell to my lot. In your pocket was your Masonic certificate." And then he handed Captain Disosway the parchment document which proved him to be a member of Manhattan Lodge, No. 62, of New York City. Captain Disosway continued to be Captain Montgomery's "guest" for several weeks, and the visit terminated only when a sudden flank movement of Sheridan drove Mosby from his quarters. Captain Disosway was sent again to Libby Prison, and so on to Andersonville and Salisbury. Captain Montgomery was killed in one of Custer's cavalry battles in the Shenandoah Valley.

One day a heavily-laden transport came up the Narrows, anchored a little while at Quarantine, and then proceeded on its slow way up to the city. On it were several hundred human wrecks—poor fellows who had, some how or other, managed to exist through the horrors of Southern prisons, and were on their way home. Among the groups that staggered and hobbled down the gang-plank, was one that had long been given up for dead. It was Clement Disosway. Black and filthy, beyond the recognition of friends, with scarcely rags enough upon him to conceal his nakedness; hungry, emaciated and weak. To this sad plight had the "fortunes of war" brought one of the proudest officers in the Union Army.

Captain Disosway came to West New Brighton, where, after rest and care in his home, his health partially returned, and in time he took up his abode in Pendleton, Oregon, where he became a successful newspaper publisher, and was also connected with other remunerative enterprises. He died in that city about thirteen years ago,

Digitized by Google

leaving a wife and daughter. Besides holding a number of public offices, he was a Presidential Elector in 1876.

GENERAL RICHARD A. DONNELLY.—General Donnelly was born near Green Ridge, Staten Island, in 1843, in the house familiarly known as "the Father Boehm residence," on the Fresh Kill road, near Giffords lane. His father served under General Jackson at New Orleans. Richard first attended school in the little building that used to stand near St. Andrew's Church, in Richmond, and among his play-mates were Judge Stephen D. Stephens, Major David H. Cortelyou, and a number of other prominent citizens of the Island to-day.

At the age of fifteen, Mr. Donnelly entered a law office in New Jersey, where he remained until the commencement of the Civil War, in 1861, when, at the age of eighteen years, he enlisted in the First Regiment, New Jersey Volunteers. He became a first lieutenant before leaving the service. He was twice severely wounded, taken prisoner at Gaines' Mills, Virginia, and confined in Libby Prison.

General Donnelly is a Past Commander of Aaron Wilkes Post, G. A. R., of Trenton, New Jersey. He has been twice elected to the New Jersey Assembly, and twice to the Mayoralty of the City of Trenton. In politics he is a Democrat.

He rose to the rank of Colonel of the Seventh Regiment of the New Jersey National Guard. He is a trustee of the State Reformed School and a Commissioner of the new Home for Disabled Soldiers. For several years past he has served the State of New Jersey as Quartermaster-General, and he has been prominently mentioned in connection with the nomination for Governor.

DR. WILLIAM DRAPER.—Dr. Draper, one of the most majestic minds the world has known, whose researches revolutionized many departments of knowledge; who gave to mankind the art of photography; who, during a half century's laborious investigation freely gave the public, without seeking any patent or monopoly, the fruits of his toils and study; who set forth in books of wide circulation, facts commonly deemed dry with knowledge that fascinated the reader; who handled the history of Europe with skill that from an adverse critic, (the "Westminster Review"), extorted the confession that "what Buckle attempted for England, Draper has done for Europe;" who for more than fifty years daily instructed large classes in chemistry, physiology, botany, genealogy and kindred sciences; who helped to found the New York University Medical College, and as its secretary and president built it up to a great institution.

Dr. Draper, while making the discoveries and writing the works which first gave him European as well as American celebrity, lived in a modest house on Cherry lane, in Northfield, not far from the Hatfield farm. His sons, Dr. John C. Draper, successor to his father's University chairs, in that father's lifetime, professor of chemistry and

Digitized by Google

mineralogy in the New York City College and of analytical and practical chemistry in the University, author of several works; and Dr. Henry Draper, also author of a number of scientific works, builder of a silvered glass reflectory telescope which eclipsed that of Lord Rosse; first photographer of the moon, photographer of the sun through the telescope; surgeon and captain in the war of the Rebellion, author of many papers, articles and books on scientific subjects, resided in the Cherry lane house with their father.

GENERAL ALFRED NAPOLEON DUFFIÉ.—General Duffié was a son of Count Jean A. Duffié. He was born May 1, 1835, in Paris, France; was educated in the School of St. Burke, in the Military Academy of Versailles, and in the National Military College of St. Cyr; was trained in infantry, cavalry and staff duties; was graduated as a lieutenant of cavalry in the Hussars de Afrique in the Regular Army of France; served in Algiers, in Senegal, in the Crimean and Austrian wars, receiving eight wounds in action, winning four imperial decorations of the Legion of Honor—the French, English, Turkish and Sardinian crosses, the latter bestowed while he lay wounded, direct from the hands of the Emperor.

COMMODORE VANDERBILT'S RESIDENCE, STAPLETON.

While suffering from his wound received in the battle of Solferino, he had leave of absence, in 1859, to visit America for recuperation.

When the Rebellion broke on our land, he quickly transferred his citizenship to our shores, and threw himself enthusiastically into our great conflict, becoming successively Captain and Major of New York Cavalry, Colonel of Rhode Island Cavalry, and Brigadier-General of Cavalry; gallantly serving in Maryland, Virginia, West Virginia, the Department of the West and in Texas, meanwhile, for a season, suffering the horrors of Libby and Danville rebel prisons.

After the war, General Duffié served for ten years as United States Consul at Cadiz, Spain, and after a protracted struggle with consumption, he died at his Consular post, November 8, 1880, at the age of forty-five. His remains lie in Fountain Cemetery, West New Brighton, in the Pelton family plot.

Digitized by Google

General Duffié married, in 1860, Miss Mary A. Pelton, of West New Brighton, and for some time resided in the old Colonial homestead at the Cove, familiarly known as the Pelton house. Mrs. Duffié still occupies the premises, and has many pleasant reminiscences of her distinguished husband. A life-size painting of the General adorns the walls of her parlor. Daniel Pelton Duffié, of West New Brighton, is their only son.

THOMAS ROBERT EAGLESON.—Mr. Eagleson was better known as "Thomas W. Keene," the noted actor, and was born in New York City in 1840. He appeared first as an amateur and was seen for the first time professionally in a performance of "The Gunmaker of Moscow," given at the Old Bowery, under the management of John Brougham. He afterward was seen in "Julius Cæsar" and "Henry IV.," with J. H. Hackett as Falstaff.

Subsequently he traveled in Canada with Kate Fisher, one of the best known Mazeppas of the period in which that character was popular. When she became the manager of a theatre in Newark, in 1858, he was the leading actor of her company, although he played in burlesque as well as serious drama. He was seen at the Broadway Theatre, and was also a popular actor during the early sixties in Cincinnati and other Western cities.

Mr. Eagleson played with Annie Sefton until 1869, when he went to England. He returned to New York and acted at Wood's Museum until 1874, when the late John McCullough took him to San Francisco for a season's engagement. He became popular there, and remained on the coast five years. He subsequently played in the South, and in 1879 reappeared here as Coupeau in Zola's "Drink" at the Olympic Theatre.

He became well liked throughout the country for his robust performance of classical rôles, and his large répertoire included most of the characters acted by Edwin Booth. He was the last of the robust school of tragedians. His daughter, Agnes Arden, was for some time a member of his company.

The genial actor made his home on Staten Island for several years past. He owned and occupied the old Bodine Inn, (which had been remodeled,) at the junction of Manor road and Richmond turnpike, Castleton Corners. He died in the Smith Infirmary in June, 1898, and was buried with Masonic honors. He was a member of Naval Lodge, No. 69, of New York.

JUDGE WILLIAM EMERSON.—Judge Emerson was a brother to Ralph Waldo Emerson, the most celebrated of American philosophers, and was born in Boston about the commencement of the Nineteenth century, and graduated from Harvard College when quite a young man. From about 1837 to 1856 he resided on Staten Island, in a low, brown house, located on the Richmond road on the sloping lawn now belonging to the Unger place. The spot may be more properly

Digitized by Google

described as being nearly in front of the late Edward A. Moore residence. William Emerson was County Judge of Richmond in 1841-3.

The Emerson residence was known as "The Snuggery," and was burned down several years ago. The end of the house faced the road, while a long grape-arbor stretched to the gate, and the old-fashioned box-bushes bordered the garden paths.

Ralph Waldo Emerson spent a great deal of his time at "The Snuggery," and there is no doubt that he wrote many of his poems and prepared his lectures on "Representative Men," which he delivered in England just after his stay, on Staten Island. He was of clerical lineage, being the eighth in succession of a consecutive line of Puritan ministers.

Old residents of the Island remember the Emersons as very genial and friendly. They mingled with the people in a manner that made their final departure a sincere regret to all. There is nothing left of "The Snuggery" to tell the present generation that it once existed, and few indeed who pass the spot daily know that it was once the home of such distinguished Americans.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIV.

DISTINGUISHED RESIDENTS AND GUESTS—CONCLUDED.

GENERAL JOHN CHARLES FRÉMONT.—General Frémont was born at Savannah, Georgia, on January 21, 1813. His father was a native of France, and his mother of Virginia. When the boy was but four years old his father died, and with his mother he removed to Charleston, South Carolina. At the age of fifteen he entered Charleston College. For two years he taught mathematics in the navy.

In 1840, he received from President Van Buren a commission as second lieutenant in the corps of topographical engineers, and was ordered to make an examination of the river Des Moines, upon the western frontier. In 1841, he married a daughter of United States Senator Benton, of Missouri. He proposed to penetrate the Rocky Mountains, and his plans being approved, he reached and explored the South pass in 1842. He planned a second expedition, in 1843, which was also successful.

In 1845, he was brevetted captain, and in the Spring of the same year set out on a third expedition to explore the great basin and the mountain region of California. In less than a month he freed California from Mexican rule, and on the 4th of July was elected Governor by the Americans. A week later he learned that Commodore Sloat, who commanded the United States squadron in the Pacific, had seized Monterey. On the 19th, Frémont joined him with one hundred and sixty mounted men.

At the same time Commodore Stockton arrived in the frigate "Congress," with authority from the United States Government to conquer California. At his desire, Frémont organized the mounted men known as the "California Battalion," of which he was made Major. Stockton also appointed him Civil Governor of the Territory, and on January 13, 1847, a capitulation was concluded which ended the war, and made California a possession of the United States. About this time General Kearney, with a force of dragoons, arrived, and a long quarrel ensued, owing to jealousy between him and Frémont, which resulted in the arrest of the latter, his trial by court martial, and sentence to be dismissed from the army. The President remitted the penalty, but Frémont was so indignant that he at once resigned.

In October, 1848, he started on his fourth trip across the continent, at his own expense. He sought to find a practical route to California, passing along the upper waters of the Rio Grande del Norte. In the

Digitized by Google

spring of 1849, after a prolonged effort, he found his way over various mountain ranges to the Sacramento.

Frémont settled in California, and was sent by the Legislature as senator to represent the new State in Congress. He remained but a few months in office. In 1851, he failed of re-election. In 1852, he made a tour in Europe, returned the next year, and organized another expedition across the continent to complete the surveys undertaken upon his fourth trip. He discovered passes through the mountains, and finally reached California.

In 1856, Frémont was the candidate of the newly formed Republican party for President; but was defeated. In the war of the Rebellion, he was appointed a Major-General, and obtained command in the western district. On the last day of August, 1861, he ordered the emancipation of the slaves of those who, in his district, were in arms against the United States; but the President revoked it as unauthorized and premature. In this General Frémont anticipated by only thirteen months the President's own proclamation, but in consequence of it he was relieved of command. A few months later he was reinstated, and intrusted with the command of the mountain region of Virginia, Tennessee and Kentucky. After the battle at Cross Keys, June 8, 1862, he declined to serve. June 1, 1878, he was appointed Governor of Arizona Territory.

After serving his term as Governor, General Frémont came East again, and for a long time resided at New Brighton, on Staten Island. He and Mrs. Frémont were familiar figures in our community.

Lieutenant John C. Frémont, of the United States Navy, who figured so conspicuously in the Spanish-American war, is a son of General Frémont, and his residence is also on Staten Island.

General Joseph Garibaldi.—General Garibaldi was born at Nice, then in Northern Italy, on July 4, 1807. In time he entered the Sardinian Navy, and remained in the service until he had attained his twenty-seventh year. During the years which immediately succeeded 1834, Italy was undergoing one of her periodical revolutionary movements, and with this young Garibaldi got mixed up.

Driven from his own country and from his appointed career, he first endeavored to obtain service with the Dey of Tunis. He became disgusted and took service with the Republic of Uruguay, and there formed that famous Italian Legion which inflicted such frequent and terrible losses upon the troops of Buenos Ayres. Garibaldi had the command of not only his Legion, but of the squadron, and thus fought well, both by land and by sea. Throughout the whole of this eventful contest, however, one thought was ever present to him; in his own mind, his Italian Legionaries were destined for service in Italy as soon as opportunity should offer of crossing swords with the Austrians with possibility of success.

Opportunity came in 1848, but, as it turned out, his battle was to

Digitized by Google

be not only with Austria, but with France. He quitted South America, and took a good portion of his Legion back with him to Europe. With these he attacked the Austrians on the Southern Tyrol, whilst Charles Albert was acting against them in the plains of Lombardy.

After winning several battles he returned to Rome to continue the defence, which he did until resistance became hopeless.

From Rome, when the surrender had been resolved upon, Garibaldi made good his retreat with his own adherents, whom he disbanded at St. Marino, and then proceeded with his wife and a few of his immediate followers towards Venice by way of Ravenna. It was then that the sad tragedy of his wife's death occurred, and Garibaldi was compelled to leave her dead, who had never abandoned his side whilst living, nor in the day of battle. This blow came also from the Austrian enemy.

DR. RICHARD HENDERSON HOMESTEAD, NEAR NEW DORP; ERECTED 1790.

General Garibaldi came to this country after his misfortunes, and made his home for a considerable time on Staten Island, selecting Clifton as a place of residence. He mingled freely with our people and became very popular. He took the first three degrees in Freemasonry in Tompkins Lodge, No. 401, then located at Tompkinsville, and he entered into business enterprises personally and lent his name to others for that purpose. Garibaldi was in private intercourse the most gentle and unassuming of men. Children would run to play with him. If in a crowded room you would have looked around for some one to whom you would have given a wife or sister in charge, you would have singled out General Garibaldi amongst hundreds, there was such a stamp and impress of one of nature's gentlemen about the man.

GENERAL JOSEPH KARGÉ.—General Kargé was a native of Poland, and for his energetic measures in seeking his country's liberty, was condemned by the Russian Government to death. He managed to escape from the military prison, and after suffering privations and dangers that sound more like fiction than truth, he succeeded in reaching America. He had served as an officer of rank, being a nobleman, in the Polish cavalry.

Digitized by Google

General Kargé came to this country shortly after the commencement of the Southern Rebellion. He offered his services to the Government. The First New Jersey Cavalry was at that time in the field. Its Colonel, W. W. Halstead, one of the leading lawyers of that State, was a good organizer but a poor commander. The regiment became demoralized, and through some blunders at headquarters it had two lieutenant-colonels, both of whom, in the absence of the colonel, claimed the right to command. One of these was Joseph Kargé. He was recognized by his superior officers and assumed command until the arrival of the new colonel, Sir Percy Wyndham.

Later Colonel Kargé was promoted to the colonelcy of the Second New Jersey Cavalry, and participated in the campaign with General Sherman through Georgia. After the war he was brevetted a brigadier-general, and became professor of languages in Princeton College.

For a while General Kargé resided near what is now known as Livingston, on the North Shore, and became well known to our people. He died suddenly in the street in New York City, in 1894.

LOUIS KOSSUTH.—In the autumn of 1851, the Hungarian exile, Louis Kossuth, visited the United States. He arrived at Quarantine, (now Tompkinsville), on board the steamer "Humboldt," on Friday, December 5th. He was saved from the wrath of the Austrian Emperor, who contemplated his execution as a rebel, by the Sultan, who, under British inspiration, gave him asylum in Constantinople. President Fillmore's Administration felt deep sympathy with Kossuth, and sent the frigate "Mississippi" to the Dardanelles for the purpose of bringing him to the United States.

In anticipation of the arrival of Kossuth, the Richmond County Militia and two companies from the city, were ready to receive him at Quarantine. There were also present many Hungarian residents and members of the New York Common Council, which had made him a guest of that municipality.

On the next day the Staten Islanders must needs have a procession to escort Kossuth around the East and North Shores. A reception was given him in Nautilus Hall, at Tompkinsville, and on the ferry boat. On the march appeared Farmer William H. Vanderbilt, Dr. Ephraim Clark, Captain Richard Christopher, Griffin Tompkins and General Van Buren, as aides to Grand Marshal Minthorne Tompkins. Everybody in New York "who was anybody," had come over to the Tompkinsville ferry landing in the special boat furnished by Isaac Newton. Kossuth was taken on a trip around the bay and up and down both rivers, while Fort LaFayette and Castle William furnished salutes, and the frigates "North Carolina" and "Ohio" fired thirty-one guns. On the Battery fully fifty thousand people gathered around the whole First Division of the National Guard, who in their then diversified uniforms were awaiting orders to escort the Hungarian hero under a floral arch between Battery gate and Bowling Green,

Digitized by Google

and thence up Broadway to Bond street into the Bowery and down to the City Hall Park—the then huge iron gates of which were also arched with flowers.

After landing, Kossuth was ushered into a barouche with Mayor Kingsland and Morgan Morgans, the Welsh President of the Board of Aldermen. Then came the formation of New York's time-honored procession, composed of three divisions, comprising the military, some five thousand strong, carriages for officials, and pedestrians in the rear.

Grand receptions were given to the distinguished visitor by the Common Council, the Press, the Bar, and others during his brief stay. In fact, immediately previous to the Christmas of 1851 New York City underwent a period of Kossuth mania, and it affected the holiday presents. Every holiday gift associated itself in some designation with Kossuth and Hungary.

Soon Boston and Philadelphia yearned for him, and to those two cities he journeyed, to find new hero worship. But by degrees, as Kossuth journeyed westward, his popularity waned; for he was now practically a solicitor for subscriptions, and in after years it became a question of popular discussion what was the result of the Kossuth loan fund and what was done with it. And when he re-embarked for his homeward journey, there were few New Yorkers at the steamer to speed him—the Kossuth mania had become a thing of the past.

Marie Jean Paul Roch Yves Gilbert Mortier LaFayette.—The Marquis de LaFayette was born on September 6, 1757, in the Castle of Chavagnac, now in the Department of Upper Loire. He became a soldier at an early age, and in 1777, came to America and took part with the Colonists in their war of Independence. The declaration of war between France and Britain gave him an opportunity of aiding the new Republic effectually, by returning to France, where he was received with honor by the Court and with enthusiasm by the people. He again repaired to America, in 1780, and was intrusted by Congress with the defence of Virginia, where he rendered important services. On a third visit to America, in 1784, after the conclusion of peace, he was received in such a manner that his tour was a continual triumph.

LaFayette held the destinies of his country in his hands. He served in the Assembly, and was the Commander-in-chief of the French Army. He became unpopular with the excited republicans after the Revolution. After a checkered career he was accused of treason, and, leaving the country, was imprisoned in Austria; but was liberated by Napoleon in 1797. He took part in the Revolution of 1830, and a third time became a commander of the French troops.

In 1825, he revisited America, by invitation of Congress, who voted him a grant of $200,000 and a township of land. One of the most delightful receptions he had accorded to him in America, was on

Digitized by Google

Staten Island. A procession of soldiers and citizens generally escorted the distinguished guest while he was here.

The Marquis remained here for some time, seeking rest and comfort after his long and fatiguing tour. Several Staten Islanders still living remember the events of the reception very vividly. The Marquis was conveyed back to his native country in the battle-ship "Brandywine," and there recently died in the Sailors' Snug Harbor an old sailor who was a member of the crew of that vessel at the time.

JENNY LIND.—This famous woman is most familiarly known by her maiden name. Her real name was Goldsmidt. She was the most celebrated singer of her day. She was born at Stockholm, of humble Swedish parentage, October 6, 1821. Her musical gifts were first noticed by an actress, by whose influence she was admitted, at the age of nine, into the Conservatory at Stockholm. She soon sang with great success. Her career included all the leading countries of the world.

In 1850, she made an engagement with P. T. Barnum for concert tour in America. While here she married M. Otto Goldsmidt, a native of Hamburg, who accompanied her as pianist.

While in America she made her home on Staten Island whenever circumstances would permit, and became quite intimate with many of our people. She was very fond of riding over the Island, Todt Hill being one of her favorite routes. She sang in several concerts at the Pavilion Hotel. Her voice was a contralto of moderate range, but much power and expression. No public singer ever won the love of the world more than she.

MAX MARETZEK, SR.—Mr. Maretzek, the famous impresario, was born in Brunn, on June 28, 1821, and received his musical education in Paris and London. He came to New York City in 1848. In 1850, he was installed as manager of the Astor Place Theatre. The same year he married Mlle. Bertucca, one of the singers brought to New York by him from Europe, and they took up their residence in what was then known as the "VanHoevenberg mansion," at Pleasant Plains.

In 1854, Mr. Maretzek introduced Italian opera at the Academy of Music. The following season "Semiramide" and "Il Trovatore" were sung for the first time in this country. In 1856, he brought out at the Academy "La Traviata" and "William Tell." In 1858, he took Piccolomini to Havana and Mexico. In the Autumn of that year, before undertaking this trip, he introduced Adelina Patti in "Lucia." In 1864, he assumed control of the Academy of Music, and remained there until 1866. Among the singers in his company at that time, were Clara Louise Kellogg, Ronconi, Adelaide Phillips, and others celebrated the world over. On the 23d of November, 1863, Mr. Maretzek conducted the first performance of Gounod's "Faust" ever given

Digitized by Google

in this country. He produced an opera of his own, entitled "Sleepy Hollow," based on Washington Irving's story.

Mr. Maretzek had many warm friends among the residents of Staten Island, and the cozy residence on the heights, overlooking Pleasant Plains, contains many tokens of esteem in which the late occupant was held by the patrons of the opera in the Metropolis.

Mr. Maretzek died in the Summer of 1898, and was buried in the Moravian Cemetery, at New Dorp.

"MIDDY" AND JANE MORGAN.—These sisters were known in several countries. Miss "Middy" was for many years connected with the *New York Times*, and in her special line was a writer of great ability. So thoroughly was she the judge of blooded horses that she was commissioned by Victor Emanuel, King of Italy, to purchase his stable for him. He rewarded her well for her services. She died in 1897.

Miss Jane, who died in March, 1899, was an artist of ability. She studied in Paris, Rome, Germany and Denmark. Her pictures have been admired by the world. The sisters owned a unique residence on DeKay street, West New Brighton, which probably has nothing exactly like it in the world. It was planned by the sisters, and was to have filled their declining years with all the poetry, romance and art for which their souls yearned. Both died before their plans were completed. The wonderful part of this odd structure is that all the art within that has made it famous was executed by the hands of those brilliant women.

Truly these two women did a great deal for the world. Their ambition was to serve and help humanity. Few knew them beyond their eccentricities. To intimate friends they revealed their hearts. Their lives were shorn of all luxuries and extravagances, that they might have more to give away. They were fond of young people, and many were helped along to satisfy some ambition, in their own quiet way. After the death of "Middy," the sister lived almost alone, until she, too, died.

ANTONIO MEUCCI.—Mr. Meucci was the original inventor of the telephone system, and a native of Italy. While living in Havana, Cuba, in 1849, he discovered that words could be transmitted over an electrical wire for a considerable distance. He at once began experimenting, but with indifferent success.

A few years later, Mr. Meucci came to the United States, and settled at Clifton, Staten Island, where he became an intimate associate of General Garibaldi. Continuing his experiments, he became so thoroughly infatuated with his newly discovered force, and attained such satisfactory results, that he sent a friend to Italy to try and interest capitalists there in the invention. In the meantime he spent nearly all the money he could earn, borrow and beg on his experiments.

Digitized by Google

In 1871, while crossing the bay from New York to Staten Island, on the ill-fated ferryboat "Westfield," he was so terribly injured in the explosion as to be confined to his bed for months. On partially regaining his health, he found his money almost entirely exhausted and debts pressing heavily upon him from many quarters. The great value of his invention was, however, uppermost in his mind, and defying the jeers of his friends, on December 28, 1871, he took almost the last cent he had in the world to a New York patent lawyer, and through him filed a caveat in the Patent Office at Washington, for transmitting sound over an electric wire by means of an instrument he called a "telletrofone," and in his specifications outlined the immense business that would surely be done by a "telletrofone" company.

This caveat was kept alive for a number of years, during which time the inventor was reduced by poverty to the very verge of starvation, and for a time received temporary relief from the Superintendent of the Poor for the Town of Southfield.

When Messrs. Bell and Gray filed their applications for patents on the telephone, almost simultaneously, Antonio Meucci's caveat was not unearthed and arrayed against them. He was too poor and broken down by misfortune to know what was going on in the world of invention, and it was not until some years later he learned that the weary labor of the best part of his life had been lost to him, probably forever, by his lack of funds and impracticability in the management of the great thing he had produced.

Mr. Meucci then made some feeble efforts to interest capitalists in his invention, and after a time, becoming known as a sort of "crank" in the telephone business, was heard of by the then organized and prosperous Bell Company. He entered into negotiations with the latter for the sale of his supposed rights; but from one cause and another they failed.

The Globe Company, of Philadelphia, heard of Meucci's caveat about 1884, investigated his claims most thoroughly, and finally secured from him all rights that might be developed to the invention of the telephone. It was with Meucci's invention, with transmitters and receivers used by him, and very similar to those used by the Bells, and with the records of the Patent Office, that the Globe Company proposed to meet any claim to "priority of invention" the Bell Company might interpose to prevent their entry into the telephone business.

The venerable inventor lived in retirement in the old dwelling of General Garibaldi, and it was there he died in 1889. The place is sacred to Italians, and is visited by thousands during the year. It is a plain, wooden building, located on a little street, running alongside of the Clifton Brewery. In the centre of the front is a memorial slab, placed there by the lovers of Garibaldi.

Digitized by Google

WILLIAM PAGE.—Mr. Page, the artist, was born at Albany, New York, on January 23, 1811, and received the rudiments of his education in that city. At the age of nine years he removed with his parents to New York, where he was placed as a pupil with Joseph Hovie, who kept a school in the Bowery. About a year later he was transferred to one of the public schools. Almost as soon as he could handle a pencil, he had shown a marked talent for art, which developed so rapidly that, at the age of eleven, he made a drawing in India-ink of a portrait of Louis XIV., of France, which the principal of his school carried for exhibition to the American Institute, by which a prize was awarded to the draughtsman. In those days, however, art was little appreciated in this country, and was hardly regarded as a regular profession—certainly not as one by which a living could be made.

Young Page's parents determined to make him a lawyer, and at the age of fourteen he was entered at the office of Frederick De Peyster, a genial and accomplished gentleman who was not without the taste of art, and was then the Secretary of the American Academy of Fine Arts. Mr. De Peyster soon discovered that his pupil was occupying himself in the more congenial task of copying the prints and pictures which adorned the lawyer's office. He took some of his pupil's drawings to Colonel Trumbull, the painter of the "Signing of the Declaration of Independence," who was then the President of the Academy, and asked his opinion of their merits. He declared that the boy had unquestionable talent; but asked Mr. De Peyster if he could not make a lawyer of him. Mr. De Peyster replied that he thought he could; he "had brains enough for any profession." "Tell him, then," said Trumbull, "to stick to the law, for in that he may attain wealth and fame. As an artist in this country, he can have little expectation of either."

Page, however, was determined to be an artist, and the praise of Trumbull far outweighed, in his youthful and ardent mind, the prudent discouragement of the disappointed and somewhat morbid old man. He quitted forever the lawyer's office, and engaged himself as an apprentice to a portrait painter, named Herring, who turned the talents of his pupil to pecuniary profit by making him paint banners, transparencies and similar rubbish. From this drudgery, however, the boy learned something, and, at the end of a year or so, obtained admission to the studio of Morse, since famous as the inventor of the electric telegraph.

The American Academy being destroyed by fire, was reorganized in 1828, as the National Academy of Design, and Morse was elected President. Page entered himself as a student of the Academy, where the excellence of his drawings from the antique was rewarded by a large silver medal, the first premium given by the Academy. He was then in his seventeenth year.

At this period he joined the Presbyterian church, and resolved to

Digitized by Google

abandon his cherished avocation and become a minister of the Gospel. He accordingly went to Andover, Massachusetts, to study theology, and from thence to Amherst College, where he engaged in preparatory studies, supporting himself meanwhile by painting miniatures. At the end of two years he found himself in a state of mental doubt on religious matters, and he renounced all idea of entering the ministry. At Florence, Italy, he became acquainted with the writings of Swedenborg, and adopted the doctrines of the New Church, which ever after had a controlling influence, not only on his life and opinions, but on the style and method of his art.

From Amherst, Page went to Albany, where he opened a studio and painted portraits with ardor and success. He next went to New York and opened a studio on Broadway, and at once took a high position in portraiture and as a colorist. He was selected by the city government to paint a full-length likeness of Governor Marcy, for the gallery of the City Hall, and Boston sent for him to paint the portrait of John Quincy Adams for Faneuil Hall.

In 1840, he resided on Staten Island for a time, and then removed to Boston, where he became an associate of Lowell, Story and Nathan Hale.

In 1847, Page returned to New York, where he remained two years, and then went to Europe. He resided abroad about eleven years, chiefly in Florence and Rome. After his return he resided at Englewood, near Perth Amboy, New Jersey, and shortly afterward returned to Staten Island. In a quiet, secluded spot, overlooking the Bay, and far out upon the blue Atlantic, close beside the woodland that covers many acres of the historic Billopp plantation, stands an oddly shaped house, wherein, after a busy, eventful life, William Page rested.

The working days of the great artist were over and he had grown feeble, when the writer called to see him; but his intellect was as bright and his wonderful memory as strong as ever. Every day he spent hours in communion with his pictures. Among these were the Grant and Farragut of history, the Grand Duke Alexis, and others almost without number.

Page's "Head of Christ" aroused a furious controversy among the artists, the connoisseurs and the critiques. Some insisted that it was the most wonderful head painted in modern times. Page not only painted his ideal of Christ; but he inaugurated a revolution in the popular conception of Christ.

William Page died in October, 1885, and was buried in the Moravian Cemetery, at New Dorp.

GENERAL ELY S. PARKER.—General Parker was born on an Indian reservation at Tonawanda, New York, in 1828. He was a full-blood Iroquois of the Seneca or Wolfe tribe of the famous Six Nations of Indians. He became High Chief Sachem of the Confederation

Digitized by Google

of tribes which is now scattered on reservations in several parts of this State, at Green Bay, Wisconsin, and in the Indian Territory.

General Parker received a good education and then read law; but was refused admittance to the bar on the ground that the Six Nations, being wards of the State of New York, were ineligible to citizenship, and none except citizens could be admitted to the bar. Refused a license to practice law, he entered the Polytechnic Institute at Troy, and took up the study of civil engineering, graduating in due time with high honors.

After leaving the technical school at Troy, he settled in Galena, Illinois, where he became the personal friend of General Ulysses S. Grant. Later he was appointed to a position in the Engineering Corps of the United States Army, under General Baldy Smith. When the Civil War broke out he entered the Union Army, and received a commission as Colonel of Engineers. Later he became attached to General Grant's staff, with the commission of Colonel. He was appointed military secretary by General Grant, and went with him through all his campaigns.

When the final struggle came, and Lee decided that his cause was lost, it fell to the lot of General Parker, the representative of the original owners of American soil, to prepare the conditions of surrender at Appomattox. This he did, and with a few minor changes, suggested by General Grant, the terms of surrender were presented to and accepted by General Lee.

On March 22, 1866, he was appointed Second Lieutenant of the Second United States Cavalry; on June 1, 1867, he was made First Lieutenant, and then was promoted to Brevet Captain, Brevet Major, Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel, Brevet Colonel and Brevet Brigadier-General of the United States Army on March 2, 1867, for faithful and meritorious service during the war. His portrait is among those painted in the historic picture representing the surrender of General Lee.

After the war, General Parker returned to civil engineering. He was then a citizen in spite of his being an Indian, under the law which gave all who had served in the Union armies the right of citizenship. After General Grant was elected President of the United States, he attested his old friendship for General Parker by making him a member of the Indian Commission. It was General Parker who negotiated the removal of his tribe from this State to the fertile and pleasant lands on Green Bay, Wisconsin.

General Parker became an attaché of the New York Police Department in 1876, which he retained till the day of his death.

General Parker's family consisted of a wife and daughter. His widow is a white woman, a native of Washington, to whom he was married in 1873. His daughter was born in 1883.

General Parker was notable all through his career. Writers have

Digitized by Google

described him, and Mark Twain, in one of his works, lovingly calls him "Old Seneca." He was the successor as Chief Sachem of the Iroquois to two of the most notable Indian chiefs in history, Cornplanter and Red Jacket. He was a member of the Grand Army of the Republic and of several secret societies.

General Parker had in his possession the medal presented by Washington to Red Jacket, the Indian chief. He always wore it. His Indian name was Onedonecagne. He made his home at the Pavilion Hotel, at New Brighton, for some time, with his family, and our people enjoyed his society very much.

DELIA TUDOR STEWART PARNELL.—Mrs. Parnell, the daughter of Admiral Charles Parnell, (commander of the famous frigate "Constitution," and who bore the name of "the bravest man in the American Navy.") wife of an Irish country gentleman, seeing the misery of the people of her adopted country, trained her son, Charles Stewart Parnell, to become the leader of his countrymen in peaceful, legal and resistless movement toward self-government; and when his great work in the House of Commons began, she, with her daughters, whom she had reared in the same noble spirit, traveled, spoke, and performed enormous labor in organizing and teaching the great Irish population of America to co-operate with the work which her son was guiding. In the midst of this work, Mrs. Parnell and her daughters resided at New Brighton.

PETER PERO.—Mr. Pero was born at West New Brighton, Staten Island, on April 25, 1828. His father was a native of Canada, was French, and was lost at sea in 1835. His mother belonged to one of Staten Island's oldest families, the Simonsons, and was a cousin to the first wife of Commodore Vanderbilt.

Peter Pero, when quite a young lad, entered the printing department of the Old Staten Island Dyeing Establishment, where he remained until the first day of September, 1861, when he enlisted in Company A, Second New York Militia, which was later consolidated with the Eighty-second New York Volunteers.

The battle of Williamsburg, Virginia, on May 5, 1862, was the first engagement in which Mr. Pero participated. It was followed up by the other engagements of the Army of the Potomac up to Antietam, where he was captured and taken to Belle Isle, Virginia. He remained there six months, during which time the memorable "hard winter," with all its indescribable horrors, came and went. Then he was exchanged. He came to his home on Staten Island, where he remained for three months to regain his health, and at the end of that time he returned to the front. He participated in the battles of Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville.

At Gettysburg, the regiment in which Mr. Pero served suffered severely. Time and again it charged and fell back. On the second day, the regiment lying on the left fell back without their knowledge,

Digitized by Google

and a Confederate regiment, which they mistook for friends, took them on the flank, capturing almost half of the regiment before they fully realized what was going on. They were immediately rushed off the field and marched to Williamsport, on the Potomac, where they were allowed to rest a day; thence to Wheeling, West Virginia. It was night when they reached that point, and Mr. Pero and several chums planned to escape; but his companions weakened when the time to start had arrived. So they marched all the way to Richmond, and back to Belle Isle he went again.

After remaining there about a month, they were informed that they were going to be exchanged. They were placed in cars, and sent to Andersonville, Georgia.

But a small portion of the stockade was built around the prison-pen at the time of their arrival. Mr. Pero with others was detailed to finish the work. When it was completed, he with others went outside to bury the dead. The notorious Captain Wirtz was in command of the prison and its surroundings.

The story of the treatment of Union prisoners at Andersonville need not be repeated here. Suffice it to say, Mr. Pero was a suffering witness to those scenes for thirteen long months, and his burial party placed eleven thousand of the poor fellows into their welcome graves. The burial party was planning to escape, and were saving up their rations. There was a Unionist among the Confederate pickets, and he used to keep Mr. Pero and his party posted.

On the day before the escape was to have been undertaken, the Unionist informed them that General Sherman's army was bearing down upon Andersonville, and would soon be there. Immediately after that about five thousand prisoners a day were sent off to other places. One day the entire picket line was noticed closing in, and in a few minutes the burial party were driven into the stockade, there to find that not a soul remained. Until that instant they had believed that some one had divulged their plan of escape. So, it will be seen, Mr. Pero was among the first to enter the prison-pen at Andersonville, and was also among the last to leave it. He and his comrades were taken to Florence prison, a few miles away, and were almost starved to death. Then they were sent to Salisbury, North Carolina, where they were kept for three months.

Maddened by their sufferings, and in an hour of utter desperation, Mr. Pero and a companion determined to escape. When night came, they crawled through the picket line and made their way in the direction of the coast. They had gone about nine miles from the prison, when they were captured by home guards. They were sure that their time had come to die; but they were agreeably disappointed by being kindly treated. They were given all they wanted to eat, and then sent back to Salisbury, after being liberally provided with rations. They were not even punished for their attempt to escape.

Digitized by Google

After remaining in this prison-pen for three months, they were taken to Charleston, South Carolina. One day Mr. Pero learned that "all the Yankee prisoners who were good for nothing and couldn't fight any more, were to be paroled." So he determined to "play off deaf." As the poor fellows were being "sorted out" and sent through the gate, Mr. Pero joined the crowd.

"Hiar, thar!" called a Confederate guard; "what 'er yah goin' out thar fo'?"

Mr. Pero paid no attention to the question, but tramped slowly on. The guard approached him and repeated the question, but no answer came.

"He's as deaf as a post," said his comrade, as he hobbled on.

"Let him go, then," said an officer; "he'll never do us any more harm."

By this means Mr. Pero was enabled to get on board the transport that left Charleston under a flag of truce, and which met a Union transport about two miles from the city. He was taken directly to New York City, where he was mustered out of the service on February 14, 1865. Although but thirty-six years of age, he was broken down in health and his hair and beard were white in consequence of his terrible suffering. He died at his home on Heberton avenue, Port Richmond, on January 13, 1895.

Lieutenant Sidney A. Simons.—Lieutenant Simons, of the United States Navy, was born at Woodrow, Staten Island, in 1846. He attended school at Richmond Village for several years, and then for two years he served as clerk in A. T. Stewart's store, in New York City. But all the time he was studying hard, determined to promote himself when the opportunity afforded. He was appointed to the Annapolis Naval Academy in 1863, from which he graduated in 1867 with special honors. He was one of those who, graduating near the head of his class, was selected, as a reward of merit, to accompany Admiral Farragut to Europe, in 1868.

Lieutenant Simons was infatuated with the naval service, and promotion soon followed. In November, 1879, while serving as executive officer of the gun-boat "Huron," the vessel was wrecked in a violent storm near Cape Hatteras, North Carolina, and about two hundred of those on board were drowned. Lieutenant Simons was almost the last man to leave the vessel. The brave fellow had done everything to save others, and a moment or so after he had climbed down the side of the sinking structure, he went to a watery grave.

Lieutenant Simons's father, Mr. James C. Simons, taught school for a number of years in the old red school-house that stood where the New Dorp water reservoir is located, and he resided in the old Fountain homestead, near the Black Horse, recently remodelled. He became the captain of a merchant vessel, plying along the Atlantic

Digitized by Google

coast. Near the place where the "Huron" sank, Captain Simons's own vessel was caught in a storm, in 1857, and all were lost.

Lieutenant Simons was a brother to Mr. Charles F. Simons, Principal of the Curtis Memorial School, at West New Brighton, and was also a cousin to Admiral A. E. K. Benham.

Rear-Admiral John Drake Sloat.—Admiral Sloat was born in New York City, in 1780. He entered the United States Navy as sailing-master in 1800. He was in the engagement between the war vessels "United States" and "Macedonia," in 1812. He participated in the expedition against the West Indian pirates, in 1824 and 1825, and commanded the Pacific squadron from 1846 to 1852.

Admiral Sloat was commandant at the Norfolk Navy Yard, and superintended the building of the Stevens Battery at Hoboken. He was promoted to Commodore in 1862, and to Rear-Admiral in 1866. He resided for several years, after retirement, in the two-story frame building in the middle of the block, on Richmond terrace, between Franklin and York avenues, New Brighton. During his residence here he took a lively interest in the affairs of Staten Island and its people, and his home was the scene of many gay events in "naval society."

Don Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna.—General Santa Anna was born in Jalapa, in 1798. While a youth he entered the Spanish Army, and became lieutenant-colonel in 1821. When Mexico determined to throw off the Spanish yoke, Santa Anna greatly distinguished himself at the head of the Mexican troops. The Spanish royalists were expelled from Vera Cruz, and he was elected Governor of the city and province. Santa Anna proclaimed in 1822 a Mexican Republic, which was recognized by every foreign State, except Spain.

The separation of Texas from the Mexican union was vigorously but unavailingly opposed by Santa Anna. In 1847, war having been declared by Mexico against the United States, Santa Anna took the command of the Mexican forces. He offered a gallant but ineffectual resistance to the troops of Generals Scott and Taylor. The City of Mexico having been stormed and taken by the Americans under General Scott, the war was at an end, and Santa Anna retired from Mexico.

In 1853, Mexico, torn by civil dissensions, and falling into anarchy, again recalled him. He declared himself President for life, and a civil war was the immediate result. In 1855, he was driven from the country.

During the government of Juarez, from 1856 to 1863, Santa Anna was looked up to as their chief and future ruler by an influential party in Mexico. On the establishment of an hereditary monarchy under Maximilian, of Austria, as emperor, Santa Anna returned to Mexico, having first signed an act of adhesion to the empire. He soon, however, began to intrigue for his own return to power, issuing addresses

Digitized by Google

to the people as emperor, and was ordered to leave the country. After some residence in the United States, Santa Anna planned an expedition against Juarez; but ere a landing at Vera Cruz had been effected, Santa Anna, with his secretary, was taken prisoner. He was condemned to death, but pardoned by Juarez, on condition of his leaving Mexico.

Some time prior to this, Gilbert L. Thompson, a son-in-law of Governor Daniel D. Tompkins, resided in what was known as the "Marble House" at New Brighton, which later became a part of St. Mark's Hotel.

Several yards above the Irving plush factory, between Jersey street and Westervelt avenue, at New Brighton, about where Henry street is located, there was navigable water, in the midst of the once famous Hessian Springs. There Gilbert Thompson built a three-masted schooner, which he furnished, and then took his family on board. The vessel moved out into the Kills and sailed for Mexico, and was anchored in the port of Vera Cruz at the time that Santa Anna was ordered to leave the empire.

Mr. Thompson's family were on land at the time. He had repeatedly met with Santa Anna, and a strong friendship sprung up between them. Santa Anna feared assassination at any moment, and Mr. Thompson smuggled him on board his schooner in great haste. But Mrs. Thompson could not be reached at the same time, and Santa Anna's enemies, learning that Mr. Thompson had succeeded in carrying off the dethroned but scheming emperor and his secretary, held Mrs. Thompson as a hostage.

Mrs. Thompson's imprisonment became a state question, and after interference on the part of our Government, she was liberated and permitted to go to her husband, who was in waiting for her at a safe landing under the American flag. Mr. Thompson returned in his schooner to Staten Island, bringing Santa Anna with him. For a time the exile made his home with Mr. Thompson, in the "Marble House," but later, with his secretary and one or two intimate friends, he occupied what is now known as the Dubois mansion, at the corner of Manor road and Cherry lane, West New Brighton. While here he lived the restless life of a sporting man, but made many friends. All the time his eyes were turned towards Mexico. He frequently called on General Winfield Scott, who resided in Elizabeth, and who returned the compliment by coming over to Santa Anna's home on Staten Island.

Santa Anna had plenty of money, and he spent it liberally. He entertained his neighbors in a most hospitable manner, and, generally speaking, the people of Staten Island were sorry to have him go away. But Staten Island was too far from the ever-intended base of operations, and so, after a nice entertainment of his friends, he

Digitized by Google

packed up his belongings and started for the West. On the death of Juarez, in 1875, he returned to Mexico, where he died in 1876.

GUSTAV STRUVE.—This distinguished old man, who was the colleague of Frederick Hecker, in establishing a republic in Baden, in 1848, who was driven from Germany, and afterward from Switzerland, found a home after those stormy scenes on Staten Island. He resided for a time on Richmond avenue, near Graniteville, where he wrote his "History of the World." After the completion of his history he left Staten Island, once later returning to pay a visit to old friends.

HENRY D. THOREAU.—Mr. Thoreau was born in Massachusetts in 1817; he graduated, at Harvard, in 1837, and for a number of years engaged in school teaching. About fifty years ago, while Judge William Emerson, brother of Ralph Waldo Emerson, resided on Richmond road, near Concord, Henry D. Thoreau resided with him, and was the tutor of Mr. Emerson's children. The letters which he wrote from Staten Island to his family and Mr. and Mrs. Ralph Waldo Emerson, at Concord, are preserved in his volume of correspondence. In July, 1843, he writes to his sister Helen:

"I have pretty much explored this Island, inland and along the shore, finding my health inclined me to the peripatetic philosophy. I have visited Telegraph Stations (the Narrows); Sailors' Snug Harbor, Seamen's Retreats, Old Elm Trees, where the Huguenots landed; Britton's mills, and all the villages on the Island. Last Sunday I walked over the Lake Island Farm, eight or nine miles from here, where Moses Prichard lived, and found the present occupant, one Mr. Davenport, formerly from Massachusetts, with three or four men to help him, raising sweet potatoes and tomatoes by the acre. It seems a cool and pleasant retreat, but a hungry soil. As I was coming away, I took my toll out of the soil in the shape of arrow-heads, which may after all be the surest crop, certainly not affected by drought."

Thoreau admired our beautiful, wild red honeysuckle, alas, now being exterminated, and thought that Concord could be improved by importing it and some of the stately tulip trees.

Thoreau had considerable mechanical skill, and worked for his bare living at carpentering, surveying, etc., on a system of his own, which opposed devoting more time to such employment than was necessary for the procuring of the wants of life.

HON. DANIEL D. TOMPKINS.—There are few men whose memory is more precious to Staten Islanders than that of Governor Daniel D. Tompkins, who, after serving the State of New York twice as its chief executive, became Vice-President of the United States, and gave many years of usefulness to the development of Staten Island. He was born at Scarsdale, Westchester County, New York, on June 21, 1774. He attended the grammar school of Malcolm Campbell, in New York, in September, 1787; whence, at the end of a year, he was

Digitized by Google

removed to the academy in North Salem, where he continued until 1792, when he entered the sophomore class in Columbia College.

During the last year of his college course, he served in the law office of Peter Jay Monroe, and two years after graduating at the head of his class in 1795, he was admitted an attorney of the Supreme Court, and subsequently a counselor. He early interested himself in politics. He became a staunch Democrat, and in the party struggles of 1799-1800-1, took a prominent part. He had married Miss Hannah Minthorne, daughter of the wealthy alderman of that name, of New York.

In 1801, Mr. Tompkins was elected a representative of the city for the purpose of revising the Constitution of the State, and the following year he became a member of the State Assembly. Shortly after, he was appointed by Judge Morgan Lewis one of the Supreme Judges of New York, continuing to serve till the spring of 1807, when he became, in his thirty-second year, the rival candidate of Morgan Lewis for Governor.

Mr. Tompkins was inducted into office on the day on which intelligence was received of the British attack upon the American frigate "Chesapeake." The order of the President of the United States, calling upon the Governors to organize their respective quotas of militia, also arrived at the State Capitol on the same day, and Governor Tompkins immediately set about the task of defending his native State. In 1808, the President appointed him to the command of all the regular and militia forces on the frontier of New York.

In spite of the opposition which arose against him, he was again elected to the Governorship. His situation at that time was well calculated to dismay the stoutest heart. Unaided by the constituted authorities appointed with him in the government of the State, the Governor had alone to sustain the arduous, embarrassing and responsible duty of defence. But he rose superior to circumstances, and by the firm and unshaken energy of his conduct he silenced or rendered inefficient the opposition of his own State. When the treasury was in an impoverished condition, money scarce, and much wanted to carry on the war, he raised funds and made himself liable beyond his means. He gave great attention to the defences and intrenchments in and around New York City, and harbor, on which the citizens turned out and worked en masse.

In 1813-14, upon his own responsibility, while the Legislature was still in session, he issued orders for organizing a brigade of volunteers, to the command of which he appointed General Peter B. Porter. This contingent saved the remnant of the gallant army of Niagara, at the memorable sortie from Fort Erie. He also called into the field a large body of militia and organized a corps of sea-fencibles, without waiting the slow action of the Legislature.

In October, 1814, Governor Tompkins was appointed to the com-

Digitized by Google

mand of the Third Military District, which comprehended one of the most valuable portions of the United States, and included the largest and most heterogeneous military force that ever before fell to the command of an American general. He had also the offer of being Secretary of State in the cabinet of the President; but this he declined.

In 1814, the General Government was desirous of fitting out an expedition to dislodge the enemy from Castine. They applied to the Governor of Massachusetts for aid, which was refused. In this dilemma the situation of the Government was hinted to Governor Tompkins, who raised, on his own responsibility, three hundred thousand dollars, which he forthwith subjected to the orders of General Dearborn. Shortly afterward the war between Great Britain and the United States was brought to a successful termination, and the Governor returned to the peaceful duties of the Chief Magistracy. In the last term of his gubernatorial career, at the approaching election, he was nominated for Vice-President on the ticket with James Monroe, and was elected.

"On the expiration of his term as Vice-President, he retired to private life," writes his biographer, "spending the greater part of his time in the improvement of his farm in Richmond County. Here his spacious and hospitable mansion became one of the homes of literature, philanthropy, and art. To its ever-open doors flocked men of letters, artists, lawyers, statesmen, patriots and soldiers, people of all nationalities and of all beliefs.

"The last public service of Governor Tompkins was as a delegate from Richmond County to the State Convention to alter the Constitution in 1821, of which he became President. In June, 1825, in the fifty-first year of his age, he died. His remains, on the 13th of June, 1825, were conveyed in the steamboat 'Nautilus' to the City of New York, and at Whitehall, the place of landing, were met by a vast concourse of citizens, who accompanied them to their last resting place in the family vault of his wife's father, Alderman Minthorne, in St. Mark's Churchyard.

"Eighteen years after his burial, on the 21st day of June, 1843, his birthday was celebrated at the village of Tompkinsville, Staten Island. An address was delivered, and troops from various parts of the country took part in the celebration."

Rev. Stephen Montfort Vail, D. D.—Dr. Vail was born in Unionddale, Dutchess County, New York, January 10, 1818. He was graduated from Union Theological Seminary in 1842, having in the meantime been licensed to preach in the Methodist Episcopal Church, and founded the first church of that denomination in Brunswick, Maine.

Dr. Vail became professor of languages in the Armenia Seminary, in 1843, and was subsequently pastor in Fishkill, New York, Sharon, Connecticut, and Pine Plains, New York, and in 1847-9, was President

Digitized by Google

of the New Jersey Conference Seminary at Pennington. While occupying that post he induced the trustees of the institution to admit women as pupils, and he was tried before the Ecclesiastical Court of his church for advocating in his writings theories relative to the education of ministers. He became professor of Oriental languages in the General Biblical Institute of the Methodist Church, at Concord, New Hampshire, in 1849.

In 1869, Dr. Vail became United States Consul at Rheinsh Bavaria, and traveled extensively in the East and in Egypt, and on his return, settled at Prince's Bay, Staten Island. He wrote for the Methodist press and was professor of Hebrew in the Chautauqua School of Languages. Genesee College gave him the degree of D. D. in 1856.

Dr. Vail mastered seventeen languages. He published "Essays on Slavery and Church Polity," "Outlines of Hebrew Grammar," and other educational handbooks.

The old Vail mansion at the foot of Sharrett avenue, with its beautiful grounds reaching down to the water's edge, was one of the most delightful residences on the Island. Dr. Vail's death occurred on November 26, 1880, and the premises passed into other hands.

DE GROOT RESIDENCE, WEST NEW BRIGHTON; OVER ONE HUNDRED YEARS OLD.

ERASTUS WIMAN. —Erastus Wiman's name will always be linked with Staten Island. We need not now recount the scenes that filled his boyhood and maturer manhood. Possessed of a wonderful intellect, actuated by a desire to become a leader of men and great movements affecting the world, guided by an ambition to tower above his surroundings, with a perfect disregard for what men usually call impediments, Mr. Wiman constantly climbed the ladder of fame, steadily moving onward and upward toward the summit.

He began his career in a printing office in Canada, in which country he was born shortly after his parents had removed from New England. He became a printer, then an editor, then a correspondent and speaker, and then entered the mercantile field. As an organizer, always looking far beyond the beginning of an enterprise, he has had few equals. While his methods have often—by some perhaps always

Digitized by Google

been questioned; nevertheless there was always a principle underlying Mr. Wiman's schemes which were, some how or other, some time, going to prove a benefit to the public.

Staten Island had long been sleeping in indolence and wastefulness when Mr. Wiman came to its shores. Its natural beauty and usefulness had actually been wasted through the fleeting years. It did not seem possible that a locality so superbly endowed by the Creator could remain so far behind the age; but, "pity 'tis, 'tis true." Mr. Wiman needed but one glance at the situation to convince him of the possibility—the absolute necessity—of making Staten Island a great commercial centre—a terminus for the railroads of the country.

The enlistment of men in his cause; the possession of the old railroad system; the consolidation of the ferries and centralization of traffic at St. George,—and the adoption of rapid transit along the thickly-settled portions of the Island—all these are but comparatively recent works of this energetic man. The fact remains, however, that what Erastus Wiman did for Staten Island in his impetuous and rough-shod manner, awoke it from its long dream of inaction, and broke the antediluvian spirit that had so long strangled its enterprise and prevented its usefulness.

Like all men of Erastus Wiman's temperament, he did not know when nor where to stop. In fact, like Napoleon, he didn't really believe in stopping at all. Everything that got in his way must be conquered—"the hills to be levelled, and the valleys made e'en." Mr. Wiman met his Waterloo, just as all men do, when they can least afford it and least expect it. Not satisfied with being an employé for a mercantile agency, with a great salary, he wanted an agency of his own. Had he made mistakes in the service of his old employers? Alas! an insinuation was made to that effect, and insinuations are too often very effectual weapons with which to secure the downfall of a business man.

The arrest of Erastus Wiman came like a thunderbolt from a clear sky, on Staten Island, and after the shock had subsided, we doubt that there was a heart in our midst that did not pity the fallen. It was an awful fall, for there never was a prouder nor more ambitious man than Erastus Wiman. When he had become disentangled from the complications by which the law had held him, he came back to Staten Island and commenced at the "foot of the ladder" again. Whenever he appeared before our people they cheered and applauded him most heartily.

But Mr. Wiman did not fully understand this popular demonstration, and so made the fatal mistake of entering the political arena, and acted as a wedge between the two old parties, thus losing friends in both. Had he remained out of politics, he would to-day be a very popular man; but there is no enmity so long and deep as that gained in a political fight, provided you have no power to check your enemies!

Digitized by Google

Many other prominent people have, at different times, resided on Staten Island. We recall General John M. Palmer, a veteran of the Civil War and Secretary of State of New York, who was born at Stapleton; Governor Caleb Lyon, the personal friend of President Lincoln, who appointed him Governor of Wyoming, after which he resided at Rossville for many years in the pretty Ross homestead; Commodore William J. Garner, whose tragic death by drowning occurred off Stapleton, in 1876, and who resided on Bard avenue in the stately building now occupied by St. Austin's school; General T. L. Crittenden, twice a Major-General in the United States Army, and a prominent figure in the Civil War, resided at Annadale for some time prior to his death; General James Jourdan, well known as a soldier and prominent citizen throughout the Union, now resides at Concord; William Winter, the well-known writer and critique, resides at New Brighton; Rear-Admiral Winfield S. Schley, the hero of Santiago, spent two or three years at Tompkinsville, while in command of the Light House Department; Major-General William Ludlow, who was in command of the District of Havana, Cuba, resided at Tompkinsville, while a Lieutenant-Colonel of Engineers, United States Army; Judge George C. Barrett, of the New York Supreme Court, recently resided at West New Brighton; Frederick Law Olmsted, the architect and landscape engineer of Central Park, resided on the South Shore; Colonel J. F. H. Mayo (cousin of General Fitz Hugh Lee), resided for several years prior to his death at Clifton; Dr. N. L. Britton, author of the latest Standard Botany, has all his useful life resided at New Dorp; Dr. Author Hollick, instructor in Columbia University, has always made his home at New Brighton; William T. Davis, whose conscientious service in the fields of natural science and local history, have made him an authority, also resides at New Brighton. "Bill" Nye lived at New Brighton several years.

Dr. Carl C. Smidt, publisher of the "Scientific Medical Annual," and other valuable publications, a scholar and physician of unusual attainments, driven from Germany in the Revolution of 1848, settled at Willow Brook, in Northfield, and there ended his days. Sir Edward Cunard, American manager of the steamship line which bears his name, long lived on the hill overlooking the Narrows. William H. Aspinwall, long a leader in developing trade with California, and for whom the city of Aspinwall in Panama is named, for many years resided at New Dorp. M. B. Brady, the famous photographer, long dispensed a generous hospitality to distinguished guests from many climes, on Grymes Hill.

Daniel B. Allen and Samuel Barton, agents of Commodore Vanderbilt's steamship lines; Jeremiah Simonson, a prominent ship-builder; Bernard Westermann, the leading German bookseller of America, have all been residents of Staten Island. John A. Appleton, founder of the immense publishing house of D. Appleton & Company, and

Digitized by Google

Nathaniel Marsh, President of the Erie Railroad, used to reside at Clifton. Daniel L. Appleton, of the celebrated Waltham "American Watch Company," and at different times President of the Mercantile Library and of the New England Society, lived at New Brighton. Hiram H. Lamfort, President of the Continental Fire Insurance Company, resided at West New Brighton. George Low, who succeeded Commodore Vanderbilt as the leading steamboat owner of the harbor, lived on Grymes Hill. General Richard Delafield, of the United States Army, was long stationed at Fort Tompkins, and as Colonel of Engineers had charge of the construction of Fort Wadsworth; his residence was on Bard avenue, West New Brighton. General Joseph G. Totten, Chief Engineer of the United States Army, resided at Tottenville.

Chief Engineer Alban C. Stimers, United States Navy, who took personal charge of the engines of the "Monitor," in her fight with the "Merrimack," resided here many years. Commodore Stephen Decatur, the younger, who, struck with blindness through the blunder of a physician, at the outset of a fine career, resided long at Elliottville (Livingston); Commodore A. Colden Rhind, whose daring exploits in the capture of New Orleans, and the ascent of the Mississippi by Farragut and Porter, also lived here.

Commodore James McIntosh was long a resident of Clifton, and William W. Winthrop, Judge-Advocate General of the United States Army, was for some time a resident of West New Brighton. Before the war General Francis C. Barlow, who was often spoken of as "the bravest man in the Army of the Potomac," afterward Attorney-General, Secretary of State and United States Marshal, was a tutor in a private family on Grymes Hill.

Major Theodore Winthrop, the explorer, novelist, and orator, "whose country saw him best by the flashes of musketry against the black night of a Virginian forest, standing on a gun, striving to rally the Union troops whom surprise had confused and disordered," while going to his death, wrote to a companion, "Ah, me! in these sweet, balmy May-days I miss my Staten Island!" Richard Adams Locke, author of the famous "Moon Hoax," lived at Tompkinsville.

Mrs. Laura Winthrop Johnson, the poet-sister of Theodore and William Winthrop; Christopher Pearce Cranch, one of the most exquisite of American poets and artists; Gabriel P. Disosway, author of an early history of Staten Island, and other historical works; and his daughter, Miss Ella Taylor Disosway, a writer of ability, all lived on Staten Island.

Charles Mackaye, the well-known English poet, was for some years a resident of Clifton, and later of Dr. Elliott's observatory-cottage on Grymes Hill. Mrs. Catharine N. Sinclaire, long a prominent actress under the name of Mrs. Forrest, lived a long time in the opposite cottage, with her brother-in-law, Henry Sedley, of the *New York Times*.

Digitized by Google

Ernest Flagg, the renowned architect, has a handsome residence on Dongan Hills.

Maria J. McIntosh, the novelist, resided here; Rev. John F. Hurst, since President of Drew Theological Seminary, and now a Bishop in the Methodist Episcopal Church, published his "History of Rationalism" while pastor of Trinity M. E. Church, West New Brighton. Richard L. Dugdale, author of the famous work on crime and pauperism, called "The Jukes," resided on Bard avenue, West New Brighton. Colonel Thomas W. C. Moore, Military Secretary on the staff of General Sheridan, during the Civil War, was born at Richmond; he was a son of Rev. Dr. David Moore, rector of St. Andrew's Church, and a brother of Richard Channing Moore.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XV.

THREE CENTURIES OF POLITICS.

TO give the exact date on which politics was first introduced on Staten Island, one must of necessity go back to the very day on which the Dutch settlers selected secluded little Oude Dorp as a place of abode. The hand of the politician was felt here on that very day. The first politician of note, however, was Governor, or Director, Kieft. He was the embodiment of all that may be considered foul in politics; but fortunately he lacked the essential cunning of the successful politician. He lacked policy, too, even when dealing with a powerful adversary.

Others followed in Governor Kieft's footsteps, with more or less success, evidently guided by the same narrow principle that "might makes right"—and many a career has ended in disaster and disgrace.

> "He who would grind his fellows 'neath his feet—
> Would bully, tyrannize, and overbear,
> Some day will with a stronger tyrant meet,
> And be compelled the galling yoke to wear."

The political leader under Dutch rule had a hard time of it. Dutch stubbornness in both Holland and on Staten Island created no little trouble. The consequence was, there were frequent changes in the rulers, and a constant restlessness among the people.

Finally, when Staten Island passed from the Dutch to the shrewder, but less fair, English politician, a different system of politics was adopted. The Dutch and French joined issues very naturally, and in almost every public measure affecting the Island, they united against the English. Generations came and passed away long before the national line was obliterated.

The Revolution over, the spirit of Independence lit up the political horizon. Every citizen—especially if he had aided the American cause in the conflict—felt that he had a right, in common with his fellows, to advance in the political scale. But there was a division at the very outset. The Federal party was organized by "the powers that be." Alexander Hamilton was virtually its organizer and leader, and Washington, Adams and scores of other leading men of the period gave it their ardent support. There was little room for opposition while Washington held the Presidency; but, soon after he had retired, and the hero-worshipping theory was laid aside, John Adams found himself unable to secure more than one term as the Chief Executive.

Digitized by Google

Aaron Burr, then in the prime of his usefulness and popularity, organized the Democratic party and won. Then began a new era in American politics. It was not long before a bitterness crept into the struggles for supremacy, fully as bitter as is witnessed to-day. The press and pulpit for years teemed with assaults that must have disgraced the infant Republic in the eyes of the civilized world.

For many years the Federalists and Whigs had a majority on Staten Island, and among its leaders were sons of those who had given material aid to the British in the Revolution; but who, after the return of peace, took the oath of allegiance to the new government, and went right on in the public affairs of the Island. After the departure of Colonel Christopher Billopp and Judge Benjamin Seaman, Richard Conner was the leader of the Federalists. His son, Colonel Richard Conner, also became a political leader, as also did his son, the late A. V. Conner, who served as County Clerk and Sheriff. His son, too, the late Willett C. Conner, who, after being Under Sheriff, was appointed Sheriff at his father's death, was quite prominent in the Republican ranks.

For many years the elections took three days—the ballot-boxes being moved to different voting places to accommodate the people. Until about 1825, the vote was quite light on the Island, and it is safe to say that eight out of every ten voters were natives of the county. At the period just mentioned, a free fight usually followed the opening of the ballot-box, and the time-worn epithet "Tory" figured extensively in the political quarrels. The two parties were about evenly balanced as "the twenties" were reached, and the election returns of the period show that the candidate who received from six to twelve majority, considered himself very fortunate.

The election of 1804 was the first really hard political battle on Staten Island. The list of candidates was as follows:

For Governor—Morgan Lewis, Federalist; Aaron Burr, Democrat. For Lieutenant-Governor—John Broome, Federalist; Oliver Phelps, Democrat. For Senators—William Denning, Ebenezer Purdy, Thomas Thomas, Cornelius C. Prescott and Dr. John Smith. For Congress—Samuel L. Mitchell, Daniel D. Tompkins, Nicholas Fish and Winant Van Zandt. For Assembly—John Housman and John Dunn. This was called the "anniversary election," and commenced on the last Tuesday of April, 1804. The returns do not designate by which party the candidates had been nominated, after those named for Lieutenant-Governor.

In September of the same year, a special election was held for a Representative in Congress, and the county gave a majority for Gordon S. Mumford. In the following Spring it gave a majority for George Clinton, Jr., Democrat, to fill vacancy caused by the resignation of Samuel L. Mitchell. That was the first Democratic victory in Richmond County.

Digitized by Google

The Democracy carried the county again in 1810, when Daniel D. Tompkins was a candidate for Governor. In 1813, he was re-nominated by the Democracy, and again Staten Island gave him a majority.

The second war with England drew the people together in more friendly relations, and with the hope that our country would once more be victorious, the political feuds of the past decade were in a measure forgotten.

About 1825, strangers began coming to the Island in considerable numbers. The establishment of factories was the immediate cause. These people were chiefly of Irish nationality, and many of the old native settlers disapproved of their coming. A certain percentage of the new arrivals soon became voters, as a matter of course, and they would naturally turn against the party that sought to keep up the aristocratic notions of royalty, commonly considered to be the enemy of the Irish people. This led, later on, to much strife.

DISOSWAY-COLE MILL, NEAR TOTTENVILLE.

Believing that the Democracy would receive the support of this new element, the opposition began an attack upon it at once, most violent. The Democracy had done nothing whatever, to "catch these votes," neither did they do anything to drive them away. Opposition became persecution, with the Federalist-Americans, and an effort was made to "drive the outsiders off the Island."

A considerable number of these "outsiders" were employed in the Crabtree & Wilkinson silk factory at New Brighton. The factory closed on account of the financial panic. Their old employers permitted these unfortunate people to make their homes in the unused factory. After a series of complaints they were finally forced to move to the old gun factory, on Lafayette avenue, where they managed to exist while out of employment. There are people still living on the Island who used to go there on Sunday mornings to witness the peculiar exhibitions they gave in order to pick up pennies with which to buy bread.

At a later period the old gun factory was sold, and the "outsiders" were once more compelled to move. At that time—say about the closing of the twenties—there was a swampy tract of land at Factory-

Digitized by Google

ville, just east of the dye factory. It was on this swampy land that the people from the gun factory located. They built little huts and made themselves comparatively comfortable, and there they lived and died, and generations of their descendants have come and gone. The locality is known to-day as "Corktown," and it is no exaggeration to say that many a shrewd local politician first saw the light of the world at that place. There is where the large Irish element, which has become such a potent factor in Staten Island politics, commenced its career.

No campaign ever excited the politicians of Staten Island more than that in which the Democracy carried the successful banner of Andrew Jackson, and the Federal-American party labored for John Quincy Adams. The *Richmond Republican*, a Democratic newspaper, was started the previous year, (1827), and by it that party was ably aided. Its first number tells of a meeting being held in Richmond County Hall, at Richmond, of which "Richard Crocheron was called to the chair, and Griffin Tompkins was appointed Secretary." One of the resolutions adopted read as follows:

"Resolved, That this meeting have read with great satisfaction the resolution adopted by the Democratic General Committee of New York by Tammany Hall, on the 26th of September last, and that we will use all honorable means to promote the election of Major-General Andrew Jackson to the Presidency."

Then followed accounts of a series of meetings by the Democracy. One at the Black Horse Tavern was presided over by Henry Perine, and L. R. Marsh was Secretary; one at John Fountain's hotel, at Factoryville, of which William De Groot was chairman, and Griffin Tompkins Secretary; one at the Fountain House, on the North Shore, at which Colonel Nathan Barrett presided, and Denyse Denyse acted as Secretary; and another at Bodine's Tavern, Castleton Corners, of which Henry C. Hedley was Chairman, and J. A. Hull Secretary. From that time on it was common for two or three meetings a night to be held in the county.

The following committee was appointed to select candidates for county offices: John N. Tooker, Jacob Crocheron, Tunis Egbert, Peter Post, and Henry T. Heberton, of Northfield; Isaac R. Housman, John Vanderbilt, Abraham Crocheron, William De Groot and Cornelius V. B. Corsen, of Castleton; and Edward Perine, John B. Simonson, Joseph Barton, Henry Miller and Richard Jackson, of Westfield.

Resolutions bearing upon the issues of the day were adopted, one of which we copy because of its oddity at this time:

"Resolved, That John Q. Adams is unfit to govern a free people—because his education at foreign courts has rendered his habits and principles uncongenial with our institutions, and the spirit of our democratic Constitution, and because the feelings of aristocracy which he there so early imbibed, have entirely disqualified him from

Digitized by Google

respecting the Supremacy of the People, and that we feel the liberty of our country in jeopardy controlled by a man under the influence of Foreign Powers."

Dr. Charles H. Havens, Dr. John S. Westervelt, Charles N. Baldwin, and T. S. Kingsland, were appointed a committee to prepare an address to the electors of Richmond County. Their chief duty was to offset the charges made against General Jackson by the Federalists, who accused him of being guilty of "falsehood, villainy, treason and murder." They also claimed that his mother was "a mulatto of very low character."

The campaign grew more exciting with each day. The Federalists started a party paper, Nicholas Crocheron, of Northfield, the Federal leader in the county, being the prime mover.

Beside Jackson and Calhoun, for President and Vice-President, Martin Van Buren was nominated by the Democrats for Governor, Enos T. Throop for Lieutenant-Governor; Jacob Crocheron, of Northfield, for Congress; John Vanderbilt, of Castleton, for Assembly; Harminus Cropsey, of Southfield, for Sheriff; Richard Jackson, of Westfield, for County Clerk; and John Mersereau, of Westfield; Daniel Wandal, of Southfield; Joseph Ludlow, of Castleton, and William Post, of Northfield, for Coroners. The Federalists nominated Anthony Johnson, for Assembly; Nicholas Crocheron for Sheriff; Walter Betts for County Clerk, and Stephen Crocheron, Richard S. Cary, Israel Oakley and Jedediah Winant for Coroners.

Just prior to the election, from among the scores of resolutions adopted by both parties, we copy one which spoke the sentiments of the Westfield Democrats:

"Resolved, That we will, in an honorable and fearless manner, exert every nerve to place the farmer of Tennessee, Andrew Jackson, at the helm of our national vessel, having the utmost confidence in his ability to bring the gallant ship off the rocks and quicksands on which she has been laboring for the past four years, under the management of that unskilful helmsman, John Quincy Adams, and his mad-brained pilot, Henry Clay, who prayed for war, for pestilence, for famine, or any other scourge, rather than the power should fall into the hands of a Military Chieftain."

"On Wednesday evening," November 4th, says the local paper, "our polls closed throughout the State, giving the friends of the Patriot Farmer an overwhelming majority. A much greater triumph than the most sanguine friends of Jackson ever anticipated. Our enemies are cast down and dejected; we feel too highly gratified to condole with them." In this county the Democrats elected all their candidates, with the exception of County Clerk; Walter Betts, the Federalist, being elected by seventeen majority.

On the 4th of March, following, (1829), two inaugural celebrations

Digitized by Google

were held on Staten Island, the accounts of which we copy from the *Richmond Republican:*

"Some of the friends of General Jackson met at Richmond to commemorate his inauguration to the first office in the People's gift. The room was neatly decorated with flags and evergreens, and a sumptuous entertainment was prepared by Mr. Joshua Mersereau. After the cloth was removed, and the wine had begun its merry course around the festive board, the following regular toasts were drunk:

"1. Our Country.—The Glorious Temple of Liberty; so firm is its foundation and so solid its structure, that its base will never be shaken, or its beauty effaced, by the storms of Despotism or the waves of Time.

"2. The President of the United States, General Andrew Jackson: Too noble to truckle for power, and too patriotic to refuse it, when tendered by the people.

"3. The Vice-President of the United States, John C. Calhoun, Esq.; May his virtuous patriotism and integrity secure to him the applause of a grateful people, and his steadfast adherence to the path of political rectitude.

"4. The 4th of March, 1829: The American people again about to verify the truth of the assertion, that heroism in the field is not incompatible with the qualities of the statesman.

"5. The memory of Thomas Jefferson, the immortal author of the Declaration of Independence.

"6. Old Hickory: The loftiest tree in the political forest; may its roots be nourished by every State, and its branches yield good and wholesome fruit.

"7. The memory of Daniel D. Tompkins: Once the pride of our State. May his name and services ever be remembered with enthusiastic emotions of gratitude.

"8. The Ebony and Topaz party: Those of them who have been mean enough to slander, will be mean enough to beg.

"9. The memory of DeWitt Clinton: The patriot, the statesman, and the friend; a grateful people will always cherish a remembrance of his invaluable public service.

"10. His Excellency, Governor Van Buren: His talent and integrity as a statesman, have secured him the choice of the people; his fidelity as a partisan will eminently entitle him to a distinguished situation in the cabinet.

"11. The Army of the United States: Always ready to give our invaders the unerring stroke of a Freeman's sword.

"12. Our Navy: The right arm of the country. Mars will surely foster Neptune.

"13. The Fair of our Native Land: May the first word they teach their offspring be Washington, the second, Jackson."

Volunteer toasts were offered by General Van Buren, Dr. John T.

Digitized by Google

Harrison, Jacob Crocheron, Dr. M. Freeman, T. S. Kingsland, Captain William Van Buren, Lieutenant Timothy G. Benham, U. S. N., Dr. Moses Van Buren, William M. Hanum and Mr. R. Decker.

The event was also celebrated at Tompkinsville, the account of which we copy from the local paper:

"The National Standard was displayed at sunrise from most of the public places in the village, in honor of Andrew Jackson. At seven o'clock p.m., the citizens sat down to a most splendid supper, prepared by Mr. John V. Fountain; the table groaned under the weight of fowl, fish and flesh, and all the delicacies of the season. In the centre of the table was planted a hickory tree, tastefully decorated, with evergreens twined around, and bales of cotton suspended from its branches, emblematical of the means used for the defence of New Orleans."

A long list of toasts was offered, similar to those made at Richmond, and among the resident speakers were Dr. John A. Dooley, D. Simonson, James Swan, Robert M. Hazard, Henry Drisler, Philpot Wolfe and A. G. Dixon.

Not only in the State, but in Old Richmond, the Democratic party was badly split up in the next campaign, and the Federalists were jubilant. John Vanderbilt (whose residence stood where the Athletic Club house is located, at the Cove, West New Brighton), was the regular candidate for Assemblymen, and Dr. John T. Harrison (who lived at Elm Park), was nominated as an independent, and was endorsed by the Federalists.

The Democratic General Committee—composed of John Mersereau, James A. Housman, Matthew Decker, Cornelius Disosway, and Caleb Ward, Jr., of Westfield; James G. Perine, Simon Bush, Jacob Crocheron, Reuben Decker and Richard Crocheron, of Northfield; Edward Perine, Samuel Barton, Daniel W. Lake, William Miller, and Benjamin Simonson, Jr., of Southfield; and Isaac R. Housman, William DeGroot, Benjamin Wood, Nathan Barrett and C. V. N. Corson, of Castleton—did all in its power to re-establish peace, but without avail. Dr. Harrison was elected. Commenting on the election the *Republican* said:

"The election in New York has resulted in the choice of eight of the regularly nominated candidates to the Assembly, two of the Tammany split, and one of the mechanics' or workingmen's ticket. It is not necessary at this time to give their names, as they have already become familiar to our readers. There is enough, however, to show the triumph of principle. The whole number of delegates are thoroughly Jackson Democrats, notwithstanding the various efforts of the coalition, with their auxiliaries, the anti-masonic, the anti-auction, and the infidel. We have an overwhelming majority in the House * * * In Richmond County, Dr. John T. Harrison received

Digitized by Google

a majority of two hundred and fifty-eight over the regularly nominated candidate."

In 1829, the Federalists, as a national party, saw that something must be done to retain the organization, and it was decided that the name must be changed. The word "republican" was used by the Democrats, and had done much to win popularity for that party. So the assumption of the name of "Washington Federalists" was no mean finesse in point of cunning. Washington's was a sainted name. No sound was so sweet to the American people, and there can be no doubt that the stratagem had some effect upon the public mind. It served to hold the Federal party together, and no doubt brought to it a few adherents. Men of sanguine but reflecting minds would naturally feel themselves impelled toward any political party whose members claimed to be the exclusive followers of the great Father of his country. Though the title qualified, it could not destroy the reproach which the administration of John Quincy Adams had brought upon the name of Federalist. It failed to give them a majority in the nation. After having been for several years loudly trumpeted through the country, printed in the newspapers, stamped upon badges, and repeated in ten thousand popular harangues, it was finally discarded to give place to another.

The next name which the Federalists sought out was that of "Federal Republicans." The appellation proved as poor a passport to popular favor as the one they had just cast aside. This name was much in vogue during the last part of Mr. Madison's administration and the early part of Mr. Monroe's. "National Republicans" was the next title adopted by the managers of the party. The local paper, after mentioning, with keen sarcasm, a list of old Federal leaders, who were posing as Republicans—a word at that time synonymous only with democracy—commented thus: "For the principles of a party you must look to their head. Their political creed is to be learned from the responses of him whom they have set up as a leader and a mouthpiece."

The year 1830, was one of considerable activity among the politicians of Staten Island, although the population was but a trifle over six thousand. The State Senate, on the nomination of Acting Governor Throop, appointed Richard Crocheron Surrogate of Richmond County, in the place of Judge John Garretson, who was removed.

In the following Spring, the Democrats were again united and won, Dr. Harrison being defeated for Supervisor by Isaac R. Houseman. But the "Anniversary election" found John Vanderbilt the candidate for the Assembly by the regular Democracy, with Dr. John T. Harrison again against him. Both issued public appeals "to the electors of the County of Richmond," equally convincing, and their respective friends made great efforts for their success at the ballot-

Digitized by Google

box. Dr. Harrison was re-elected, defeating his opponent by forty-two votes.

The Federalists and Independent Democrats held a convention in Richmond Village, and the following resolutions were adopted:

"'Resolved, That the creation of unnecessary offices, and the useless increase of agents in the public service, are the usual concomitants of a bad government; that they are anti-democratic, and dangerous to true liberty; and that the increase of public offices at Quarantine, from two formerly stationed there, to seven now employed, is not called for either by the exigencies of our commerce or the wants of our revenue.

"'Resolved, That the conducts of certain subordinates in the Custom House, stationed at Quarantine, in attempting to interfere with our concerns, and to control our elections and appointments to office, is highly improper, and ought to be resisted, especially as they claim, ex-officio, an exemption from taxation.

"'Resolved, That a committee of three persons be appointed to make immediate representations to the Treasury Department at Washington, of the conduct of these men, official and otherwise, and to request the removal or transfer of a part of them, as unnecessary to the public service, and as being inimical to the quiet and welfare of Richmond County.

"'Resolved, That the payment of three dollars a day to the officers of revenue at Quarantine, for twelve months, when they are actually employed but five months, only renders their office a sinecure and their salaries a pension, and imposes a useless burden upon the Government, and the people of Richmond County.'"

The "third party" held its convention, and from the published report we quote: "At a meeting of the delegates of the Mechanics, Farmers and Workingmen from the Counties of Kings, Richmond and Rockland, composing the Second Congressional District, held at the Village Hall, in the Village of Brooklyn, Kings County, on the 12th day of October, 1830, Major James Guyon, of Richmond, was called to the chair, and Jeffrey Smith appointed Secretary. John Wycoff, whom the papers called "a French Tory," was nominated.

For a decade political affairs drifted. In the meantime, the Federal party, with its various other titles, had practically ceased to exist, and in its place was an organization known again for many years afterward as the Whigs. The only difference, however, between the Federal and Whig parties was their names. The same line of policy was carried out.

In 1835, the Van Buren campaign was one which our older citizens remember to have been very earnest. The Richmond County *Free Press* of that date says:

"It was warmly and vehemently recommended by the leading Whig papers to hold no converse, to transact no business, to have no

Digitized by Google

dealings, no matter of what kind, with Democrats. It was not enough for the Whigs that they obeyed to the letter the injunction of these papers to sweep every Democrat from office. This was but part of their system of rewarding their friends and punishing their enemies. It was but the beginning of a course which they had marked out for themselves, a course which fortunately for the country they had not the power to carry into effect. Their whole system has been a system of coercion. The very panic by which they succeeded for a time in destroying confidence and credit, was a part of this system, for they gave out that unless their doctrines and views became general, pecuniary distress and ruin would be the necessary consequence; or in other words, that unless the people became Whigs, they would become bankrupts. They went upon the principle of employing all the means in their power, whether lawful and just it mattered not—by which they could make proselytes to their cause. Those of them having persons in their employ, insisted that unless they supported the Whig ticket, they should be immediately discharged, and the alternative of Whiggery or starvation was proposed to many an honest and industrious but humble man."

In 1837, the *Richmond County Mirror* made its appearance, and we may judge of the political situation by an extract from its leading editorial:

"In a community so small as this, and so equally divided in its political sentiments, it is evident that a paper devoted to either of the great political parties which now divide the people of this country, could not anticipate a patronage co-extensive with its necessary expenditures. Apart from this—if impartially considered, the so-called political papers of the present day teem with such tortured and one-sided statements, even of those things which fall within their especial province, that the inquirer after political facts meets on every side with continual reverses, which finally engender fixed disgust or blind acquiescence; and he who should have been a champion of his country, sickens in the vain attempt to see her as she is. Skilful politicians cloak their deep designs, and only act with openness and vigor when success is certain and applause is sure to follow. Political journalists often times deceive themselves and others, and—in the vain-glorious attempts to play the general—conceal from the 'rank and file' of their partisans all such intelligence as may tend to exhibit the deformities and the pregnable points of the party to which they are attached."

The election returns for the year 1837, are recorded thus by the *Richmond County Mirror:* "Israel Oakley, the Whig Assemblyman, is elected by about ten majority. Andrew B. Decker, the Van Buren candidate for Sheriff, is certainly elected. Walter Betts, the Whig County Clerk, is re-elected—no opposition; and it is supposed the V. B. Coroners are all in. So much for our higgledy-piggeldy, mixed-

Digitized by Google

up little county. Our citizens go for the best men, and kick at everything like party discipline." On the following year, (1838), the Whigs had thirty-four majority in the county, thus showing how closely contested was the Island at that time.

Probably the most unique incident in the political history of Richmond County, happened during the campaign of 1844. James K. Polk was the Democratic candidate for President, and Henry Clay that of the Whigs. There was a "betting club," with its headquarters at old Nautilus Hall, in Tompkinsville, and everyone who wished to back up his argument by wagering his money, could be accommodated at that place. The Whigs were very noisy in the early part of the campaign, and were sure of electing Henry Clay. The Democrats were a little backward at first; but the bluster of their opponents had the effect of setting them in motion. The Democrats also nominated William L. Marcy for Governor, and Henry C. Murphy for Congress. Both of these men were popular on Staten Island, and their nominations created a great deal of enthusiasm.

Governor Marcy was recognized as the "Farmers' candidate," and a farmers' celebration and procession, was arranged in accordance with "the eternal fitness of things." The procession contained scores of ox-teams, many of them "four-in-hand," and all sorts of farmers' equipages were seen along the line. The head of the profession started from Nautilus Hall, and the various vehicles fell into line. It passed up Bay street to Vanderbilt avenue, Clifton, and thence in the direction of the "Dutch Farms." When the head of the column reached the Clove road at Concord, the rear was just leaving Nautilus Hall. Ray Tompkins was the grand marshal, and his aides were Captain Richard Christopher, Dr. Ephraim Clark and John H. Van Clief.

The procession reached Richmond at noon, and many who participated in it attended a grand reception in Richmond County Hall, given in honor of Captain Rynders, of the famous Empire Battery. Captain Rynders, at that time, was the Tammany leader, and his battery was the "crack" marching club of the country. It numbered over one thousand members. It had chartered a steamboat, and after passing through the Staten Island Sound, entered the Fresh Kill Creek, and steamed up to "Richmond Towne." It was the first steamboat that ever reached Richmond. A grand mass meeting was held during the afternoon, and addresses were delivered from the Court House steps. The members of the battery dined in Richmond County Hall, after which they gave an exhibition drill.

Passing hastily along, we reach the end of another decade, full of trials and tribulations for the politicians. In February, 1848, the *Staten Islander* published a long address, entitled "A Word in Season to the Electors of Richmond County." It began as follows:

"The School District Census, just taken, would have been a highly interesting and important work, if the capacity and parsimony of

Digitized by Google

our Board of Supervisors had not presented an insuperable obstacle to this, as to all other demonstrations of human progress by which any attempt is made to penetrate the miasma which Staten Island seems doomed to breathe." Then, after delivering a severe lecture to the officials, the editor concludes:

"Now, this is only a specimen of the policy that is every day further and further impairing the public credit. But we have no other motive in making this publication than to call public attention at any time to the reform in our county affairs which has been, for years, so imperiously demanded. To mention a few instances, is therefore sufficient. The town meetings are only a few weeks off, and in the meantime let us resolve to support a new man, and a good man, from every town. It will not do now to manage affairs as they were managed twenty years ago. We want not only new men, but a new kind of men—straight-forward, clear-headed men—men of real business tact and capacity, and not mere tad-poles of office who will be afraid of acting uprightly lest they should lose their mite of popularity. The people never have confidence in these limping, dodging, slow-go-motive nobodies. A man, who is a man, will always command respect."

The early fifties witnessed some desperate struggles between the Whigs and Democrats on Staten Island. Both lacked discretion and policy. The Whig party was gradually becoming demoralized in the County, and the leaders were discussing the question of allowing the local ticket to go by default. Just prior to the time for holding the county conventions, however, there suddenly occurred a split among the Democrats over the question of slavery. The two factions were far more bitter toward each other, than they were toward the Whigs.

The leaders were John C. Thompson, of Tompkinsville, for one, and Colonel Nathan Barrett, of the North Shore, for the other. The faction known as "Soft Shells" favored slavery, while the other, known as "Hard Shells," opposed it. As is well known, factions always fight more bitterly than parties, and this was a genuine family quarrel. Each faction called its convention at Richmond County Hall on the same day. The "Soft Shells" had hired the hall from four o'clock to six, in the afternoon, and then they were to surrender the premises to the "Hard Shells." But the convention got into such a row over the adoption of the slavery extension resolutions, that it was half-past seven before a message from the "outside world" could reach it, and this was effected by the angry "Hard Shells" bursting in the door. The late Dr. Jewison, of Westfield, presided over the "Soft Shell" convention, and when he saw the door coming down, he proceeded to intermix physical force with Parliamentary law.

Almost the first of the "Hard Shells" to enter the hall, after the door tumbled in, was Isaac Mersereau, of Westfield. Dr. Jewison started for him, and the two had a very lively time of it. But "Uncle Ike," as he was familiarly called, evidently felt that he was not only

Digitized by Google

fighting for a principle, but his rights also, and proved to be more than a match for the chairman of the interrupted "Soft Shells." The Doctor drew a revolver, and was about to end "Uncle Ike's" physical and political career, when the latter closed in on his adversary, and knocked him down. It was not generally known that Dr. Jewison wore a wig; but he did, nevertheless, and it is safe to assume that that ornamental appendage saved his life. As he fell to the floor, "Uncle Ike" was in the act of jumping on him, when he was suddenly startled by the sight of the Doctor's perfectly hairless head.

"My heavens! what have I done?" exclaimed "Uncle Ike." "I have knocked the whole top of his head off! What have I done! O, what have I done!"

By this time the "Hards" and the "Softs" were so badly mixed up that it was impossible to distinguish one from the other. Several of the "Soft Shell" delegates were opposed to fighting, and jumped out of the windows to the piazza, and thence to the ground, to escape being forced to pay a penalty for trifling so long with the foe. Some of them were set upon, however, on reaching ground, and had to fight for their lives. There are men living in this county to-day who carry enmity in their hearts as the result of that conflict.

It was hinted that not a few Whigs took a hand with the "Hard Shells," and helped them to gain rightful possession of their property, and at the same time enable them to place a second Democratic ticket in the field, thereby helping to secure the election of their own candidates. When the fight had ended, the "Hard Shells" rose, Phoenix-like, and organized their convention. Captain John Bennett, of Northfield, was the chairman, and Dr. R. Henry Golder, of Westfield, the secretary. It was but natural that the Whigs should have carried almost everything in the county that campaign. Their convention was held a few days later, in the same room, and William H. Vanderbilt was the chairman.

The "Hard Shells" nominated Joseph Egbert, of Garretsons, for Congress. He was quite popular also with the "Softs," and had many warm friends among the Whigs. He was elected and served the district one term.

The *Staten Islander*, a Democratic paper, was evidently far from hopeful, in 1855. In an editorial on "The Confusion of Tongues," it had this to say:

"How the 'Hards' and the 'Softs' and the 'Greens' and the 'Blues' are ever to lay down their silly feuds, and unite together in support of those great principles they all profess, we cannot say. But as sure as to-morrow's sun will rise from the thick darkness of to-night, so sure will the perennial fires of Democracy warm again the skies from which they are now hidden."

About this time the Know-nothing party was waking up the politicians of both the old parties. It was a dangerous element in Amer-

Digitized by Google

ican politics, because it was un-American in both form and principle. It was a secret political Order, and the danger it caused to our free institutions is clearly shown by the following paragraph from the *Evening Post*, reported in the United States Supreme Court, before Justice Betts:

"KNOW-NOTHING SWEARING.—The case of Hawley against Bagley for non-application of the Patent law, to a patent for the 'improvement in pen and pencil cases.' A singular feature of the case transpired yesterday, in the testimony of the witness Gregory, who swore that when a Know-nothing was admitted to the second degree he becomes a party to an oath which binds him to stand by a brother of the same grade, regardless of consequences, even as a witness in any court. This may be safely regarded as a fully developed phase of dark lanternism."

Commenting upon this, the *Staten Islander* says: "Have we any such Know-Nothings in this county? Have we any men who would commit perjury to save a brother of the Order from State Prison? Are there any constables among us who would pick a jury to please a brother of the Order who was a party to a suit, and who would name members of the same lodge to try the case? Truly, the experience of the last two years shows that all these questions may be answered in the affirmative. What a commentary on Know-Nothingism!"

The Abolition element was growing stronger with each year, and Dr. R. H. Thompson, Health Officer of the Port, managed a paper at Tompkinsville, called *The Chronicle*, in its interest. Notwithstanding this journal claimed to be neutral, it was exceedingly radical on the negro question.

There stood for many years prior to 1888, a plain, two-story frame building, on a wide, sloping lawn, at the junction of Bay street and Simonson avenue, Clifton. It was in this building that the Republicans established what was practically their national headquarters in their first campaign, that of 1856. It was there that thousands of place-hunters sought out the candidate of the new party and swore allegiance, no doubt in anticipation of reward, for it did look at one period of the campaign as if General Frémont would be elected President of the United States.

About twelve years ago, when the Frémonts resided on Staten Island, the writer used to meet with them frequently. Chatting with an old citizen one day, as the distinguished couple passed along the street, we spoke of General Frémont's defeat in a casual manner, and asked if he remembered anything about what transpired in the building, to which we have referred.

Our friend then told us that the General leaned heavily on his wife for guidance and support in almost everything. He said the defeat was a great blow to General Frémont; but his wife's characteristic firmness aided very much to alleviate the sting of defeat.

Digitized by Google

The slavery question was uppermost in the minds of our people in 1856, and, to give a specimen of the arguments of the day, we reproduce in part an editorial from the *Staten Islander* of that date:

"Many of the Northern laborers are opposed to the immigration of European whites, on the ground that the emigrant reduces the value of labor. What then would be the effect of throwing one or two hundred thousand blacks among us annually? It certainly would have a two-fold effect—it would reduce the value of labor among us, at the same time, by this very loss of labor to the South, increase the cost of supporting the families at the North, through the increased value of the necessaries of life produced alone by the South, such as cotton, rice, tobacco, &c. An increased cost of living on the one hand, and a reduced price for labor on the other, would thus be the natural effect of breaking up the Union and separating one section from the other."

Notwithstanding the election of James Buchanan to the Presidency, and John C. Breckenridge to the Vice-Presidency, the Democratic party soon became demoralized, and by the time that the end of that Administration was reached, the country was involved in the greatest war of modern times. Thousands of men left the old Democratic party to join the new Republican organization, because the old flag had been fire on! That was the fatal mistake of the South. Had it not made this error, there can be no doubt that peace would have been re-established, even after John Brown's raid at Harper's Ferry and the other breaches of the country's peace before open hostilities.

Here on Staten Island a meeting was held by the leading citizens, appealing to Governor Wise, of Virginia, not to treat the John Brown affair in a serious manner. It was claimed that if Brown should be held as a fanatic instead of being regarded as a leader of men and a moulder of public sentiment, his murderous movements would soon cease to agitate the people of the South, as well as all other parts of the country: in fact, all would soon cease to give it serious attention. But Governor Wise thought differently, and civil war soon spread its black wings over the land. The meeting alluded to was held in the brick building in West New Brighton, now occupied by Messrs. J. F. Smith & Co., as a real estate office, and it was presided over by Captain Richard Christopher. Democrats and Republicans mingled together on this occasion, to accomplish the laudable undertaking.

As a national party, the war ruined the Democracy. It has never been able to win back its lost ground. The organization on Staten Island has generally responded when the ballot-boxes were opened, but its career has been checkered and uncertain. Generally more fortunate than the Republicans, so far as local offices were concerned, it nevertheless looked with longing eyes on the National Capitol, for many years. During the war, Democrats and Republicans left their

Digitized by Google

Island homes together, and, with rifle and knapsack, marched off to the battle-fields of the sunny South.

The war over, hundreds came back to their homes, to resume their old occupations. Then there came a new era in politics. It is not our province at this time to say whether or not the Democracy had been placed in a false position by the war, yet many who had always voted with it, for some reason cast their votes with the Republican party. It was indeed uphill work for the old party for some time; but a combination of circumstances allowed it to regain a temporary foothold.

During and after the war, many strangers came to Staten Island, the greater portion of whom voted the Democratic ticket. Richmond in time gained the title of "the banner democratic county" and, provided good candidates were nominated, the Democrats could count upon a majority ranging from one thousand to fifteen hundred. But, once in a while, when unpopular nominations were made, the Republicans received the support of the independent element, and elected their candidates by no mean majorities.

The politics of the county, however, grew gradually shady, and one party could not consistently accuse the other of tactics not unpracticed in its own councils. In both, elements had gained absolute control, unquestionably to the detriment of the county and its institutions.

Time naturally brought changes in the leadership of both parties; the Republicans changing more frequently than their adversaries. Nearly all the men who labored earnestly to reorganize the Democracy, immediately after the war, have passed away. Some of their names are scarcely familiar to the average voter on the Island to-day.

In the early seventies, John G. Vaughn, a native of Ireland, who had come to the Island when a mere lad, entered politics in a manner characteristic of his people. He was a hard-working mechanic, and when his adopted country called for volunteers, he took command of a company and served on the battle-fields of the South. For more than a decade, after he succeeded in getting control of the Democratic organization, he held absolute sway in the county, and was popular with the majority. But, at last, adopting measures undemocratic in both theory and practice, he met his defeat. That practice was the arrangement of business belonging to the public convention in private caucus. Such a practice, when carried to excess, is un-American, and is sure to cause the downfall of any leader or party which employs it.

Mr. Vaughn, when in what he deemed to be the very height of his power and glory, one day lost his grip on the Democratic organization in a very peculiar manner. The county convention had been called at Richmond County Hall, in Tompkinsville. A caucus was in progress several doors away from the convention hall, to which only those who were intimate with the leader were admitted. All others who had been called to the convention hall passed away the long hours as best

Digitized by Google

they could in neighboring places. A group of newspaper reporters, having grown tired of what they considered a useless delay and waste of time, determined upon doing something that would put a stop to it. They accordingly went into the convention hall, took their seats at the table, and applauded and cheered until they made the welkin ring.

Almost instantly the idle delegates began flocking into the hall, thinking they had been left out. But, on learning the joke, they joined the reporters in the unusual demonstration. All but the caucusing delegates gathered in the hall. Some one mounted the platform, just to carry the "joke" a little further, and called the convention to order; and then, before Mr. Vaughn and his immediate friends "up the street" were aware of what was going on, all the officers of the convention had been selected, and everything was in readiness for the nomination of candidates.

Such a proceeding may not have been strictly legal; but it was too formidable an organization for any one man, or even a few "party managers" to attempt to overthrow, especially at a time when peace and harmony were the essential elements so greatly desired. From that hour Mr. Vaughn's foothold grew less certain, and the time eventually came when the natural undercurrents in local politics left him, like many another, without a party, save in the sense that there was one of which he was an individual member.

The campaign of 1884 will be remembered as one of the most important in the political history of Staten Island. It was the memorable contest between Grover Cleveland and James G. Blaine. The result of the election hung in the balance, and the generation of Republicans then managing their party's affairs in the county awoke to a terrible realization of possible defeat.

When the time came for the County Canvassers to count the ballots and make a final decision, it dawned upon the whole country that the result of the election of President and Vice-President depended entirely upon the vote in Richmond County. The little village of Richmond was the centre of attraction of the whole country. Groups of men gathered about the streets and excitedly discussed the question from their own interested standpoints, while the room in which the canvassers were counting the vote, (now occupied by copyists in the Surrogate's office), was crowded to suffocation.

Days were spent in excitement before the end was reached, and he who afterward proved to be the great disorganizer of the Democratic party, was declared to have a majority in Richmond County of twenty-two hundred and forty votes over James G. Blaine. Once before and twice since that time, Grover Cleveland has received good majorities in this county.

It is an interesting incident to recall, that the nomination of Rutherford B. Hayes for the Presidency depended entirely upon the result

Digitized by Google

of the Republican primary meeting in the Fifth election district of the Town of Castleton, in 1876, for it was at that time that George William Curtis, after a spirited contest, secured delegates, which gave him a majority in the county convention, as a delegate to the State convention, and from there to the National convention, where his services were so greatly needed for Mr. Hayes. There can be no doubt that Mr. Curtis's action in that convention nominated Mr. Hayes.

One of the greatest scandals that ever cursed the politics of Staten Island, came through the common practice of both parties, in their greedy efforts to secure the votes of the inmates of the Sailors' Snug Harbor. That the most corrupt practices existed, was an "open secret" for years, and the cry of fraud generally went up on the day after the election from the defeated party, the other comforting itself in the belief that "might makes right," and that to the victor belongs the spoils! It is a notorious fact that to a certain member of each party was assigned for years the duty of purchasing the Harbor votes, and both General Committees considered it one of their most important necessities to make financial preparations for that purpose.

This practice was at last made a "handle" of by those who started an alleged reform movement in the county, and the result was that the voters in the Harbor, honest and dishonest alike, were deprived of the highest privilege of American citizenship. They were disfranchised by an act of the Legislature.

The last campaign in which the inmates of the Sailors' Snug Harbor voted, was an unfortunate one for the Democracy of Staten Island. While certificates were issued to the candidates of that party for the various offices, all but one—that of County Judge—were in time forfeited. The candidate for School Commissioner, Hubbard R. Yetman, surrendered the office without any contest, and the Assemblyman, Michael McGuire, held his seat until a few days before the close of the session, when it was surrendered to Michael Conklin, the Republican candidate. This was the result of a spirited contest. Both men drew salaries as Assemblymen, while the State paid the expenses of the contest!

There was every indication that a famous fight would be made for possession of the County Clerkship. John J. Kenney, who was installed into the office, held it for six months. His rival, John H. Elsworth, carried the matter up to the Supreme Court. On the day before Mr. Kenney surrendered the office to his rival, it was announced that he was sure of winning the suit, and had not the slightest intention of acceding to the demands of Mr. Elsworth.

The sudden change in the situation puzzled the people of Staten Island. It became known, however, that, if the case proceeded in Court, a certain politician, who had manipulated affairs, would be placed upon the witness stand, and there compelled to expose his own

Digitized by Google

acts. It is claimed that Mr. Kenney was influenced to that extent that he gave up the contest to save another.

Shortly after the retirement of John G. Vaughn, as the leader of the Democracy, the management of the party passed into the hands of Nicholas Muller, who had but recently come to the Island. Coming from one of the shrewdest political schools in the world—that of Tammany Hall—and having been a leader in political affairs for many years, Mr. Muller at once set to work to reconstruct the Democratic organization, according to his own theory of propriety, and he brought down upon his own head the severest abuse imaginable.

HON. NICHOLAS MULLER.

But Mr. Muller's fighting qualities proved of great value to him in the contest. Notwithstanding the Democratic organization became demoralized and almost totally disorganized, in consequence of a split—the independent element attacking Mr. Muller with great earnestness — he never for a moment thought the time had come to surrender.

Surely no man could accept reverses more philosophically than he, and none receive the results of victory more gracefully. As a political leader he may be considered a great success. This is proven by the fact, that by standing his ground with the solid Republican party arrayed against him, his own forces disorganized, new hostile factions springing up around him in every direction, he carried on his fight until he himself, as a candidate for Congressional honors, in 1898, carried the county by a majority of twenty-seven hundred and twenty-five. He was re-elected in November, 1900, by a good majority.

For the past few years there has been great disturbance in the politics of Staten Island. Considerable of this has been caused by new voters, many of whom have acted with the Republican party, but the great majority have branched out for themselves. A memorable contest was that of 1897, the first election under the charter of Greater New York. The Democrats carried every office in the

Digitized by Google

Borough of Richmond but that of President. Ex-Assemblyman George Cromwell held the regular Republican nomination for the office, in connection with those of three or four well-organized factions, while Dr. John L. Feeny, a life-time Republican, who had but recently gone over to the Democracy, was nominated by the Democrats. Mr. Cromwell had a majority of four votes; but the great number of defective ballots led to a struggle that the present generation will never forget. The contest dragged along for months, going from one court to another, until at last Mr. Cromwell was declared the winner and he entered upon the duties of the office.

Staten Island is Democratic to-day, under favorable circumstances, by about fifteen hundred majority. The election of 1899 was phenomenal for its large Democratic majority. There is a large independent vote in the county, which goes almost solidly with the party that displays the most respectability at the ballot-box. The Republicans have a strong local organization, with friendly State and National Administrations to back it, but it has been greatly weakened of late by internal dissensions. It is the simple truth that the future success of both parties depends entirely upon the honesty and integrity of their leaders, the common sense and fairness of their principles, and the loyalty and fidelity of the rank and file.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVI.

OLD POST ROUTES AND FERRIES.

THE first definite statement that historical writers have been able to make, relative to the existence of a ferry from any point on Staten Island and the City of New York, was early in the year 1681. It is known that the Indians maintained ferries to various points opposite the Island previous to that date, and that the settlers were permitted to use them when on friendly terms with the natives. The following is from the *New York Post Boy*, of November 10, 1755:

"Publick Notice is hereby given to all Gentlemen Travelers and others, That MARTIN DUCKET has rented the noted Ferry House on Staten Island, lately kept by John Watson, where he intends to keep the best Entertainment for Man and Horse, with three good Boats constantly attending said Ferry to and from New York and Staten Island, in company with Scotch Johnny of said City, Tavern-Keeper; as also a commodious Stable, with all kinds of Provender, for Horses, &c., near the White Hall Slip, where all Gentlemen Travelers may be assured of the best Entertainment for themselves and Horses; with the most careful and expeditious Passage across the Bay, or to Long-Island (if requir'd), by applying to said Scotch Johnny, near the White-hall ferry stairs, or said Ducket on Staten Island aforesaid: And in Case a Boat show'd be wanted in any Emergency, there shall be one in Readiness, on Notice Given to either of the Persons above mentioned."

At an early period Staten Island became a popular route with the rude stage-coaches of travel between New York and Philadelphia. This route was from what is now known as the "landing near the watering-place" (Tompkinsville), by way of the Richmond road to New Dorp, and down the Amboy road to Billopp's ferry. A crossing was made to Perth Amboy. We copy a notice of this route, published in 1753:

"A commodious stage-boat will attend at the City Hall slip, near the Half Moon battery, to receive goods and passengers, on Saturdays and Wednesdays, and on Mondays and Thursdays will set out for Perth Amboy Ferry; there a stage wagon will receive them and set out on Tuesdays and Fridays in the morning, and carry them to Cranberry, and then the same day, with fresh horses to Burlington, where a stage-boat receives them, and immediately sets out for Philadelphia."

Digitized by Google

The stage-boats of that remote period were the periauguas, or pirogues of the present day. They may be described as vessels without keels, heavy leeboards, two masts and two large sails. The improvement consisted in substituting these boats for the small sloops in service before, and were considered a great step in advance by the people at that time. From the old papers we learn that when the wind and weather permitted, the "outside passage" was made—that is, through the Narrows and around the Eastern side of the Island. At other times they took the more direct route and passed through the Kills and Sound. The passage by water all the way was very tedious and sometimes perilous, which led to the establishment of the stage-route through the Island. The following announcement appeared in a newspaper dated January 31, 1757:

"Whereas the Subscriber hath been instrumental of propagating a Stage between Philadelphia and New York, and by Experience, finding some Difficulty some Times to pass by Water from Amboy Ferry to New York; Notice is hereby given, That a Stage-wagon is erected, to proceed from Mr. Isaac Dote's opposite to Perth Amboy, on Monday the 17th Instant, and to pass through Staten Island, Load or no Load, to Mr. John Watson's, Mrs. Ducket's, and Mr. Vantile's, and on Tuesday proceed back to the aforesaid Dote's, and in like Manner every Day in the Week; when due Attendance will be given, and Passengers meet with the best of Usage by me.

"JOSEPH RICHARDS.

"N. B.—To hinder any Disputes or Resentments that may arise hereafter, I have thought fit to inform the Publick of my Price and Custom; Each Passenger to pay Three Shillings, before they proceed on their journey, and in Proportion for other Things, (except Letters, which are to be carried gratis.) Hoping therefore that all Well-wishers of such an Undertaking will give me the Encouragement it deserves, I remain

"Their very humble Servant, J. RICHARDS."

Joseph Richards states in another advertisement, that his charge of three shillings is the same whether passengers take the stage or leave it at either Watson's, Simonson's or Vantile's ferries. This is in July, 1757, when Ducket's seems to be occupied by Simonson. Richards also agrees to make good any damage caused by failing to take passengers through as he promises. He also states that he lives near the middle of the Island, "at the sign of the stage-waggon and horses." We are informed that this "sign" was near the Court House at Stony Brook. In 1761, he was still running the stage, and in a letter published in a newspaper in the city at that time, he states that his was the only "Stage-Waggon" on Staten Island.

It is related on good authority that "the perils of the passage from the 'Blazing Star,' (meaning the sign of a comet), being four or five

Digitized by Google

miles from the ferry at Staten Island, may be illustrated by the fact that the Baron De Kalb, when he was Colonel in January, 1768, was the only one of nine persons crossing in a scow, who was not frozen so as to lose life or limb.

There was another route to Philadelphia, which crossed from New York to Paulus Hook (Jersey City), where stages started, running down to Bergen Point, where they were taken across on large scows to the "Dutch Church" (now Port Richmond), whence they took the road to Blazing Star (Rossville), where they were again transported by scows across the Sound, and pursued thence their journey to Philadelphia. Improved accommodations and quicker time were demanded by the traveling public of those days, as well as at the present time, and, according to an old writer, "the ambition of those who served that public strove to answer that demand," as will be seen by the following unique announcement, still preserved at Richmond:

CUBBERLY HOUSE, NEAR ELM TREE LIGHT; ERECTED ABOUT 1690.

"This is to give Notice to the Publick, That The Stage-Waggon kept by John Burrowhill in Elm-Street in Philadelphia, and John Mersereau at the New Blazing Star, near New York intend to perform the journey from Philadelphia to New York in two days, also to continue Seven Months, viz.: From the 14th of April to the 14th of Nov. and the remaining five Months of the Year in three Days. The Waggons to be kept in good order, with sober Drivers. They purpose to set off from Philadelphia and Powles Hook on Mondays and Thursdays punctually at Sunrise, and be at Prince-Town the same Nights, and change passengers, and return to New-York and Philadelphia the following days; the Passengers are desired to cross Powles-Hook Ferry the evening before; the Waggon is not to stay after Sunrise; Price each Passenger from Powlas-Hook to Prince-Town, Ten Shillings, from thence to Philadelphia, Ten Shillings also; Three Pence Each Mile any Distance between. Any Gentlemen or Ladies that wants to go to Philadelphia can go in the stage and be at home in five Days and be two Nights and one day in Philadelphia to do business, or see the Market Days. All Gentlemen and Ladies who please

Digitized by Google

to favor us with their custom, may depend on due Attendance and civil Usage by those Humble Servants,

"June 23d, 1776. "JOHN MERSEREAU,
"JOHN BARROWHILL."

Contrary to the assertions of many writers, the stages and ferries ran in connection with Staten Island during the Revolution, as the following will prove:

"STATEN ISLAND, May 30, 1777.

"Next Tuesday being the third day of June instant, a Stage will set off from the place known by the name of Doyle's Ferry, rear of the Watering Place, (Tompkinsville), of Staten Island, now kept by Capt. William Leake, and will proceed to John Stillwell's Ferry, on the west side of the Island opposite Amboy, and continue the same every Tuesday and Saturday, and carry passengers at Eight Shillings each; and goods as low as possible. The best usage will be given, and great care taken of everything sent by the said waggon. The waggon will set off in the morning as soon as passengers arrive, agreeable to the tide."

A city paper on February 15, 1779, contained the following:

"To be sold, the noted and very commodious Ferry known by the name of Ryerson's ferry, at the east side of Staten-Island, and at the entrance of the Kills, it is a pleasant situation, and commands a great deal of business; there is one hundred acres of good land, and two orchards, a dwelling house with 5 rooms on the first floor, and 4 rooms on the second story, a garret, a cellar-kitchen and cellar, a well at the door, two new wharfs which form an exceeding fine harbor for ferry and other boats."

"STATEN ISLAND, Jan. 12, 1779.

"COMPLAINT having been made, that an exorbitant price is exacted by the different proprietors of the Ferry Boats, for the fare of the passengers between this Island and New-York. It is Brigadier General Leslie's orders that the boats shall ply at the following prices, viz.

"Two Shillings currency for each passenger.

"(Sic) Do. Six Do. for each Horse.

"A Boat to go off with six or more passengers, and on complaint being made of noncompliance with the above regulations, the offender shall forfeit the liberty of plying with his boat to and from this island.

"A. LESLIE, Brig. Gen."

Fragments on the same subject have been gleaned from various sources as follows:

"Frederickson owned a ferry at the Narrows in 1777, and for several years previous to that date. It was probably used to cross to Long Island. No stated ferry had been maintained here since the first few years of the present century"—(the Nineteenth.)

Digitized by Google

"A ferry was established across the Kill Van Kull from Staten Island to Bergen Point in 1764. It was at the present site of Port Richmond. In 1777 it was known as Decker's ferry; afterward it was called Ryerss's, and still later Mersereau's."

"In 1774, the New Blazing Star Ferry was occupied by Reuben Fitzrandolph. In the following year it was occupied by John Mersereau. It was occupied by Francis B. Fitch in 1827."

"In 1761, James Johnson ran a ferry to Staten Island."

"In 1762, Adonia Schuyler, of Elizabeth Point, owned a Ferry to Staten Island, together with a road or causeway from the Sound to the uplands on the Island. Schuyler died during the year mentioned. The ferry was spoken of by a writer about 1770 as 'a wretched, half-rotten ferry.'"

"The Amboy ferry, sometimes called Doty's, and sometimes Billopp's, was kept by Isaac Butler for forty years, beginning immediately after the Revolution and extending to the time of his death, about 1828."

"The ferry at the Narrows was known at different times as Watson's, Darby Doyle's, Ducket's, Cole's and Van Duzer's. It was known as Cole's ferry in 1777. In 1775, it was owned by Darby Doyle, the plant, including barn, storehouse, barracks, dock, garden and twenty acres of land."

"There were two ferries plying between the northeast part of the Island and New York from the middle of the last century. November 10, 1755, the ferry was 'continued to be kept by Otis Van Tyle at Statten Island and Abraham Bockee at Whitehall,' they having three boats for that purpose."

"The first steam ferry boat running here was the 'Nautilus.' She began running November 29, 1817. The following announcement was made in the newspapers of that day: 'The new Steam-Boat, intended to ply regularly between this city and Statten-Island, commenced running this morning. She is to start daily from White-Hall Dock, at the hours of 7, 10, 1, and 5. We under stand that she carries Passengers this day without charge."

There was little of special interest occurring during the following decade; but at the end of that time two steamboats were in operation on the Staten Island ferries, during a part of the year. They were the "Nautilus," Captain Robert Hazard, and the "Bolivar," Captain Oliver Vanderbilt. They advertised to leave Staten Island at 7, 8 and 10 a. m., and 12.30, 2.30, 4.30 and 6 p. m. Returning they left New York at 8 and 10 a. m., and 12.30, 2.30, 4.30, 5.30 and 7 p. m. The fare was 12½ cents. During the Winter season trips were not made so often, and the fare was twenty-five cents. The "Marco Bozzaris" was then a new steamboat, and she plied between the city and the Quarantine grounds every two hours.

In 1860, the steamers "Thomas Hunt" and "Flora" were making

Digitized by Google

six trips daily, on the North Shore ferry, the fare between the Island and city being six cents. At the same time the boats on the East Shore ferry were making trips every hour during the day, from 7 a. m., to 5 p. m. The Huguenot line was running between Mariners' Harbor and New York, four times a day, the boats employed being the "Red Jacket" and the "Kill Van Kull." About that time the "Westfield," "Clifton," "Thos. P. Way," "Southfield," "Hunchback," "Josephine" and "Sylph" were also employed on these ferry lines. Some of them were sold to the Government in 1861, to be used as transports in the war.

The North Shore Ferry Company was organized in the spring of 1860, although other ferry companies had served in their turn for many years. The latter obtained a charter as a stock company. Stock was taken in the new company by people living all along the North Shore from New Brighton to Mariners' Harbor, and a great deal of interest was manifested in the movement. Over thirty thousand dollars was subscribed at large and enthusiastic meetings, and the steamboats "Flora," and "Thomas Hunt" were purchased. The new organization was called the "People's Line," and was soon in successful operation, with the fare at six cents. At a later period the capital stock was increased to sixty thousand dollars, the number of stockholders being over three hundred. A great step in advance was the building of the "Pomona," by the company, and it became the pride of the place. "On the organization of the new company," says a writer of the period, "the old management reduced its fare from twelve cents to three cents; but the new company was the child of the people, and received their support. In 1864, the capital stock was raised to one hundred thousand dollars."

There have also been ferries across the Narrows and to Brooklyn, at various times.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVII.

FREEMASONRY ON STATEN ISLAND.

IT was left to the period of the Revolution to witness the first Masonic organization on Staten Island, when a Provisional Lodge convened in the old Guyon homestead, at New Dorp. It was composed of British soldiers and a few residents of the Island. Meetings were held there at odd intervals up to the time that Sir Guy Carleton ordered the evacuation of Staten Island.

The visit of British officers, in 1812, led to a final effort to organize a lodge at Tompkinsville. They were entertained at Nautilus Hall, and a few days later prominent Masons from the city also came to the Island. They had learned of the visit of the British officers, and had come down to assist in organizing a lodge.

So far as we have been able to learn, no formal attempt was made to organize a Masonic lodge on Staten Island during the war. But about two years after peace was once more established, and Governor Daniel D. Tompkins (who was Grand Master of the State), had come to Staten Island to reside, a meeting was held for that purpose in his residence on Fort Hill. Freemasonry was growing more and more unpopular, and it was decided "to abandon the project until some future day."

More than a year passed before the little band of zealous members of the Order made another attempt at organization. A meeting was held at the residence of General Van Buren, in Tompkinsville. Beside Master Masons, several prominent citizens were present, who were anxious to join the Order, and it was the first occasion in which any encouragement was given towards the organization of a lodge. From that night, however, Richmond Lodge was a possibility. Informal meetings were held at frequent intervals, one of the leading spirits of which was Philpot Wolfe, a member of Hibernia Lodge, of London.

An incident occurred at that time which seems exceedingly ludicrous at the present. A rumor was started that the Masons were organizing on Staten Island for the purpose of controlling all the offices, schools and churches, and that Masons were to be exempted from taxation. The feeling against Freemasonry became intense, and at the general election, handbills bearing coffins, red hands, skulls and cross-bones, and containing extravagant announcements, were

Digitized by Google

distributed by anti-masons throughout the Island, in such a manner as to lead the unsophisticated to believe that they came directly from the Masons themselves. The result was that every candidate, known to be a Mason, was defeated.

Organizations, something on the order of vigilant committees, were formed in various parts of the Island, and every man known to be in any manner in sympathy with Freemasonry, was called upon. Threats and persuasion were indulged in, according to circumstances, and for the time being the plan for organizing a lodge was almost totally abandoned. This barrier, however, was finally broken down by means of a public picnic, given by the projectors of the lodge, on the lawn of Nautilus Hall. A general invitation was given to the people of Staten Island, and while many looked upon it with suspicion and distrust, enough were present to learn something of the good fellowship of Freemasonry, and to carry the tidings to their skeptical neighbors.

The faithful band once more set to work to organize a lodge. Quiet meetings were held in the private parlors of the various gentlemen interested, and a room on the top floor of Nautilus Hall was rented. It was fitted up as well as circumstances would permit.

The night of the organization of Richmond Lodge was a time that deserves a prominent place in the annals of Staten Island. It was a great event. At the banquet given in Nautilus Hall, in honor of the occasion, the Chaplain of the Grand Lodge, a white-haired veteran of the Order, arose and implored "Almighty God, in His infinite wisdom, to let His richest blessings rest upon the infant organization, now and forever."

The first charter was given to "Richmond Lodge, No. 384, Free and Accepted Masons." The anti-masonic crusade was at its height. There were two Grand Lodges in the State of New York—the "City Grand Lodge," with Most Worshipful Grand Master Hoffman at its head; and the "Phillips Grand Lodge," presided over by Most Worshipful Grand Master Phillips.

Richmond Lodge received its warrant from the City Grand Lodge, "to be located at Castleton, Staten Island." The first regular communication of Richmond Lodge was held in Nautilus Hall, on the evening of July 6, 1825; or, according to the Masonic manner of dating, A. L., 5825. The verbatim report of the event, taken from the original minutes, is as follows:

"At a regular meeting of Richmond Lodge, Masonic Hall, Tompkinsville, July 6th, A. L., 5825. Present: Benjamin Wood, W. M.; Augustus S. Lawrence, S. W.; John S. Westervelt, J. W.; James H. Ward, Secretary; and Richard Harcourt, Treasurer.

"A number of brethren convened, and the lodge opened in the E. A. Degree.

"The following candidates were proposed: John N. Tucker, Henry

Digitized by Google

Barger, Henry H. Hibberton, John T. Merrell, Daniel Simonson, Denyse Denyse, Jr., Robert Hazard, Benjamin Dodge, Leonard Parkinson, Daniel Clawson, Augustus Proalle, Stephen Kittletas and John Clawson.

"After which the lodge was closed in due and ancient form."

The Lodge at once began to grow, slowly but surely, and the brethren all the time were gaining confidence. A year after its organization, a public Masonic celebration and banquet were held at Richmond, on St. John's day. It is stated that there had never been so many people in Richmond as on that occasion, and the manner in which the ceremonies were conducted did a great deal to break down the anti-masonic feeling that pervaded the community.

The inadequate accommodations of the lodge-room were becoming more and more serious, and at every meeting the question was discussed. General Van Buren had, some time before, built a "large and commodious hotel" in Tompkinsville, and it contained a "large, airy, and well-lighted attic." This was rented and christened "Masonic Hall." And so, after remaining in Nautilus Hall for several years, Richmond Lodge turned its back on its first home.

MASONIC HALL, TOMPKINSVILLE.

During the year of 1830, the Lodge was practically at a standstill. The times were depressing. The year 1832 was one of horror to the people of Staten Island. Cholera, with all its vile and dreaded effects, scourged the Island from end to end. The result was that Richmond Lodge closed its doors for several months, until frost came, as a special dispensation from heaven, and removed the terrible epidemic.

In 1839, there was a revolution in the Masonic fraternity of this State. More than two-thirds of the lodges surrendered their charters, and went out of existence and hundreds of Masons withdrew from the Order, or affiliated with other lodges. Richmond Lodge, however, held its own, the only effect of the revolution being that it was granted a new charter, in consequence of the reorganization of the Grand Lodge, and it became No. 66, instead of 384.

The question of removing to the North Shore began to be agitated in 1845. This being defeated, a committee was appointed by the Lodge to select a place for "a branch of Richmond Lodge." The committee did not report satisfactorily, and another was appointed on August 18, "to ascertain if a room can be procured at Factoryville (West New Brighton), or some other suitable place on the

Digitized by Google

North Shore, to have this Lodge removed at the end of the present year."

In 1849, the Lodge surrendered its charter, but the organization was not disbanded. The brethren met once a month in each other's residence, passed a social evening, and planned for reorganization. Finally it was decided to hold all its meetings at the residence of George T. Swaine, nearly opposite the Dutch Reformed Church, in Port Richmond; and it was in his parlor that they met, and kept unbroken the bond of brotherhood, which bound the founders of old Richmond together more than a quarter of a century before.

On the 21st of March, 1851, a meeting was held, and it was decided to reorganize at once, under the jurisdiction of the "Phillips" Grand Lodge, and their dispensation was issued on the 28th of the same month. Richmond was allowed to retain its old number, that of 66. On the 15th of April following, the brethren assembled in Bro. Swaine's parlor, and effected an organization. According to the minutes the following were present: J. B. Ward, W. M.; George W. Chambers, S. W.; George T. Swaine, J. W.; Philpot Wolfe, Secretary; and Bros. O. R. Martin, Henry Barnes, James Smith and Nicholas Kennedy.

The minutes go on to say: "The Lodge was opened in S. Degree of M. M. in due and ancient form. After an appropriate address by the W. M., the brethren visited the building that W. Bro. Swaine intended to fit up for a lodge, if approved by the brethren * * * which was approved." The hall was dedicated on October 12, 1853.

Many interesting incidents occurred during the fleeting years that followed. The final effort of anti-freemasonry occurred in 1856. A political revolution was fast setting in, and down underneath the surface of public opinion there was a swift current that Masons generally were able to understand.

We now come to the period of the great Rebellion, and there were many names on the roll of Richmond Lodge that were transferred to the rolls of the great fighting armies of the nation—names, some of whose bearers never came back.

In 1887, a very earnest effort was made by the Grand Lodge to pay off the indebtedness resting upon the Masonic Hall and Asylum at Utica, and a per-capita tax of six dollars was placed upon the brethren throughout the State. The portion of Richmond Lodge of the debt was $825, and at a regular communication on February 1st, the secretary was ordered to draw a warrant for the amount, as the result of the unanimous vote of those present. It was a proud hour for Richmond Lodge, and the influence of its noble act was felt throughout the State. How much suffering the act had prevented, God alone knows.

One of the great days in the long history of Richmond Lodge, was that on which the corner-stone of its new home—Masonic Hall, in

Digitized by Google

Port Richmond—was laid, which occurred on June 27, 1897. Early in the afternoon Grand Master William A. Sutherland and staff arrived, and, escorted by York Commandery and a committee from Richmond Lodge, proceeded to the temporary Lodge-room in Odd Fellows' Hall, on Harrison avenue, Port Richmond. A reception was held at that place. The Grand Master made an address, in which he complimented Richmond Lodge very highly on its prosperous condition. After this the line re-formed and marched to the scene of the ceremony.

Grand Master Sutherland's staff was composed as follows: R. W. John A. Kennedy, Deputy Grand Master; R. W. J. Walter Wood, Sr. Grand Warden; R. W. George H. Tredwell, Jr. Grand Warden; R. W. Rudolph Grovesna, Grand Chaplain; Bro. William H. Prall, Grand Secretary; R. W. George W. Hayes, Grand Treasurer; R. W. J. Stewart Wilson, Grand Marshal; W. Bro. C. C. Jones, Jr. Grand Deacon; W. Bro. Collins, Grand Sword Bearer; R. W. Moses Getty, Grand Standard Bearer; and R. W. Andrew Ferguson, Grand Tiler.

The formal dedication occurred under the direction of M. W. Dwight Pownall in 1898.

Richmond Lodge celebrated its seventy-fifth anniversary on July 6th, 1900, W. M. Thomas M. Kelly presiding. A banquet was held.

The following have been Masters of Richmond Lodge: Benjamin Wood, 1825-6-7-31-5; J. S. Westervelt, 1828-9-45; J. B. Simonson, 1830; Griffin Tompkins, 1832-3; Thomas B. Vermilyie, 1834; R. M. Hazard, 1836; A. G. Dixon, 1837; James Harcourt, 1838; Philpot Wolfe, 1839-46; H. B. Metcalfe, 1840; Ralph James, 1841; J. B. Wood, 1842; Oliver Vanderbilt, 1843; James Harcourt, 1844; Aaron Vanderbilt, 1847; George W. Chambers, 1848; George T. Swaine, 1849-53; S. T. Fisk, 1850; Frederick Groshon, 1854; J. J. Baker, 1855; John LaForge, 1856; Edward Steers, Sr., 1857-9-60-2; J. G. Burger, 1858; W. W. Corbett, 1861; James Seguine, 1863; L. A. Scofield, 1864; Philip Sharrott, 1865; Lionel Jacobs, 1866; Isaac A. Bunn, 1867-8-9; Billopp Seaman, 1870; James Whitford, 1871; James Davis, 1872; E. D. Clark, 1873-4; David Muddell, 1875; Benjamin F. Cook, 1876; R. P. Brown, 1877-8; Thomas J. Butler, 1879; M. M. Brill, 1880; Thomas W. Butts, 1881; John Pelcher, 1882-93; Reon Barnes, 1883-4; Frank K. Kohler, 1885; William C. Carpenter, 1886; George H. Tredwell, 1887-90; J. Walter Wood, 1888; Frank J. Wilson, 1889; Charles T. Smith, 1891; D. F. Simonson, 1892; Cornelius C. Jones, 1894-5; Frederick W. Kerr, 1896-7; Frank J. Houghton, 1898; Thomas M. Kelly, 1899-1900.

Daniel D. Tompkins, the prime mover in the organization of Richmond Lodge, held the office of Grand Master. The following have been District Deputy Grand Masters:

Reon Barnes, William C. Carpenter, George H. Tredwell, and J. Walter Wood.

Digitized by Google

The following are the officers of Richmond Lodge in 1900: Thomas M. Kelly, Master; Arthur W. Deas, S. W.; Edward I. Miller, J. W.; George T. Jones, Treasurer; Walden M. Braman, Secretary; Rev. A. C. McCrea, Chaplain; Thomas R. Farrell, S. D.; H. Dean Swift, J. D.; C. Y. Decker and C. D. Post, M. of C.; Ira K. Morris, Historian; Alex. M. Ross and G. Wesley Wood, Stewards; T. J. Butler, Marshal; James S. Moore, Tiler; Paul V. Masters, John Pelcher, and G. H. Widmer, Trustees.

Richmond Lodge meets on the first, third and fifth Monday evenings of each month at Masonic Hall, Port Richmond.

Huguenot Lodge, No. 381, was organized at Tottenville nearly half a century ago.

The charter members were Bros. E. W. Hubbard, Cornelius C. Ellis, L. M. Jackson, Wm. Totten, E. R. Fisher, A. H. Wood, John Totten, W. H. Totten, Thomas Marshall, J. W. Sprague, and William De Waters.

Huguenot Lodge first met in Odd Fellows' Hall, on Amboy road. The building is now a private residence, and is owned by Mr. D. A. Joline. The Lodge was instituted on May 19, 1855, and incorporated on April 13, 1899. The first officers were, E. W. Hubbard, Master; E. R. Fisher, S. W.; L. M. Jackson, J. W.; John Totten, Treasurer; W. H. Totten, Secretary; William De Waters, S. D.; Thomas Marshall, J. D.

The following have been Masters: E. W. Hubbard, 1855; S. L. Hopping, 1859; George C. Hubbard, 1860; A. H. Wood, 1861; J. W. Russell, 1871; John D. Sharrott, 1874; William Lamond, 1876; James L. Bedell, 1879; H. L. Sprague, 1880; T. C. Edge, 1891; G. H. Hart, 1894; John A. Kennedy, 1895; Charles A. Thrall, 1897; J. H. Newstead, 1899; Charles U. Thrall, 1900.

Huguenot Lodge has been honored with the following District Deputy Grand Masters: George C. Hubbard, 1867-'70-'89; William Lamond, 1882; John D. Sharrott, 1887; John A. Kennedy, 1897-'98.

The present officers are, Charles U. Thrall, Master; William McGregor, S. W.; J. M. Velton, J. W.; J. A. Kennedy, Treasurer; George E. Rolle, Secretary; D. O. Depew, S. D.; H. W. Sohl, J. D.; A M. Cole, Chaplain; W. M. Carpenter and W. W. Jacklyn, M. of C.; J. H. Jones, Tiler.

The meetings are held in Masonic Hall, on Main street, on the first and third Thursday evenings of each month.

Tompkins Lodge, No. 471, was organized principally by those who withdrew from Richmond Lodge. The Grand Lodge, on December 6, 1853, issued a warrant to Isaac Lea, Master; Jacob B. Wood, Senior Warden; and James Harcourt, Junior Warden, authorizing them to open a lodge at Stapleton, to be known as Tompkins Lodge, No. 145. M. W. Mordecia Meyers was the Grand Master.

The first lodge room of this organization was in the old Tompkins

Digitized by Google

Lyceum, which was located where the German Club Rooms now stand. In 1856 the Lodge removed to Masonic Hall, which stood on the corner of Front (now Arrietta) and Minthorne streets, at Tompkinsville. This building was burned down a year later (its last occupant being Bro. William C. Denyse, who is to-day the oldest member of the Lodge), and the Lodge lost everything it owned. There is no evidence that it ever met again under its old warrant.

On March 31, 1859, in response to a petition, signed by Jacob B. Wood, Philip Bender, John McKee, S. Herzka, John Mouseley, Philpot Wolfe, John S. Westervelt, James Harcourt, Henry M. Weed, Thomas C. Burns, Charles S. Kuh, Ray Tompkins, M. Pollitzer, Aaron Vanderbilt, and Richard A. Locke, a new dispensation was granted to Tompkins Lodge, by M. W. John L. Lewis, who appointed Isaac Lee Master; Henry Crabtree Senior Warden; and Mark Cox Junior Warden, authorizing them to open a lodge in Southfield (now in Middletown). The first communication under this dispensation was held on the evening of April 5, 1859, in Tompkins Lyceum. In the following June a warrant was issued to Tompkins Lodge, No. 471. It moved to the Weed Building, on the west side of Griffin street, and in May, 1866, it moved again to Egbert Hall. On May 1, 1876, it moved into its present neat quarters in Tynan's Building.

The following is a list of the Masters who have presided over Tompkins Lodge: Isaac Lee, Francis Hamilton, John L. Feeny, Henry Seguine, George F. Hollick, Sylvanus C. Hall, Henry Seymour, Peter W. Silvey, Charles Dadier, John Bale, William L. Ludlum, Leonard W. Jewell, Samuel R. Brick, Charles A. Harreus, Oliver H. Griffin, Maynard C. Ayre, Robert McDowell, William R. Eddy, William H. Prall and Charles Kappas.

The County Seat once had its Masonic Lodge. It held its meetings for a time in the Grand Jury room of the County Court House. The charter members were Dr. C. Henry King, Master; John W. Simonson, Senior Warden; George C. Vanderveer, Junior Warden; Dr. Ephraim Clark, Secretary; Daniel L. Clawson, Treasurer; Charles P. Bean, and William Ferguson, all of whom are dead. The charter was granted by the Grand Lodge to Aquehonga Lodge, No. 685, F. and A. M. It worked the U.·.D.·. from February 18 to May 15, 1868.

W. Bro. King remained in the East until December, 1874, when he was succeeded by Bro. George T. Coyne, who held the office for one year, when Bro. King was re-elected and served until 1882. Bro. Samuel W. Benedict was then elected to the East, and held the office until the Lodge surrendered its charter in April, 1887.

Shortly after the organization, the Lodge removed to New Dorp, where it remained for a short time located in the second story of the building occupied by Mr. Henry A. Lavaud, corner of Richmond road and New Dorp lane. When the Lodge returned to Richmond, it lo-

Digitized by Google

cated in the second story of a building nearly opposite St. Andrew's P. E. Church.

Bro. King served as District Deputy Grand Master while connected with this Lodge, and among the workers who served as wardens, were Jacob Simonson, Jr., George T. Coyne, W. W. Kellett, Willis Barton, Henry S. Samuels, Samuel W. Benedict, W. Lawrence Jessup, E. T. Humphries and James Coyne, Jr. The Lodge contained about thirty members.

Beacon Light Lodge, No. 701, of New Brighton, was organized within the jurisdiction of old Richmond. Its warrant was issued June 15, 1876, and its first officers were C. Augustus Gregory, Master; Thomas Sadler, Senior Warden; and W. M. Whittemore, Junior Warden. Its first lodge-room (intended only for a temporary abode), was in the third story of Athletic Hall, near the West New Brighton Rapid Transit Railroad depot. After a brief sojourn there, it removed to its present beautiful rooms on the top floor of the building now known as the New Brighton Village Hall.

The following have served as Master of Beacon Light Lodge: C. Augustus Gregory, F. E. Martindale, William Whittemore, William N. Hawkins, Thomas M. Rainhard, James Simonton, John S. Clark, Aquilla Rich, Livingston Satterlee, William B. Wemple, Joseph Drew, Thomas Melville, Henry W. Welzin, James H. Roe, George C. Land, Joseph Clark, Thomas Bishop, Harvey B. Rich, Christian Bardes, William Osborne, James McMeekan, Alexander G. Hall and Thomas J. Clark.

The District Deputy Grand Masters selected from Beacon Light Lodge were William N. Hawkins, James Simonton, Livingston Satterlee, Aquilla Rich, Harvey B. Rich and James McMeekan.

Klopstock Lodge, No. 760, (German), was instituted in 1875, at Stapleton, and meets on the first and third Wednesday evenings in each month. In February, 1900, it celebrated its twenty-fifth anniversary. The following have served as Masters of this Lodge: Emil Zesch, August Horrmann, Herman Sterzing, Julius Credo, Charles J. Kullmann, Dr. G. F. Odendall, Otto Credo, William Horrmann, George Bettke, and George W. Stake.

There are also two Chapters of Royal Arch Masons on Staten Island. Staten Island Chapter, No. 196, is located at Tottenville, and Tyrian Chapter, No. 219, is at New Brighton.

The Order of the Eastern Star also has two Chapters here. Beacon Light Chapter, No. 75, meets at Masonic Hall, Port Richmond; and Huguenot Chapter, No. 88, is located at Tottenville.

Empire Commandery, Knights Templar, No. 66, was organized, by dispensation, on April 21, 1900, and the first regular conclave was held on May 4th. The regular conclaves are on the first and third Friday evenings of each month, in Masonic Hall, Port Richmond. The following are the officers:

Digitized by Google

Sir Knight J. Walter Wood, M.D., Eminent Commander; Sir Knight Caleb V. Decker, Generalissimo; Sir Knight Chas. F. Bissinger, Capt. General; Sir Knight Wm. Bryan, M.D., Surgeon; Sir Knight C. D. Van Name, Judge Advocate; Sir Knight Walden M. Braman, Recorder; Sir Knight Arthur G. Hastings, Treasurer; Sir Knight Walter H. Holt, Prelate; Sir Knight John S. Warde, Sr., Senior Warden; Sir Knight Arthur W. Deas, Junior Warden; Sir Knight Thos. M. Drew, Sword Bearer; Sir Knight Harry Hooker, Standard Bearer; Sir Knight Wm. Roberts, Warder; Sir Knight A. Nordenholz, Captain of the Guard; Sir Knight Fred. Crocheron, 1st Guard; Sir Knight John S. Warde, Jr., 2d Guard; Sir Knight G. H. Widmer, 3d Guard; Sir Knight Jas. S. Moore, Sentinel; Sir Knight Wm. Roberts, Sir Knight E. Mitchell, Sir Knight A. G. Hastings, Trustees.

There is one more organization which is worthy of the kindest consideration of every Mason on Staten Island. The Masonic Mutual Relief Association is in reality the fulfillment of one of the noblest principles which actuates the Craft.

When the charter of the Greater New York went into effect, the number of the district was changed from the Twenty-eighth to the Eleventh. R. W. Charles A. Thrall is the D.D.G.M., and W. Bro. Isaac A. Bunn, Assistant Grand Lecturer.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE DUTCH REFORMED CHURCHES.

AFTER the removal of the Waldensian Church at Stony Brook, and the French Huguenot Church, at Marshland, "The Dutch church on the North Side" ranked as the senior house of worship on the Island. There is still in existence the old register of baptism of this church, in the Dutch language, from 1696 onward, and contains many names of families which have no living representatives on the Island at this time.

The records of the church show that the Rev. Samuel Drisius, who was one of the pastors of the Dutch church in New York, from 1652 to 1682, preached regularly once a month to the Waldenses on Staten Island from about 1660 onward. It may be fairly inferred from that fact, that there was a little church of that noble and devoted people established here; not a church building, perhaps, till later, but a little band of Christ's people, worshiping in some spot where they found it most convenient.

There are traces of a church on the North Side about 1680, in which the services were in the Dutch language; but at that time these churches had no settled pastor of their own. Along with Dominie Drisius, Dominie Selyns, who was pastor of the churches at Brooklyn, Bushwick and Gravesend, from 1660 to 1701—with an interval of some years, during which he revisited Holland—preached to the churches here at stated times. In 1682 and 1683, Dominie Tarchemaker, from the University of Utrecht, supplied the churches on the Island. He afterward removed to Schenectady, and perished there in a massacre by the Indians in February, 1690.

The next pastor to arrive was the Rev. Pierre Daille, who had been professor in the College of Saumur, and who came to America in 1683, and was colleague to Dominie Selyns from that year to 1692. He preached frequently to the Huguenots on Staten Island, and also at New Rochelle, and elsewhere in the vicinity of New York.

For nearly two years—say 1687-8—the church at Stony Brook was supplied by a certain Laurentius Van den Bosch, or Van Bosen, as it was some times written. His character seems to have been under a cloud, for he was suspended from the ministry by Dominie Selyns and others, who could not wait for the slow process of sending their proceedings to be reviewed by the authorities in Holland, which in those times frequently consumed a whole year.

Digitized by Google

The Staten Island churches were without any stated supply for about three years from 1694. They were visited frequently, however, and the ordinances administered to them by the ministers of New York and Long Island. There are also frequent records of the baptisms by Dominie Batoivius, as it is written, and also of Dominie Gilliam, whose residence is unknown. It has been ascertained that these names indicate the Rev. Guillaume Bertholf, who was pastor of the church of Aquackanonck and Hackensack, New Jersey, from 1694 to 1724, and whose services were much in demand on Staten Island.

The French church at Fresh Kill obtained the services of a pastor of its own in 1679. The Rev. Dr. David Bonrepos, who had been settled several years at New Rochelle, came to Staten Island, and remained here until 1717, preaching also at the church at Stony Brook. In the latter year this aged pastor was compelled to relinquish his charge on account of the infirmities of old age, and he soon left the Island.

DUTCH REFORMED CHURCH, RICHMOND.

Governor Hunter made a grant in 1714, to the representatives of the "Reformed Protestant Church," to erect a new house of worship at some convenient place on the North Shore, the place not being specified by the donor. The grant itself is still extant, and in perfect preservation. It is signed by the Governor, and dated at Fort George, September 3, 1714.

There must have been a Dutch church in the village of Richmond before 1717, although no record of it is in existence. In that year, after the retirement of Dr. Bonrepos, the church at Fresh Kill and the one at Stony Brook united with the Dutch inhabitants, who had gradually become the preponderating element in the population, and together built a church in the village of Richmond, which stood directly in front of the present County Court House.

The church on the North Side, although a house of worship at a very early period, seems to have been dependent on such occasional services as the neighboring ministers were able to render. Besides those of Drisius, Selyns, Daille and Bertholf, there were frequent services by Dominie Freeman, of New Utrecht, Long Island, and also

Digitized by Google

by Dominie Anthonius, of Flatbush, Flatlands and Bushwick, Long Island. In one instance a baptism is recorded as performed by "Dom. Anthony of Staten Island." There are also frequent records of baptisms "door Dominy uni Esopus," whose name is not mentioned, but who was without doubt the Rev. Petrus Vas, who was minister at Esopus, or Kingston, and afterward at Rhinebeck from 1710 to 1756, and who died at the age of ninety-six.

In 1717, after the retirement of Dominie Bonrepos, the three churches, of the Waldenses at Stony Brook, of the Huguenots at Fresh Kill, and the Dutch at Richmond, united and came to worship together at Richmond. In 1717, the church at the North Side and the "united church" at Richmond, joined in a call to the Rev. Cornelius Van Santvoord, of Leyden, Holland. He accepted the call, and came over to this country in 1718, when he was settled as pastor over these churches, which merged their organization at length in that of the more rapidly increasing Dutch church.

No date has been found of the settlement of Dominie Van Santvoord; but the first baptism administered by him is recorded April 20, 1718, the child's name being Johannes Van Namen. Dominie Van Santvoord was a man of admirable character and abilities, and remained in charge on Staten Island, preaching also frequently at Second River, now Belleville, New Jersey, until 1742, when he removed to Schenectady. Among the papers in possession of the Consistory there is a bundle of receipts for salary from Dominie Van Santvoord extending over several years. They indicate the fact of his ministering to the two churches, that on the North Side being evidently the principal one. He was the author of several works of a theological character. After he left Staten Island, there is an interval of eight years, up to 1750, of which no record can be found.

The church on the North Side (Port Richmond), in 1750, united with that at Bergen, New Jersey, in a call to a minister to supply them in common, in the person of the Rev. Petrus De Wint. The agreement drawn up by the Consistories show that their contributions for the minister's support is very specific, each having a righteous half of his services, and each to make a righteous half of the payment. The church at Bergen was to furnish a parsonage and sufficient firewood, while that on Staten Island engaged to give "an able riding horse, with all that belongs to it." After that it was stipulated that "the dominie was to look out for his own horse."

Dominie De Wint commenced his labors in the two churches in 1751; but he did not remain long. He proved to be an impostor, and was discharged on June 22, 1752.

The two churches again joined in calling a pastor, Mr. William Jackson, in 1753, then a student under the care of Rev. John Frelinghuysen, of Raritan, New Jersey. In 1757, he was installed pastor of the two churches. After ministering for upward of a quarter of a

Digitized by Google

century, he became subject to fits of mental aberration. He was declared insane by the Consistory and finally bound himself under a penalty of five hundred dollars not to preach, nor administer the sacraments within the bounds of the two churches. His ministry continued for thirty-two years, and the two churches united in making a comfortable provision for the faithful old pastor as long as he lived. When Mr. Jackson resigned his ministry, the connection between the two churches of Bergen and Staten Island was dissolved, after having continued harmoniously for thirty-nine years.

The first minutes of the Consistory of the Port Richmond Church, preserved in regular form, are dated June 25, 1785. At a meeting then held, among other minutes at that time recorded, is the following: "Our house of worship, [remembered as the old six-sided building], having been destroyed in the late unhappy war, it was resolved to build a new one, of brick." The account is that the building was greatly injured by fire by the British troops, and afterward blown down in a severe storm. A committee was appointed to raise money for the purpose at home and in the neighboring churches, and to superintend the building. It was ready for service in March, 1788.

DUTCH REFORMED CHURCH, TOMPKINSVILLE.

The Rev. Peter Stryker was ordained minister of this church in 1790, and remained with it until 1794, when he accepted a call from Second River, New Jersey. From the records we learn that during his incumbency the church was incorporated, in 1792, under the style and title of "The Reformed Protestant Dutch Church, on Staten Island," the names of the incorporators being Rev. Peter Stryker, Hendrick Garretson, John Van-Pelt, Wilhelmus Vreeland, John Garretson, William Merrill, Peter Haughwout, Abraham Prahl and Nicholas Haughwout.

The church remained without a pastor for three years, after Mr. Stryker's departure, when Mr. Thomas Kirby was ordained over it. Mr. Kirby remained a little over three years, when he was obliged to resign. He was suspended from the ministry for intemperance after leaving Staten Island; but was afterward restored, and went to Canada.

Digitized by Google

An application was made by Benjamin Swain and Israel Oakley, during Mr. Kirby's ministry, for the concurrence of the Consistory here in building a new church at Richmond; but the project was not carried out till some years later.

Rev. Peter I. Van Pelt was ordained pastor of the church on the 16th of May, 1802, and remained until 1835. Dr. Van Pelt's labors were exceedingly successful. During his incumbency a building was erected on the spot now occupied by the Greenwald block in Port Richmond, then the property of the church, where he established a parochial school. "What is chiefly interesting in connection with this," wrote Dr. Brownlee, "is the fact that a Sabbath-school was opened in this building as early as 1812; is believed to have been among the earliest, if not the very earliest, in this country."

On the fourth Sabbath of August, 1835, Rev. James Brownlee was ordained pastor of this church, and remained with it until 1895. "Soon after my settlement," said Dr. Brownlee, "it was determined to repair the old church, which had become much dilapidated. This was immediately done, at a cost of over $4,000. The next year lots were purchased for a parsonage, and a house was erected, the whole costing over $3,000."

"In 1845," Dr. Brownlee proceeds, "it was found that the church was not large enough, and it was finally resolved to build anew. This was accordingly done, and the house which is now occupied was built, at a cost of $10,000, and dedicated in February, 1846." Since then the parsonage has been enlarged and beautified, at a cost of $5,000. In the year 1898, an addition was built to the church edifice, to be used as a chapel, costing about $6,000.

Rev. Alfred H. Demarest was called as associate pastor to Dr. Brownlee, and was ordained and installed November 6, 1884. At the death of Dr. Brownlee, in 1895, he was ordained as pastor. Mr. Demarest has honored the mantle which has been placed upon his shoulders. He is still in the service of this ancient church, beloved and respected by all who know him.

The fiftieth anniversary of the settlement of Dr. Brownlee was celebrated on Sunday, August 23, 1885. On that occasion there were two present who were communicants of the church at the time of Dr. Brownlee's installation. They were Dr. Ephraim Clark, who had been one of the committee to engage Dr. Brownlee, and Mrs. Martha Miller, of Mariners' Harbor.

The following explanations of a diagram of the old Dutch church were given by the late Judge John J. Clute:

Translation of the title: "Plan of the Christian Low Dutch Church on Staten Island, the 30th September, in the year of our Lord 1715, made by Daniel Corsen."

A. Predikestoel—Pulpit. B. Ouderlingen—Elders. C. Diakenen—Deacons.

Digitized by Google

1 Boumeester's Plaats en Kerkmeester's Plaats—The Master Builder's Place and the Church-Warden's Place.
2 Plaats voor den Overheidt—Place for the Magistrate.
3 Nicholas Backer,
4 Douwe Van Wogelom,
5 Ernst Lende, Hendrik Croesen,
6 Jan Veghte,
7 Jacob Corsen, Cornelis Corsen,
8 Garrit Croesen, Abraham Croesen,
9 Josheau Mersereaux,
10 Garrit Kroessen,
11 Garrit Post, Cors Krock,
12 Pieter De Groot,
13 Johannes De Groot,
14 Jan Van Pelt, and another,
15 Joris Prall,
16 Thomas Burbank,
17 Jacob Van Pelt,
18 Peter Martlinghe,
19 Cornelius Croesen,
20 Egbert Hagabot,
21 Robert De Groot,
22 Hendrik Proll, and another,
23 Johannes Simonson,
(The succeeding nine are vacant.)
33 Antonie Van Pelt,
34 John Roll,
35 Joseae Morseroe, Junr.,
36 Cornelius Elles,
37 Vacant,
38 Art Simonson, or Simonze,
39 Richard Merrell,
40 Jan Roll,
41 Cornelius ——sen,
42 Isaac Simonze,
43 Johanne Vanwagena,
44 Wilhelmus Vreelandt,
45 Cornelius Corsen,
46 Christian Corsen,
47 Otto Van Tuyl,
48 Jacob Corsen,
49 Vacant,
50 Nealtje Hagewout,
51 Cornelia Corsen,
52 Aaltje Van Pelt,
53 Jan Veghte,
54 Cornelia Veghte,
55 Vacant,
56 Helena Croesen,
57 Elisabet Corsen, Sister Bock,
58 Maria Praal,
59 Catrina Berckelo,
60 Sara Elles,
61 Arayaentie Elles,
62 Elizabeth Baker,
63 Sara Post,
64 Belitie De Groot,
65 Elizabeth De Groot,
66 Aeyea Speer,
67 Vacant,
68 Maria Mersereau,
69 Fransyntje Post, and another,
70 Marigrita Simonze,
71 Marritje Burbank,
72 Neliete Vreelandt,
73 Ainitie Martlinghs,
74 Elsje Merrill,
75 Gurtruyde Merrell,
76 Antje Corsen,
77 Cornelia Croesen,
78 Gerret Croesen,
79 —— Simonze,
80 Cornelia ——,
81 De Nakomelings van (the descendants of) Catharine Hoogelandt,
82 Vacant,
83 Knelia ——ricke,
84 Margritie Gerrode,
85 Jannetje Van Woggelom,
86 Maria Beekman,
87 Fermie Van B——,
88 Vacant,
89 Fytie Mersereau,
90 Lena Van Wagene,
91 Maria Prall,
92 Annietie Fountain,
93 Wintie Van Tuyls,
94 Rebecca Staats.

Digitized by Google

In accordance with the universal custom in the olden times, the sexes were separated in their seats. Across the ends of 76, 77 and 78 are written the words "Stoelen voor den Predikant"—which means, "Chairs for the preacher."

The name of Daniel Corsen does not appear among those of the pew-holders, but as he was generally the incumbent of some civil office, his seat was in No. 1 or 2. He was County Clerk at the time he made the diagram.

Soon after the settlement of Dr. Van Pelt, the plan of rebuilding the church at Richmond was revived, and through the energetic efforts of the pastor, it was carried successfully into execution. The old structure which has degenerated into a store-house, and standing almost opposite the County Court House, was opened for services in July, 1808. From that time on, Dr. Van Pelt ministered to this church, as well as the one on the North Side, until 1835, when Dr. Brownlee, his successor, ministered to both until 1853. The connection between the two churches was dissolved in 1854, when the church in Richmond became a separate organization. The first pastor after that event was the Rev. Thomas R. G. Peck, and his successors have been Rev. Erskine N. White, Rev. Jacob Fehrmann, Rev. J. H. Sinclair, and the pulpit was for a while supplied alternately with that of the church of the Huguenots, by Rev. Dr. F. M. Kip. This church had for a time a chapel at Giffords.

PORT RICHMOND DUTCH REFORMED CHURCH.

A new church was considered in 1818, and Governor Tompkins gave two lots at Tompkinsville, on which to erect it. He also donated money. The corner-stone was laid on October 20, 1818. The church was completed, and dedicated July 23, 1820. Rev. Peter I. Van Pelt, of the Port Richmond Church, occupied the pulpit until May, 1823, when this church, too, became a distinct society and separate charge. As an independent church, in 1823, the Rev. John E. Miller

Digitized by Google

became its pastor, and served it for nearly twenty-four years. He died August 24, 1847, and the Rev. Alexander R. Thompson became the pastor, in 1848. The vacancy thus left by him was filled by the Rev. Philip M. Brett, who was installed December 24, 1851, and died January 14, 1860. He was succeeded by the Rev. Edward W. Hitchcock, who was installed August 8, 1860. He resigned March 1, 1866. It was during his pastorate that the new church edifice was built, on Brighton Heights. The corner-stone of this church was laid October 27, 1863, and it was dedicated November 3, 1864, at a cost of $14,300.

The old church building at Tompkinsville was sold, and has since been used for a variety of purposes.

The Rev. Herman S. Timlow was installed pastor of the new church October 24, 1866, and resigned November 1, 1867. Rev. I. Ralston Smith supplied the pulpit in 1868. Rev. Thomas G. Watson was installed May 13, 1869, and resigned September 11, 1871. Rev. William T. Enyard was installed April 13, 1876, and resigned July 13, 1879. Rev. William Walton Clark was installed March 16, 1880; during his pastorate a beautiful Sunday-school and lecture room was built at an expense of $9,980.73. Mr. Clark resigned in 1885, and was succeeded by Rev. Thomas O. Lowe, who was succeeded in 1899 by Rev. J. H. Stout.

A number of the members of the Reformed Church in Richmond, in 1850, organized a new church at Bloomingview, now known as the "Church of the Huguenots." A plain but substantial church edifice was erected on land donated by the Hon. Benjamin Prall, and the Rev. James A. M. Latourette became its first pastor.

The Rev. Thomas B. Gregory succeeded Mr. Latourette, and resigned after a brief term. The Rev. Herman Stryker, former pastor of the Tompkinsville church, supplied the pulpit for many years. After his resignation the Rev. Dr. Francis M. Kip assumed the duties of pastor. The church was practically closed for many years, but services are held regularly in it at the present time.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIX.

THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCHES.

ON Sunday, July 2, 1876, the late Rev. Dr. J. E. Rockwell, at that time pastor of the First Presbyterian Church of Edgewater, delivered a centennial discourse, from which we are permitted to quote:

"This is a most interesting and important fact, that this Island should thus early in the settlement have furnished a shelter and a home to the persecuted Waldenses of Piedmont and the Huguenots of France, and that thus its earliest church should have been constituted in accordance with the Presbyterian model, since the Waldensian Church and the Huguenots were both in their doctrine, order and discipline, Presbyterian. To this little band of Christians, Dominie Drisius, of the Dutch Church of New York, made a monthly visit, preaching to them in the French language, and administering to them the sacraments. It would be pleasant to be able accurately to picture to ourselves these early Presbyterians of the French, Italian and Dutch type, as they appeared in these occasional services; the joy with which they welcomed the Dominie, as he landed from some quaint-looking vessel or boat that had brought him down from the city, and the serious and attentive congregation which gathered to hear him, perhaps in some big barn or log house, or perhaps beneath some broad, spreading tree. We can know at least that many of his hearers came together with hearts full of gratitude and joy, because they had found here freedom to worship God, and had the assurance of protection from the enemies that had sought their destruction."

Dr. Rockwell quotes from the faithful researches of the Hon. Henry C. Murphy, which appear in other parts of these volumes, and adds: "His narrative gives a pleasant picture of our Island two hundred years ago, and confirms the statement that its original settlers were distinctly and clearly of the Reformed Faith as it was held in Holland, Piedmont and France, which was pure and simple Presbyterianism. * * * In 1717, the French and Waldensian Churches united with the Dutch and organized a church, and built a house of worship at Richmond. * * * After this union was formed, an English Presbyterian Church appeared to have been organized at Stony Brook, the first site of the Waldensian congregation, for in 1769, a deed was given

Digitized by Google

to the session of this church, and Consistory of the Reformed Church at Richmond, for some land in Richmond, on which a church was to be built."

"The deed," says Dr. Brownlee, in his anniversary address, "mentions the names of Jacob Rezeau and Samuel Broome as the Elders of the English Presbyterian Church, according to the Westminster Confession of Faith, Catechism and Directory, agreeable to the present established Church of Scotland. The deed conveyed a small lot, 65 feet by 55, to these parties, as far as I can understand it, the ground on which the present Reformed Church in Richmond now stands. The church then standing at Stony Brook was to be removed and rebuilt on this lot."

The exact spot indicated in the deed mentioned by Dr. Brownlee, is now occupied by the little street commencing directly in front of the County Court House, and terminating in one short block on the Richmond road. This deed, however, is not the first one on record in the Richmond County Clerk's Office, to prove that the Presbyterians were landholders on Staten Island. There is one, recorded a quarter of a century before, in Liber D, page 149, which reads as follows:

"The following Deed or Gift was recorded for the Presbyterian Society the 30th 8ber (October) Anno 1744:

"To all christian People to whom these presents shall come: I, Jaques Cortelyou of the County of Richmond, in the province of New York, Yeoman, Send Greeting: Whereas some of the Inhabitants of the County and province Above sd. Members of the Presbyterian Society being very desirous that the Holy Gospel should be preached & the Holy Sacraments Administered unto them in the County above sd. by Some Godly & able Minister being regularly & duly Qualified & Ordained and they the Sd. Inhabitants of ye sd. County ye Members of ye Presbyterian Society being destitute of A public Meeting House for that use & purpose & now have built and erected, (but as yet not furnished) a House for that end & intent on a piece of Ground in the County above sd. belonging to Jaques Cortelyou, but as yet not having receiv'd from him ye sd. Jaques Cortelyou any assurance for ye sd. Ground whereon ye sd. Meeting House is built or erected.

"Now Know ye that I the sd. Jaques Cortelyou for & in Consideration of the Love good will & affection which I have & do bear to ye sd. Inhabitants of sd. County the members of sd. Presbyterian Society, but more especially for the Honor & Glory of Almighty God in the public preaching of his holy Gospel, Have given & granted & by these presents do freely, fully, clearly & Absolutely, give and grant unto Nathaniel Briton Sen. & Edward Jones Deacons of sd. Presbyterian Society in sd. County of Richmond & unto their successors in sd. Offices for ever, for ye use & benefit of sd. presbyterian Society in sd.

Digitized by Google

County of Richmond a certain piece or parcel of Ground Situate lying & Being AT STONY BROOK in the County & province above sd. & is part of ye Farm or Plantation whereon I ye sd. Jaques Cortelyou now doth dwell, & fronting to the King's Main Road, containing Fifty feet long & fifty feet broad whereon ye sd. Meeting House is now erected & Standing with free & undeniable Egress & Regress from ye sd. Meeting House to ye King's Road where it fronteth unto, in order & to ye intent that they ye sd. presbyterian Society furnish ye sd. Meeting House for ye use & Service above sd. and that for ye only use & benefit of sd. presbyterian Society provided Never the less anything herein contained to ye contrary in any wise notwithstanding. That is to say, on Condition that they all ye Members of these presbyterian Society in sd. County of Richmond shall from time to time and at all times for ever hereafter save & keep harmless & indemnified them ye sd. Nathaniel Briton Sen. James Carman, Elders & Nathaniel Briton Jun & Edward Jones Deacons as Above sd. their & every of their Heirs, Exers. & Admrs. for ever from all Damages, Costs & charges touching & concerning a certain obligatory Bond dated exactly with these presents, wherein ye sd. Nathaniel Briton Sen. James Carman, Nathaniel Briton Jun & Edward Jones became bound and obliged unto Jaques Cortelyou, Hendrick van Lawa, Gozen Adriaenz Rem Vanderbeck & Jacob Vanderbilt Gentlemen their & every of their Heirs, Exers, Admers. & Assigns in ye penal sum of Three hundred pounds lawful Money of New York that ye sd. Jaques Cortelyou Hendrick van Lawa, Gozen Adriaenz, Rem van der Beck & Jacob Van der Bilt their and every of their Heirs, Exers, Admers. & Assigns shall have the use & Privilege of ye sd. Meeting House which is now built or erected on ye sd. granted p-mises according to ye sd. tenure of sd. Bond Reference being had to ye sd. Bond or obligation & Condition thereof may & doth more fully & at large appear. To Have and to Hold ye sd. piece of Ground unto them ye sd. Nathaniel Briton Sen. James Carman Nathaniel Briton Jun, & Edward Jones & to their successors for

POST HOMESTEAD, HOLLAND'S HOOK; ERECTED 1691.

Digitized by Google

ever ye use & benefit of sd. presbyterian Society forever, on Condition that they ye sd. Nathaniel Briton Sen James Carman Elders, Nathaniel Briton Jun & Edward Jones Deacons of the presbyterian Society in the County of Richmond Above sd. & their Successors well & truly observing performing, Keeping & fulfilling all and every such Articles Clauses & proviso's which are mentioned & expressed in the above recited Bond or obligation & Condition thereof & that According to the true intent and Meaning of sd. Obligation & Condition thereof without any Equivocation or Secret Reservation whatsoever & I ye sd. Jaques Cortelyou for myself my Heirs, Exers. Admers. & Assigns ye sd. parcel of ground unto ye sd. Nathaniel Briton sen, & James Carman Elders, Nathaniel Briton Jun & Edward Jones Deacons & their Successors against all & all manner of persons shall & will warrant & for ever Defend by these presents.

"In Witness whereof, I ye sd. Jaques Cortelyou have hereunto set & put My Hand and Seal this Thirteenth Day of May & in the Second Year of the Reign of Our Sovereign Lord George ye Second by the Grace of God of Great Britain, France & Ireland King Defender of the Faith, & in ye year of our Lord One Thousand Seven Hundred and Twenty Nine.

"JAQUES CORTELYOU (L. S.)"

The document was signed in the presence of Peter Moon, B. Sweem, and Jo'n Dupuy, and acknowledged before John LeConte, Judge.

"If we were called upon to show our genealogical tables," adds Dr. Rockwell, "we might write them somewhat in this form: A colony of Waldenses, the known and admitted successors of the Apostolic church of Italy, came to Staten Island and organized a church at Stony Brook between the years 1656 and 1680. In the same age the Huguenots, fresh from persecutions, came from Rochelle and established a church of the same order at Fresh Kill. Near the same town the Dutch (who had fought out the great principle of Religious Liberty before England practically knew what the word meant) established in connection with these Christians a church on the North Side of the Island. In 1717, or a little later, an English Presbyterian Church was organized in the place of the Waldensian Church at Stony Brook, and in 1769 built a house of worship in Richmond, whose successor still stands on the old site, and is now (1876), the Reformed Church at that place. From these united Christian families came the Reformed Church at Port Richmond, Brighton, Huguenot and Stapleton; hence sprang our own."

The fact is clearly proven that the Presbyterians worshiped as a distinct society at Stony Brook, and that they occupied the little stone edifice which the Waldenses had vacated when that congregation removed to Cucklestown, or Richmond. The Church building stood in the present little grove in the sharp bend in the Amboy road, mid-

Digitized by Google

way between New Dorp and Oakwood. The building was still standing in the early years of the present century, and many of the huge stones that once rested in its rude foundation, remain on the hallowed ground to-day. There does not appear to have been a Presbyterian church on the Island from about 1806, until the organization of the First Presbyterian Church of Edgewater in 1856.

In the year 1849, a Sabbath-school was commenced at Stapleton, by the members of the Reformed Dutch Church, at Tompkinsville. On June 25, 1851, a church was organized by the South Classis of New York, with thirty-two members. In September of the same year, the Rev. A. R. Thompson became its pastor, and under his ministry a church edifice was erected in 1852, enlarged in 1854, and a large congregation built up.

In 1856, the Gore Street Chapel was built as a mission school. The same year witnessed the beginning of a new church which, though styled the First Presbyterian Church of Staten Island, was in reality the fourth church of its denomination that had been established here.

In the Spring of 1856, several members of the Tompkinsville Reformed Dutch Church met for preliminary deliberation in the house of Mr. J. D. Dix, at Clifton, and after several meetings agreed to unite in a new church enterprise.

On May 14, 1856, the church was duly organized at the house of George M. Gerard, in Townsend avenue, by a committee of the Third Presbytery of New York, consisting of Rev. S. D. Burchard, D. D., Rev. A. E. Campbell, D. D., Rev. Washington Roosevelt, D. D., and T. McLaughlin, with Elder David Stevens and J. C. Hines. Twenty-six persons presented letters from other churches, chiefly the Reformed Church of Stapleton, and were duly constituted a church of Christ, under the name of the First Presbyterian Church of Clifton, Staten Island.

At the same time, Messrs. John D. Dix, E. L. Sexton and G. W. Gerard were installed as Elders, and E. A. Ludlow and R. Davidge were made deacons. Until the chapel at Clifton was built, services were regularly held at the house of Mr. Dix, or some other equally convenient dwelling. On the 3d of August, 1856, the chapel in Townsend avenue was dedicated, the services being conducted by the Rev. William Whittaker.

On October 1, 1856, the Rev. Alonzo Brown was installed pastor, and his connection with the church was severed on the 30th of November, in the following year. In April, 1858, Rev. Samuel W. Crittenden became pastor, and continued until November 25, 1859. A call was then presented to Rev. William H. Taylor, on January 25, 1860, and he was installed on the 22d of February, of the same year. Mr. Taylor resigned on April 18, 1864, and was succeeded by Rev. David R. Frazer, who was installed on April 1, 1865, and resigned on the 1st of November, 1867.

Digitized by Google

The Rev. Dr. Skinner having resigned the pastorate of the Reformed Dutch Church in Stapleton, and after several preliminary meetings, held by each separate congregation, it was agreed that the two churches unite under the corporate name of the First Presbyterian Church of Edgewater, Staten Island. It was also agreed that the church property at Clifton be sold, and the proceeds used for liquidating the debt upon this property, and that the officers of each congregation form the session of the united church. In the month of September, 1868, the Rev. J. E. Rockwell, D. D., became the pastor, and he remained until 1882.

The next pastor was the Rev. G. M. McCampbell, who retired in 1889, and was succeeded by the Rev. Wilbur Fiske Wood, one of the most earnest and successful workers in the great cause on the Island to-day.

At the union of the two congregations the Session was composed of the following members: Mr. John D. Dix and Mr. E. C. Bridgman, of the Clifton Church, and Mr. William Shaw and Dr. Thomas C. Moffatt, of the Reformed Church, elders; and Mr. Francis McDonald and Mr. Howard Parmele, of the Clifton Church, and Messrs. Charles H. Morris and William Standerwick, of the Reformed Church, deacons.

The chapel, or Sunday-school room of this Church, which formerly stood on Gore street, (now Broad), was destroyed by an incendiary fire. The present one was erected in 1876, and stands on the corner opposite the present church edifice. It is a spacious brick building, erected chiefly, if not wholly, through the munificence of a lady, who donated $8,000 for the purpose.

Thirty-five persons, the majority of whom had previously been members of the Dutch Reformed Church of Port Richmond, organized the Calvary Presbyterian Church of West New Brighton, on the 17th of November, 1872. The first officers of this organization were R. N. Havens and Augustus W. Sexton, elders; and Ralozie Fuller and William J. Ladd, deacons. During the Summer of 1872, a plain wooden structure, which was used as a chapel, was erected at the corner of Castleton and Bement avenues, for the accommodation of the Sunday-school which had been organized in May of that year.

The Rev. James S. Evans, D. D., occupied the pulpit from the beginning of the church until April, 1873, and as synodical superintendent of church extension, had rendered great assistance in effecting the organization.

The Rev. J. Milton Greene received a call on March 11, 1873, and was installed immediately after. Mr. Greene continued to minister to the church for eight years. While in this charge he also conducted services in the old school house near Linoleumville, with the assistance of Chaplain Jones, of the Sailors' Snug Harbor.

So rapidly did the growth of the organization increase, that, in September, 1874, it was found necessary to enlarge the chapel at

Digitized by Google

West New Brighton to double its original size. It was capable of seating about five hundred people. On the night of April 17, 1892, a series of incendiary fires shocked the people of the North Shore, and when it was discovered that all that remained of the Calvary Presbyterian Church was a mass of smouldering ruins, sympathy turned to indignation, and it would have gone hard with the perpetrator of the crime had he been captured at that hour.

Pastor and people started at once to arrange for a new edifice. Every one connected with the church or Sunday-school was enlisted in the cause, and the months were few before there arose from among the ruins of the old structure a church edifice that stands to-day the pride of the entire community.

Calvary Church has a large and flourishing congregation, and its Sunday-school is one of the largest on the Island.

The present pastor, Rev. Thomas A. Leggett, was installed in December, 1881, and he has labored so earnestly for the success of the church and the welfare of his people, that he has won a warm place in the hearts of all who know him.

A very earnest attempt was made to organize a Presbyterian Church at New Brighton, in the later eighties. One minister followed another in the work. The little Unitarian church on Clinton avenue was rented and services for a time were comparatively well attended. Lack of interest, however, was the inevitable cause of meagre funds, and the enterprise was finally abandoned.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XX.

THE MORAVIAN CHURCHES.

THERE is no church on Staten Island in which centers more interest than the old Moravian edifice at New Dorp. Situated amid the graves of so many generations of Staten Islanders—by some of our people probably justly considered the original burial-place of the Waldenses—it has stood through the changing scenes of peace and war a noble emblem of Christianity. To very many of our people the old Moravian Church is an important part of Staten Island itself. Among the archives at Bethlehem, Pennsylvania, is the original letter, dated in 1762, desiring that a church might be established at New Dorp, close to the early home of the Waldensian colony.

Captain Nicholas Garrison, so far as is now known, was the first of the denomination called Moravians, (or United Brethren), on Staten Island. The ship which he commanded, while on a voyage from Georgia to New York, was overtaken by a violent storm. Bishop Spangenberg was a passenger, and he remained calm and undisturbed amidst the confusion and terror which prevailed on board, and spent most of the time in prayer. This ship was built expressly for the purposes of the Moravian Church.

David Bruce, a very zealous servant of God, was sent, in 1742, to visit the scattered flocks in New York and on Long and Staten Islands, and, so far as the records enlighten us, he was the first Moravian preacher who ever officiated as such on Staten Island. Of those most prominent in sustaining this church on the Island, the names of Jacobus and Vettje Van Der Bilt are mentioned in September, 1747, at which time the church in America comprehended three localities—New York City, Staten Island and Bethlehem, Pennsylvania. After the arrival of the first colony of Moravians, in June, 1742, these three places jointly constituted a field in which their evangelists labored—among whom were the Brethren David Bruce, Almers, Gambold, Jasper Payne, Thomas Rodgers, Thomas Yarrell, Neisser, Richard Utley, Owen Rice and John Wade.

About a dozen different clergymen of the Moravian denomination came to the Island to officiate between 1742 and 1743. There were only three communicant members on the Island in 1756, viz.: Jacobus Vanderbilt and his wife, Vettje or Neiltje, and the widow Elizabeth

Digitized by Google

Inyard. Religious services were usually held in the school-house, which, some say, stood on or near the site of the present church, but as others say, at the corner of the roads at what is now called Egbertville.

Richard Conner, Aaron Cortelyou, Mathias Enyard, John Baty, Cornelius Cortelyou, Cornelius Vander Bilt, Cornelius Van Deventer, Stephen Martino, Mary Stillwell, Cornelius Martino and Peter Perine applied, in 1762, to the church authorities at Bethlehem, Pennsylvania, for the establishment of a Moravian Church on Staten Island. The corner-stone of a church and parsonage was laid on July 7, 1763, and on the 7th of December following the church was consecrated. The edifice is still standing in a good state of preservation, and is shown in the illustration on page 397 of Vol. I. The custom of the Moravians at that period was to combine church and parsonage under one roof, hence the unchurchlike appearance of this old building. The last religious exercises in this church, before its removal from the original site, were held on Thursday, October 26, 1882. They were conducted by the Rev. William H. Vogler, the pastor at that time.

The Rev. Hector Gambold, who came to the Island on August 17, 1763, was the first regularly settled pastor. He and his family moved into the rooms then made ready for his occupancy, on the 21st of December of that year, and he made it his home during his long pastorate, which extended to the year 1784. James Birkley and E. Thorp followed for brief periods, and in 1787, Frederick Moehring assumed the pastorate, which continued until 1793, when he was followed by Mr. Birkly, who was recalled, and remained until 1797, when Mr. Moehring returned and exercised the pastoral functions until 1803. Nathaniel Brown was his successor that year, and held the position until removed by death, in 1813.

Rev. John C. Bechler came to New Dorp in 1813, and remained until 1817, and his successors were as follows: Rev. George A. Hartmann, from 1817 to 1837; Rev. Ambrose Rondthaler, from 1837 to 1839; Rev. H. G. Clauder, from 1839 to 1852; Rev. Bernhard de Schweinitz, from 1852 to 1854; Rev. Amadeus A. Reinke, from 1854 to 1860; Rev. Edwin T. Senseman, from 1860 to 1862; Rev. Eugene Leibert, from 1862 to 1867; Rev. Francis F. Hagen, from 1867 to 1870; Rev. William L. Lennert, from 1870 to 1876; Rev. William H. Vogler, from 1876 to 1892; Rev. William H. Rice, from 1892 to 1897; Rev. William H. Oerter then became the pastor, and is still serving the people in that capacity.

One night, during the Revolution, some British soldiers forcibly entered the parsonage, and after wantonly destroying furniture and other articles belonging to the occupant, carried off the archives of the church. Fortunately it is a law of the Moravian Church to keep a duplicate copy of all official records, and by this means the complete

Digitized by Google

story of this house of God may be seen to-day in the archives of the church at Bethlehem, Pennsylvania.

The Moravian Society of New Dorp was incorporated on April 15, 1808. The land on which the church was erected was sold by John Baty to Thomas Yarrell, the minister, and Henry Van Vleek, of New York City, and Cornelius Van Deventer and Richard Conner, of Richmond County, on June 19, 1763, for £25.10s. This tract of land contained five and a-half acres, and was bounded on the south-west by land of Cornelius Cortelyou, north-west and north-east by land of John Baty, and south-east by the King's highway. A deed of confirmation was given for the same, to the representatives of the denomination, by Edward Baty, executor of his father, John Baty, on March 2, 1790.

The building now occupied by the Moravians at New Dorp, was erected in 1845, and was consecrated on May 15, of the same year. The old building was re-arranged for school purposes and dwelling apartments in 1851, and was for several years occupied by Mr. N. J. Ostrander, superintendent of the cemetery. This old church has the honor of having been the first house of worship on Staten Island in which an organ was used.

The Sunday-school connected with this church was first organized on July 19, 1829, and has continued without intermission ever since. On August 31, 1873, a chapel and Sunday-school building at Castleton Corners was dedicated. It was built on land donated for the purpose by Mr. Cornelius Du Bois, and is located on the old Walter Dongan estate. Rev. Mr. Grunert is the present pastor. A chapel, which is also in the jurisdiction of the New Dorp Church, is located at Giffords, and is in a very prosperous condition. This may also be said of the Moravian Chapel on Osgood avenue, Edgewater.

The liberal donations of Commodore Vanderbilt to the New Dorp Church—the church of his forefathers—have done a great deal toward making it prominent and successful. When the present church edifice was erected—more than half a century ago—he contributed the sum of one thousand dollars toward its completion. All things considered it was a liberal contribution at that time. On December 20, 1865, he gratuitously conveyed to the trustees of the "United Brethren's Church on Staten Island," eight and a-half acres of land on the east side of the original five and a-half acres, and on October 30, 1868, about forty-six acres more on the north and west sides of the former grants.

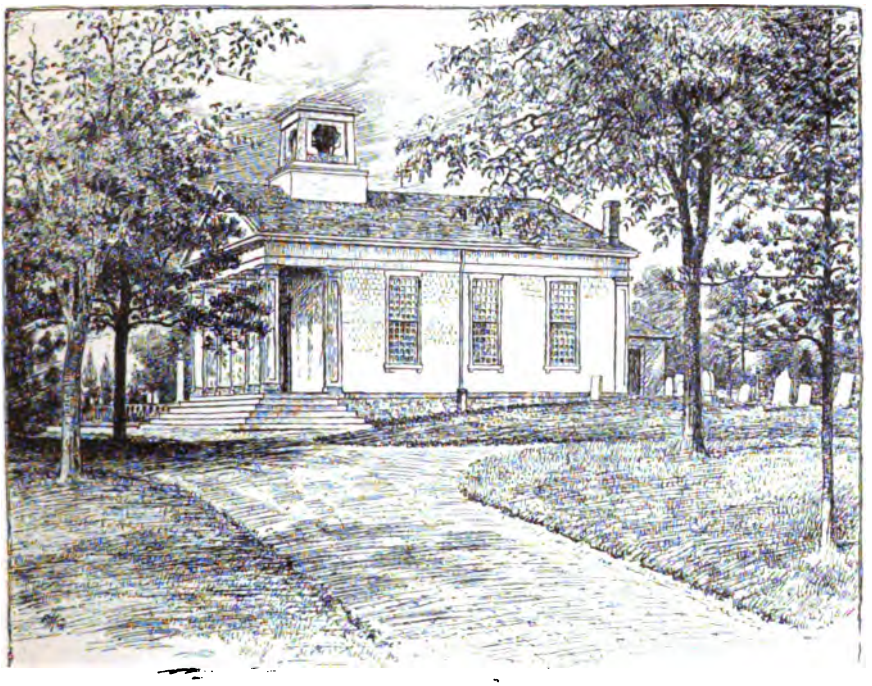
A new parsonage, a very handsome building of modern style of architecture, was erected and presented by William H. Vanderbilt in 1880, and the Rev. William H. Vogler occupied it on the 21st of December of that year. Mr. Vanderbilt, in 1882, also purchased property of Mrs. Susan Jane Fountain, comprising about four acres, with the buildings on it, at a cost of five thousand dollars, and presented it to the trustees of the church, on condition that certain im-

Digitized by Google

provements should be made, which conditions were accepted. This property stands on the opposite side of the Todt Hill road from the parsonage, and was given as a residence for the superintendent of the cemetery. By this accession to the church property, its line of frontage along the Richmond road was extended to nearly four thousand feet in length.

Notwithstanding, at the time of the removal of the old church, it was estimated that the Vanderbilt family had made gifts to the Moravian Society in cemetery property, buildings and improvements to the amount of thirty-seven thousand dollars, it also received by bequest of William H. Vanderbilt, whose will bears date September 25, 1884, and whose death occurred on December 8, 1885, the gift of one hundred thousand dollars.

A number of years before the death of William H. Vanderbilt, he



MORAVIAN CHURCH, NEW DORP.

purchased a large tract of land adjoining the cemetery on the mountain side, where he erected a mausoleum which, together with its beautiful surroundings, are estimated to have cost a sum approaching a million of dollars. Here sleeps the founder of the mammoth fortune, with his son and grandson, together with the dear ones, as one by one they are gathered in by the "grim reaper," peacefully awaiting the resurrection morn.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXI.

THE METHODIST CHURCHES.

THE introduction of Methodism on Staten Island was due to the efforts of individuals connected with the denomination in New Jersey and elsewhere. The first Methodist sermon preached here was in November, 1771, by Francis Asbury, in the house of Peter Van Pelt, at Woodrow, only twelve days after his arrival in America. This house is still standing, although in a dilapidated condition, and has been known for many years as the Nolan house. It is located on Woodrow road, the better part of a mile East of the church.

Thomas Morrell and Robert Cloud, preachers attached to the Elizabeth circuit, gave their labors to the cause on Staten Island, and to them this church is indebted for its organization. Mr. Morrell had been a major in the Continental Army, and bore upon his person scars of wounds received in battle. He was also a man of fine abilities and acquirements. Of the local preachers on Staten Island, William Cole, of Woodrow, was the most prominent, and during the intervals between the visits of the itinerents, he very frequently officiated in private houses, schoolhouses, barns or any other place that offered. His grave is located near the Woodrow Church.

The first Methodist Society on Staten Island was organized on May 5, 1787, and the following persons were elected trustees: Abraham Cole (at whose house the meeting was held), Benjamin Drake and John Hillyer, to serve for one year; Gilbert Totten, John Slaight and Joseph Wood, to serve for two years; Joseph Totten, Elias Price and Israel Dissosway to serve for three years. Measures were then adopted to erect a house of worship, and the following appeal was promulgated:

"To all Charitable, well-disposed Christians of every denomination of Staten Island. Whereas the inhabitants on the West end of said Island are destitute of any Place of Public Worship, so that numbers, more especially of the poorer and middling ranks of People who have not Carriages &c., are necessarily precluded from attending the Worship of God in a Public manner, their Children also lose the benefit of Public Instruction, and it is to be feared the Consequence will be to the rising Generation a settled Contempt for the worship of God and the Ordinances of the House.

Digitized by Google

"To remedy as far as human prudence can Extend the aforesaid, and many other Inconveniences that might be named, the members of the Methodist Episcopal Church on said Island have chosen trustees agreeable to Law and order to Erect a Church for the Performance of Divine Service, and 'tis Supposed by the Blessing of God this may be the means of not only benefiting the present Generation, but that Numbers Yet unborn may have reason to Praise God for the Pious Care of their forefathers. But as this will be Attended with heavy Expense, to which the members of the said Church are Inadequate, they hereby Respectfully solicit the Donation of all such who are willing to promote so Laudable an Undertaking, we therefore the subscribers do hereby promise to pay or cause to be paid to the said Trustees or any Person Impowered by them to receive it, the sums affixed to our several names, as Witness our Hands this Seventh day of June, In the year of our Lord one Thousand Seven Hundred and Eighty-seven."

The names of eighty-seven contributors, whose united subscriptions amount to nearly three hundred and fifty dollars, follow this petition. The largest contributors are as follows: Gilbert Totten, £8; Israel Disosway, £15; Benjamin Drake, £8; Mark Disosway, £5; Peter Woglom, £6; Joshua Wright, £5; Jacob Reckhow, £5; John Androvette, £5; Peter Winant, Sr., £4.15.0; and John Slaight, £4.15.0. Among the subscribers we find the names of individuals attached to other churches, such as Bedells, Swains, Taylors, Larzeleres, Micheaus, LaTourettes, Mersereaus, Pralls, Conners, etc. Israel Disosway, in addition to his subscription, which is the largest on the list, gave the timber for erecting the church out of his own woods.

The sum realized by the subscriptions, just mentioned, was small, but with it the first Methodist Episcopal Church on Staten Island, (and undoubtedly the second in America), was built. It stood on the site now occupied by the Woodrow Church. This building is described as a low, roughly-built house, with gable-end to the road, and having small windows and a plain batten door, the fastening of which was operated by an old-fashioned latch-string. The interior showed an unique altar, high-backed, uncushioned seats, and bare rafters. The site was amid the natural forest, as the neighborhood was but sparsely settled at that time.

The following extract is from the original "Day Book," still preserved by the officials of the organization:

"At a meeting held in the Methodist Church for chosing a Saxon to serve for one year in said church to keep said house swept and sanded and scraped when the Trustees shall direct, and all necessary other dutys of a saxon for the sum of five dollars; Richard Mier was chosen and accepted." Subsequently, the "saxon" was allowed one shilling "for every fire he makes in the stove," additional.

The present church edifice was erected on the site of the former

Digitized by Google

one in 1842. It is considerably larger than the first building, and encroaches upon the graves in the old church-yard, as it used to be the prevailing custom to bury the dead as near the church as possible. The interior of the present church was remodelled in 1882.

The first white grave-stone erected here, we are informed, is to the memory of the Rev. Joseph Totten. It created a great deal of comment, and people went to see it from many miles around. Immediately in front of the church stands a plain marble monument, which marks the grave of one of the most deeply revered preachers of

WOODROW METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

the church, well known as "Old Father Boehm." The monument bears the following inscription:

"Sacred to the memory of Rev. Henry Boehm, born in Lancaster, Pa., June 8, 1775; died on Staten Island, December 28, 1875. A centenarian, who was for seventy-six years an honored and beloved Methodist minister, as eminent for social, Christian and ministerial virtues as for longevity; the associate of Bishop Asbury, and his compeers in labors on earth, he now rests with them in heaven."

On February 12, 1822, at a meeting held at the house of James Totten, it was unanimously resolved to build another Methodist house of worship in Westfield, to be called "The Tabernacle." A church

Digitized by Google

was organized, and the trustees duly elected. A public meeting was held in the Tabernacle in August, 1823. The building was used as a school-house for a time, but was removed several years since, the establishment of churches at Tottenville, so near by, doing away with the necessity for a church there. The site of the Tabernacle was a few rods southeast of the railroad station, on the Amboy road, at Richmond Valley. Some of the foundation stones are still lying there. Rev. James C. Wood, a local preacher, had charge of this church and congregation for a number of years. It is said that he had such a powerful voice that he could be heard for nearly a mile away, very distinctly. He was the son of Abraham J. Wood, for many years a resident of New Springville, Staten Island, and who died at that place on September 20, 1796. James C. Wood was the third son. His biographer says that " he was an exemplary Christian, zealous in the cause of temperance, and an honored exhorter in the Methodist Episcopal Church with which he was connected." He was the father of the late Abraham J. Wood, of Westfield.

In 1841, the membership of the original church was so large in the village of Tottenville, that it was deemed advisable to organize another society at that place. This was the founding of Bethel Church. An edifice was erected in 1842, which cost about $14,000. It was destroyed by fire on Sunday night, January 10, 1886. The building at that time, with its furniture, heating apparatus and organ, was valued at about $23,000. The congregation inside of a year succeeded in erecting one of the handsomest church edifices on the Island. Many distinguished ministers have filled the pulpit of this church. Rev. P. C. Bascom is the present pastor.

St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal Church, which was organized in 1860, is also located at Tottenville. The corner-stone of this church was laid on September 6, 1861, and the building soon reached completion. But the congregation was greatly in debt; by a special effort on November 13, 1881, about $4,500 was raised and the church was free. Rev. Walter C. Kinsey is the present pastor.

The early Methodists of Staten Island did not confine their efforts to the town of Westfield; for, soon after they were permanently located there, a small class, under the leadership of Elias Price, was organized in the town of Northfield, which, in 1802, had expanded sufficiently to warrant the formation of a new society, and the erection of a church, which is now familiarly known as the Asbury Church, at New Springville. For more than thirty years this church was the only place of public worship possessed by the Methodists of Northfield and Castleton. It was connected in pastoral supply with the church at Mariners' Harbor from 1839 to 1849, when the latter secured a minister of its own. Rev. W. C. Timbrell is the pastor at the present time.

A branch of this church was established at Bloomfield, in North-

Digitized by Google

field, and the laying of the corner-stone occurred in June, 1885. It stands at the head of Merrill avenue, on a plot of ground presented by Joseph Ball, of Bloomfield, and the Rev. John B. Hillyer, of New Springville. Its erection is mainly due to Messrs. John B. Hillyer and Thomas Standering, both local preachers of the congregation.

Those residing along the shore in Castleton and Northfield, began to agitate a church at or near Graniteville, in 1838. The next year, Robert C. Simonson offered a lot of land on the Pond road, Port Richmond, as a free gift, if they would erect a church thereon. This offer was immediately accepted by those residing in the vicinity, and the proposed church at Graniteville was abandoned.

Early in the Winter of 1839, the church on the Pond road, (now the German Lutheran Church on Jewett avenue), was erected and dedicated. The Westfield and Northfield charges were divided in 1840, and Daniel Cross became the preacher on this circuit, which was called the Northfield and Quarantine mission. This was again divided and made into circuits, in 1841, that of Northfield comprehending Asbury and Mariners' Harbor, while this was known as Quarantine and Port Richmond. Of this Rev. R. Lutton became the pastor. His name appears with those of Benjamin Day and Lewis Jefferson, between that date and 1848. They were succeeded by Alexander Gillmore, 1848-9; and Charles E. Hill, 1850-1.

The house erected on Pond road continued to be their place of worship until 1853, when the congregation erected the brick edifice at the corner of Richmond terrace and Dongan street, West New Brighton. The original building and lot were sold on April 28, 1853, to the German Evangelical Lutheran congregation for $1,500. The new church took the title of Trinity, and was incorporated on January 10, 1853, the trustees being Jasper C. Codmus, John W. Snedeker, Lewis Edwards, Azaria Denham and John Simonson.

The land on which Trinity Church and parsonage were built, was purchased June 25, 1851, and was a part of the estate of John Bodine, Sr. The bell and clock in the tower of this church were procured by the contributions of the people residing in its vicinity. Extensive improvements have been made on the structure during the pastorate of the Rev. Enoch Meachem, who came to it in 1896, and still supplies its pulpit.

The pastors who have served Trinity Methodist Church are as follows: Benjamin Kelly, 1852-3; T. Pierson, 1854-5; N. Vansaut, 1856-7; M. E. Ellison, 1858-9; James M. Freeman, 1860-1; R. S. Arndt, 1862-3; J. O. Winner, 1864; John F. Hurst, 1865; A. Owen, 1866; Thomas H. Smith, 1867-8-9; James O. Rogers, 1870-2; J. L. Hurlbut, 1872-3-4; John B. Taylor, 1875; Solomon Parsons, 1876-7-8; Nicholas Vansant, 1879-80-1; George W. Smith, 1882; L. R. Dunn, 1884; Samuel P. Hammond, 1885-6-7; John Crawford, 1888; D. B. F.

Digitized by Google

Randolph, 1889-90-1-2-3; W. B. Wigg, 1894-5-6; 1897 to present time, Enoch Meachem.

The Methodists of Mariners' Harbor decided to build a church nearer their homes. Accordingly a new society was organized on April 6, 1839, by the erection of Peter Braisted, Henry Jones, Benjamin B. Kinsey, John L. Richards and Daniel Simonson as trustees. The certificate of incorporation was recorded on the 4th day of May following, and the 11th of the same month a lot was purchased for $275, and during the following six months the church was erected. It was dedicated on December 1, 1839.

For several years the same pastor served this church and the one at New Springville, but in 1849, the connection was severed, and each church became an independent charge. A parsonage was purchased in 1854. It was in time found necessary to erect a larger house, which was accordingly done, and the new edifice, from thenceforth known as the Summerfield Methodist Episcopal Church, was dedicated on the 10th of October, 1869. The old church building was sold for $1,500, and is now owned and occupied by the Mariners' Harbor Women's Christian Temperance Union. Rev. H. J. Johnstone is the pastor at present.

THE VAN PELT HOUSE, AT WOODROW; ERECTED IN 1717. WHERE BISHOP ASBURY PREACHED HIS FIRST SERMON IN AMERICA.

Grace Church, at Port Richmond, was originally called the "North Shore Free Methodist Episcopal Church." It was organized under that title on January 23, 1867, having forty-eight names on its roll at that time, the greater part of whom had withdrawn from Trinity Church, at West New Brighton. The meeting for organization was held in the Baptist Church at Port Richmond, at which place the first Sabbath services of this church were also held, on the 27th of the same month. At the first election of trustees, on February 18, 1876, the present name was adopted. The trustees then elected were Read Benedict, Ward McLean, John Q. Simonson, William Greer, N. P. H. Barrett, John S. Sprague, William Bamber, Dr. Frank P. Johnson and George F. Heal. Previous to the erection of the church a tabernacle, which cost $600, was temporarily used for public worship.

Digitized by Google

The corner-stone of Grace Church was laid on August 1, 1867, and the church was dedicated on December 29, 1867. The Church is located on Heberton avenue, between Bond street and Grace Church place. The first church edifice was erected at a cost of $10,000. The building was partially destroyed by fire in 1895, and a handsome brick structure was erected in its place immediately afterward.

The pastors of this church have been as follows: Alexander M. Mead, 1867 to September, 1868; P. D. Day, September 15, 1868, to the end of the Conference year; J. J. Read, Jr., 1873; W. I. Gill, 1874 to 1876; T. H. Landon, 1877; Joseph A. Owen, 1878; J. S. Gilbert, 1879 to 1881; E. C. Dutcher, 1882 to 1883; R. S. Arndt, 1884 to 1886; C. S. Little, 1887 to 1891; J. G. Johnson, to 1896; when he was succeeded by A. C. McCrea, who occupies the pulpit at the present time.

St. Mark's Church, at Pleasant Plains, was dedicated in July, 1872. For a brief period it was considered as under the supervision of the Woodrow Church, but it became independent in 1873. Among its pastors have been the Rev. Messrs. Van Zant, Hancock, Miller, Howard and Demming, the latter being the present pastor.

Kingsley Church is located on Cebra avenue, near St. Paul's, at Stapleton. Rev. Henry Boehm, while stationed at Woodrow, organized a class in the Spring of 1835, at the house of Widow White, on "Mud lane," now known as St. Paul's avenue, near the present church. The names of this class were Mrs. James White, William Howard, William Thoon, Mr. and Mrs. Kirby, and Captain and Mrs. Hart. The leader of the class was William Thoon.

Until the first church was built, public services were held at the residence of Mrs. James White, and afterward in the Village Academy. The first board of trustees was elected on July 21, 1835, and the Society was incorporated on the following day, under the title of the "Methodist Episcopal Church of Tompkinsville, Staten Island." The board of trustees consisted of John Totten, Joseph Smith, A. C. Wheeler, Henry Cole and Lawrence Hillyer.

The present site of the church is the only one the Society has ever owned, and originally consisted of four lots, being donated by Mr. Caleb T. Ward, of Stapleton, in December, 1835, on condition that it be used only for church purposes. Mr. Ward, many years afterward, gave the land in fee to the Society, and an additional piece of land.

On June 8, 1837, plans for a church building, thirty-eight by sixty feet, were agreed upon, and estimates were received for the erection of the church edifice. It cost $1,500. The corner-stone was laid about July 1, 1837, and the building was dedicated on September 1, 1838.

The building of a new church was advocated in 1853, the old one being considered unsuitable. On May 28, 1855, the first church building was sold at public auction. Mr. S. N. Havens was the pur-

Digitized by Google

chaser, and he removed it to New Brighton and converted it into a dwelling.

For fifteen years after the organization of this church, it was connected with other Methodist Episcopal Churches on the Island in what is called the Circuit plan. The first pastor was Rev. Henry Boehm.

The Society has had the following pastors: Henry Boehm, Mulford Day, John S. Begle, Mr. Lutton, Mr. Lewis, Benjamin Day, George Wisnor, Watters Burroughs, John Stevenson, George Miller, Jacob B. Graw, D. F. Reed, Mr. Bishop, E. Clement, William H. Dickerson, A. S. Burdett, C. R. Snyder, S. N. Bebour, J. B. Faulks, J. Coyle, H. Spellmyer, J. Cowans, G. Smith, H. Simpson, T. Michael, J. F. Andrew, C. S. Woodruff, C. W. McCormack, R. B. Collins, J. H. Mason and J. C. Howard, who officiates at present.

This Society completed a neat parsonage, in April, 1885, at a cost of $3,500. The corner-stone of the second church building was laid June 1, 1855, during the ministry of Jacob B. Graw, and it was dedicated in December of the same year. The new church was known thereafter as the Stapleton Methodist Episcopal Church.

In 1870, during the ministry of the Rev. Henry Spellmyer, the church was remodelled, enlarged and refurnished, at a cost of $12,000. After these improvements its name was changed to the Kingsley Methodist Episcopal Church, after Bishop Calvin Kingsley.

St. John's Methodist Episcopal Church, at Rossville, was originally a chapel under the jurisdiction of the mother church at Woodrow. It was established about thirty-five years ago. In a few years it became a separate charge, and has remained so up to the present time. Rev. W. M. Wormer is its present pastor.

Forty years or so ago, the Methodists erected a chapel at Kreischerville, and held services in it for a long time. The leaders of the little congregation either died or moved to other fields of labor, in time, and the building was closed to religious worship. The building became a store-house later on.

Sandy Ground, the colored settlement, near Rossville, has two Methodist Churches. This is accounted for by the fact that a few years ago a question arose in the original congregation which led to a division, and the establishment of a second church. One—the African M. E. Zion Church—is presided over by Rev. J. H. Mason; and the other—Mount Zion M. E. Church—has Rev. William A. Hubbard for its pastor.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXII.

THE EPISCOPAL CHURCHES.

AT the commencement of the Eighteenth Century the little village of Richmond was the religious, as well as the business centre, of Staten Island. The Dutch Reformed, the French Huguenots, and the Presbyterians all worshiped under one roof, and finally the Episcopalians also were invited to participate in the hospitalities of the congregation owning the edifice. Religious services, after the forms of the Church of England, were occasionally held on Staten Island—probably at Richmond—previous to 1704. In October of that year, the Rev. William Vesey, of Trinity Church, New York, in reporting the state of religion on Staten Island to the "Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts," says there was a tax of forty pounds a year laid upon the people, and they desired to have a minister sent to them.

It appears that the foundation for this tax lay in the act which was passed under the direction of Governor Fletcher, in 1693, which in effect established the church of England in the Counties of New York, Westchester, Queens and Richmond, under the patronage of the Government. The inhabitants of each county named were, by this act, to choose annually ten vestrymen and two church wardens. These officers were empowered to make choice of the minister or ministers for each district, and for the support of these ministers a certain sum was directed to be assessed on the inhabitants of all denominations in each county.

The act alluded to did not especially enjoin that the ministers so chosen should be of the Episcopal Church, and by an explanatory act, passed several years afterward, it was even declared that dissenting ministers might be chosen. Though this law remained upon the statute book during the Colonial period, it became to a degree inoperative through the munificent bequest of Judge Duxbury, made some years later.

The Rev. John Talbot was sent to Staten Island as a missionary, in 1706, and soon after he was succeeded by the Rev. Eneas McKenzie. Then, Catechists or school-masters were employed under the direction of the Society as early as 1712. Before this time the matter of erecting a church edifice in Richmond was under consideration. The Episcopalians were then using the Dutch-French church for their worship.

Digitized by Google

William Tillyer and Mary, his wife, on the 6th of August, 1711, gave to the Society a building site for a church and burial ground, "at the head of Fresh kill, on Karle's Neck." Then, in 1713, a donation of one hundred and fifty acres of land was made to this church by Adolphus Philips, counsellor; Lancaster Symes, a captain in Fort Lewis; Ebenezer Wilson and Peter Faulconer, merchants, all of New York. This was sold by the trustees, and another piece of ground, more conveniently located, was purchased for a glebe.

A church was erected in 1713, on the ground which two years before had been given for the purpose. It was a plain, stone structure, and stood on substantially the same site now occupied by St. Andrew's Church, at Richmond. In fact, some of the original wall forms a part of the present edifice.

In 1713, Mr. McKenzie writes to the Society that during the first seven years of his ministry on Staten Island he had preached "upon sufferance in a French church," but the church people had now "got a pretty handsome church of their own to preach in," and a house was about being built on the recently purchased glebe. The church was established under the royal charter of Queen Anne, who also presented the congregation with prayer-books, a pulpit cover, a silver communion service and a bell. A portion of the communion service is still in possession of the church authorities. The names of prominent freeholders on the Island, attached to this church, appear in the charter as follows: Ellis Duxbury, Thomas Harmer, Augustin Graham, Joseph Arrowsmith, Lambert Gerretson, Nathaniel Brittain, William Tillyer, Richard Merrill, John Morgan and Alexander Stewart.

Ellis Duxbury bequeathed to this church an extensive tract of land in 1718. His will bears date May 5, 1718, and it was admitted to probate on October 22 following. This property was a plantation of two hundred acres, located at New Brighton, and is frequently mentioned in the records as "Duxbury's Point" and "The Glebe." It was bequeathed to the minister, church wardens and vestry of St. Andrew's Church, for the use and maintenance only of the minister and incumbent. The property still owned by St. Andrew's Church, at Tompkinsville and its vicinity, is a part of this bequest.

The Rev. Mr. McKenzie appears to have had his salary increased in 1717 to £50 a year. It is not known what time he closed his labors here; but in 1733 Mr. Harrison appears as the missionary on Staten Island. The numerical strength of the church, two years later, was about fifty communicants. Mr. Harrison at this time writes that he has baptized nearly seventy children, since he came here; also, "that he hath baptized one Indian Woman, two adult Negroes, and three Negroe Children; that he preaches on Sundays once; catechises and expounds after the second Lesson, and teaches the Negroes after Service is ended, and the Congregation gone home; for many of them

Digitized by Google

live far from church, and will not come twice nor stay long." Mr. Harrison died while in this charge on October 4, 1739. Mr. Arnold, who had been travelling through New England, then became the missionary on Staten Island. In 1743, he writes "that his church is increased two-fold, and that he hath lately baptized ten Negroes, and is still preparing several more for that Sacrament." Having resigned in 1745, he was succeeded by Rev. Richard Caner.

The Rev. Richard Charlton became rector in 1747. His eldest daughter was connected by marriage with the Dongan family, being the wife of Thomas Dongan, and mother of John C. Dongan. Another daughter was the wife of Dr. Richard Bailey, who was Health Officer of the Port of New York, and died in 1801. Dr. Charlton's ministry continued for thirty-two years, and covered a portion of the period of the Revolution; and notwithstanding the church was utilized part of the time as a hospital for the British sick and wounded, it was the only one on Staten Island in which services were held uninterruptedly during the war. Dr. Charlton died in 1779, and was buried under the communion table of St. Andrew's Church. Rev. Mr. Field became the next rector of St. Andrew's, on the 1st day of May, 1780. He had been a chaplain in the British Army, and was stationed near Richmond during the war. His first baptism is recorded two weeks after that day. Mr. Field died in 1782, and was buried by the soldiers of the Seventy-first Regiment of the British Army, his grave being beneath the church.

DANIEL JONES HOMESTEAD, OLD PLACE.

The Rev. John H. Rowland became rector in 1783. Although a native of Wales, he had previously settled in a parish in Virginia. He removed to Nova Scotia in 1788, and died in 1795.

The Rev. Richard Channing Moore became rector in 1788. He was born in New York City on August 21, 1762; studied medicine and practiced physic for a few years, when he became a student of Bishop Provost. After receiving orders, his first ministry was for a brief period at Rye, in Westchester County, this State, and in 1788 he came to Staten Island, where he remained until 1808. He then accepted a call to St. Stephen's Church, New York City. He was elected Bishop of Virginia and rector of the Monumental Church in the City of Richmond, and was consecrated on May 18, 1814. While serving

Digitized by Google

in this capacity he preached the sermon at the funeral services of John Marshall, Chief Justice of the United States. In 1802, during Dr. Moore's connection with St. Andrew's, a chapel was built on the North Shore, and called "Trinity Chapel," which is now known as the Church of the Ascension, West New Brighton. He officiated at Perth Amboy also from 1793 to 1801. He died on November 11, 1841, and was buried among those who loved him in old St. Andrew's Cemetery.

Bishop Moore was succeeded by his eldest son at St. Andrew's, in May, 1808. Rev. David Moore was pastor of this church for a period of forty-eight years. He was born in New York City on June 3, 1787. He studied theology with his father, and was admitted to the deaconate in 1808, and assumed immediate charge of the parish. In a corner of the old cemetery near the road, stands a pretty marble monument, erected to his memory.

The Rev. Theodore Irving, LL.D., succeeded Dr. Moore on February 5, 1857, and he resigned in November, 1864. Rev. C. W. Bolton became rector in June, 1865, and resigned in the following January. He was succeeded by the Rev. Kingston Goddard, D. D., of Philadelphia; he died on October 24, 1875, and was succeeded by the Rev. Dr. Thomas A. Yocom, who was installed June 15, 1876. Dr. Yocom is still the rector of St. Andrew's. On June 15, 1897, the completion of his twenty-first year as such, his congregation and neighbors, without regard to church connections, joined in giving him a reception that will linger in the history of the church as one of its happiest incidents.

St. Andrew's Church has twice been almost totally destroyed by fire. Each time it was soon rebuilt. It is justly considered one of the most beautiful church edifices on the Island, and is held in reverence by all who are in the least familiar with its eventful history.

The work of building Trinity Chapel, on the North Shore, in connection with St. Andrew's at Richmond, was commenced in 1800, and was completed in 1802. The lot on which it was built, was conveyed for the purpose by John McVicar, a wealthy resident of the Island residing in the old Dongan house, and connected by marriage with the Dongan family. When preparing the ground for the foundation of the edifice, it became necessary to remove the remnant of a British redoubt.

When the work was commenced on Trinity Chapel, the Rev. David Moore, son of the Bishop, was just entering his teens, and he drove the team which hauled the first load of lumber from the woods, with which to commence the construction of the edifice. This building is still standing in the rear of the Church of the Ascension, having been removed to make room for the new structure. The old building is now used as the parish house.

After Dr. Moore's death, services in the Chapel were conducted by

Digitized by Google

clergymen assigned to perform that duty until May, 1869, when another parish was organized, and Trinity Chapel became the Church of the Ascension.

The first rector, after the organization of the parish, was the Rev. Theodore Irving, LL.D., of Newburgh. In consequence of the rapid increase in the congregation, the old building was found to be insufficient, and the erection of a new church was soon determined upon. The corner-stone of a new edifice was laid with appropriate ceremonies on August 30, 1870, and was first opened for divine services on Ascension Day, May 16, 1871. Dr. Irving continued with this church until February, 1872, when he resigned. In July, 1872, the Rev. James Bush, of San Francisco, became the rector, and remained until 1885, when its present rector, the Rev. Pascal Harrower, entered upon his duties. Dr. Harrower has labored with great earnestness and success for his church and people.

The officers of the church, at the time of the erection of the chapel, were the Rev. Richard Channing Moore, rector; James Guyon, and Peter Mersereau wardens; and Peter Laforge, John Latourette, John Van Dyke, Nicholas Journeay, Paul Micheau, Josiah Wright, Paul J. Micheau and George W. Barnes vestrymen. The material with which the new church is built, is Staten Island granite.

St. John's Episcopal Church at Clifton, was organized by members of St. Andrew's, in May, 1843. The first house of worship was a modest frame building, standing on the west side of New York avenue, nearly opposite the present church.

The corner-stone of this church was laid on July 14, 1843. The building committee was composed of William H. Aspinwall, Levi Cook and W. B. Townsend. The wardens were Charles H. Simonson and William H. Aspinwall, and the vestrymen were Levi Cook, James R. Boardman, M. D., W. B. Townsend, W. D. Cuthbertson, Lewis Lyman, D. B. Allen, W. A. Fountain and W. H. White.

On November 10, 1869, the corner-stone of the present church was laid. The edifice is a handsome stone structure, and is one of the largest houses of worship on the Island. The material of which it is built is mostly a rose-colored granite from Lyme, Connecticut, with string pieces and ornamentations of Belleville stone. The architecture is of the Gothic style of the Fourteenth Century. The windows are of stained glass, with designs highly executed from Italian religious art. St. John's was consecrated by Bishop Horatio Potter, on September 30, 1871.

The first rector of St. John's Church was the Rev. Kingston Goddard, from June, 1844, to June, 1847. His successors have been the Rev. Alexander G. Mercer, from June, 1847, to September, 1852; Rev. R. M. Ambercrombie, from January, 1853, to February, 1856; Rev. John C. Eccleston, from April, 1856, to January, 1863; Rev. Thomas K. Conrad, from March, 1863, to October, 1866; John C. Eccleston,

Digitized by Google

D. D., again from 1867, to 1899, and C. C. Walker, from 1899 to the present time.

A commodious rectory was built beside the church in 1862, and a parish building, known as the Mercer Memorial Chapel, was erected on the same plot of ground in 1865. Within the past few years nearly two hundred thousand dollars have been spent on improvements in this parish.

St. Paul's Protestant Episcopal Church, on St. Paul's avenue, Tompkinsville, was organized at a meeting held at the Planters' Hotel, on March 11, 1833. Before the erection of a church edifice, services were held in private residences at Tompkinsville, over which the Rev. Samuel Haskell officiated.

The first officers elected were Henry Draisler and Richard S. Carey,

ST. JOHN'S PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCH, CLIFTON.

wardens; and Daniel Van Duzer, Sr., Caleb S. Ward, Richard Harcourt, Charles Simonson, George Brown, Daniel Simonson, Richard Sharrett and Henry B. Metcalfe, vestrymen. The Rev. F. H. Cuming was "called to the rectorship at a salary of $300 a year, and ferry tickets for himself and family to pass freely between the Island and New York, where he resided." He commenced his services here in July, 1833. The corner-stone of an edifice was laid on the 3d of July, 1834, Bishop Onderdonk officiating.

Mr. Cuming resigned on the 3d of May, 1834, and Rev. William Curtis was his successor. He entered upon his duties on August 1st, following, and died on the 21st of the same month.

The first edifice occupied by the congregation of St. Paul's, was

Digitized by Google

built upon ground given by Caleb T. Ward, on what was then Richmond avenue, but now known as St. Paul's. The church was consecrated on June 22, 1835, and was used for religious services until 1870. Its cost was $5,831.34. The building was sold under a foreclosure, in 1861. It was purchased by Mr. Ward, and by him resold to the church. At a later period, Judge Albert Ward, proposed to erect, at his own expense, a handsome stone church, and donate it to the parish, on certain conditions, which were accepted, and the corner-stone of the new church was laid on September 29, 1866.

The new church was completed in 1870, and services were held in it for the first time on Easter day, April 17 of that year. The church was formally consecrated on May 31, following, the name having been changed to "St. Paul's Memorial Church, Edgewater." The building is one of very substantial architecture and construction, and is said to have cost about $50,000.

Other rectors of St. Paul's were as follows: Rev. William H. Walter, from 1836 to December 3, 1838. Then followed Rev. William Walton, from December 27, 1839, to October 1, 1843; Rev. Gordon Winslow, from May 1, 1844, to April, 1852; Rev. Charles A. Maison, from July, 1852, to April, 1857; Rev. E. H. Cressy, from October, 1859, to Novemb[illegible] 1861; Rev. E. W. Punnett, from November, 1861, to February, 1875; Rev. Charles B. Coffin, from April, 1875, to his death, on July 10, 1875; Rev. Albert U. Stanley, from November, 1875, to May 1, 1882; Rev. Henry B. Wayne, from July 1, 1882, to 1893; and Rev. Alonzo E. Wood, the present rector.

St. Luke's Church is located at Rossville. It was erected in 1843, and its first rector was the Rev. C. D. Jackson. He officiated about six years. Rev. William H. Rees was his successor, and officiated about five years. The next minister we find is the Rev. Jesse Pound, who died in the parish, after a service of nine or ten years. He was succeeded by the Rev. Henry H. Bean, who, after several years' service, also died in the parish. We find no other name until we come to that of Rev. William Wardlaw, who came to the church about 1884, and remained for several years. Rev. Charles J. Adams is the present rector.

The Church of the Holy Comforter, at Eltingville, was dedicated on October 8, 1865, its erection being largely due to the efforts of Mr. Albert Journeay, assisted by the women of the surrounding neighborhood. The parish was organized on October 24, 1865. The incorporators were Albert Journeay, James Guyon, Edward Banker, Jr., S. K. Raymond, John W. Mersereau, Jr., and Charles E. Robins. The edifice was consecrated on May 29, 1868. The rectors have been as follows: Rev. J. W. Payne, from November 29, 1865, to August 9, 1866; Rev. W. W. Holley, from October 4, 1866, to October 24, 1867; Rev. W. Leacock, from February 26, 1868, to September 23, 1868; Rev. Newland Maynard, from September 27, 1869, to May 23, 1871;

Digitized by Google

Rev. Frederick M. Gray, from August 1, 1873, to 1895; and the Rev. C. P. Wilson, the present pastor.

Christ Church, at New Brighton, was organized on July 9, 1849, some of the movers in the enterprise being members of St. Paul's, of Tompkinsville. The ground was donated by the New Brighton Association. The edifice is a frame building, and stands in the midst of well-kept grounds on the West side of Franklin avenue, between Richmond terrace and Second street.

The nave of the present church was built in 1850, the transepts being completed at a later date. The first wardens were William H. Pendleton and David A. Comstock; and the first vestrymen were George Wotherspoon, Samuel T. Jones, Travis B. Cutting, Matthew Morgan, George E. Kunhardt, Peter Stuyvesant, Philip P. Kissam and Charles D. Rhodes. A commodious Sunday-school building was completed in 1874.

The first rector of Christ Church was Rev. Pierre P. Irving, who began with its earliest existence, and remained with it for a term of twenty-five years. During the last two or three years he was assisted in his duties by the Rev. Hamilton Lee.

Rev. George D. Johnson, the present rector, who, as Ven. Archdeacon, presides over the Archdeaconry of Richmond, came to this church in 1875. An earnest, cheerful worker for the Master, he has found his way into the hearts of members of all denominations, all of whom look upon him as a sincere friend.

St. Mary's Protestant Episcopal Church was organized at the residence of Mr. Edward Bement, Richmond terrace and Bement avenues, West New Brighton, in 1856. The neat stone structure on Castleton avenue was built in 1858. Finally after a number of appointments, the Rev. Alfred G. Mortimer became rector, and placed the church upon a solid foundation. Dr. Mortimer also established a parochial school in connection with this church (that of St. Austin's), which under his management also became a success.

Other Protestant Episcopal Churches on the Island are as follows: Chapel of our Father, Central avenue, Mariners' Harbor; New Dorp Mission, Mill road, New Dorp; Randall Memorial Church, Sailors' Snug Harbor; Trinity Mission, Fifth and Ocean avenues, New Dorp; St. Stephen's, Tottenville; St. Simon's Chapel, Concord.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE BAPTIST CHURCHES.

MISSIONARY work on the part of New York City pastors and licentiates caused the establishment of the first Baptist Church on Staten Island. So far as is known, the first meetings were held by Reverends John Gano and Elkanah Holmes, in the summer of 1785. They were in the open air and were held at different places on the East Shore and interior of the Island. Evening meetings were held in barns and private dwellings.

The "First Baptist Church of Staten Island" was constituted on December 30, 1785. It was composed of the following persons, they having been baptized during the autumn preceding: Belichy Fountain, Anthony Fountain, Jr., Hannah Fountain, Nicholas Cox, Margaret Kruser, Mary Van Name, Mary Lockerman, Susannah Wandel, Jacob Van Pelt, John Wandel, Jr., Charles Van Name and John Lockerman.

The Rev. Elkanah Holmes was the first pastor of this church, and he continued as such for about ten years. Rev. Daniel Steers was ordained about August 23, 1797, and at once became pastor of this church, which he continued to serve until about 1808, when he resigned. He was succeeded by Rev. Nicholas Cox, who died shortly afterward.

Meetings had been held in the open air up to this time, occasionally being transferred to private dwellings and school-houses. It was resolved, however, to build a meeting house in 1809, and the resolution was carried into effect. The house was opened for divine worship on the 24th of the following October. The Rev. W. Parkinson, of the First Baptist Church of New York, delivered the first sermon. The church building was about twenty by thirty feet in size, and stood on the side of the hill at the junction of the old Clove and Richmond roads, at Concord. Though the building has long since disappeared, there are a number of old Staten Islanders still living who remember it well. Its site is still marked by the neglected graves which were made near it in days of yore. It is stated on good authority that this was the only edifice owned by this denomination in this county up to the year 1830. It was familiarly known as the "Old Clove Church," and for many years, even after the date mentioned, was "the favored centre to which members of the sect came to worship from many of the surrounding villages."

Digitized by Google

On May 1, 1810, the Rev. James Bruce commenced his pastorate here. He was ordained at the First Baptist Church in New York, on the 21st of June, following. Mr. Bruce was then a young man, but soon proved himself a very earnest and faithful pastor; he died in February, 1811. He was succeeded by the Rev. Samuel Carpenter, in September following, and was pastor of the church until 1813. Various changes followed, there appearing to be no settled minister until August 6, 1817, when Elder Robert F. Randolph was called. He resigned in the spring of 1819, and was succeeded by Thomas B. Stevenson, then a licentiate.

At that time baptisms were frequently performed on the shore near John Lockerman's farm, at Mariners' Harbor, as well as on the shore on the South side of the Island. Mr. Stevenson was ordained on the 25th of August, 1819, and continued until August, 1822. Another period of unsettled supply of the pulpit followed, but on October 25, 1823, Arma R. Martin, a licentiate of the Bethel Baptist Church of New York, was called, and was ordained on June 9, 1824. The membership of the church at that time numbered fifty persons.

The work of the church moved steadily forward. Meetings were held in the neighborhood of Rossville, then generally known as the "West Quarter." Concord, in those days, was known as "Dutch Farms," and the "Farms Meeting House" was a common expression among the people of the Island.

A parsonage stood opposite the church, on the Richmond road, near where Mr. Darrah's blacksmith-shop is now located. It was purchased during the first year of Mr. Martin's pastorate. The Mariners' Harbor members desired to have a church of their own nearer their homes. This feeling resulted in the building, in 1830, of a church at Graniteville. In May, 1834, the membership of the Old Clove Church was seventy-six. Mr. Martin remained with this church until October 26, 1835, when he died.

The Rev. Samuel White became pastor of the Old Clove Church on June 1, 1836, and under his ministrations the membership increased until it reached one hundred and thirty-four, in 1840. It was reduced to ninety-three in 1841, by the withdrawal of members who joined the church at Graniteville. Then the Old Clove Church began to fall into decline, and for several years was barely able for a part of the time to maintain regular Sabbath services. Elder White was assisted in the last few years of his life by supplies, who preached in the branch church and part of the time in the Old Clove Church. He died May 3, 1863, after a pastorate of twenty-five years, during which time he had baptized two hundred and fifty-two persons, of whom several became licentiates or ordained ministers. In much of his revival work he was assisted by the Rev. Mr. Arthur, father of ex-President Chester A. Arthur. Mr. White's remains were deposited in the family vault in the grounds of the church at Graniteville.

Digitized by Google

The Rev. Mr. Patterson, a son-in-law of Mr. White, became pastor of the church in the summer of 1863, and continued in that capacity until May, 1865. After that, the church had supplies for several years, and during that time its life seemed to dissolve into that of the branch church at Graniteville. The title of the Old Clove Church became vested in the heirs of Mr. White, in liquidation of a claim which he had long held against the church. The old building was afterward used as a school-house for several years; but in 1877 it was demolished.

A new house of worship was built by the church at Graniteville, about half a mile East of the "North" Church. This is the building which stands on the Gun Factory road. It was opened for worship in April, 1842, the Rev. Spencer H. Cone preaching the first sermon. This branch of the Old Clove Church seemed to prosper for a time, but after the death of Mr. White it fell into decline. From 1867 to 1870, it was seldom opened for worship. Mr. Waters was employed a few months in the latter year. John A. Wilson preached during the latter part of 1871, to May, 1872, and Henry Willetts followed in a short time. In September, 1872, Duncan Young became pastor, and continued three years. Rev. Jackson Ga Nun labored eight months, beginning in January, 1876. John B. Palvert, in December, 1877, began serving as a supply, after the house had been closed over a year. He remained till July, 1879. James B. Drysden and George Nock held services in the church for short periods, but no regular church services were held in it from 1880 to 1899. About 1882, the Society disbanded. The later history of the church seems to have been a race between it and the "North" Church, (which afterward became the "Park" Church,) in which the old church was obliged at last to give up.

RESIDENCE OF GENERAL VAN BUREN, TOMPKINSVILLE.

Meetings were held by the Baptist denomination in the vicinity of Holland's Hook, about the year 1810, in such places as John Lockerman's orchard, just West of Summerfield avenue, and similar available nooks. Several members of the Old Clove Church lived in the vicinity, and a few years later they inaugurated a movement leading

Digitized by Google

to the establishment of a place of worship near their homes. The public school-house at Mariners' Harbor, a small, primitive structure, in keeping with the times, was secured. and regular services were commenced in June, 1825. Ground for a building site, on the Richmond road at Graniteville, was given by Jedediah Winant, in 1829, and a building, thirty-one by forty-one feet, and twenty feet high, was erected on it. This edifice was opened on July 22, 1830. It stood upon what is now the burial ground known as "Hillside Cemetery," on the Richmond road, directly opposite the Graniteville school-house. On Sabbath afternoons and alternate Sabbath evenings the pulpit was supplied by the pastor of the Old Clove Church. The first Baptist Sunday-school on Staten Island, was organized in this church on the third Sabbath of August, 1832.

It appears that this branch soon began to break away from the mother church, and so, in 1836, it had a communion service and officers by itself. The question of separation from the old church was frequently under discussion, and such a step was finally resolved upon at a meeting held on February 3, 1841. The "North Baptist Church" was then organized with fifty-three members, on March 1, 1841. The Rev. J. T. Seely became its pastor on the 4th of May. During his pastorate a remarkable revival occurred, remembered as "the revival in the old rubber factory," at what is now West New Brighton. Fifty-one baptisms were the result of this movement. The little congregation then determined upon building a church of their own at Port Richmond, and a modest frame building was dedicated on February 27, 1843. Services were held at Graniteville in the morning, and at Port Richmond in the evening—an arrangement which continued until February 15, 1857, when the Graniteville edifice became the property of the Mariners' Harbor Baptist Church, organized at that time.

Mr. Seely closed his labors on August 1, 1845, and he was succeeded by the Rev. David Morris. who remained until May 1, 1849. He was followed by Rev. B. C. Townsend, who served from May, 1850, to May, 1852. Rev. Aaron Jackson followed with nine months' service. Rev. John Seage became pastor in May, 1853, and resigned in May, 1856. He was followed by Rev. Z. P. Childs, on May 1, 1856, and remained until May 15, 1858, during which time, February 15, 1857, forty-eight members left the organization to constitute the Mariners' Harbor Baptist Church.

In August, 1858, the Rev. George W. Dodge became the pastor, and he resigned in June, 1859. He was succeeded, in December, 1860, by Rev. W. A. Barnes, who departed two months later. The church had not the brightest prospects at that time, and many feared that it would soon disband. There was no settled pastor until the Summer of 1864, the church having been temporarily supplied by Rev. W. B. Schrope. The question of deeding the property to the Mariners'

Digitized by Google

Harbor church was seriously considered by the members. But just as this feeling of depression had reached its lowest point, the members aroused themselves to make one more effort for existence, and the Rev. D. B. Patterson was called to fill the pulpit on July 24, 1864; he resigned in 1866.

The membership of the church had become reduced to thirty-one, and the house was closed for several months. Finally the Rev. D. W. Sherwood was called to the pastorate, in December, 1866, but he resigned in 1870. Rev. S. G. Smith was pastor from October, 1870, to 1877. "During this time the church had grown stronger; fifty seven persons had been baptized, and the church edifice remodelled, at an expense of $13,000. The name was changed to the 'Park Baptist Church of Port Richmond,' and the present brick church was erected."

On April 1, 1878, the Rev. A. S. Gumbart was called to this charge, and he was ordained on May 16, following; he resigned in June, 1880, having received forty-nine members into the church. Rev. J. J. Muir was his successor, and entered upon his duties as pastor in March, 1880. He was succeeded in 1883 by Rev. J. B. L'Hommedieu, who began his service on October 1, 1883. Under his ministrations more than a hundred members were added to the church. Mr. L'Hommedieu resigned in 1895, and was succeeded by the Rev. William Morrison, the present successful and popular pastor. A parsonage was recently erected on ground adjoining the church.

Forty-eight members were dismissed, at their own request, from the North Baptist Church, on February 15, 1857, to organize the church at Mariners' Harbor. This church was constituted by a council held on March 12, 1857, and a full organization effected by a meeting at the house of George F. Thompson, on the first of April following. The first trustees were David Van Name, George F. Thompson, William Lissenden and Jacob Van Pelt. The cornerstone of a new edifice was laid September 9, 1857, and the building was dedicated on May 5, 1858. Meetings were held in the old Graniteville Church until the completion of the new one. The cost of the building and grounds was about $10,000. The Graniteville Church had been granted to this Society by a resolution of the North Church, made January 17, 1857.

The church was cleared of debt in 1868. The successive ministers who have served it have been as follows: Rev. Z. P. Childs, from 1857 to 1858; Rev. J. N. Tolman, 1858, to 1861; Rev. G. P. Folwell, from 1861 to 1862; Rev. J. L. Benedict, from 1862 to 1864; Rev. J. J. Brouner, from 1864 to 1869; Rev. W. B. Harris, from 1869 to 1872; Rev. J. W. Taylor, from 1872 to 1875; Rev. C. W. Hull, from 1875 to 1877; Rev. W. R. Maul, from November, 1877, to 1889; Rev. Sidney Welden is the incumbent.

Meetings began to be held by the Baptists in private houses in various parts of the town of Westfield as early as 1826. They were

Digitized by Google

under the auspices of the members of the Old Clove Church. The principal places were the homes of Edward Weir, in Pleasant Plains; Mrs. Gilletta Murray, in Rossville; Israel Journeay and Mrs. Catherine Ely, and in school houses at Tottenville, Richmond Valley and Bloomingview. These meetings led to the establishment of a branch church at a location which some years later was called Kreischerville, and the corner-stone was laid on March 31, 1847, and the dedication of the building on the 16th of September following. It was a frame building, thirty by forty-two feet. It remained as a branch or chapel, until 1848, when the "West Baptist Church of Staten Island" was organized on the 24th of May. The constituent members were Israel Journeay, Aaron Van Name, Edward Weir, Catherine Journeay, Gilletta Murray, Catherine Ely, Alice A. Ellis, Phoebe Androvette, Hannah Martin and Mary Benedict. A Sunday-school was organized on the first Sunday in May, 1849, with Mrs. Catherine Ely as superintendent.

Rev. William Pike, of Haverstraw, was the first pastor of this charge. He entered the pastorate on June 1, 1848. Rev. John Burnett was his successor, assuming charge on November 1, 1854. He also preached at Tottenville on stated evenings, in a chapel which had been built by Harmon Kingsbury. Mr. Burnett died on March 1, 1858, and his successor, Rev. Thomas W. Conway, was called on July 1, following, and he was ordained on October 20, of the same year; he remained until October 30, 1860. On December 30, 1859, ten members withdrew to form the "South Baptist Church," at Tottenville, which left this church with a membership of only thirty.

The Rev. Arthur Day became the pastor of both churches on January 1, 1861, and resigned in January, 1863. Supplies followed, until the Rev. William James was settled over both churches in January, 1865, continuing until February, 1866. Rev. William B. Harris was pastor from February 26, 1867, to March 1, 1869. Rev. David Taylor was pastor for one year from June 1, 1869. These churches dissolved connection in 1870.

For a long time services were held in the residences of the Baptists of Tottenville, the Rev. George F. Hendrickson, of Perth Amboy, New Jersey, officiating, and from 1852 to 1858, he was assisted by the Reverends Pike and Burnett, of the West Baptist Church. Later, services were held in the little chapel. Temperance Hall was secured in the spring of 1859, and services were thereafter held in it on Sabbath mornings. A church organization was effected on December 11, 1859, under the title of the "South Church of Staten Island." The following members withdrew from the West Church to become connected with the new organization: T. W. Conway, John Tucker, S. B. Hazelton, George D. Fisher, William Cooley, Isabella Fisher, Mary Wrifle, Sarah A. Ellis, Maria T. Hazelton, Isabella Ayer, Melvina Cole, Ann Storer and S. D. Reed.

Digitized by Google

On Monday, February 8, 1860, the corner-stone of a new edifice was laid. The church was supplied with ministerial service in connection with the West Church until 1870. It was cleared of debt in August, 1871, principally through the efforts of Mr. John Turner, who himself assumed one-half the burden, and in addition erected at his own expense a lecture-room in the rear of the church.

From October, 1871, the pulpit was filled by temporary supplies, to September, 1875, when the South and West Churches were again united in pastoral support under the ministration of Isaac W. Brinkerhoff, who continued to serve them until July 1, 1881. Rev. Calvin A. Hare became pastor of the South Church in April, 1882, and remained until 1884, when Rev. T. B. Bott was called. The Rev. J. C. Hendrickson is the pastor at the present time.

The First Baptist Church of New Brighton was organized in 1884, with twelve members, the leading spirit of the movement being Mr. James Crabtree. Rev. J. B. McQuillan was the first pastor. In November of the same year the church, having secured a lease of the Unitarian house of worship, on Clinton avenue, engaged the first pastor. Mr. McQuillan began his term of service on the first Sabbath in January, 1885. A baptistry was placed in the church, and several candidates immersed, the first in New Brighton for nearly forty years. The church was duly recognized by a council of the Southern New York Baptist Association, on the 2d of February, 1886. Mr. McQuillan resigned on July 1, 1887. The church had a struggle for a time, but in 1897, a very substantial church edifice was erected on Westervelt avenue, under the pastorate of the Rev. J. B. Toy, who, after a time, resigned. Rev. H. B. Hudson is the present pastor.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXIV.

THE LUTHERAN AND CONGREGATIONAL CHURCHES, ETC.

THE first Lutheran denomination on Staten Island was organized on October 17, 1852, and was called the "German Evangelical Lutheran Church of St. John," and was located at Port Richmond. It belongs to the sect known as the "Unaltered Augsburgian Confession." This confession was drawn up at Augsburg by Melancthon, and by him and Luther presented to Emperor Charles in 1530.

The original members of this church were as follows: John Rathyen, Paul Schmidt, Charles Keutgen, John Hettsche, Carl Senne, A. Knopp, Ernst Senne, Louis Koenig, John C. Schiegel, Augustus Senne, J. H. Matthius, Diedrich Senne, Gottlieb Bertsch, Carl Neidthart, Adam Fuegel and A. Hulsebus.

The pastors of this church have been as follows: Bernard de Schweinitz; Fr. Boeling, from 1853 to 1855; H. Roel, from 1855 to 1856; J. F. C. Hennicke, from 1856 to 1857; K. Goeghling, from 1858 to 1859; M. Termenstein, from 1860 to 1867; J. E. Gottlieb, from 1867 to 1875; C. Frincke, Jr., December 5, 1875, to 1884; J. P. Schoener, from April 19, 1885, to 1897, when the Rev. John C. Borth became the pastor.

The church has over two hundred communicant members. The edifice was purchased from the Methodists, it having been the first home of the congregation of Trinity Methodist Church of West New Brighton.

The German Evangelical Lutheran Church of Stapleton was organized in 1856. Pastor Christian Hennicke had been on Staten Island for some time prior to that date, evidently striving to organize a church of that denomination on the East Shore.

The first meeting of the congregation was held on the evening of December 22, 1856, in the Methodist Episcopal Church on Cebra avenue, Stapleton, when the title of the church was adopted. The officers then chosen were Andrew Wohlrabe, President; Henry Uhrbrock, Treasurer, and Ernest F. Korhm, Secretary. They also comprised the Board of Trustees.

The first regular service was held on October 26, 1856. On February 17, 1857, Frank Lenting and Ernest F. Korhm, secured certificate of incorporation. On May 4, 1857, the congregation decided to collect funds for the erection of a church building, services still

Digitized by Google

being held in the Methodist Church. On October 1, 1857, the congregation decided to accept Pastor Hennicke.

On February 2, 1862, the following board of trustees was elected: P. W. Caesar, President; Louis DeJonge, Vice-President; D. Bauer, Secretary; Julius DeJonge, Carl Franke, F. Lenting, William Houff, H. Uhrbrock, C. Winzer.

After October, 1857, there were no services until January 30, 1859, when a request was made by the congregation to Pastor Guerling, of Port Richmond. He accepted the call, and remained until October, 1869.

In May, 1862, a reorganization was effected, and fifty-one members signed the constitution. There were ninety-one communicants on January 18, 1863.

At the annual meeting on February 5, 1865, Louis DeJonge reported that four lots had been procured at the corner of Beach street and Richmond road. Two of these lots were purchased from Albin Warth, for $2,000, and two were presented by him.

A committee consisting of Julius Francke, Herman Jasper and Rudolph Lienhard was appointed in April, 1864, to confer with L. H. Meyer relative to building a church edifice. The pastor reported one hundred and sixty-eight communicants.

Pastor Guerling left in October, 1869, and was succeeded by Robert Karl Beer, who remained until October, 1870. Pastor E. Hering came in July, 1871, and remained until September, 1893. He was followed by Pastor A. Krause, who is still serving the congregation, and has a warm place in the hearts of his people.

There are at present three hundred and twenty-five communicants, with a Sunday-school numbering forty-five teachers and three hundred and sixty children. The pastor is the superintendent.

The present board of trustees is composed of the following: Otto Lindermann, President; Edward Meuer, Vice-President; Charles F. Zentgraff, Secretary; John C. Siemer, Treasurer; William Ehlert, Elder; Adolph Schaus, Charles Schumann, Christian Bardes, Francis Kumm, Frederick Harder and Albert Stake, Trustees.

The German Evangelical St. Peter's Church of Kreischerville was the result of the liberality of the late Belthaser Kreischer. The organization having been completed, Rev. Jacob Ganss, a student of theology, was called on trial. After passing a most satisfactory examination, he was recommended by the Classis of New York, ordained a minister of the Gospel, on November 16, 1883, and was duly installed as minister of the new church.

This church was incorporated on the 23d day of October, 1881, but for some time after the organization the little Methodist Episcopal chapel in the village was occupied by the congregation. A great majority of those who worship in this church are German or of German extraction, and are connected with the extensive factories at that place.

Digitized by Google

"The Congregational Church of the Evangelists of New Brighton" was established on September 21, 1851, by Messrs. James Parker, Lucius Tuckerman, W. C. Goodhue, George W. Jewett, John Crabtree, A. J. Hamilton, George A. Ward, Robert C. Goodhue, William W. Russell, Smith Ely, S. M. Elliot, John D. Sloat, J. E. Kuhnhardt, William F. Cary, John Jewett, Jr., L. G. Wyeth and Mrs. M. Pendleton.

This Society held its meetings at Belmont Hall, New Brighton, Mr. Parkman preaching on alternate Sundays there and at the Lyceum, for about six months, when, unable to obtain a suitable place of worship, the organization dissolved. Mr. Parkman was called to the pastorate of the united body, and the name of the corporation was changed to that of "The Church of the Redeemer," Messrs. Daniel Low, George A. Ward, W. C. Goodhue, John F. Raymond, Lucius Tuckerman, H. M. Harding, A. J. Hamilton, John Crabtree and Daniel G. Garrison being the board of trustees. A building for church purposes was erected on Richmond turnpike, at the foot of Cebra avenue, which was dedicated on June 29, 1853. The church was so prosperous that it was soon found necessary to enlarge the edifice to double its original size.

CLINCH HOMESTEAD, RICHMOND ROAD, NEAR THE CLOVE; ERECTED ABOUT 1700.

Mr. Parkman, with his family, went to Europe, and he was succeeded temporarily by Rev. Charles Ritter and Rev. R. B. Cutler, and finally in November, 1865, after an unsuccessful attempt to induce Mr. Parkman, on his return to Boston from Europe, to resume his former charge, the church was closed, the building sold and removed, the land also sold, and the proceeds invested in United States bonds.

The corporation was continued. In 1868, Rev. W. R. G. Mellen, then Secretary of the Hudson River Conference, gathered the congregation together, and attempted its reorganization. Meetings were held at the Union Sunday-school rooms in New Brighton, at which he conducted the services.

A reorganization was effected, and Messrs. Daniel Low, George W. Jewett, John C. Henderson, Charles C. Goodhue, George William Curtis, John H. Platt, Edward B. Merrill, J. Frank Emmons and Andrew M. F. Davis were chosen trustees. A lot of land on the corner

Digitized by Google

of Clinton avenue and Second street, New Brighton, was purchased, and a church edifice erected thereon at a cost of nearly $15,000. The larger part of this sum was paid by the funds in hand and by subscriptions, but a debt of nearly $6,000 remained.

Rev. W. C. Badger was called to the pastorate, but resigned in about eighteen months. The pulpit was afterward supplied by different clergymen for a while, but for several months the services were conducted by Mr. George William Curtis. In May, 1871, Rev. W. R. G. Mellen was settled as pastor, and remained in charge until May, 1874. After this the services were principally and gratuitously conducted by Mr. Curtis.

During this period a fine organ was purchased and paid for, mainly through the exertions of Mr. J. W. Simonton. The debt was paid off, Mr. Low having contributed largely for that purpose.

When, after a few years, Mr. Curtis relinquished the conduct of the services, the Society invited various clergymen to preach, and finally asked the Rev. Alphonso Weeks to become the pastor. He was obliged to decline, and the religious services were suspended. The church remained unoccupied until 1884, when it was let to the Baptist Society.

The new building of St. Paul's German Lutheran Evangelical Church, at Cary avenue and Caroline street, West New Brighton, was dedicated Sunday afternoon, August 26, 1900. The members of the church, numbering about seventy-five, assembled in Roe's Hall, in Taylor street, and marched to the church, where they were met by the pastor, the Rev. J. C. Reichert, and entered the church. The choir marched in front, singing an anthem. The Rev. J. C. R. Luehrs, of Jersey City, presided. The sermon was delivered by the Rev. Dr. A. Richter, of Hoboken, New Jersey, and the Rev. Dr. G. Berkmeier, of Mount Vernon, delivered an interesting address. Other clergymen present were the Rev. Charles Rabbow, of Jersey City; the Rev. George Blaese, of Bloomfield, New Jersey; the Rev. A. Krause, of Stapleton, and the Rev. W. Trebert, of Plainfield, New Jersey.

The building is constructed of rock faced brick, is of colonial architecture, is 42 feet in width and 72 feet in length, and has a seating capacity of three hundred. The interior is handsomely furnished. The windows are of colored Cathedral glass, and the pews are of highly polished oak. The cost of the building was $7,000.

THE JEWISH SYNAGOGUE.—Notwithstanding the fact that the Hebrew Society of Staten Island had been organized for a full decade, the believers in that religion had no place of worship here until 1891, when the neat edifice on Richmond turnpike, near Tompkinsville, was erected. It is known as Bnei Jeshurum. The congregation is considerably over one hundred and is rapidly increasing. The services are conducted by Rabbi Walkowics.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXV.

THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCHES.

RELIGIOUS worship, according to the Roman Catholic faith, was practiced on Staten Island while the Waldenses were at Stony Brook and the French at Marshlands. And yet, considering the terrible excitement of the time, in consequence of opposite opinions on the great questions of religion, it must be said to the honor and credit of all, that not one unpleasant incident is recorded as the result of personal conflict between the two factions on Staten Island. Everybody seems to have been permitted to worship God according to the honest dictates of his own conscience.

We have only tradition for the statement that a little Roman Catholic Church was located at Cucklestown about 1720. This comes from a historical story of the novel type, telling of the adventures of a member of an Irish regiment, who had served here during the Revolution, and who had come back many years afterward, in search of the grave of a comrade.

It is positively known, however, that the Roman Catholics met in the residence of Governor Dongan, at what is now West New Brighton, and held religious services, and that the Indian chiefs and others prominent among the tribes located here, were present by invitation of the Governor.

It is not likely that any positive attempt was made to establish a Roman Catholic Church on Staten Island until about 1815, and in the absence of any structure known to have been dedicated to that purpose, we conclude that whatever efforts were made were without success. But there is standing on Giffords lane, about midway between the Fresh Kill road and Giffords station, a small wooden structure, occupied as a dwelling, wherein services used to be regularly held. The building finally became too small, and one portion of the congregation went over to Richmond and held services in the public hall connected with the old Washington Hotel, while the other portion met in the gun factory, which stood on the corner of Richmond terrace and Lafayette avenue, in New Brighton.

The place became unfit for church service, in a short time, and on the first day of April, 1839, a Roman Catholic Church was organized at a meeting in the gun factory building. Ground was donated for the purpose by the New Brighton Association. The new church was

Digitized by Google

named in honor of St. Peter, and the ground on which it stands will revert to the heirs of the donors when it ceases to be used for a church of the Roman Catholic faith.

The Rev. Ildefonso Medrano, a native of Old Spain, who had conducted the mission services in the old gun factory, was the first pastor of St. Peter's Church at New Brighton. He remained until December, 1845, and was succeeded by the Rev. John Shanahan, whose brief pastorate terminated in August, 1846. He was succeeded by Rev. James Rosevelt Bailey, who served from August to December, 1846. He was later Bishop of Newark, and later still Archbishop of Baltimore. The next pastor was the Rev. Patrick Murphy, who served from March, 1847, to February 11, 1848, when he died of yellow fever, and was interred under the altar of St. Peter's Church. He was immediately succeeded by his brother, the Rev. Mark Murphy, who was succeeded by the Rev. James L. Conron, in August, 1852. He continued for a few years, when he was succeeded by the Rev. John Barry.

OLD BEDELL MILL, GREEN RIDGE.

There was no change in Father Barry's charge for nineteen years, during which time he erected St. Joseph's Church, at Rossville, and rebuilt the church at Graniteville. On the death of Rev. Father Conron, he was transferred to St. Peter's Church, at New Brighton. He procured as a gift from Mr. William McSorley a piece of ground adjacent to St. Peter's Cemetery, making it the largest Catholic burying-ground on Staten Island. Father Barry also collected funds for the erection of a new Catholic school in the parish, which is still maintained in conjunction with St. Peter's Church.

At Father Barry's death, in 1890, the Rev. Father Corkery was appointed to fill the vacancy. He remained but a short time, and was succeeded by the Rev. T. J. Earley, who is still connected with the church. The Rev. Father Charles Cassidy is also one of the officiating clergy of St. Peter's.

The parish and congregation of St. Mary's Roman Catholic Church, at Clifton, were organized by Archbishop Hughes and the Rev. John Lewis, who became the pastor, in October, 1852. Father Lewis

Digitized by Google

erected a temporary chapel and school at a cost of $6,000, which were used for five years. In 1857, Archbishop Hughes laid the corner-stone of St. Mary's Church, on New York avenue, and the edifice was completed the following year, at a cost of about $58,000. In 1858 and 1859 the rectory adjoining the church was built at a cost of $10,000.

Father Lewis purchased seven acres of land of the Parkinson estate, in 1862, and laid it out as a cemetery; he also built upon it a neat cottage, for the keeper's residence. A large school-house, an orphan asylum for the parish, a residence for the sisters of charity, and another for the male teachers of the school, were built in 1864, at a cost of about $36,000.

Other extensive improvements were made by Father Lewis. St. Mary's Hall, for lectures, concerts, dramatic performances and other meetings, was erected in 1878, at a cost of $9,000. The Catholic Young Men's Literary Union Hall was built by Father Lewis, in 1883, for the young men of his parish, at a cost of $2,600. Father Lewis built, at his own expense, in 1882, a very handsome chapel, at Stapleton, for the convenience of the aged and infirm of his parish, at a cost of $10,000. It is called the "Chapel of Ease of the Clifton Parish," and was dedicated on July 9, 1882.

Father Lewis remained at the head of this church for about forty years, when he died. He was born in France in 1821, and came to America in 1851.

St. Mary's Roman Catholic Church, at Port Richmond, was organized as an out-mission of St. Peter's Church, at New Brighton, about fifty years ago. About forty Roman Catholics, all of whom resided in Northfield, constituted the congregation. The Rev. Father Metrano celebrated the first mass for them. The place of worship was the old stone house, which still stands near the granite quarry at Graniteville. For about three years Father Metrano continued celebrating mass once a month. He was succeeded by the Rev. Patrick Murphy. His brother, the Rev. Mark Murphy, also succeeded him here, as at New Brighton.

The number of members at this time had increased to about one hundred and fifty. Father Murphy purchased a large tract of land, after a few years, on Quarry Hill, and erected a frame building, thirty by sixty feet, two stories high, for a school-house. He also used it for a church. He officiated here for about eight years, when he was succeeded by the Rev. Father Caro, who was appointed pastor of St. Joseph's Church, at Rossville. St. Mary's was then attached as an out-mission. Father Caro served about two years.

In 1858, the Rev. Father Barry was appointed pastor, and services continued to be held once a month, but after a few years they were held twice a month. Services were held every Sunday when the Catholic population had increased to about four hundred. During Father Barry's pastorate, a Sunday-school was formed, and in 1873,

Digitized by Google

Mr. Timothy F. Donovan, was appointed superintendent, a position which he has ever since held.

The number of Catholics had increased to about six hundred, in 1877, and the church authorities deemed it advisable to make St. Mary's a separate parish. The Rev. H. S. O'Hare was appointed pastor, and he served a year and a quarter. His successor, in 1878, was the Rev. J. C. Campbell, whose appointment marks the forward strides of St. Mary's Church. The end of the first three years of his pastorate found the church completely clear of debt. But the old church soon became too small to accommodate the rapidly increasing congregation, and its location was very inconvenient. Father Campbell accordingly, in 1882, purchased for $1,000, a piece of property on Richmond terrace, in Port Richmond, and erected thereon one of the handsomest church edifices on Staten Island, at a cost of $30,000. The edifice is one hundred feet long by seventy-five feet wide, with slate roof, and has a steeple one hundred and twenty-five feet high.

PLANTER'S HOTEL, TOMPKINSVILLE.

The corner-stone was laid by Archbishop Corrigan on the 19th of August, 1883, and the building was ready for services in the following May, and on the 4th of that month it was dedicated by the Archbishop. Father Campbell purchased a magnificent organ, in April, 1885, at a cost of $2,500, and placed it in the church. A handsome parsonage has since been erected beside the church.

St. Joseph's Church, at Rossville, was erected in 1851, and was for three years under the Clifton church. Father Caro became its pastor in 1854. He was succeeded by the Rev. Bernard McCrausen in 1857, who remained until 1859, when the Rev. John Barry became its pastor, and remained until 1877. Rev. Edward A. Dunphy succeeded him; he by the Rev. J. A. Rigney, and he by the Rev. Patrick Burns, the present pastor. For many years the congregation of this church came from Kreischerville, Tottenville, Green Ridge, Eltingville, Annadale, Huguenot, Prince's Bay, Richmond Valley and Rossville.

St. Patrick's Church is located at Richmond Village, and was erected in 1861. It is capable of seating about four hundred people, and is built of brick, forty by seventy-one feet in size. It was built

Digitized by Google

and the congregation organized by Father Barry. For several years past it has been a distinct parish, presided over by Rev. J. P. Byrnes. He has not only increased the usefulness of his church, but has succeeded admirably in decreasing the debt resting upon it, beside making many important improvements.

St. Rose of Lima was located on Castleton avenue, at the junction of Roe street, West New Brighton, and was erected in 1864, on a lot seventy-five by one hundred and fifty feet. The enterprise was due to the energy of Rev. Father Conron, then pastor of St. Peter's Church, at New Brighton. The church was dedicated on Sunday, December 4, 1864, by the celebration of high mass and a musical performance.

For several years past it has been deemed necessary to secure better accommodations for this rapidly growing congregation. And so, during the year 1899, a handsome new structure, called the Church of the Sacred Heart, has been completed, at the corner of Castleton and Burger avenues, and the old structure vacated. The new edifice may well be classed with the finest specimens of church architecture in this part of the country, and will stand as a monument to the perseverance and ability of Father Poole.

In 1897, the work of erecting a Roman Catholic Church was accomplished in Tottenville, by the Rev. Patrick Burns. It is called the Church of our Lady, Help of Christians, and is a very neat and substantial edifice.

The Church of the Lady of Good Counsel was established in 1899, with Rev. Father Murphy as pastor, and is located on Grymes Hill.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXVI.

THE BENCH AND BAR.

THE earliest mention of lawyers or justices, in this county, was of Ellis Duxbury, 1692; John Shotwell, 1692; Abraham Lockman, 1693; Cornelius Corsen, 1689-90; and Joseph Billopp, 1702-3.

A fire in the Court House at Stony Brook, about 1698, destroyed many of the legal documents and County records, and certainly must have obliterated the names of some of the early lawyers. This fact is recorded in the Colonial (English) Manuscripts, in the State Library, Index, vol. xlii., page 133: "Hendrick Cruise, of Richmond County, presents a petition relative to his title of land on Staten Island; County records destroyed by fire." A similar fire occurred in 1778, when the British destroyed the Court House at Richmond. Thus, again, many important names must have been lost.

Richard Stillwell was the leading "justes" on the Island.

Colonel Augustin Graham became the Chief Judge of the Island probably some time prior to the year 1700. Court was frequently held in his house "on the North Side." Court often adjourned, too, at Stony Brook and Richmond "to meet again at Coll. Graham's." He was first commissioned as "captain of militia on the North Side of Staten Island, vice Stillwell," in 1703. So it would appear that the fact of holding the position of justice, entitled one to a military commission, also. A few years later, Graham was appointed Colonel of the Staten Island Militia, and held the office for a long time.

In 1693, the following persons were civil officers of Richmond County: Ellis Duxbury, Esq., Judge of the Common Pleas; Abraham Cannon, Abraham Lockman, Dennis Theunissen and John Shadwell, Justices; John Stillwell, Sheriff. In 1710, Daniel Lake was County Judge; 1717, Joseph Billopp; 1712, Thomas Farmar, who afterward became a Supreme Court Judge in New Jersey.

In 1739, shortly after the County Seat had been removed from Stony Brook and established at Richmond, the following were Judges of the Court of Common Pleas: John LeConte, Judge; Christian Corsen, 2d Judge; Gozen Adrian, 3d Judge; Nicholas Britton, Justice; Richard Stillwell, do.; Joseph Bedall, do.; John Veghte, do.; Thomas Billopp, do.; Cornelius Corsen, do.; Joshua Mersereau, do.; Abraham Cole, do.; Barent Martling, do.; Nicholas Larzelere, Sheriff; John Hillyer, Coroner; Daniel Corsen, Clerk.

Digitized by Google

The last Colonial Judge on Staten Island was Benjamin Seaman, of Fresh Kill. He went to St. John, New Brunswick, where he died, several years after the Revolution. Under the Republic, Paul Micheau was appointed in 1786; Gozen Ryerss, in 1797; John J. Murray, in 1802; John Garretson, in 1803; Jacob Tysen, in 1823; Henry B. Metcalfe, in 1840; William Emerson, in 1841; Albert Ward, in 1844; Henry B. Metcalfe, in 1847; Tompkins Westervelt, in 1876, and Stephen D. Stephens, in 1882.

HON. SAMUEL SPENCER.—The memory of this Supreme Court Judge would no doubt have passed away, but for his forcible comments upon the verdict which a Staten Island jury rendered in 1815. In October of that year, Bornt Lake, residing on the Amboy road, a few rods South of the Black Horse Tavern, while returning from his father's house, on the same road, was shot and killed on the public road in front of his own premises, by his next door neighbor, Christian Smith.

JUDGE HENRY B. METCALFE.

Immediately after the commission of the deed, Smith went to another neighbor, John Jackson, and informed him of what he had done, and asked his advice as to what he should do. What advice his neighbor gave him is not known. Smith wandered about the woods, where he was found later in the day, and taken to prison. He did not deny having committed the murder, but justified himself by the plea that "Lake was committing a trespass upon his property; that he had frequently done the same thing, and had been warned repeatedly what the consequence would be if he did not desist."

The prosecution had an easy task, for the crime was not, and could not be denied; but the defence was justification. It was proved that a feud had for a long time existed between the parties, and that they did what they could to aggravate and annoy each other. Judge Spencer charged strongly against the prisoner, in accordance with the law. "If," said he, "the murdered man had trespassed upon the property of the prisoner, the law afforded ample redress, and he

Digitized by Google

had no right to take the law in his own hand and redress his own wrongs."

The jury, however, took a different view of the matter. They acquitted the prisoner. The people were everywhere surprised at the result, and perhaps none more so than the prisoner himself.

Judge Spencer was indignant, and in discharging the prisoner from custody, was bitterly severe. He said, in effect: "The jury have seen proper to find you not guilty; how they have arrived at such a conclusion, in the face of the law and the facts, surpasses my comprehension; but I warn you that there is another tribunal before which you must appear hereafter to answer for your crime, and where you will not have the benefit of a Staten Island jury."

According to the same authority, it is said, probably more in jest than earnest, that the jury arrived at the verdict by the following argument: "If we convict the prisoner, the judge will give him two or three months more of life, during which time the county will be obliged to feed him, and to keep his cell warm, which will cost a good sum of money; if to this is added the cost of building the gallows, the Sheriff's fee for hanging him, and the cost of burying him, the expenses will amount to a hundred or a hundred and fifty dollars, and all of which will have to be raised by taxation; but if, on the other hand, we say 'not guilty,' every dollar of this amount will be saved," and therefore, they said "not guilty."

JUDGE OGDEN EDWARDS.—Judge Edwards was the first Supreme Court Justice that resided on Staten Island under the Republic. He was a grand-son of Jonathan Edwards, the eminent divine and President of Princeton College, and also a cousin to Colonel Aaron Burr.

Judge Edwards presided over the Supreme Court in this district for many years, about ten of which he resided in the old Dongan mansion at West New Brighton. He was a brilliant lawyer, sustaining the honorable reputation of his illustrious ancestors, and was the last Supreme Court Justice who held court in the old Court House in Richmond, the building now familiarly known as the "Marsh residence."

In 1828, we find by the files of the *Richmond Republican*, that he directed the editor, Mr. Charles N. Baldwin, to be arrested on a charge of contempt of court, the latter having criticised rather harshly the action of the Judge in assuming what he (the editor) believed to be the prerogatives of Governor DeWitt Clinton. We are informed from other sources that friends interceded, and Editor Baldwin escaped punishment.

It is related that while Judge Edwards was presiding one day at Court in the old Court House, he sent a young man to prison for speaking in a careless manner of his (the witness's) mother. The question was asked:

"Is this woman your mother?"

Digitized by Google

"They say so," replied the witness, carelessly.

"They *say* so!" snapped the Judge; "did you ever hear it contradicted, or even questioned?"

"N-o-o," replied the witness, feeling that he had made a mistake.

"Then, as a man," added the Judge, "you have no right, by word or act, to cast any suspicion upon the character of the woman whom you have always called mother, and who has given so many years of suffering and toil for you. Leave the witness chair; you are unworthy to be heard in this Court! Sheriff," continued the Judge, "commit this young man to the County Jail for contempt of Court."

HON. STEPHEN D. STEPHENS.

JUDGE JOSEPH F. BARNARD.—No man was ever connected with the Courts on Staten Island, who commanded more respect and confidence than Justice Joseph F. Barnard, of Poughkeepsie, and our people long looked upon him as one deeply interested in their welfare. He was born in Nantucket, Massachusetts.

As a youth, he was transplanted with his family to Poughkeepsie. His Yale College experience of four years, was distinguished by the fact that at his graduation in 1841, he was awarded the third oration of his class.

Immediately thereafter, he entered upon the study of law in Poughkeepsie, in the office of Johnston & Davis. He was admitted to the Bar of the Supreme and Chancery Courts in 1844, and at once opened an office in Poughkeepsie, where he practiced law for nearly twenty years. In the autumn of 1863, he was elected a Justice of the Supreme Court of this State, and entered upon the duties the next January, for the then full term of eight years. He was re-elected to the same office, but for the extended term of fourteen years, in 1871, and again for the same period in 1885. His terms of office, therefore, covered thirty-six years. In 1870, he was appointed by the Governor Presiding Justice of the General Term of this Department, which

Digitized by Google

distinction was continued for twenty-three years. His last two elections were not opposed by any competitive candidate.

The Counties which have constituted the territorial extent of the Second Judicial District, and which comprise the Second Department of the State, are Kings, Queens, Westchester, Dutchess, Orange, Suffolk, Richmond, Rockland and Putnam. In these Counties there are annually thirty-four Circuit Courts and Courts of Oyer and Terminer, formerly attended by five Judges as apportioned, with juries at each, besides innumerable Special Terms, held at different central points, in the various counties. Every Saturday in the year, Judge Barnard held such a term in the Court House at Poughkeepsie, and these were supplanted by others every week day when he was not judicially engaged elsewhere.

The population in the counties of the district we have mentioned is upward of a million and a-half. Lawyers themselves, who have not reflected upon it, will perhaps be surprised that the actual issues of law and fact, which must have been tried before Judge Barnard alone, in his thirty-five years of service in behalf of this vast population, must have exceeded a hundred thousand, and have covered every imaginable question of political, civic, legal, equitable and criminal law, and nearly or quite as many appeals, over the hearings of which he has presided. When it is considered that every trial involves at least two, and many average probably five litigants, and endeavor to recall all the questions involving personal liberty, human life, the uncounted millions of individual and corporate property which have been involved, the extent of his judicial responsibility is appalling.

While attempting to measure the official duties of Judge Barnard, it is not to be forgotten that in their discharge during his long and unbroken period, he must have written thousands of opinions, preserved in the printed and permanent reports of the Courts, and remain as guides to the hosts of practitioners in this and in other States, whose legal forms, principles and applications are modelled upon our own. He was master of an exceptionally terse and vigorous style, and his judgments never left a doubt of their precise scope and meaning.

Other characteristics were scarcely less remarkable, and some of them unique, and among these perhaps was his intellectual courage. He often braved, and finally led, the transient public opinion, and could easily stand like a rock against the froth and spray of passing winds and waves. His perceptions and intuitions were electrically quick and sure. No man was ever quicker to anticipate the end from a beginning, or to gather the truth from a false witness.

Every advocate stood on equal ground before Judge Barnard. No reputation awed, and no timidity of appeal was discouraged. With all his judicial and constitutional positiveness, which might on occasions seem impatient, or even brusque, his sympathies were always

Digitized by Google

awake and active, and his instinct of justice unwavering. The poor or helpless client, or the young or hesitating practitioner, had his heart, but it was sheathed with triple steel against all professional arrogance and domination. His opinions ended a thousand controversies, both with and without litigation. What "Barnard said," ended the discussion. No man for a generation to come will fill his place in the public faith. Over all, his personal character has been without a stain.

While never so physically robust that he could safely dispense with daily exercise, so that his stride as a pedestrian was familiar on our roads in the vicinity of Richmond, during the terms of Court, he was yet a miracle of mental labor. Excepting the hours of necessary out-of-doors exercise, apparently every minute, which was not actually occupied hearing cases, found him at his table evolving and determining them. There seemed to be no end or cessation of his application, and yet he was for several years a watchful President of a local bank, and was able to conduct the largest landed interest of the county, an occupation to which he is still partial. What is stranger yet, withal, he has never missed an official engagement for any personal reason, in his long service, nor was he ever late.

HON. JOHN J. KENNEY.

Judge Barnard's retirement was of a recent date. He is spending his time at his residence near Poughkeepsie, surrounded by friends, and blessed with a consciousness of having served his day and generation well.

JUDGE HENRY BLEEKER METCALFE.—Judge Metcalfe was born on January 20, 1805, at Johnstown, New York. He was one of seven children of George Metcalfe, who was at one time a man of considerable prominence in this State, having been appointed, in 1796, assistant Attorney-General under Governor Jay, and having held the

Digitized by Google

office of District Attorney of this County, of which he became a resident in 1816.

Henry B. Metcalfe held the office of District Attorney for some time prior to 1833. In 1840, he was appointed County Judge, and in the same year he became a United States boarding officer at Quarantine, which latter office he continued to hold until 1843. In 1847, he was elected (that being the first election to that office under the Constitution of 1846), County Judge and Surrogate of Richmond County, which office he held continuously until 1875, at which time he resigned to take his seat as a Member of Congress, to which he had been elected. He was for many years the active manager and secretary of the Richmond County Mutual Insurance Company. He died at his home near Richmond, in 1881.

JUDGE TOMPKINS WESTERVELT.—Judge Westervelt was born and always resided at New Brighton. He was the son of Dr. John S. Westervelt, and the grandson of Governor Daniel D. Tompkins. He graduated at the age of twenty-one years at Columbia College, and was almost immediately admitted to the bar.

Judge Westervelt was a courteous gentleman and able lawyer. He was for several terms a trustee of the Village of New Brighton; was vestryman in St. John's Protestant Episcopal Church at Clifton, one of the founders of the Smith Infirmary, and a director for several years of the Staten Island Savings Bank, and was also its counsel.

He was a Republican in politics, and was twice nominated for District Attorney by that party, but was defeated each time. In 1875, he was elected County Judge and Surrogate, which office he held for six years. He was renominated and defeated. He died on April 20, 1882, aged fifty-two years.

JUDGE STEPHEN D. STEPHENS.—Judge Stephens was born at the County Seat of Richmond, on April 19, 1845. His father belonged to an old New York family, while his maternal ancestors, the Johnsons, were for several generations natives of Staten Island. Entering first the public school at Richmond, he next pursued preparatory studies at Trinity School, New York City. He graduated from Columbia College in 1866, with the degree of B. A. He graduated from Columbia Law School in 1868, with the degree of B. L., and at once entered upon the practice of law.

In 1873, Mr. Stephens was elected to the State Assembly on the Democratic ticket, and was re-elected on the following year.

Mr. Stephens was elected County Judge and Surrogate in 1881, over Tompkins Westervelt, the Republican candidate, by a large majority; in 1887, he was re-elected without opposition; in 1896, a strong effort was made to defeat him by his political opponents, but he had a majority which, under the circumstances, was a compliment indeed. He was again elected in 1899, without opposition.

Judge Stephens is an official of St. Andrew's Church at Richmond.

Digitized by Google

In 1884, he married Miss Agnes L. Lasar, of Brooklyn. They have two sons—Stephen D., Jr., and Richmond. Judge Stephens is an exceedingly obliging and careful official, aiding all who come before him in a kindly manner that wins for him many friends. During his service on the bench many important cases have come before him, and rarely has an appeal from his decisions been taken; never, in fact, has it been reversed by the court of last resort.

JUDGE JOHN J. KENNEY.—Judge Kenney was born in New York City, on March 2, 1858. When he was but six weeks old, his parents removed to Staten Island. He was educated principally in the public schools of the Island, after which he attended the University Law School of New York City. After graduating, he served as a teacher in the Madison Avenue public school, in Tompkinsville, and taught for nearly three years. He then entered the law office of the late Tompkins Westervelt, and was admitted to the bar at Brooklyn, on February 12, 1880. He then established an office in New Brighton, and has since enjoyed a lucrative practice.

HON. NATHANIEL MARSH.

Mr. Kenney was appointed clerk of the Village of New Brighton in 1882, and continued in the position for nine years. He resigned July 25, 1891. He was elected School Commissioner of Richmond County in November, 1887, and was re-elected in 1890.

Mr. Kenney was elected County Clerk in 1894, and held the office for six months. On January 1, 1898, having been appointed by Mayor Van Wyck one of the Justices of the Municipal Court of the Greater City of New York, he entered upon the duties of the new position at that time. His jurisdiction consists of the First and Third Wards of the Borough of Richmond, (formerly the towns of Castleton and Northfield). In 1899, he was nominated by the Demo-

Digitized by Google

cratic organization and elected by a large majority, for a term of ten years.

JUDGE NATHANIEL MARSH.—Mr. Marsh was born at Clifton, Staten Island, and is the eldest son of the late Nathaniel Marsh, a former President of the Erie Railroad. He was educated at Princeton College and Columbia Law School, and is the senior member of the firm of Marsh & Bull, 19 Broadway, New York City.

Mr. Marsh's first public position was that of trustee from the Southfield ward, Village of Edgewater. He was elected Supervisor of the Town of Southfield in 1879, and was repeatedly re-elected to that office until 1898, when it was abolished by the Greater New York charter. He held the office of Supervisor longer than any other man in Richmond County. He was for seventeen years chairman of the Board, a record also unexcelled in the history of the county.

Judge Marsh found his town greatly in debt, and succeeded in clearing it off to the satisfaction of all. He was very active in the better roads movement, and very much of the success attained in that direction is due to his efforts.

In 1889, Judge Marsh was appointed Police Justice for the Village of Edgewater, and continued to hold the office until it was abolished on January 1, 1898. He is one of the oldest directors and a member of the executive committee of the Richmond County Gas Light Company.

On January 1, 1898, Judge Marsh, having been appointed by Mayor Van Wyck, entered upon his duties as City Magistrate of the Second District Court of the Borough of Richmond.

JUDGE THOMAS W. FITZGERALD.—Judge Fitzgerald was born in New York City, on September 1, 1854, and after passing through the public schools of that city, graduated from the College of the City of New York. He studied law under the late Francis N. Bangs, whose office he entered on November 1, 1871, where he remained until January 16, 1884.

Mr. Fitzgerald removed to Staten Island in 1872, and has resided here ever since. He was admitted to the bar in 1875, and practiced in the office where he had studied until 1884, when he was appointed to a clerkship in the City Court. He was later appointed by President Cleveland a member of the Board of Pension Appeals in 1887.

In March, 1887, Mr. Fitzgerald was appointed Secretary to the Board of Police Commissioners of Richmond County, which position he resigned in January, 1890, to assume the duties of District Attorney, to which he had been elected. He was re-elected to this office in 1892. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention, held at Albany, in 1894.

Judge Fitzgerald has repeatedly been elected delegate to various Democratic conventions, and for a number of years has held the office of Vice-Chairman of the County General Committee.

Digitized by Google

In January, 1898, Judge Fitzgerald was appointed a Justice of the Court of Sessions for the Second District, Borough of Richmond, which position he still holds.

JUDGE JOHN CROAK.—Judge Croak was born at Elm Park, Staten Island, in 1846, and has always resided on Staten Island. His early education was obtained in the public schools of the Island, and when quite young he entered the law office of S. E. Church, and later that of Brown & Estes, in New York City. He graduated from the Law University of Albany, where he was a class-mate of President McKinley.

Judge Croak, after being admitted to the bar, began the practice of the law in New York City, in 1870, and for twenty-seven years kept the same office at 229 Broadway, where he practiced both in the State and United States Courts.

He served two terms as District Attorney of Richmond County, and one year as Member of Assembly, and has been counsel to the Police Commissioners and various other public boards. He is a member of the New York Law Institute and a trustee of the State Firemen's Home.

Judge Croak was appointed City Magistrate for the First District of the Borough of Richmond, by Mayor Van Wyck, which office he still holds.

HON. AUGUSTUS ACKER.

HON. AUGUSTUS ACKER.—Mr. Acker was born in the City of New York, on November 30, 1860, of German parents. He was educated in the public schools of that city, and then entered the law office of his brother, Edward A. Acker, and began the study of the law. He was later admitted to the bar.

Mr. Acker came to Staten Island in 1877, and took up his residence in New Brighton. In February, 1889, he was elected Justice of the Peace, and in the following year was elected Justice of Sessions. In 1889, he was re-elected to both offices by very large majorities.

Digitized by Google

Judge Acker gained considerable notoriety by the large number of important cases that came before him as Justice of the Peace, and by the fair and intelligent manner in which he disposed of them. He was elected Supervisor of the Town of Castleton in 1897, and served until the office was abolished.

In the first election under the Greater New York charter—that of 1897—Mr. Acker was elected Sheriff of the County of Richmond, an office which he will hold until January 1, 1901. He also has the management of considerable property in the Borough of Richmond, as administrator, receiver and general agent. He is a careful, thorough business man, and his ability in that direction is acknowledged by the business world. In 1883, Mr. Acker married Miss Caroline Almstaedt, of New Brighton. They reside in a handsome home in Hamilton Park.

JOHN AND WILLIAM HENRY ANTHON.—The Messrs. Anthon were brothers, and the sons of John Anthon, an eminent lawyer of New York City. They were for many years residents of Staten Island, and for a time controlled a large part of the legal business here.

John became Grand Master of the Masonic fraternity of New York State. William Henry was Member of Assembly from Richmond County in 1851, and Judge Advocate General of the State of New York in the early part of the Civil War. Both were lawyers far above the average. John died about 1873, and William H. about 1875.

William H. Anthon undertook the work of writing a history of Staten Island, and succeeded in gathering a great deal of valuable material. This work was done while there were yet living quite a number of witnesses of the stirring events of the Revolution, whom he interviewed.

HON. ALVIN C. BRADLEY.—Mr. Bradley was born near Farmer Village, in the Western part of this State, on July 22, 1810. He removed to Staten Island in 1851, where he had purchased the Garret Martling farm, near the junction of Richmond turnpike and Jewett avenue. Shortly afterward he built a very handsome residence, where he continued to reside up to the time of his death.

Mr. Bradley, during the time of his residence on the Island, continued the practice of law in the City of New York, in which he had been engaged for a number of years previous, and which was of an important character, bringing him often very prominently before the public. He took part in many interesting trials, and was engaged in arguments of much moment in the higher courts. One of the many cases in which he appeared, was that of referee as to the alimony question in the great Forrest divorce case, a matter of great moment to the parties in the suit and involving a large amount of money. He was a lawyer of superior ability, and was possessed of an acute and subtle mind, to the cultivation of which he had brought very extensive reading.

Digitized by Google

Mr. Bradley had been a prominent member of the old Whig party, and once was a candidate for Member of Assembly in this County. He afterward united with the Republican party. In 1873, he was elected Supervisor for the Town of Middletown, and served one year. The Supervisors were called the "Reform Board," that year, and a great deal was done to straighten out county affairs that had been drifting for some time. He gave himself without intermission to the duties of his office, and performed an immense deal of hard work in connection with it, for which the public was exceedingly grateful.

Mr. Bradley was an invalid for three years, but found enjoyment during his enforced retirement in reading the books contained in his large and valuable private library. He died at his residence on Wednesday, February 23, 1881, in the seventy-first year of his age.

HON. LOT C. CLARK.—Mr. Clark was born in Chenango County, this State, in 1818. His father, Lot Clark, was a distinguished lawyer, and at one time a Member of Congress.

HON. THOMAS W. FITZGERALD.

Mr. Clark was a graduate of Yale, studied law in the office of Nicholas Hill, at Saratoga, and began his practice in Richmond County. He was elected District Attorney in 1841, and filled the office for eight years, during which time he prosecuted several noted cases, among them that of Polly Bodine, who was indicted for the murder of her sister-in-law and her infant niece, at Graniteville. She had three trials, and was finally acquitted in another county in which the trial was held. Opposed to Mr. Clark in this case were Clinton DeWitt and David Graham, the latter of whom especially became afterward recognized as one of the leading criminal lawyers.

In 1870, Mr. Clark removed to New York City. His death occurred on February 11, 1880. He was at one time at the head of the law firm now known as DeGroot, Rawson & Stafford, of Port Richmond.

Digitized by Google

HON. GEORGE CROMWELL.—Mr. Cromwell was born in Brooklyn, on July 3, 1860. In honor of the event, his father, at the time, presented to his mother the magnificent property on Dongan Hills, Staten Island, known as Fair View Farm. His father, the late Henry B. Cromwell, was a well-known merchant and founder of the Cromwell Steamship lines, before the Rebellion, which did a large carrying trade with the West Indies, South America and nearly all the Southern ports. He was the first to adopt the screw as a means of propulsion for ocean-going steamships, in place of the old side-wheels.

Mr. Cromwell's step-father is the Hon. Charles L. Benedict, who has served on the bench as Judge of the United States District Court for nearly thirty-five years. Mr. Cromwell is a descendant of the family of that name famous in English history. On his mother's side, he is descended in a direct line from Elias Hicks, the famous Quaker preacher.

Mr. Cromwell received his education in the Polytechnic Institute, of Brooklyn, and Yale University. After graduating, he travelled as far East as Egypt and the Holy Land. After graduating from Columbia Law School, he was admitted to the bar in 1886, and entered the office of Elihu Root. He was elected to the State Assembly in 1887, on the Republican ticket, representing Richmond County.

Mr. Cromwell ran for Congress in 1888, against the Hon. James W. Covert, but was defeated. He became a member of the law firm of Butler, Stillman & Hubbard. In 1879, he was appointed a Park Commissioner for Richmond County. He was elected President of the Borough of Richmond, in 1897, but did not enter upon the duties of his office for some time, in consequence of a protracted contest which followed.

CHARLES LIVINGSTON HUBBELL.—Mr. Hubbell was born in Brooklyn, on July 14, 1861. His parents were Charles Wolcott Hubbell and Serena Hempsted. His great-grandfather, Philip Livingston, was a signer of the Declaration of Independence, and was a descendant of the Livingston family of Livingston Manor, New York, prominent in the early history of this State. Mr. Hubbell, on his father's side, is descended from Richard Hubbell, who came from Wales, in 1645, and settled in Connecticut, and whose descendants were prominent participants in the wars of the Revolution, that of 1812, and the Southern Rebellion.

When but six years of age, Mr. Hubbell came to Staten Island, and after completing an academic education, engaged in mercantile business for a few years, after which he entered the law office of Hon. Frank Warner Angel, assistant United States District Attorney, and commenced the study of law. After attending the law school of the New York University, he graduated in the class of '86, and was admitted to the bar on May 12, 1887. He then commenced the prac-

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

tice of his profession, with offices in New York City and on Staten Island.

Mr. Hubbell has passed through the chairs in Staten Island Council, No. 1145, Royal Arcanum; was a charter member of Starin Hose Company, No. 5, of West New Brighton; charter member of the Republican Spellbinder Club of New York City; one of the founders of the New York University Law Department Alumni Association; a member of the Irving Literary Society; of Beacon Light Lodge, No. 701, F. and A. M.; Beacon Light Chapter, No. 75, O. E. S.

Mr. Hubbell is a staunch Republican, and an active worker in the interests of his party, being one of its representative speakers. He resides on Taylor street, West New Brighton, enjoying a lucrative practice.

HON. EDWARD SIDNEY RAWSON.—Mr. Rawson was born at Port Richmond, in 1873. He is the son of Hon. Sidney F. Rawson, a former District Attorney of this county. He graduated from the Staten Island Academy and Columbia College Law School, after which he devoted several years to the study of the law in the offices of De-Groot, Rawson & Stafford, at Port Richmond, a firm of which his father is a member.

CHARLES LIVINGSTON HUBBELL.

In the election of November, 1898, Mr. Rawson was elected District Attorney by a majority of about twenty-seven hundred. He has the distinction of being the youngest man that ever held the office in this county. He is an earnest student, gentlemanly and friendly in his bearing, and has a rare opportunity to make his mark in his chosen profession.

HON. CALVIN DECKER VAN NAME.—Mr. Van Name was born at Mariners' Harbor, Staten Island, in the locality known as "Old Place," on January 3, 1857. He is the son of the late William Henry Van Name, a successful oyster planter, who was also a native of the same place.

Digitized by Google

Mr. Van Name has always been an earnest student, and received the degree of L. L. B. from the University of the City of New York before arriving at age, and was admitted to practice law immediately on reaching twenty-one. Mr. Van Name became prominent throughout this part of the country even while a young man.

In his profession Mr. Van Name has always ranked among the most trustworthy and painstaking of men. As an attorney he was successful from the beginning. He was intrusted with important matters, and acquired a large practice almost as soon as he was admitted to the bar.

HON. CALVIN D. VAN NAME.

Mr. Van Name had a long and thorough training in the practice of law with the Hon. Bradford Prince, since Chief Justice and Governor of New Mexico, but then State Senator from this district. This gave him complete knowledge of the departments at Albany. That he made a favorable impression there, is evinced by the fact that he has obtained more grants of land under water than any other lawyer in the State.

Mr. Van Name's successful conduct of the Foley South Beach case, and the eviction of the Burkes and Lancaster Syms claimants from the Garretson beach, made all holders of old farm titles his lasting friends, and demonstrated the security of Staten Island titles. His real estate practice is very large, and he has in his safes complete abstracts of the titles to the farms as they once existed, in continuous line, in Northfield, from Bodine's mill to Holland's Hook.

Mr. Van Name is related to two of the oldest and largest families on Staten Island—the Van Names and the Deckers. He is a member of the Holland Society, Richmond Lodge, No. 66, F. and A. M., and various other organizations. He is a large property owner in the Third Ward (Northfield), and has been identified with all public movements on the Island for many years. He was formerly a promi-

Digitized by Google

nent Republican, serving for four years in the County and State Committees and in the County and State conventions. He declined several county nominations from his party. He joined the Democratic party in 1873. He was elected Member of Assembly in 1900.

Lawyers residing on the Island at the present time are as follows:

Augustus Acker, Charles T. Adams, Courtlandt B. Anable, Lot C. Alston.

James L. Barger, Howard R. Bayne, Charles L. Benedict, Harcourt Bull, James Burke, Jr., Herman S. Butler.

William Campbell, Sidney L. Carrere, John G. Clark, Lester W. Clark, John Croak, William T. Croak, George Cromwell, Nathan Cutler.

John S. Davenport, Melvin L. Decker, Alfred de Groot, E. C. Delevan.

Walter T. Elliott.

Richard L'H. Finch, Thomas W. Fitzgerald, Harry V. Fountain.

Arthur D. Greenfield, George J. Greenfield.

Albert E. Hadlock, Max C. Heubner, William T. Holt, Walter H. Holt, Charles L. Hubbell.

Thomas B. Jones.

Sixt Carl Kapf, Joseph M. Keatinge, John J. Kenney, B. Dorian Killian, J. Travis King.

W. P. Langdon, Wallace M. Loos, A. S. Lyman, Francis F. Leman.

William W. MacFarland, Nathaniel Marsh, James McCabe, Charles McNamee, Arthur A. Mitchell, Frederick S. Mullen, William M. Mullen.

Edward Openshaw.

George M. Pinney, Jr., William J. Powers, Robert J. H. Powell, Augustus Prentice.

Henry W. Rainhard, Henry A. Rawcliffe, Edward Sidney Rawson, Sidney F. Rawson, Albert Reynaud, Robert E. Robinson, George W. Robinson, M. L. Ryan.

William Allaire Shortt, Edward M. Stothers, Frank I. Smith, DeWitt C. Stafford, George W. Stake, Stephen D. Stephens.

A. V. Townsend.

Percival G. Ullman.

Calvin D. Van Name.

John Widdecombe, David Willcox, F. L'G. Wright, Nathaniel J. Wyeth.

Arthur Yetman.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXVII.

THE MEDICAL FRATERNITY.

BUT little is known about the early physicians of Staten Island. We know that far back in the little village of Stony Brook, the Doctor was an "all-round man"—expected to know almost everything that was to be known in those comparatively unenlightened days.

There was a Dr. Bigell on Staten Island about 1714, and about 1750 Dr. Mersous "attended to ye sick poor." A few years later, Dr. Seaman's name is mentioned in the County records in connection with receiving pay for public service.

Just at the close of the Revolution, Dr. Richard Henderson settled near New Dorp. He built the low stone house, still standing near the ravine back of Egbertville, and at present occupied by Mrs. Nolan. He married Miss Maria Journeay, a native of the Island. He had served as a surgeon in the British Navy.

At the commencement of the present century, Dr. Baker resided here—probably in Northfield. We find his name in the town records. In several places the word "tyrant" follows the name. For instance: "January 17, 1805. Cash Rec'd of Doctor Baker Tyrant. As a fine from D. Guyon, £0. 6. 0." Also, recorded later: "March 15. Cash Rec'd of Doctor Baker, Tyrant. As fines upon Mrs. Johnson Buckman and John Crocheron, £2. 12. 0."

Dr. Travers also practiced on the Island in the first years of this century. Northfield paid him £2 "for Doctering D. Lisk."

The following unique entry is copied from the Northfield town records:

"1810 April 28 Received of Martines Swain one of the Overseers of the poor the Sum of three Cents as a tax due from Doctor Harrison, £0. 0. 3. O the Docter; that's all."

On the 10th of July, 1806, five physicians met at the Court House, in the Village of Richmond, for the purpose of organizing the first Medical Society in this county. Their names were Benjamin Parker, Isaac Stewart, Richard Henderson, I. B. Halsey, and John R. B. Rodgers. This organization was the consequence of the enacting of certain laws of the State (April 8, preceding), which were deemed necessary to regulate the practice of physic and surgery. Meetings of the Society were regularly held down to 1832, since which time there are no records of the meetings until a reorganization was

Digitized by Google

effected. The records do not state who the first President was; but at a meeting held on July 17, Benjamin Parker was chosen President.

January 17, 1855, in the evening, a meeting was held at the Tompkins Lyceum, at Tompkinsville, for the purpose of taking preliminary measures to organize the "Medical Society of Richmond County." The meeting was composed of the following physicians: John S. Westervelt, James Harcourt, Isaac Lea, John W. Sterling, William C. Anderson, James R. Boardman, F. Campbell Stewart, Joseph Feeny, E. W. Pendergast, Y. Hestizka, C. G. Rotha, H. R. Baldwin, Theodore Walser, J. C. Cavelti and Edward C. Mundy.

A committee was appointed to revise the Constitution and By-laws, and report at a subsequent meeting. The chairman of this meeting was Dr. Westervelt. At the next meeting, on February 2, 1855, the Constitution and By-laws were adopted. Dr. John W. Sterling was chosen President of the Society.

The officers at the present time (1900) are: President, Dr. Jefferson Scales; Vice-President, Dr. C. Wilmot Townsend; Censors, Drs. James O'Dea, W. C. Walser, and Walker Washington; Secretary and Treasurer, Dr. Henry C. Johnstone, and Delegate to the annual State meeting, Dr. Edward D. Wiseley.

JOHN L. FEENY, M.D.

The following physicians have registered in the county since 1880:

Melvin L. Adams, J. A. Andrews, John K. Ambrose, Robert M. P. Ames, F. S. Armstrong, E. J. Arnold, L. S. Ayres.

George A. P. Baldwin, Russell Bayley, George Beers, Herman Beyer, Horace B. Blan, S. R. Bogart, William B. Bostwick, William F. Braisted, Susan R. Bray, William Bryan.

Alfred C. Carroll, T. R. Carter, Ephraim Clark, James G. Clark, Frederick E. Clark, Henry A. Cohrs, David Coleman, Edward D. Coonley, LaWilla M. Cornelius, Hugh S. Cumming, E. J. Callahan.

Digitized by Google

William B. D. Davenport, Alva D. Decker, Clara M. DeHart, George F. DeVal, James D. Dickson, Frances C. Donovan, Thomas W. Donovan, William Donovan, L. L. Doolittle, Edward F. Duffy.

John L. Feeny, William Young Finch.

Henry I. Goodwin, T. S. Goodwin.

Howard R. Harrison, Chester T. Havens, Mary L. Herrick, E. H. Higbie, D. Emery Holman, George C. Hubbard, Carrol F. Humphrey.

George D. Jessup, F. U. Johnston, Henry D. Joy.

E. M. Karrman, Samuel J. Kennedy, George L. Kessler, C. Henry King, H. M. Keyes, H. M. S. King. Charles W. Kinsey, Julia G. Kochanowsky.

James M. Lake, G. M. LaRue, Isaac Lea, Merritt L. Lee, Richard Lee, Montague R. Leverson, J. B. L'Hommedieu, George F. Little, Anna Lukens, Mina S. Lutz, Brandreth Lymond, Caleb Lyon, Thomas D. Lyons.

Arthur L. Macken, Michael J. Madigan, G. H. Mallett, F. E. Martingdale, Edward I. Mason, Rudolph Mautner, Alexander S. McDougall, James H. McDougall, H. V. McCormick, Simone Medics, Frederick Merhtold, Theodore L. Meyer, Isaac L. Millspaugh, Alexander I. Mitchell, A. C. Montgomery, George Mord, Edward C. Mundy.

J. Nathan, Jr., George W. Nelson, Caleva Nicola, C. Chester Nicola, Mary B. Nicola, Thomas B. Newby.

James D. O'Dea, Mary R. Owen, P. H. O'Sullivan.

Frederick S. Parsons, Horace W. Patterson, A. D. J. Pentz, H. J. Pierson.

Frank D. Revere, Samuel A. Robinson, Robert Rogerson, Clement Roig, William Rose.

Eugene B. Sanborn, Dominico Salvadino, Henry W. Sawtelle, Jefferson Scales, John J. Shea, Samuel H. Simon, Effie A. Sleight, John A. Smith, William M. Smith, John C. H. Spencer, Edward H. Sparks, John T. Sprague, Gotleib Stein, W. E. Stevens, E. Constance Stone, David J. Swayne.

Elizabeth B. Thalberg, T. J. Thompson, Charles Wilmot Townsend, Thomas E. Townsend, Harriet M. Turner.

John Van Derpool, James O. VanHoevenburg, John J. Van Rensselaer, José E. Vidal, Howard M. Vere.

Rosa Wackernagel, Horace E. Walker, Theodore Walser, William C. Walser, Walker Washington, Robert M. Weed, E. J. Westfall, Charles A. White, Stephen D. Whitman, W. B. Wilkinson, Howard C. Willis, Frank E. Wilson, John S. Wilson, Anthony L. Wilsey, Edward D. Wiseley, Laura M. Wright, C. S. Wood, Jr., J. Walter Wood.

DR. MELVIN L. ADAMS.—Dr. Adams was born in Erie County, Pennsylvania, November 9, 1862. After attending the public schools and receiving private instructions, he entered the Cleveland Homœopathic Hospital College, from which he graduated with honors in 1888. He

Digitized by Google

took a post-graduate course in New York City, in 1896, and practiced at Mayville, in this State, eight years.

Dr. Adams came to Staten Island about two years ago, and located at West New Brighton. He has met with remarkable success. Dr. Adams is a very earnest student, and a most conscientious physician.

DR. JOHN L. FEENY.—Dr. Feeny was born in September, 1845, and is the second son of Dr. Joseph Feeny, who, in 1849, conducted a drug store at Stapleton. He was also one of the leading physicians of the Island during the sixties.

John L., the subject of this sketch, was educated by his father, who, before he commenced the practice of his profession, was principal of a classical institute. He removed to Jersey City and died there in 1866. Dr. Feeny intended that his son should be his successor in the medical profession. At the age of fifteen he had acquired a classical education, and commenced the study of medicine under the late Dr. Thomas C. Moffatt, at the same time acquiring a practical experience at the Seaman's Retreat Hospital, where he remained until he entered the Medical Department of the University of New York, from which he graduated in 1866.

SAMUEL ADAMS ROBINSON, M.D.

Dr. Feeny studied under such noted physicians as Valentine Mott, Alfred C. Post, William H. Van Buren, Afred Loomis and John T. Metcalfe, and also Professors Budd, Payne and Drapers. On leaving the University he took a special course under Professor Ayelette. When his course of study was completed, he was appointed house physician to the Seaman's Retreat, which he continued to hold until 1869, when he resigned to enter on private practice in Stapleton.

In 1870, Dr. Feeny was appointed surgeon to the Metropolitan police, and served for several years. He was appointed surgeon of the Richmond County police in 1886. He was also Health Officer of the

Digitized by Google

Village of Edgewater for several years, and is a member of the Richmond County Medical Society. Dr. Feeny took rank as a physician and surgeon, and for many years was sought for in consultation in intricate cases. He had a very large practice.

In the spring of 1893, Dr. Feeny was elected to the Board of Supervisors in the Town of Middletown, and served until the office was abolished in 1898. On the death of Dr. George C. Hubbard, in August, 1898, he was appointed to fill the office of Deputy Sanitary Superintendent, for the Borough of Richmond, which office he still holds.

Dr. Feeny was married on June 9, 1870, to Miss Emma Bateman, daughter of the famous engineer, John F. Bateman, of Maine.

DR. GEORGE C. HUBBARD.—Dr. Hubbard was born in Ohio, in 1831. He was graduated from the New York Medical University in 1859, and began the practice of medicine at Tottenville, Staten Island, with his father, the late Dr. E. W. Hubbard.

In September, 1862, he entered the Union Army as Assistant Surgeon of the One Hundred and Sixty-fifth Regiment, New York Volunteers. He was promoted to full surgeon, with the rank of major, in 1864, and was the medical director of the army under General Banks, in the Red River expedition. After the close of the war, he returned to Tottenville and resumed the practice of his profession.

When the Catholic Mission was opened at Mount Loretto, Dr. Hubbard was appointed physician of the institution, and held the position up to the time of his death.

Dr. Hubbard held a number of positions in the county. He was Police Commissioner, Excise Commissioner, Highway Commissioner of Westfield, etc. He was a Past Master of Huguenot Lodge, No. 381, F. and A. M., of Tottenville, and served two terms as District Deputy Grand Master.

On January 1, 1898, Dr. Hubbard entered upon his duties as Assistant Sanitary Superintendent for the Borough of Richmond, which position he continued to hold until his death, in August, of the same year.

DR. SAMUEL ADAMS ROBINSON.—Dr. Robinson was born in Franklin, Pennsylvania. He is a son of the Rev. John Robinson, D. D., a native of Frederick County, Virginia, who was a direct descendant of the Scotch-Irish family Robinson, settled in Ulster, Ireland, by James I., in 1603. The parents of Rev. Dr. Robinson, John and Rosana Robinson, were the first representatives of the family in America. Their son, on finishing his collegiate course at the age of twenty-one, immediately entered the ministry of the Methodist Episcopal Church. He became widely known in several States, and filled every position in the gift of his church except that of bishop. He died at an advanced age at his son's residence in West New Brighton, in 1889.

Dr. Robinson's mother, Hannah Walker Adams Plumer, was born

Digitized by Google

at Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, and died at the residence of her son in 1886, in the seventy-sixth year of her age. Her mother, Patty Adams, was born near Boston, Massachusetts, and was closely related to Samuel and John Adams, the statesmen and orators of the Revolution. Patty Adams was the wife of Major Samuel Plumer, of Newburyport, Massachusetts, a member of one of the oldest families of that State.

Dr. Robinson was chiefly educated by his father. He showed an early predilection for medicine, and began studying for his profession with Dr. Edward Lawrence Lakin when about sixteen years of age, finishing a four-years' course and receiving the degree of M. D. at Cleveland, Ohio, before he was twenty. He has since spent six years in professional study, principally in New York, London, Paris, Venice and Berlin. He is a member of Crescent Lodge, No. 204, F. and A. M.; Palestine Commandery, No. 18, K. T., and of the four regular A. A. Scottish rite bodies of New York City; and also of Tyrian Chapter, No. 219, R. A. M., of Staten Island.

CHARLES WILMOT TOWNSEND, M.D.

Dr. Robinson took an active part in founding St. Austin's School, and became a trustee. He also aided to organize the Kill van Kull Workingmen's Club and became its President. He is also a director in one of the largest life insurance companies of New York City, and is chairman of its investment committee. He retired from active service a few years since; but prior to that enjoyed a large and select general practice which extended into New York and Brooklyn. He had patients from various parts of the Union.

Dr. Robinson's wife died in 1874, since which time he has been a widower. Mrs. Robinson was the eldest daughter of the Hon. Hiram Greeley Butler, of Pennsylvania, who was a cousin to Horace Greeley. Their only child is Rush Robinson.

Digitized by Google

Dr. Robinson, recently disposed of his Staten Island property, and purchased a handsome residence in Washington, D. C., where he now resides.

DR. SAMUEL RUSSELL SMITH.—Dr. Smith was born at Waterbury, Connecticut, on April 10, 1801. At the age of fourteen he became a clerk in a bookstore, in the city of New York, and later entered the drug business, and at the same time commenced the study of medicine, in due time graduating at the University of the State of New York, in the class of 1828. In May of that year he came to Tompkinsville, and began the practice of his profession, which he pursued successfully until his death, which occurred on December 24, 1851.

Dr. Smith devoted himself assiduously to his profession, in which he was remarkably successful. He was no respecter of persons, for all ranks and conditions of life equally received his attentions when required. The S. R. Smith Infirmary was named in honor of this noble man.

DR. JOHN SWINBURNE.—Dr. Swinburne was for a time a resident of Tompkinsville, during and for a period after he was Health Officer of the Port. He was very popular on Staten Island, and after the establishment of an artificial island in the lower bay, for quarantine purposes, it was called "Swinburne Island," in his honor.

Dr. Swinburne made wonderful discoveries in the art of healing broken bones and dislocated joints, and made successful application of these discoveries to thousands of sufferers in civil life and in the war of the Rebellion. In the siege of Paris, in 1870, he earned for himself unnumbered blessings and amazed the skilled surgeons of France.

As Health Officer he saved New York from a plague, to the great joy of the people. He was elected Mayor of Albany, and afterward went to Congress from that district.

DR. CHARLES WILMOT TOWNSEND.—Dr. Townsend was born at Clifton, in 1867. He is the son of the late Charles H. Townsend, a well-known commission merchant. He attended school in Professor Hawkins' Academy, at New Brighton, and later at St. Paul's Academy, Concord, New Hampshire. He then entered Columbia College, graduated from the School of Mines and advanced to the College of Physicians and Surgeons of New York City, where in an examination, continuing for two weeks, in which several hundred students took part, he stood third in the class and won the prize, consisting of $200. Dr. Townsend married Miss Walser, of New Brighton, who is also a physician, and went to Europe, spending a year or so in Prague and Vienna, pursuing his studies under the great physicians and surgeons of those centres of education. Returning to his home he settled at New Brighton, where he commenced the practice of his profession, and has met with marked success.

Dr. Townsend is the Vice President of the Richmond County Medi-

Digitized by Google

cal Society; a charter member of the Greater New York Medical Association; member of the New York State Medical Society; member of the Staten Island Natural Science Association; a director of the local Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children, and attending surgeon at the Smith Infirmary. He has also served as Coroner and Police Surgeon.

J. WALTER WOOD, A. M., M. D.—Dr. Wood was born at Mariners' Harbor, on April 23, 1856, and is a descendant of the family of Governor Thomas Dongan—Walter, one of his nephews, being the founder of this family on Staten Island.

Dr. Wood received a thorough education in both the academic and medical schools, and soon after entering upon the practice of his profession became a very successful physician and surgeon. He served as Health Officer of the town of Northfield and of the village of Port Richmond, and Coroner of the county.

J. WALTER WOOD, M.D.

Dr. Wood is a Thirty-second degree Mason, and is a Past Master of Richmond Lodge, No. 66; Past District Deputy Grand Master of the Twenty-seventh District; Past High Priest of Tyrian Chapter, No. 219, R. A. M.; Eminent Commander of Empire Commandery, a Noble of Mecca Shrine, and for several years was President of the Staten Island Masonic Mutual Benefit Association; is examining surgeon for the North Western Masonic Insurance Company. He is also Past Chancellor of Staten Island Lodge, Knights of Pythias, and examining physician for the Odd Fellows, Workingmen, Foresters, American Legion of Honor, Templars of Liberty, and the New York Life Insurance Company, and visiting surgeon of the Smith Infirmary.

On the organization of the Health Department, under the Greater New York charter, Dr. Wood was appointed Assistant Registrar of Records for the Borough of Richmond, which position he still holds.

Digitized by Google

The medical fraternity of Staten Island has been honored by other bright men than those mentioned.

Dr. Alfred Ludlow Carroll, who, after graduating from the New York University, in 1855, removed to Staten Island in 1870. He was appointed Secretary of the State Board of Health in 1884, and held the office for a number of years. He was a writer of considerable merit.

Dr. John T. Harrison was for many years mate of the Marine Hospital, and subsequently Health Officer. Dr. John S. Westervelt served five years as mate in the Marine Hospital, from 1823 to 1827 inclusive, under Dr. Harrison. Dr. Westervelt was appointed Health Officer in 1829, in which capacity he served until 1836. Dr. Daniel M. Hitchcock at that time was mate and deputy.

Dr. William Rockwell, (successor to Dr. Westervelt), served as Health Officer four years. During the first two years of office Dr. Charles A. Van Sandt was deputy, and the last two Dr. Henry Van Hoevenberg. Dr. James Harcourt was at that time mate of the Marine Hospital. Dr. A. J. Doane succeeded Dr. Rockwell, and held the office three years. Dr. Henry Van Hoevenberg, Dr. Doane's successor, commenced his office duties in 1843. He appointed Dr. James Harcourt Deputy Health Officer.

Dr. William M. Smith held the office of Health Officer of the Port for many years. He was succeeded by Dr. Henry T. Jenkins, who held the office for one term, and he was succeeded by Dr. Alvah H. Doty, who holds the office at the present time. .

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXVIII.

STATEN ISLAND JOURNALISM.

SINCE the first establishment of newspapers in New York City, we are indebted to the press of the Metropolis for a great deal that would otherwise have been lost to the world. Few events occurred here of special importance that escaped the attention of the primitive reporter. We find local news in the files of *Rivington's Gazette*, *Gaines's New York Gazette*, the *Evening Post*, the *American Citizen*, as well as in the *New Jersey Gazette* and the *Pennsylvania Journal*.

Staten Island did not have a newspaper of its own until 1827. On the 17th of October, of that year, the *Richmond Republican* made its appearance. Its editor and publisher was Charles N. Baldwin, and the paper was intensely democratic. It was published at No. 4 Chambers street, New York City, although the editorial and business office was on Griffin street, next door to Swan, Tompkinsville.

Editor Baldwin was a very enterprising man. Beside running two newspapers, he kept the Quarantine Hotel, at Tompkinsville, was a lottery agent, and "turned an honest penny" as best he could. As a journalist, it may be said Mr. Baldwin was "up to the times." We copy his address to his patrons, as he begins his work on Staten Island:

"Encouraged by a distant prospect of success, we have become a voluntary exile from our native city. We have cast our lot among strangers, and we rely with confidence on their support. From the slender population of the Island we have not much to expect—we throw ourself on the liberality of our enlightened and generous people. Richmond is, we believe, the only county in this flourishing and prosperous State that does not support a press. A newspaper is a stranger among you, and, therefore, as a stranger, bid it welcome.

"Let not the present attempt to sustain the character and dignity of this goodly portion of the commonwealth become abortive. We ask not—we expect not a rich reward for our services, but we do expect some trifling remuneration for our labor. There are few situations so arduous as, and more unpleasant than that of an editor of a public journal. He must cater for the tastes of his patrons, which are frequently as changeable as the color of the chameleon. Every eye is fixed upon him, and everybody takes the liberty to censure

Digitized by Google

him and dictate the course he should pursue. His political opponents load him with bitter invectives, and those whom he had considered his political friends too frequently desert him when their ends are answered and his 'gray goose quill' can be of no further service to them.

"In our former efforts we have incessantly, and as the world goes, universally labored to expose corruption in the administration of justice, and most villainous swindling in legalized gambling, but 'poverty, the reward of honest fools,' o'ertook us for it. We now stand indicted for exposing the corrupt practices of the New York Police, and for innocently complimenting a certain Judge, whose temper sometimes gets the better of his understanding, and whose decisions have more than once been set aside by a higher tribunal.

"Plain and unsophisticated in our manners, we do not seek to become a member of 'good society'—the great Republican Family—the friends and supporters of General Jackson, are the men with whom we wish to associate, and in whose patriotism we can confide. The General has done so much for his country, and such a man the people delight to honor. We feel bound in gratitude to lend our feeble aid in his behalf, and to use every honorable effort to promote his election."

Several columns of political news appeared in this paper, all seeming to emanate from Richmond County Hall, at Richmond. Among the advertisements in the first numbers, were those of J. B. Simonson, who had fruit trees for sale; William Eddy wanted to sell a house he owned, on Sarah Ann street, Tompkinsville; T. Fardon "tendered his grateful acknowledgments to his friends for their support of his Union School," located at Tompkinsville; Cornelius Vanderbilt advertised a boat which he had found; P. Byrne sold quills and wafers. "Shaving, hair-cutting, bleeding and tooth-drawing, by Francis M. Spong, adjoining the Masonic Hall, Tompkinsville," was announced. D. Denyse kept a livery stable at the Quarantine ground, Masonic Hall. Samuel Dameron was the village tailor. John Deforest sold lumber, lime, brick, etc. J. F. Fountain ran the Commercial Hotel, in front of the steamboat wharf. William S. Root kept a general provision store, at Tompkinsville. A. G. Dixon, the postmaster, advertised a list of unclaimed letters. Jonathan Merrill and John Goodhart, of Northfield, dissolved co-partnership. The Steamboat "Bolivar" made two trips a day to New York; fare, each way, twenty-five cents; all baggage at the risk of the owner.

The following important announcement was given prominence:

"Ferry to Blazing Star, (Linoleumville).—Francis B. Fitch respectfully informs the public that he has once more started the above ferry, for which purpose he has built a first-rate Scow, and as soon as the travelling will warrant, he intends adding a Horse Boat, and no exertion or expense on his part, shall be wanting to secure public

Digitized by Google

patronage. The Turnpike to Quarantine, (it being only seven miles), is now in complete order, as also the Turnpike to New Brunswick, twelve miles. The road to Rahway, Milton, Westfield, &c., is in good repair."

Accounts were given of the races which took place at Butler's Tavern, at Graniteville, and on New Dorp lane, there being rival factions among the sporting men of the time.

There was great excitement in the country about Freemasonry at the time, which caused the following to be printed:

"Hill is still traveling through the Western parts of this State, pestering various grand juries to find a bill against him for the murder of William Morgan, well known as the author of a certain pamphlet purporting to be an exposition of the secrets of Masonry. Verily this Hill was not born to be drowned, for he pertinaciously insists upon being hung; but, poor fellow, he cannot find a court to convict him; and why should they convict him? Since Morgan has published four books, subsequent to his reported death, explaining the mysteries of the higher degrees, as he says, but they are as far from the mark as the first, and so glowingly improbable that Gulliver's Travels into the Brobdignag and Liliput or the celebrated Adventures of Baron Munchausen will appear like truth when compared with his nonsense. His first book is but a single improvement on a publication that appeared in London about thirty years ago (1798), and can now be purchased in New York for about nine cents, Staten Island currency! * * * We saw Mr. Morgan at the store of Henry Mead, at the corner of Harman and Catherine streets, New York, on Christmas morning, alive and well."

REV. DR. VAN PELT'S ACADEMY, PORT RICHMOND.

A large book could be filled with the choice bits of news we find in the *Republican*—the first four volumes of which lie before us. Suffice it to say, Editor Baldwin published a lively newspaper, and one that will compare favorably with those of to-day.

On January 1, 1831, the *Republican* contained this announcement: "The Patrons of the *Republican* are respectfully informed that I have transferred the establishment to Mr. William Hagadorn, Editor of

Digitized by Google

the New York *Democratic-Republican*, whom I take the liberty to recommend to my friends as a democrat of the old school, and I think nothing will be wanting on his part to make the paper highly interesting to its patrons. In surrendering this journal, I beg leave to return my sincere thanks to my late patrons for past favors, with an assurance of my good wishes and lasting esteem.

"CHARLES N. BALDWIN."

William Hagadorn assumed charge of the *Republican*, and settled on Staten Island. Peter Hagadorn, the first of the family in this country, came from Frankfort, in 1716, and settled at Rheinbeck, where he, his son, John; his grandson, Francis, and great-grandson, William, are buried side by side. William, the junior, saw many stirring events of the Revolution, and, although a mere lad, often took part in the hardships and services of the "Minute men." He was a lieutenant in the Brooklyn regiment, during the War of 1812, doing duty in that city, on Staten Island and at Sandy Hook. After that war, he settled in Newark, New Jersey, and published the *Intelligencer*, and also became a Universalist minister.

Before Editor Baldwin sold the *Republican*, however, he had opposition in *The Chronicle*, a Whig paper, edited and published by Dr. Thompson, the Health Officer of the Port.

The *Republican* ran for a few years under Mr. Hagadorn's management, and was finally consolidated with another paper and lost its identity. The *Staten Islander* was the next paper to make its appearance here. John J. Adams was its editor and publisher. The *Mirror* speaks of him on May 12, 1838, as follows: "This gentleman, since he brought his publication of the *Staten Islander* to a close, (about ten months ago), has connected himself with the *New-Yorker*, and absolved that connection; played and taken a benefit on the boards of the National Theatre; made a voyage to Europe and returned, and is now lecturing at Philadelphia! 'Business is business.'"

The *New York and Richmond County Free Press* was started about 1832, by William Hagadorn, formerly of the *Republican*. It was a twelve-page paper, and its title page bore the following announcement: "Devoted to the advancement of the liberal arts and sciences, and to the promulgation of useful knowledge, general literature, etc. In its columns may be found interesting selections in natural history, geology, mineralogy, and botany, original and selected tales, poetry, strictures, essays, biographical sketches, traits of distinguished characters, etc." The publication office was at 174 Broadway, New York City. The *Free Press*, on Saturday, June 13, 1835, under the editorial head had the following ticket: "For President, Martin Van Buren, of New York; for Vice-President, Richard M. Johnson, of Kentucky." The leading editorial reads thus:

"The first number of a new series of the *Free Press* is now laid be-

Digitized by Google

fore the public. Our readers will perceive that the interval, between the date of our last and our present number, has been employed in making considerable improvement in the form and appearance of the paper. Subscribers, almost without an exception, desired us to make this improvement; and, while we state that its accomplishment has incurred a heavy expenditure of time and money, (we mean, of course, an expenditure *heavy* in proportion to our *light* resources), we will take leave to express our assurance of being amply reimbursed, by the accessions that will be made to our subscription list, and the promptitude and pleasure with which the old subscribers will now call and settle their dues, knowing that we have spared no pains or expense in placing this publication on a footing commensurate with the liberality with which it has been sustained during the past five years."

Following the above is an editorial comment concerning the order of President Jackson, to the effect that "public officers must pay their debts, or suffer immediate removal." A great deal is said about the tariff. In the following number this paragraph is printed:

"Our Richmond County Paper, (the income of which has not for the past six or eight months paid the extra expense which it has been to us) will be continued throughout the present volume. Our paper has lately been 'got up' with considerable expense to us, and we are determined that it shall be punctually and regularly delivered to our subscribers. If at the end of this volume, our circulation in Richmond County has not enlarged sufficiently to warrant the continuance of that branch of our paper, we will then be compelled to discontinue it."

On August 15, the publisher offered to sell the "copyright and patronage" of the paper. He claimed that it was one of the best established papers in the city. On October 3, this item appeared: "A farmer on Staten Island, whose fertile grounds we were admiring at the time, informed us that when he first came into possession of his farm, there was but one blade of grass within its precincts, and that a famished grasshopper was perched upon that, making his dying prayer."

The *Free Press* was superseded by the *Plaindealer*. Its first number was issued on December 3, 1836. It was a very ably conducted paper. The great bank question, which at that time was the absorbing topic of the whole country, consumed a very large portion of its space. It was printed for the proprietor by William Van Norden, at 96 Nassau street; the publication office was at the corner of Pine street and Broadway.

There was a revival at that day of a prominent feature which characterized the press of America immediately after the Revolution—namely, a regard for matters of a literary nature. Local news—the little details of every-day life in village and country—was a secondary

Digitized by Google

matter. The *Plaindealer's* chief mission seemed to be to attack slavery, and it carried on the work in a very vigorous manner.

The first newspaper printed on Staten Island was the *Richmond County Mirror*, which made its appearance in July, 1837. Francis L. Hagadorn was its editor and proprietor, and the publication office was located on Richmond terrace, New Brighton, somewhere between York avenue and Belmont Hall. It contained eight pages of three columns each, was ably edited, and neatly printed. The editor was the son of the publisher of the *Free Press*, and he, too, had been connected with that paper.

In the same issue is a "History of Staten Island, chapter 1, by the Rev. Dr. Van Pelt," who also contributed an outline history of the Huguenots. We quote from the editorial address:

"In commencing the arduous duties of a public journalist, we reverently bow to the 'usages' and time-honored customs so religiously observed in such matters, and herewith essay to make known our rules of guidance. Those who will expect this paper to support and close up the deformities of any political party, must, at the outset, be undeceived. Those, also, who will image us as either the radical enemy of all social distinctions, or the court journalist of our Anglo-American aristocrats, must also be apprised of their error."

Editor Hagadorn, of the *Mirror*, was a genuine patriot, and we find him censuring the people of Staten Island for not celebrating the "Glorious Fourth." He boldly calls them "a generation of vipers and hypocrites," because they had refused to honor the memory of Washington and his compeers.

The editor also lectures the Supervisors relative to the condition of old Richmond road. His comments will be appreciated:

"This is a matter of some importance, gentlemen, and should be so treated. The old road has become warped into its present state by neglect of ages; like an old, untutored mind, it has followed the inclinations of passion and lawless folly—it has left the sterling paths of probity and truth, and rambled through the mazes of romance and adventure, prompted, it would seem, by nothing but the bent of idle curiosity. So we find it—and all the mild persuasions and even the examples of the brave old fences, will affect nothing against the prejudices of age; forcible means must be called into action."

The chief agitation among the Islanders, at that time, was an attempt to secure the erection of a light-house on Robyn's Reef, and the survey being made for the establishment of a navy yard and fort at "the cove" at Constable's Hook, opposite New Brighton. In the light of modern military events, the *Mirror's* editorial comments are quite unique:

"This undertaking, like everything else new, excites our wonder why its object has lain so long unnoticed. The advantages of bold

Digitized by Google

water and proximity to the ocean, this location adds the important consideration of cheap and easy defence. It is only approachable by large vessels from one passage. Nature, too, shut it off in every other direction by shoals and flats. It is also further proposed to establish a fort, similar to that at the Rip Raps, on the reef of rocks, at the mouth of the Sound, known as Robyn's Reef; and this, in addition to the defence of the navy yard, would from its position be able to effect more—in case of an attack upon New York by sea—than all the other forts within the harbor. A strong fort upon Robyn's Reef, with a short chain to the shore of Staten Island, would effectually defend the navy yard; and any other flotilla, on attempting to force its way into the harbor, would inevitably be exposed to a raking fire of four or five miles."

On September 2 (1837), the editor speaks of his prospects as follows: "Bad, badder, baddest! We will continue, however, to publish semi-monthly, until we have obtained a sufficient patronage to warrant our driving the *Mirror* well. Perseverance is our motto. Everything is attainable by industry and application; and when we have established a business on Staten Island, we shall take to ourself the credit of some fortitude."

TYLER MANSION, WEST NEW BRIGHTON.

Editor Hagadorn issued annual addresses to his readers, in one of which he stated that "gratitude is a keen sense of favor to come." He continued to publish the *Mirror* for a number of years, and at last it was merged into the *Staten Islander*, and the publication office was in the little, wedge-shaped building, still standing, nearly opposite Police Headquarters at Stapleton.

When scarcely ten years old, Mr. Hagadorn entered his father's printing office in Newark and learned to set type. At twelve years of age he began literary work. He wrote poetry and little stories before he was sixteen. In later years he wrote a romance of Staten Island, calling it the "Story of a Spoon," locating the scenes on Richmond Hill, and in and around the little village at the County Seat.

Mr. Hagadorn took a great interest in military matters. He was

Digitized by Google

first lieutenant of the Richmond County Guards, of Tompkinsville, commanded at first by Captain Minthorne Tompkins. He rose rapidly until, in a few years, he was commissioned Colonel of the Seventy-third Regiment, New York State Militia. Later he was appointed Quarter-Master General on the staff of Governor Horatio Seymour. He was Postmaster of Stapleton for three terms. In the old "training days" he commanded a Staten Island "division."

When the war broke out, in 1861, he was appointed Major of the Seventy-ninth New York Volunteers, with which he served but a short period. He resigned to accept the appointment of Inspector-General of the army of the Republic of Venezuela, under General Paza, which position he held for some time. General Hagadorn died at Georgetown, South Carolina, on Friday, July 1, 1897, and was buried with the honors of war at Troy, New York.

The Little Corporal commenced publication in Stapleton, in 1854. Its editor was William P. Hagadorn, son of the latter. He became a lieutenant in the One Hundred and Twenty-fifth New York Volunteers, and was for some time in Libby Prison. One of his hands was badly shattered in battle. His paper had a short existence.

The Staten Islander—the second paper by that name in the county—was practically a continuation of the *Mirror*, and was published in the fifties and early sixties. Colonel Hagadorn was its editor and publisher.

The Sepoy was started by Dr. William C. Anderson, in 1858, at Stapleton. Its particular object was to defend the people of Staten Island from the unjust attacks of the New York press, in consequence of the burning of the Quarantine Hospitals. In a short time it changed its name to the *Richmond County Gazette*. Charles Vogt became its editor. Later it was owned by a stock company, and John Bale was its manager, with Thomas J. Folan as editor. Ernest F. Birmingham managed it for some time, and finally sold it, in 1882, to Erastus Wiman, when Colon K. Urquhart became its editor. After a year or so, it passed into the hands of William A. Suydam, who still owns it. It is Republican in politics. This paper is the oldest published on the Island to-day.

The *Staten Island Leader*, Democratic, was started in 1866, by Samuel Marsh, John G. Vaughn and others as a stock company, with Mr. Marsh as editor. The paper was sold to P. H. Gill, who controlled it for several years. At Mr. Gill's death it was leased by William A. Suydam, who ran it for a brief period, when it was purchased by Nicholas and John Macklin, who are still its publishers. The *Leader* is the oldest Democratic paper on the Island.

The *North Shore Advocate* was started at West New Brighton, in 1869, by John J. Clute, with Thomas J. Folan as assistant editor. It suspended in 1877.

Digitized by Google

Shortly after the war, the *North Shore Union* was published at West New Brighton, by A. G. Gatter. It ran for a short time.

The *Richmond County Sentinel* was started at New Brighton by Thomas Humphrey in 1876. Hans S. Beatty, afterward Surveyor of the Port, was a reporter for it. It was purchased by Erastus Wiman, in 1881, and consolidated with the *Richmond County Gazette.*

The *Staten Island Star* was established at West New Brighton in 1877, by Oscar A. Douglas. In 1889, it was purchased by a company, known as the Star Publishing Company, with Edward I. Miller as manager, in which form it continues. It is now an official paper of the Borough of Richmond.

The *Richmond County Democrat* commenced publication at Tompkinsville in 1880, with William J. and Henry Browne as publishers. Thomas J. Folan was its editor at the time of his death, in 1888. Leo C. Evans has also been its editor. The paper is still published by William J. Browne.

The *Richmond County Herald* was started at Stapleton, in 1880, as a campaign paper, by the Hon. Gilbert C. Deane, with Thomas J. Folan as editor. Meeting with considerable success, it was continued as a permanent enterprise. It is now owned and edited by Cornelius A. Hart.

The *Staten Island Advertiser* was published at West New Brighton during the eighties, by Frederick Porter.

The *Richmond County Standard* was started in 1880, at New Brighton, by Robert Humphrey and Colon K. Urquhart. The latter withdrew in 1884, when Ira K. Morris became the editor, and held the position for several years. The paper has suspended publication.

The *Westfield Times* commenced publication at Tottenville in 1881. Its proprietor was Arthur Y. Hubbell. The name was changed to the *Staten Island Times*, and it passed into the hands of Hart Momsen. The paper is discontinued.

The *Richmond County Advance* commenced publication in 1885, by John Crawford, Jr., at West New Brighton. This paper occupied a different field from all others on the Island. It was established upon a commercial basis, and did not rely upon political support. The effort has proved a success.

The Staten Islander—the third paper by that name in the county—was started by Ernest F. Birmingham, in 1889. Leo C. Evans was the editor. It has changed hands several times, but is now published by J. Judson Worrell and M. J. Kane. Mayberry Flemming is the editor. It is Republican in politics and is an official paper of the Borough. The office is at St. George.

The Independent was started at Port Richmond in 1895, as a campaign paper, being the organ of the Independents. It was owned by a stock company, with Frank M. Harrington as editor. A daily was

Digitized by Google

issued from the same office in 1897, called *The News*, of which Hart Momsen was editor. It was published for a few weeks only. A weekly is published from the office now, with the title of *News-Independent*. Hart Momsen is the editor, and Charles Wood business manager.

The Citizen, published at Port Richmond by Ira D. Bamber and George D. Swartwout, had a brief career in the eighties.

The *Deutsche Staten Islander*, a German paper, was started in 1867, by John Schiefer, who ran it for many years. It is now managed by Adolph Schenk.

The *Staten Island Deutsche Zeitung*, a German paper, was started in 1876, by Carl Herborn, and ran for a year or so.

The Post is the name of a German paper published at Stapleton by Hugo Kessler.

The News-Letter was started at St. George in 1897, by Ernest F. Birmingham, and is issued weekly at that place.

The Ventilator, a temperance paper, was started by Rev. W. H. Vogler, in 1892. After the removal of that gentleman from Staten Island, the paper passed into other hands, and in a short time publication was suspended.

The Argus is a little paper published in the interest of a faction of the Republican party. It appears once a month, and is published by Leon Bossue dit Lyonnais.

The *Staten Island Transcript* is the latest newspaper enterprise. It is published at Tottenville by Cornelius Shea, and is democratic in politics.

The *Real Estate Record*, established in 1890, by Daniel T. Cornell, at Clifton, is published monthly.

Many attempts have been made to run newspapers on the Island, which we have omitted to mention. A notable one was in Rossville, several years ago. The paper was needlessly personal, and one day everything movable in the office was dumped into the Kills, and the editor sought a more congenial field of labor.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXIX.

THE SCHOOLS OF STATEN ISLAND.

WE must depend almost entirely upon tradition for the location and establishment of the first public school on Staten Island. We have sufficient proof, however, to warrant the statement that it was located at or near Stony Brook, and was probably in the same little structure that stood near the Moravian Church—that location being considered in the Stony Brook neighborhood at that time. It is perfectly natural that it should have been located near the Court House and Church.

The Waldenses and the Huguenots must have the credit of establishing the first school on Staten Island. It is estimated that the white settlers numbered not more than three hundred at that time.

Let us to-day call back the long centuries that have rolled into the dim vista of time since our adventurous forefathers established the first school on Staten Island—the centuries that have even obliterated the old grave-yard where they sleep—and, in recognition of their worth, their example, and their fortitude, thank the Father in heaven that they once lived here, and opened for us the channels of Christianity and Civilization, which have ripened, in time, into the cardinal principles of the grandest government under the providence of God.

It is appropriate on this page to show the contrast between the services and obligations of public school teachers in the early days of Colonial civilization and those of to-day. The following "agreement" is taken from the official school records at Washington:

"Article 1. The school shall begin at 8 o'clock and go out at 11; shall begin again at 1 o'clock and end at 4. The bell shall be rung before the school commences.

"Article 2. When school begins, one of the children shall read the morning prayer as it stands in the catechism, and close with the prayer for dinner; and in the afternoon, the same; the evening school shall begin with the Lord's Prayer and close by singing a song.

"Article 3. He shall instruct the children in the *common prayers* and the questions and answers of the catechism on *Wednesdays* and *Saturdays*, to enable them to say them better on Sunday in the Church.

Digitized by Google

"Article 4. He shall be required to keep his school nine months in succession, from September to June, one year with another, and shall always be present himself.

"Article 5. He shall be chorister of the Church, keep the church *clean*, ring the bell three times before the people assemble, read a chapter of the *bible* in the church between the second and third ringing of the bell; after the third ringing he shall read the *ten commandments* and the twelve *articles* of our *faith* and then *sing a psalm*. In the afternoon, after the third ringing of the bell, he shall read a short chapter, or one of the psalms of David, as the congregation is assembling; afterwards he shall again sing a psalm or hymn.

"Article 6. When the Minister shall preach in an outside parish, he shall be bound to read twice before the congregation, from the book used for the purpose. He shall hear the children recite the questions and answers out of the catechism on Sunday and instruct them therein.

"Article 7. He shall provide a basin of water for the administration of holy baptism, and furnish the Minister with the name of the child to be baptized, for which he shall receive twelve stivers, (a Dutch coin of the value of two cents, or about one penny sterling), in Wampum for every baptism from the parents or sponsors. He shall furnish bread and wine for the communion at the charge of the church. He shall also serve as a messenger for the consistory.

"Article 8. He shall give the funeral invitations, dig the grave, and toll the bell, for which he shall receive, for persons of fifteen years of age and upwards, twelve guilders, (a Dutch coin of the value of thirty-eight cents, or $4.56 in our money.) For persons under fifteen years of age he shall receive eight guilders, ($3.44); he shall receive for a spelling book or reader, three guilders, ($1.14) per quarter, and for a writer, four guilders, ($1.52) for the day school.

"In the evening school he shall receive four guilders ($1.52) for a speller or reader, and five guilders ($1.90) for a writer per quarter. The residue of his salary shall be four hundred guilders ($142.00) in wheat delivered, with the dwelling, pasturage and meadow pertaining to the school.

"Done and agreed upon the consistory this 8th day of October, 1642."

At a period of about a century and a-half ago, those families on our Island who could afford it, sent their children over to the Perth Amboy Academy. That was, so far as we have been able to ascertain, one of the first educational institutions of note established in what are now the United States.

It is the history of every community, in the early settlement of our country, that progress was very slow, and every effort at advancement was met with disadvantages and discouragements. The

Digitized by Google

treachery of the Indians was a great impediment to those who attempted to educate the people of Staten Island. In those days, age was no barrier against attending school. A number of teachers were killed, and others driven from the Island, and it was not until David Brainard interceded, that the atrocities of the Indians in this direction were checked.

The first public school on Staten Island, of which we have any authentic history, was located at what is now called New Springville. It was established some time between 1690 and 1700. The original school building, which was enlarged in the early part of the present century, was demolished about 1888.

It was in the old Springville school-house that the ancestors of the Corsons, the VanNames, the Housmans, the Hatfields, the Crocherons, the Hillyers, the Merrills, the Simonsons, the Egberts, the Depews, the Deckers, and various other old Staten Island families spent their school days.

The writer attended the meeting when it was decided to demolish the old building. There were the great, thick stone walls, crumbling and damp and mouldy. There were the rude desks, where time and the boys had evidently carried on a spirited competition in their efforts at destruction. Great holes were in the floor; the plaster had fallen from the ceiling; the little, old-fashioned stove was almost devoured by rust; the well-worn black-board resembled a mutilated target, and in every nook and corner there was devastation and ruin. And yet, there were those present who declared that the old school-house was good enough! It was not until after the Commissioner told his audience what power he had in the premises, that the fate of the oldest school-house on the Island was sealed. All that remains to-day of the venerable structure is the foundation of a modern building, which is composed of the material taken from the time-honored walls.

In 1710, "Mr. Mackenzy, the English Society's Missionary in Staten Island, having informed them how much they wanted School-Masters to instruct the Children of the English, Dutch and French, in said Island, and having recommended Mr. Adam Brown and Mr. Benjamin Drewit for that Purpose, the Society made choice of them both."

The two seem to have been continued during the two following years; but in 1712, the masters appear to have been exchanged. Francis Williamson and John DuPuy were that year employed under the patronage of the Society. Their salary was ten pounds a year, and their work was eminently satisfactory, as the testimony of the missionary, Rev. Mr. Mackenzy, together with the approval of the justices of the county abundantly proved. So beneficial to the people did the work of these early schoolmasters appear to be, that the Society determined, in 1713, to employ three more.

Digitized by Google

The report of Mr. Brown, of Richmond, one of these teachers, is preserved. It is dated April 10, 1713, and it states that he had continued to keep school in the South precinct of the County; that he had taught, during the year preceding, thirty-five children to "read, write and cypher," and the catechism of the church, with the explanations thereof, to such as were capable; that he had twenty-four of his scholars publicly catechised in the church, and the readiness with which they answered all questions was admired by all who heard them; that he taught them the use of the "common prayer," so that the children could join with the congregation in the divine service. This report was certified to by the minister and the Board of Justices of the County.

HON. HUBBARD R. YETMAN, SUPERINTENDENT OF PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

Charles Taylor, in 1717, appears as the schoolmaster of the Society, with a salary of fifteen pounds a year. He also appears to have occupied the position for several years. In 1722 and 1723, he was teaching respectively forty-three and forty-two scholars, at Richmond. Besides the scholars in regular daily attendance, he also at that time kept a night school for teaching negroes and those children who had to work during the daytime. He continued to exercise the functions of a schoolmaster for many years, and finally died in the service in 1742, as the following abstract from the Society's minutes show:

"And Mr. Taylor, the Society's Schoolmaster at Staten Island being dead, the Society upon a Petition and Recommendation from the Reverend Mr. Arnold, their Missionary, and from the Church Wardens and Vestry of the Church of Staten Island, of Mr. Andrew Wright, as a Person of Good Morals, and a constant Communicant, and well qualified to teach, hath appointed him School-Master there to instruct the poor white, and Black Children also, if any such are brought to

Digitized by Google

him, gratis, in the Principles of Christianity, and to read the Bible and the Common-prayer Book."

The following certificate is among the County records:

"We whose names are under written Do Certify that the Bearer hereof, James Forest, has lived in the West end of Staten Island two years and six months, During which time we know nothing of him but what is Just and honest, Teaching and Instructing of Pupils in such parts of Literature as their Capacity Could Contain; with great Fidelity and Justice, Giving due and Regular Attendance in said school to our Mutual & Intire Satisfaction and likewise Instructed them in their Parts and Honours to our great Fidelity, and now to part at his own Request. As Witness our hands 6th of August Seventeen hundred and Sixtynine 1769.

Isaac Doty,	William Bennett,	Abraham Winant,
Peter Androvette,	David Laforge,	John Garrison,
Zacheus Vandyke,	George Garrison,	Cornelius Dusosway,
John Dubois,	Daniel Winant,	John Gould,
Isaac Prall,	Jacob Reckhow,	John Story,
Moses Doty,	Daniel Stillwell,	Thomas Butler,
Jacob Sprague,	John Totten,	Henry Butler,
Isaac Manee,	Daniel Winant, Jun'r,	Christopher Billopp."

Immediately after the establishment of the State Government, under the Republic, the subject of popular education began to receive notice by the Legislature. The first step in that direction was the incorporation of the Regents of the University, which was done by the first Legislature after the adoption of the Constitution. In 1789, the State set apart certain public lands for gospel and school purposes. In 1795, an act was passed for encouraging and maintaining schools, appropriating fifty thousand dollars annually for five years for that purpose. In 1798, an act was passed authorizing and providing for raising the sum of one hundred thousand dollars by means of four successive lotteries, the money to be appropriated to the encouragement of schools. In 1805, an act was passed by which five hundred thousand acres of the public lands of the State were to be sold, and the proceeds devoted to the establishment of a permanent fund, the income of which was to be annually distributed among the school districts of the State for the support of common schools.

No system for carrying out the beneficence of the State had been devised when Governor Tompkins, at the opening of the session, in 1810, addressed the Legislature, urging attention to this matter. The income of the fund at that time amounted to about twenty-six thousand dollars annually, the fund itself having reached the sum of one hundred and fifty-one thousand dollars and sixty-nine cents. In 1811, Governor Tompkins again urged the matter upon the Legislature,

Digitized by Google

and the result was the passage of an act organizing the common school system as it existed until 1838. The first distribution of money under this system was made in 1813, the law establishing it having been passed June 19, 1812. This system divided the several towns into school districts, and placed the affairs of each district in the hands of three trustees. The school money was appropriated to the towns on the basis of their population, and again divided to each school district on the basis of the number of children in each, between the ages of five and fifteen years. Each town was required to raise for school purposes a sum equal to that which it received from the State. The first Superintendent of Common Schools was Gideon Hawley, whose term extended from 1813 to 1821.

We have authority for stating that there was a schoolhouse near the one now in service at Castleton Corners as far back as 1784. It was located on what was known as the Dawson estate—a name once found in the old records. It was the traditional "old, red schoolhouse," and was located several yards in the rear of the present structure.

Tompkinsville had a flourishing public school in 1815. It stood near where Niagara Engine Company's house is now located, and had a warm friend in the founder of the village. It is said that Governor Tompkins used to visit the school at least once a week, and not only gave prizes to the bright scholars, but paid a part of the teacher's salary out of his own pocket.

The law providing for the office of County School Commissioner took effect in 1856, and the Board of Supervisors made the first selection in the appointment of Dr. David A. Edgar, of Westfield. After serving for a year and a half, he was elected in 1858 for three years.

It is an interesting fact, although a sad commentary upon our forefathers, that not only on Staten Island but throughout America the public schools were not open to girls until 1790, and then for only two or three hours a day during the summer months, when there were not enough boys in attendance to keep the school going. They were regularly admitted by law in New York State in 1822. The first law enacted in this State in the interest of women's education was in 1818, on the recommendation of Governor De Witt Clinton, who was induced by Mrs. Emma Willard to urge the passage of a bill for an appropriation for her female seminary at Troy.

The reason for the delay in admitting girls to the public schools was, that it was considered unimportant for poor girls to be educated, and the rich could have private tutors, or send to private schools when a daughter showed that she had a "capacity" to learn!

One can scarcely imagine how deep-seated was the prejudice against the education of women, and their admission into business circles, in the old days. To show what a hold the theory had upon

Digitized by Google

the people well along in the present century, we quote from an editorial in the *Richmond Republican*, of April 10, 1830:

"Miss Fanny Wright, Owen, Jennings and Co. have lately declaimed much in defence of the rights of the female sex, who, they insist, ought to take an equal share in government, legislation, etc. In that they would unsex the fairest part of the human family, and turn topsy-turvy the laws of Heaven and Nature. Instead of quarrelling with these sapient reformers, however, we promise to espouse their side of the argument, as soon as they will prove that our rougher sex can 'change works' with them.

"When woman aspires to ambitious situations, she steps out of the sphere allotted to her by nature, and assumes a character which is an outrage upon her delicacy and feminine loveliness. No female does so unless she be an infidel; none but atheists and libertines sanction the aberration."

The world moves. The onward march of progressive principles will never halt until equal rights are not only given to the boys and girls in the school-room; but are also extended to men and women alike in business, social and political channels. Let the girls be educated equally with the boys, and then, the world being big enough for all, let them have a fair chance to earn their own living, and be perfectly independent when support becomes to them a serious question.

The law which created separate districts and elected three trustees —one of whom was elected each year—vesting them with almost absolute power, worked to the serious detriment of the public schools. While in some of the districts fair-minded and intelligent men were selected, it often happened that illiterate and narrow-minded individuals were given the power to rule, and often to ruin. We have witnessed the engagement of teachers solely because they would accept meagre salaries—the question of ability not being taken into consideration. A miserly policy, too, was manifested in the shabby structures that served as school-houses. Some of them were unfit for barns or cattle-sheds, much less for the day homes of the boys and girls who were seeking an education.

About twenty years ago one of the local newspapers took the matter in hand. The disgrace to the Island which such school-houses caused, was plainly portrayed, and finally public opinion was moulded in favor of better buildings. One by one the districts began to wake up to the necessities of the hour, and soon modern structures stood where the antiquated barracks had formerly disgraced the ground.

It is no exaggeration to say that Staten Island has more modern school buildings than any other county of equal size and wealth in the State. Handsome new structures mark the progress of the day at New Brighton, West New Brighton, Port Richmond, Mariners'

Digitized by Google

Harbor, Tompkinsville, Stapleton, Pleasant Plains, Huguenot, Kreischerville and Tottenville, while a score of other localities can boast of school-buildings which stand to their credit. This is the picture of to-day; let us contrast it with the past, by quoting from the *Richmond County Mirror*, of June 23, 1838:

"SCHOOL-HOUSES.—The town of Dayton, Ohio, has resolved to raise by tax the sum of eighteen thousand dollars to build six school-houses. We wish that the public spirit of our people was not at such an ebb as to make it seem almost madness to propose that a certain county in New York should contribute as much towards public education as a single township in Ohio! Why, eighteen thousand dollars would buy up all the public schools on this Island—teachers, old slates and penny-whistles in the bargain."

A few of the old land-marks are still standing. The one at New Brighton is located on York avenue, and for many years has been called "The Lyceum." It has been utilized as a public hall. The one at Richmond Valley stands as a relic of the past.

The public school building at Rossville has long been a reflection upon the community; but the rude structure is soon to pass away. Land has been purchased on Rossville avenue and Grant street, and a contract has been given for the construction of a brick and stone building, to cost about $31,000.

The organization of the Rossville school district, although much larger originally than now, dates back more than a century, as the following, copied from the original document, will prove:

"We the Inhabitants of the Town of Westfield Richmond County Staten Island and State of New York, Do for ourselves Executors and Administrators Covenant Grant and agree that We will Build a School House in the Year of our Lord one thousand Seven hundred and Ninety Six, in the Town aforesaid—for the Purpose of educating and instructing the Children in Religion and Morality—And We Do therefore recommend it as a Duty incumbent on every Person in the Town aforesaid to aid assist and Contribute cheerfully and honorably in the laudable Proposition aforesaid. And that We do hereby in order to shew our Public Approbation of the necessary Measure proposed, subscribe and Bind ourselves and each of us to the following sums underwritten:

"John Markay, £0. 16. 0; Jesse Morgan, £1. 0. 0; Nicholas Journeay, £2. 0. 0; Peter Mersereau, £0. 2. 0; Cornelos Cole, £0. 2. 0; John Seguine, £2. 0. 0; Cap Carns, £0. 8. 0; Henry Parlee, £0. 2. 0; Jacob Winant, £1. 0. 0; Harman Cropsy, £1. 4. 0; Albert Journeay, £0. 18. 0; Abraham Manee, £0. 2. 0; Benjamin Larzelere, £0. 4. 0; James Johnson, £0. 12. 0; Jonathan Lewis, £0. 2. 0; John Latourette, £0. 2. 0; Peter Woglom, £0. 4. 0; Winant Johnson, £0. 2. 0; Isaac Gray, £0. 4. 0; Isaac Parlee, £0. 2. 0; Paul T. Micheau, £0. 4. 0; Charles Morgan,

Digitized by Google

£2. 0. 0; John Slack, £1. 4. 0; John Bedell, £3. 0. 0; Jacob Winant, £0. 16. 0; Bornt Seguine, £0. 2. 9; John Baty, £0. 2. 0; Abraham Woglom, £0. 4. 0; John Johnson, £0. 8. 0; Joshua Wright, £2. 10. 0; Abraham Marshall, £0. 16. 0; Isaac Cubberly, £0. 4. 0; Bornt Parlee, £2. 0. 0; Nicholas Stillwell, £0. 8. 0; John Cole, £0. 2. 0; Paul Micheau, £0. 16. 0; John Journeay, £0. 16. 0; Abraham Cole, Sen., £0. 8. 0; Henry Slaght, £0. 16. 0; Jacob Slaght, £0. 12. 0.

"Received this 1st day of October 1790 of Bornt Parlee the sum of ten Shillings in full for one Days work by me at School house.

"JOSEPH RALF."

The Greater City charter changed entirely the system of school government, and substituted for the district management a central department for the Borough. The department is presided over by a Superintendent in the person of Hon. Hubbard R. Yetman, who has for assistants, Mr. M. J. Hogan and Mrs. Anna Gordon. They have offices at Stapleton.

To this is added a local Board of Education, consisting of William J. Cole, President; Frank Perlet, George T. Egbert, Thomas Vaughan, Samuel T. Anderson, Emil Bottger, John T. Burke, Thomas J. Flannagan, and Willard Barton. Franklin C. Vitt, Secretary; P. J. Kiernan and William S. West, assistants.

The public schools of the Borough of Richmond, together with the principals, are as follows:

1. Academy place, Tottenville, N. J. Lowe.
2. Weiner place, Richmond Valley, Sue S. Field.
3. School street, Pleasant Plains, Gould J. Jennings.
4. Fresh Kill road, Kreischerville, Henry F. Albro.
5. Amboy road, Huguenot, Annie E. Cole.
6. New York avenue, Rossville, O. E. Northrop.
7. Fresh Kill road, Green Ridge, Laura J. Cropsey.
8. Linwood avenue, Giffords, Else F. Randolph.
9. Knight avenue, New Dorp, A. A. Yates.
10. Richmond road, Egbertville, Lillie C. Frary.
11. Four Corners road, Garretsons, B. J. Stanton.
12. Steuben street, Concord, Thomas C. Harty.
13. Pennsylvania avenue, Rosebank, Sheldon J. Pardee.
14. Broad street, Stapleton, A. Hall Burdick.
15. Grant street, Tompkinsville, John W. Barris.
16. Madison avenue, New Brighton, John J. Driscoll.
17. Prospect avenue, New Brighton, Mason J. Macdonald.
18. Broadway, West New Brighton, Timothy J. Donovan.
19. Greenleaf avenue, West New Brighton, Charles F. Simons.
20. Heberton avenue, Port Richmond, Eugene G. Putnam.
21. Sherman avenue, Port Richmond, William B. Rafferty.

Digitized by Google

22. Richmond avenue, Graniteville, Edward W. Merritt.
23. Andros avenue, Mariners' Harbor, D. J. Keater.
24. Washington avenue, Summerville, Sarah E. Eldridge.
25. Chelsea road, Bloomfield, William P. Hastings.
26. Melvin avenue, Linoleumville, Lewis H. Denton.
27. Richmond avenue, New Springville, E. C. Wheeler.
28. Fresh Kill road, Richmond, Ella F. Sheehan.
29. Manor road, Castleton Corners, Charles W. Sutherland.

During the year 1899, there were nearly ten thousand children carried on the school rolls of the Borough. There are six high schools in the Borough, from which there were eight graduates last year. These schools are registered with the University of the State of New York. The value of school sites in the Borough is $75,000.00, and the value of buildings is $607,506.00; eleven are brick, and nineteen frame. Property, consisting of furniture, etc., to the amount of $9,000, also belongs to the Department. Total amount of public school property belonging to the Borough, $682,506.00.

Private schools have always been popular institutions on Staten Island, and some of them have been conducted by noted instructors. The first of these of which we have any authentic knowledge, was French's Parochial School. Until within about five years ago there stood, on the Little Clove road, opposite the northern terminus of Ocean terrace, a portion of an old building that was once celebrated as the home of an important educational institution, while beside it there was a small church edifice. These buildings were known as "Mr. French's Church" and "Mr. French's School." They were Episcopalian institutions.

The Rev. William G. French came to Staten Island about 1815, and he not only raised the money with which to build his school-church and residence, but he helped to rear the structure with his own hands. His school was established in 1821.

This little church and school were the educational and religious centre of the Vanderbilts for a long time. A short distance to the North stood the handsome residence of Mr. D. B. Allen; and his children—the grandchildren of Commodore Vanderbilt—there received a part of their education. General Swift afterward resided in the Allen mansion, during which time it was burned to the ground.

Mrs. La Bau, another daughter of Commodore Vanderbilt, lived in a handsome mansion, still standing on the Little Clove, a few hundred yards West of the old church. Captain Jacob Vanderbilt, the Commodore's brother, resided on the hillside, and his children spent their early school-days there.

The school was disbanded in 1864, and the last service in the old church was held in May of that year. Among other families repre-

Digitized by Google

sented in the school and church, were the Vreelands, Vredenburghs, Darrahs, Butchers, Van Duzers, Cunards, Barkers and Lords.

About 1867 Mr. French was appointed chaplain on Blackwell's Island, which position he held until his death, in June, 1895.

Next to the above was the Spanish Academy, which began its career at Tompkinsville, in 1827. Its manager was Joseph Q. Warnes. The Academy was in a large, handsome building, close to the river and a short distance from the Planters' Hotel.

Two or three years later, Dr. Fardon established a flourishing private school at Tompkinsville.

If there is one name more than another, that will long be linked with the educational annals of Staten Island, it is that of the venerable Father Boehm. He was a natural educator, and for more than two generations moulded the thoughts and lives of many of the boys and girls of Staten Island. He taught for many years at Woodrow.

The Richmond College was incorporated by an act of the Legislature, passed April 21, 1838. Its first Board of Directors were Ogden Edwards, Walter Patterson, Charles T. Catlin, Jacob Tysen, Thomas McAuley, Charles A. Porter, John S. Westervelt, William Wilson, George Howard, Caleb T. Ward, William W. Phillips, Thomas Wilson, Minthorne Tompkins, William A. Seeley, John N. McLeod, Thomas Cumming, Billop B. Seaman, William C. Brownlee, Robert Pattison, David Moore, Alexander Martin, Thomas E. Davis, James O. Smith, William Scott, Louis McLane, John E. Miller, James Pollick, James B. Murray, Duncan Dunbar, Samuel Barton, William Agrew, Thomas J. Oakley, John R. Satterlee and William Soul.

Section 5 of the act read: "In case satisfactory evidence shall not be furnished to the Regents of the University that said corporation owns and possesses property and funds to the amount of eighty thousand dollars, within two years after the passage of this act, then this act shall be void and to no effect."

On June 23, 1838, the *Richmond County Mirror* says: "At a meeting of the Board of the Richmond College, under the act of the Legislature, at the New Brighton Pavilion, on the 26th day of May, the Rev. D. Dunbar was called to the chair, and Dr. Charles A. Porter appointed secretary. They proceeded to ballot for officers, when the following persons were elected: Walter Patterson, of New Brighton, President; the Rev. John McLeod, of New York, Secretary, and John R. Satterlee, of New York, Treasurer."

On December 15, of the same year, the *Mirror* said: "On Friday last the trustees of this institution elected the Rev. William Wilson President. The policy of this step has long been contested by a number of the trustees, but it is believed that the peculiar situation of the institution has rendered it necessary, although at a seemingly unripe stage of its affairs."

Digitized by Google

We find no other allusion to the Richmond College, but learn that the eighty thousand dollars called for in the act was not forthcoming, and therefore the project was abandoned.

One of the noted schools of its day—say sixty-five or seventy years ago—was Rev. Dr. Van Pelt's Academy, at Mersereau's Ferry. The building he occupied for his academy is still standing, two doors above the Port Richmond post-office, and is known as "Knoah's Ark."

High on Richmond Hill, or that part of it familiarly known as Meisner's, is a large, frame building, overlooking Egbertville and New Dorp. More than half a century ago this building was one of the most popular educational institutions in this section, and was known as the Richmond Seminary. The following advertisement appeared in a local paper of November 25, 1848:

"The connection that has heretofore existed between J. W. Frazer and J. P. Killett, as conductors of the Richmond Seminary for Young Ladies, situate near to Richmond, Staten Island, is from this date dissolved, by mutual consent. All claims and liabilities will be settled by the manager, J. P. Killett.

"J. W. FRAZER, A. M.,
"J. P. KILLETT."

The Staten Island Academy was opened on September 15, 1884, and early in 1885, it was chartered under the Regents of the University of the State of New York. Its first manager was Professor A. G. Methfessel. It offers systematic courses of study in all primary and academic grades, with the strictest features of a thoroughly classified school maintained in every department. The school is exclusively for day scholars, and receives pupils of both sexes from the primary grade upward.

The building first occupied by the Staten Island Academy, stands opposite the German Club Rooms, in Stapleton. In 1896, the school was removed to a beautiful site near the St. George ferry, and now occupies one of the most complete school buildings in the country.

The course adopted by this Academy, covers a period of eleven school years, seven of which are devoted to the elementary, and four to the secondary or high-grade studies. A pupil who enters the lowest class at the normal age of six years, should, therefore, be prepared to enter college at seventeen. The Academy is strictly graded, and all pupils are required to pursue one of the prescribed courses of study.

The Arthur Winter Memorial Library of general literature, which is connected with the Academy, was founded in 1886, by William and Elizabeth Campbell Winter, of New Brighton, to commemorate their son, Arthur.

In 1886, the late Mrs. Catherine Fish Winslow, of St. Paul's parish,

Digitized by Google

Stapleton, established in the school an excellent reference library. A number of free scholarships have been established.

The entire organization of the school property, its course of study, etc., has devolved upon the present principal, Frederick E. Partington, A. M., of Brown University, who was the first to take charge at the opening in September, 1884. Under Professor Partington the Academy has so rapidly and thoroughly advanced, that it may now be rated with the best educational institutions in the State.

The Brighton Heights Seminary for Girls, located on St. Mark's place, nearly opposite the Brighton Heights Dutch Reformed Church, was established in 1883, after the large property belonging to Horace R. Kelly had been purchased for it. Its first principal was Mrs. Hartt, the widow of Professor Charles F. Hartt, of Cornell University.

The Brighton Heights Association was formed in the spring of 1883, by a number of gentlemen, residents of Staten Island, who purchased the property at a cost of $20,000, which was formerly the residence of George Wetherspoon. The interior was remodeled and fitted to the new purpose at a cost of $3,500. The school was well patronized by all parts of the Island, and the building was found too small; so an addition was made at a cost of $6,000, built in 1884, on the South side of the grounds fronting on St. Mark's place. Dr. George W. Cook was appointed its principal.

St. Austin's School for Boys, at West New Brighton, was established in 1883, through the efforts of Rev. Alfred G. Mortimer. In 1885, the property of the late W. T. Garner, on Bard avenue, consisting of fifteen acres of ground, with the costly buildings thereon, was purchased for the school by an association. Classrooms and gymnasium, with a front of one hundred and fifty feet, were erected near the main building.

Trinity School, at New Brighton, of which Professor Hawkins is principal, has educated many young men since its establishment a score of years since. It is a great credit to Staten Island.

In 1891, Messrs. Spade and Van Orden opened a private school in "The Villa," at Prohibition Park. Mr. Van Orden withdrew a year later, and Mr. Hastings took his place. This little school was practically the commencement of the Westerleigh Collegiate Institute, which was established in 1893. The following gentlemen were the directors: Otto Altman, Edward P. Doyle, I. K. Funk, W. J. Quinlan, W. H. Perry, W. S. Van Clief, A. D. Alden, G. S. Brantingham, Frank Burt, John Snyder, William Bryan, Edward D. Clark, B. F. Funk, C. L. Haskell, George M. Purdy, D. S. Gregory, William Barber, W. H. Achilles, J. S. Warde, Sr., E. J. Wheeler, and Bernard Mullen. D. S. Gregory was elected President and the Rev. Charles R. Kingsley took charge of the Institute.

In 1895, Professor Wilbur Strong was secured as an assistant, and

Digitized by Google

the same year he succeeded Dr. Kingsley as principal. In 1896, they had a corps of seven teachers, and about seventy-five scholars. In 1898 and 1899 the number of teachers was increased to fourteen and the students to two hundred and fifteen. The building now occupied was erected in 1895. William S. Van Clief is President of the Board of Trustees, and has the following associates: Edward D. Clark, Frank W. Tompkins, Louis H. Achilles, B. F. Funk, I. K. Funk, David H. Cortelyou, William T. Holt, Edward I. Miller, Herman C. Hagedorn, Walter H. Holt, John S. Warde, Sr., Charles W. Leng, Henry P. Morrison, and William C. Walser.

There are three Roman Catholic parochial schools on the Island—St. Mary's, at Clifton; St. Rose of Lima, at West New Brighton, and St. Peter's at New Brighton. At Mount Lorretto, in Westfield, there is a large school conducted by the officials connected with the Mission of the Immaculate Virgin, of Manhattan. St. Stephen's Home at Green Ridge is a very successful Roman Catholic institution, and is classed with that of Mount Lorretto.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXX.

THE QUARANTINE HOSPITALS.

THE Colonial Legislature, in 1758, enacted a law creating a quarantine establishment, and located it upon Bedloe's Island, where it remained thirty-eight years, and from which it was removed to Nutten, or Governor's Island. In 1799, the yellow fever was brought to New York, and it was decided that the establishment was too near the Metropolis to be of any service in protecting the people.

The Legislature then passed an act, providing for the appointment of commissioners to procure a site on Staten Island. They selected a parcel of land containing thirty acres, belonging to St. Andrew's Church, at what is now Tompkinsville. Strong opposition was made not only by the owners of the land, but by the people of the Island generally, to its location here; but it was taken, notwithstanding, by what in law is termed "the right of eminent domain."

Hospitals and other necessary buildings were erected, and during the first year of its existence on the Island, twenty-five cases of yellow fever occurred among the people residing outside of its boundaries, all but one of which proved fatal. Almost every year thereafter contagious diseases, in some form, found victims among the people of Staten Island. In 1848, the number of persons sick from infectious diseases, outside of the Quarantine, amounted to one hundred and eighty. In that year an earnest petition for relief was presented to the Legislature by the people of the Island, and a committee was appointed by the Legislature to examine into the matter, and report at the following session.

The committee, in 1849, "unhesitatingly recommended the immediate removal of the quarantine." While the committee was engaged in performing its duty, the yellow fever again broke out, and extended itself to various other places. In April, an act was passed for the removal of the quarantine establishment from Staten Island to Sandy Hook. The measure had its opponents among the shipping merchants and others in New York, who were not idle; the State of New Jersey also interposed its objections, and the persons appointed by the New York Legislature to carry out its intentions took no action whatever; so that the removal act remained a dead letter upon the statute books.

In 1856, the fearful visitations of yellow fever once more aroused the people of Staten Island, and another application for relief was

Digitized by Google

made. In March, 1857, another act was passed for the removal of the quarantine from Staten Island, but the opposition of the Commissioners of Emigration, the Board of Underwriters of New York, and the shipping interests of the city, again thwarted the beneficent designs of the Legislature. The precautions adopted by the local authorities, to protect the citizens and their families from infection, were opposed by the Health Officer, and every possible obstacle was thrown in the way of the local officers, to embarrass them in the performance of their duties.

The quarantine buildings were quite imposing. The largest one in the enclosure was three stories high, twenty-eight by one hundred and thirty-six feet, and had wings twenty-eight by thirty-seven feet at each end. A hospital building near the water was three stories high, fifty by fifty-five feet, with wings at each end twenty-six by sixty-six feet. These two buildings were designed to accommodate four hundred patients. The small-pox hospitals were two stories high, twenty-eight by eighty feet, with a piazza running along the front and rear. They were designed to accommodate fifty patients. There were twelve other buildings on the ground, viz.: Health Officer's residence (still standing), deputy health officer's residence, assistant physician's house, workhouse, house for bargemen, boat-house, office, carpenters' shop, ice and coal house, wagon-house and barn.

The Board of Health of the Town of Castleton was organized on August 2, 1856, with Richard Christopher as Chairman, and Dr. Isaac Lea as Health Officer. The Health Board was very active, and no doubt had a great deal to do with bringing matters up to the culminating point. Dr. E. C. Mundy was, later, appointed Health Officer of the Town, and at times a guard was employed to keep surveillance over the enclosure, to prevent as far as possible the commerce of its employés with the people outside.

At a meeting on July 15, 1858, Dr. Mundy, the Health Officer, stated that a persistent determination was manifest to thwart the action of the Board by misrepresentation and ridicule. In order to counteract in some measure the influence of such efforts he made a very earnest statement to the public.

Notwithstanding all this, he reports on July 23, that "stevedores and lightermen, and passengers and baggage from infected vessels continue as previously to pass from the quarantine enclosure to other parts of the town and on board our public ferryboats." The spirit of discord between our quarantine authorities and the local Board of Health increased until Dr. Mundy declared his conclusion "that the health authorities of the Port of New York look upon the health and lives of the people of Richmond County as matters of secondary importance, and hardly worthy their consideration."

Digitized by Google

Several cases of yellow fever occurred, all of which were directly traceable to violations of the Board of Health rules. It was also evident that great laxity existed in the administration of the quarantine rules, men being allowed to pass to and from infected vessels whenever they pleased.

At a meeting of the Board of Health, on August 19, it was reported that seventeen cases more of yellow fever had occurred outside of the quarantine walls. A district at Tompkinsville was then infected with yellow fever. Power was given to Dr. Mundy, as Health Officer of the Board, to make and attend to the enforcement of such rules and regulations as he thought proper, and the penalty affixed for the violation of such rules in the name of the Board was limited at one thousand dollars' fine or two years' imprisonment.

On August 27, the Board met again. The infection of yellow fever which was spreading into the town, was clearly caused by the presence of a fleet of infected vessels lying at Quarantine. Another cause of the transmission of disease was by infected articles being conveyed to the home of one of the employés whose duty it was to burn them. He did not do so, but carried the clothing to his residence and there washed it.

The whole district lying in the triangle surrounded by the bay, the hospital buildings and Griffin street was infected. Dr. Mundy recommended prompt, decisive action, to prevent a recurrence of the offense. At a meeting of the Board, on September 1, the following resolutions were unanimously passed, and ordered to be published:

WARD MANSION, NEW BRIGHTON.

"*Resolved*, That the whole Quarantine Establishment, located as it is in the midst of a dense population, has become a pest and a nuisance of the most odious character, bringing death and desolation to the very doors of the people of the Towns of Castleton and Southfield.

"*Resolved*, That it is a nuisance too intolerable to be borne by the citizens of these towns any longer.

"*Resolved*, That this Board recommend the citizens of this Town

Digitized by Google

and County to protect themselves by abating this abominable nuisance without delay."

The Quarantine grounds occupied the whole space now bounded by Arietta street, Hyatt street, and Tompkins avenue, down to the water. The whole place looked very beautiful from the water, having some fine trees, well-kept lawns and gardens and fairly good-looking buildings.

A high stone wall extended all the way around the premises, and included the lighthouse grounds. There was but one public place of entry and exit, the same that stands now near the foot of Arietta street. A gate-keeper was on duty there night and day, but people were going in and out all the time. The ferry to New York was but a few yards away, "and people from out of Quarantine came on board the boats and mixed with the other passengers all the time. In fact, the establishment was only a part of the village of Tompkinsville. A number of men were employed inside, especially when there were many ships coming in, and as the pay was extra, and the living good, there were always plenty trying to get it. It was easy to scale the wall from the inside and go into the village at night, and it was done all the time."

Quarantined ships anchored in front of the hospitals, opposite where the cotton docks are now located, and the ferryboats passed through them going to and returning from the city. From these ships, which were all sailers then, there was constantly thrown overboard all the refuse of every kind, and the shore was constantly strewn with old beds, on which perhaps sick people had lain; foul clothes, dirty vessels, and filth of every kind.

"Those who see steerage passengers only in steamers, as we now have them," wrote Dr. Frederick Hollick, "can form no idea of what they were when packed by hundreds in tiers of bunks, down in the holds of sailing ships. Each party brought its own provisions, which they cooked as best they could, at a galley on deck, and tin bottles of water were given out each day, a gallon to serve so many people, for all purposes. It can be imagined, perhaps, what this led to when the hatches had to be shut down, in bad weather, and this seething mass of humanity and decaying provisions left for days and nights together in almost totally unventilated darkness, for lights were too dangerous to be allowed under such conditions. Some of these voyages lasted six weeks and even longer, and the state, both of the people and of the ships, was simply horrible. On many of them a disease broke out called ship fever, of which hundreds died, both on board, in the quarantine hospitals, and in the village. Even yellow fever ships were often among the rest, or close by, and one of these caused an outbreak of the disease. The vessel was anchored opposite Stapleton, and one afternoon there suddenly arose a most dreadful

Digitized by Google

stench, which was smelt all over the village, and made everyone feel sick. They were pumping out the bilge water, which seemed to be the very essence of everything abominable and pestiferous. An old sea captain who lived by me remarked at once, 'That's a yellow fever stink.' And so it turned out, for many sickened at once, and two of my immediate neighbors died from it."

On the night of the 31st of July, 1858, about thirty men met on Fort Hill, for the express purpose of taking the law in their own hands. They were some of the leading citizens of the Island. There was no disorder, and in all that they said and did, proved themselves not only gentlemen, but citizens of a free country, understanding their common rights, and determined to maintain them at all hazards.

Fort Hill was then covered with trees, on one of which hung a red lantern, and around which the men gathered. A chairman was selected, and a communication was read from the Board of Health, declaring the nuisance no longer bearable, and directing its removal. This was sufficient, and the work was immediately begun.

The place where the red lantern was hung, and the final meeting held, was on the very spot where the reservoir now is. There were then no houses thereabouts, except the few in Third avenue, and no streets in either direction, between Westervelt and Monroe avenues, all that space being Dr. Westervelt's farm. The old Westervelt mansion stood where the Benzinger residence now is.

Two days before a cart drove up to Dr. Hollick's house on Fort Hill, and dumped down by the side fence a load of bundles of straw and some boxes, filled with bottles of camphine, and boxes of matches. When the meeting dispersed, a number of the best-known citizens took each a bundle of straw, a box of matches and a bottle of camphine, and wended their way down the hill. At that time there was no way to reach the upper end of the Quarantine ground, at the top of Hyatt street, but by going around by Tompkinsville or New Brighton, as there was no public thoroughfare across the Westervelt farm, which lay between, and this upper corner was the only unguarded point.

"To go around, either way," writes Dr. Hollick, "would have made all known, and resistance would have been prepared. Dr. Westervelt had a private road across his land, beginning at the top of the present Horton's row, and ending in the present Fort place, with a gate at each end, and that night both gates were left open, so that the procession of men with their bundles of straw went straight across unseen by anyone, and came out just where they wished, at the corner opposite the church. The whole Quarantine ground was surrounded by a high brick wall, of which a portion is still left at the bottom of Hyatt street on one side of the Lighthouse grounds. This wall would have been a great impediment, for it was too high to get

Digitized by Google

over. But the day before someone had dumped at that corner a load of wooden beams with handles to them, so that half a dozen men on each side could take one and use it as a battering-ram, which in fact they did, and soon had enough of the wall demolished to let in all who chose to enter. The place was soon well filled, and the work begun, but the officials and employés were at once on the alert, and not a few shots were heard, but the resistance was soon seen to be hopeless and given up.

"There were numerous buildings about the place, many unoccupied, and these were soon on fire. The large hospital for the men, with the wooden statue of a sailor on top, was the next, after it had been cleared of everything, even to a cat and a canary bird. There were only three yellow fever patients, and these were carefully carried out and placed on beds under an open shed, for it was a very warm night, and they laid enjoying the scene, and being well attended to. I believe they all recovered, and no one was taken sick from being in contact with them."

As soon as the fire was well under way, the old bell which hung in the grounds was violently rung, and people came there in force, even from as far as Richmond. It also brought out the fire companies, and the firemen insisted on being admitted to the grounds, to help put out the fire, but the gate-keeper refused to open the gate, and they could not get in in any other way. Finally the hook-and-ladder was hooked on to the gate, the crowd took hold, and with a rush down came the gate, and in rushed the crowd. It was then found that the hose was cut, and the engines remained idle, but the crowd was not.

In tearing down the gate part of the cap-stone of one of the pillars was broken, as may be seen to-day. The gate-keeper's house burnt down along with the others, as was also a row at the top of Arietta street. These fronted on the street, but their back-doors opened into the Quarantine grounds, and in them lived many of the employés.

We quote further from Dr. Hollick: "This was all that was done the first night, and it was thought this would be sufficient warning to the State officials to set about removing the establishment, but the next day it was rumored that they were going to send down a guard and re-erect the hospitals. On the next night another meeting was held, in the Quarantine grounds, and the other buildings, one after another, were also set on fire, after seeing that no one was in them. One of these was used as a hotel, where the doctor boarded patients. So thoroughly was the work done, on this second night, that but little remained for another, and when all was over police and soldiers were sent down to guard the ruins. There was no concealment about the act, and all was done orderly and under sanction of law."

Digitized by Google

After all was destroyed the wall was rebuilt, and a number of temporary buildings were erected in which the Quarantine was carried on. A broad platform was built on top of this wall, on which sentinels paced night and day. A number of regiments of the State Militia were called out, and took turns at guarding the place. Martial law was established.

These summary proceedings of the people of Staten Island produced great excitement everywhere in this part of the country. The people engaged in them were termed in the public prints barbarians, savages, incarnate fiends, sepoys, and, in fact, no epithets were considered too vile to be applied to them. But they were all borne with equanimity, sustained by the consciousness that sooner or later there would be a revolution in public opinion.

A public meeting of the inhabitants of Staten Island was called for the 20th of September, "to interchange views in relation to the then recent events connected with the Quarantine, to lay before the public a correct and reliable statement of the facts of the case, and to take such steps as their duty in the emergency might require." The call was numerously signed by the most respectable citizens of the Island, and was responded to by the largest concourse of people that had ever assembled in the county up to that time. Dr. John T. Harrison was called to preside, and Colonel Nathan Barrett, George W. Jewett, James Guyon, Daniel B. Allen, Dr. E. W. Hubbard and Garrett P. Wright acted as Vice-Presidents.

A committee was appointed for the purpose of preparing a report, consisting of the following gentlemen: Lot C. Clark, William Emerson, George Wotherspoon, Nathan Barrett, Francis George Shaw, Daniel Low and N. Dane Ellingwood. We quote from the report:

"In the opinion of your committee, the recent destruction of the Quarantine buildings on this Island, the studied efforts of interested parties to pervert the facts and bias the public mind in relation to such destruction, and, above all, the strange proclamation of His Excellency the Governor of the State, indiscriminately censuring the entire county, and declaring it to be in a state of insurrection, require that a calm and reliable statement of facts should be presented by the citizens of this Island to their fellow-citizens of the State, by which their conduct may be understood.

"The institution was managed quite as much with a view to the increase of the princely revenue of the Health Officer as to the preservation of the public health. Coasting vessels coming from South of Cape Henlopen, as well as all vessels from foreign ports, sometimes numbering between one and two hundred a day, were subjected to visitation at enormous expense. The exclusive privilege of lightering was given to a monopoly. Shiploads of passengers from foreign and domestic ports were unnecessarily quarantined for days,

Digitized by Google

and compelled to pay large sums for board and the most trifling accommodations. In many instances, it is alleged, persons and vessels so quarantined were, for a pecuniary consideration, permitted to leave their anchorage, and proceed to the City of New York. The Quarantine grounds were frequently overcrowded, the sick and well were placed in dangerous proximity to each other, and promiscuous intercourse was permitted between those inside and outside the walls. All this time there were published in the daily papers, and in the reports of the Health Officer to the Board of Health of New York, the most exaggerated statements of the rigid enforcement of the Quarantine regulations.

"Your committee unhesitatingly recommend that the citizens of Richmond County steadily insist upon the enforcement of the law of 1857, passed for the Quarantine removal, and present a firm, united and determined resistance to the permanent re-establishment of the burnt hospitals."

A series of resolutions were presented by Judge Emerson which, together with the report of the committee, were unanimously adopted, and addresses were made by Messrs. Alvin C. Bradley, N. Dane Ellingwood, George William Curtis, and Dr. William C. Anderson.

On the 14th of September, 1858, the Attorney-General, at the request of Governor King, came to Staten Island, and co-operating with the District-Attorney of Richmond County, instituted criminal proceedings against Ray Tompkins and John C. Thompson, before County Judge Henry B. Metcalfe, for arson, in the destruction of the Quarantine buildings on the nights of the 1st and 2d of September. The complaint was made by Dr. Bissell, physician of the Marine Hospital, and the parties were arrested on warrants. A protracted and thorough examination of the whole matter was gone into, the people being represented by Hon. Lyman Termaine, Attorney-General; Hon. R. W. Peckham, associate; and Hon. Alfred de Groot, District-Attorney of Richmond County. The prisoners were defended by Hon Gilbert Dean and William H. Anthon, Esq. The investigation was continued, with occasional adjournments, until the 7th of October, when the testimony was summed up and the cause submitted.

Judge Metcalfe rendered a lengthy opinion, from which we quote:

"On the nights of the first and second of September last, the Quarantine buildings of the Port of New York, situate at Tompkinsville, were consumed by fire, which human agency intentionally communicated.

"The prisoners are charged with the act, and are arraigned for arson. Without actually confessing, but, certainly, without very strenuously denying any agency, they allege, that the Quarantine, as it was, and had for a long time been conducted, was a public nuisance, dangerous to the health, and, in many cases, fatal to the

Digitized by Google

lives of the community where it stood; and that, therefore, the acts complained of were done in obedience to a great public necessity, by which the actors are exonerated from all blame.

"The statute under which this examination is conducted makes it the duty of the magistrate, if he shall be of opinion that a crime had been perpetrated, and that there is probable cause to believe the prisoners guilty of it, to commit them. On this testimony, there can be no difficulty in believing that the prisoners were *probably* either principals or accessories; and the only question remaining is, whether those transactions constitute a crime.

"The arson is charged to have been committed on buildings. But it could not be arson in the *first* degree, because, though some of them were inhabited dwelling-houses, and although they were burned in the night-time, yet the proof fails to show that there was in them at the time any human being. Nor do I see any reason for supposing the property to be that which is made the subject of arson in the second degree. The statute which seems to cover the present case is that which enacts 'that every person who shall *willfully* set fire to or burn in the night-time the *house* of another not the subject of arson in the first or second degree; * * * any public buildings belonging to the *people of this State*, or to any county, city, town or village, * * * shall, upon conviction, be adjudged guilty of arson in the third degree.'"

After reviewing the management of the hospitals, Judge Metcalfe adds:

"Senator Sherman says, truly, 'The best elementary writers lay down the principle, and adjudications upon adjudications have for centuries sustained, sanctioned, and upheld it, that in a case of actual necessity, to prevent the actual spreading of a fire, the ravages of a pestilence, or any other great public calamity, the private property of any individual may be lawfully destroyed for the relief, protection, or safety of the many, without subjecting the actors to personal responsibility for the damages which the owner may have sustained.'

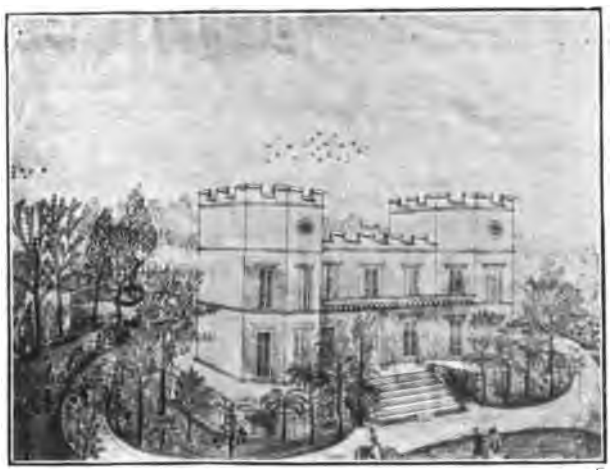
"I am of opinion no crime has been committed; that the act, the necessity of which all must deplore, was yet a necessity not caused by any act or omission of those upon whom it was imposed; and that this summary deed of self-protection justified by that necessity, and therefore by law, was resorted to only after every other proper resource was exhausted. * * * There is yet another ground on which the prisoners should be discharged. On the testimony, there is, I think, no doubt that the Quarantine establishment situated where it was, must always be a nuisance of the most aggravated character."

"Undoubtedly the City of New York is entitled to all the protection in the matter that the State can give consistently with the health of

Digitized by Google

others; she has no right to more," says Judge Metcalfe, in conclusion. "Her great advantages are attended by correspondent inconveniences; her great public works by great expenditures; her great foreign commerce by the infection it brings. But the Legislature can no more apportion upon the surrounding communities her dangers than her expenses; no more compel them to do her dying than to pay her taxes; neither can be done. I think the prisoners should be discharged."

On the 14th of September, the Castleton Board of Health passed resolutions that immediate steps should be taken to prevent the re-establishment of the Quarantine buildings, and appointed a committee to legally restrain the Board of Health of the City of New York and the Health Commissioners and Commissioners of Emigration "from re-enacting the said hospitals, buildings and shanties—or in doing any act by which the said nuisance may be established, continued or maintained in the Town of Castleton."



THE TOWNSEND CASTLE, CLIFTON.

The Quarantine establishment was never rebuilt at Tompkinsville. Some time previous, however, the farm and handsome residence of Joel Wolfe, at Seguine's Point, Prince's Bay, had been purchased, and the old residence and various buildings on the premises were fitted up for hospitals. The once-handsome lawn, too, was made the receptacle of the dead. The same unwarranted carelessness that had characterized the management of the hospitals at Tompkinsville, prevailed at Seguine's Point. Disease soon found its victims among the citizens of Westfield, and consternation prevailed.

The people of Westfield exercised less leniency and patience than did their neighbors at the upper end of the Island. They held a number of quiet meetings at Pleasant Plains, and at other points near by, and resolved to face the fiercest punishment the law could inflict to banish the scourge and protect their homes. The late Eugene B. Halle, be it said to the honor of his memory, was one of the leading spirits in the removal of the hospitals from Seguine's Point.

Digitized by Google

Captain Abraham Latourette was also one of the leaders. When the Westfield people were ready to act, they were given the signal by a trusted scout, and several citizens repaired to the scene. All the officials of the hospital were absent but a French nurse and some assistants.

Smoke was soon seen issuing from one of the buildings, and it was thought that the others would ignite and be destroyed. After arranging so that no life would be endangered, the crowd departed. James Morrison, the farmer, seeing the smoke from a distance, hastened to the burning building, and with the aid of the Frenchman, succeeded in extinguishing the flames. This made the attacking party all the more determined. In a day or so they returned and renewed the attack. The main building, a beautiful structure, was set on fire, and in a short time was a heap of smouldering ruins.

The excitement was intense. The "scout" reported that two or three buildings were still standing, and the "vigilantes" again set to work, and the stable and wagon-house also disappeared. About all that remained now was the cook-house and wash-house, and on the following day, they, too, melted into ashes. The actors in this tragedy moved with the utmost precaution. In the daylight they scarcely recognized each other as they met. Detectives infested the community.

One day it was rumored that the reward offered for the "vigilantes" was too great a temptation for one of the number, and it was thought that he gave the secrets to the detectives. It was impossible at the time to guard against the traitor, because he was not known; in fact, it was years before it was positively known who it was that had been so untrue to his neighbors. A detective was set to work, during the excitement, by the "vigilantes," to learn the secrets of the other detectives, and it became known one day that Captain Latourette was to be arrested, but too late to permit him to escape.

A writ of *habeas corpus* was procured, however, and placed in the hands of Sheriff Isaac M. Marsh, who was to "produce the body of Abraham Latourette." The detectives had Captain Latourette in their possession, and were on their way to the city with him, in the old stage coach. The Captain owned a very fast and valuable horse, and this, attached to a light carriage, was turned over to the Sheriff, who drove the noble animal up to Vanderbilt's landing, where he arrived just as the stage reached that point, and thus prevented the detectives from getting off the Island with their prisoner. Judge Metcalfe at once liberated Captain Latourette.

The Quarantine authorities built several shanties on the Wolfe estate, which they intended should serve the purpose of hospitals until suitable buildings could be erected. But these were no sooner

Digitized by Google

in readiness than the torch was applied, and all were destroyed. The unmistakable determination of the people of Westfield settled the question forever.

Then a floating hospital was arranged and anchored in the Lower Bay, in 1860, and later hospitals were erected on two artificial islands—known respectively as Hoffman and Swinburne Islands—in the Lower Bay, nearly opposite New Dorp, but far enough from Staten Island to give freedom from apprehensions of infectious communications.

In April, 1860, the Legislature enacted a law, authorizing a commission to investigate the damage sustained by the State in the destruction of the Quarantine hospitals. The commission met in June, and after an extended inquiry, made their award, fixing the whole amount at $121,598.39. The Supervisors of Richmond County, in December, accepted the award, and soon after issued bonds of the county to meet this demand. These were given to the Commissioners of Emigration, who sold them as occasion required, and appropriated the proceeds to the expenses of their work. By an act of the Legislature, passed in 1870, the bonds then remaining, to the amount of $10,725, were ordered to be surrendered and cancelled by the Comptroller.

The site at Tompkinsville, to-day, of the pest-houses, retains nothing of the period of which we have written, save the old residence of the Health Officer. Central avenue runs directly through where the lake and burying-ground were once located, while Baltimore Block extends along the front from that point down to the railroad. The bodies buried within these grounds were taken up several years ago, and re-interred in Cooper's Cemetery.

For a long time the burying-ground at Seguine's Point remained a very dangerous nuisance. The victims of infectious diseases were buried there in the most careless manner imaginable. After a determined fight on the part of some of the newspapers, aided by certain citizens, a law was passed by the Legislature, a few years ago, compelling the removal of all the bodies from that place, and their consumption in the crematory on Swinburne Island.

The Quarantine of to-day is far different from that of the olden time. The Department is, beyond doubt, one of the best equipped and most vigilant in the whole world. It is next to an impossibility for contagious diseases to creep in, and a feeling of perfect security is one of the blessings of this favored land. The boarding station is located in the Narrows, a short distance above Fort Wadsworth.

The present officials of the Quarantine are: Dr. Alvah H. Doty, Health Officer of the Port; Dr. Eugene B. Sanborn, and Dr. John B. L'Hommedieu, assistants; Alexander G. Hall, private secretary; Edward M. Skinner, fumigating expert; Daniel Deane, superintendent; Richard Lee, Marine representative of the Associated Press.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXXI.

STATEN ISLAND DURING THE REBELLION.

BEING so near to the great Metropolis, it was natural that Staten Island should have keenly felt the public pulsation of the first hours of the war. We vividly recall those exciting scenes in April, 1861, when all places of public resort overflowed with eager, inquiring multitudes; when startling bulletins met the eye at every turn, and the telegraph flashed the detail to every hamlet, until at last every vestige of doubt was removed, the last feeling of hope thrust aside, and the nation awoke from its long dream of peace to the terrible realities of intestine war.

One of the first acts of hostility in which Staten Island was directly concerned, was the seizure of the schooner "S. W. Lutrell," of this place, at Norfolk, Virginia, for violation of the inspection laws of that State, for preventing the escape of fugitive slaves.

A large Union meeting was held at Tottenville on Saturday, the 26th of January. A banner was raised, bearing upon it the motto, "The Constitution and the Union," and the most enthusiastic expressions of devotion to country were given. Cannons were fired in honor of the Union, of General Scott and of Major Anderson.

Preparations were made to meet the expected call for troops in April. Staten Island began thus early to assume a martial air. Uniformed men were common on our streets, and from every hamlet recruits were rallying in response to the call. On the 20th of the month, a number of Staten Islanders who had enlisted in the Seventy-first regiment, had gone South. A number enlisted in the Sixty-ninth, Seventy-third and other regiments then organizing. It is generally believed that the first volunteer from Staten Island was "Jerry" Reardon, who, notwithstanding his advanced age, is still in the service of the Rapid Transit Ferry Company, in the capacity of policeman.

Throughout the month of April the work of organizing the Seventy-third Regiment was carried on on the Island. It was commanded by Colonel Minthorne Tompkins. An independent company was organized at Stapleton, known as the Middletown Guard, which was commanded by Captain Stahl.

A mass meeting was held on the old Quarantine grounds at Tompkinsville, on Saturday, April 27, to take prompt action in raising

Digitized by Google

volunteers. Addresses were delivered by Lot C. Clark and Henry J. Raymond.

Wilson's Zouaves and other organizations were encamped on the Quarantine grounds at Tompkinsville at the time. "They were marched out and drawn up in line at this meeting," said a former writer, "and much of the speaking was addressed to them."

Staten Island soon became a rendezvous for imperfect regiments, which remained here until their quotas were filled and they were ready to be mustered into the Federal service. The novelty caused at first by this state of affairs had now worn away, and everybody was looking the stern realities of war squarely in the face.

The subscriptions, in the Town of Castleton alone, up to the end of November, 1861, for the families of soldiers at the front, amounted to $3,250. The number of men who had enlisted from the town was one hundred and twenty-eight. Sixty-four families were cared for.

The County Court House, at Richmond, was the scene of a memorable event on the 13th day of November. Citizens assembled to arrange for their neighbors who were on the tented field. A committee was appointed to obtain blankets, mittens, stockings, and various other useful articles.

A meeting was held in Dempsy's Hall, Factoryville, on September 2, with a view to organizing a company, at which fifty young men signed the roll. Forty-two recruits belonging to Colonel Tompkins' regiment left Port Richmond on the 23d of the month, to join the command at Poolsville, Maryland. The following is the list:

Peter Pero, Lewis D. Johnson, John E. Johnson, Joseph B. Johnson, John J. Simonson, James H. Munson, Daniel Mallett, Eugene Daly, Henry D. Spong, Alexander Fitzsimons, Edward M. Sharrott, Jeremiah Leary, Charles Steers, Thomas J. Cushing, George F. Burbank, James H. Simonson, Jacob T. Selzer, Cornelius Degraff, William D. Maskell, Charles H. King, William Eccles, Joseph K. Plant, Henry Sharp, Joseph B. Barnes, Joseph L. Thompson, James Post, Isaac Lockman, James B. Burbank, Simon V. N. Decker, C. P. B. Slaight, Jr., Henry Mersereau, Cornelius Martineau, Jacob Lockman, Albert Mason, Mathius B. Stewart, James B. Halliday, Albion Noble, John Reynolds, Abraham Turner, Francis M. Tarsney, William H. Fullagar, Arthur Haughian, George Conner, Thomas Conner, Joseph Simonson, Henry T. Paulson, Henry Decker, Samuel Warrender, John W. Tynan, James Simonson, Thomas Flannelly, Frigero Gassq, and John R. Green.

The Governor issued an order relative to raising another quota of men and the Supervisors met in July to take action. The recruiting sections were made up of Senatorial districts. The following members of the committee were appointed for Richmond County: Colonel Nathan Barrett, Captain Richard Christopher, William H. Vander-

Digitized by Google

bilt, John Bechtel, William Corry, Henry N. Norris and Edward Banker.

During July, a number of Staten Islanders enlisted in the Seventy-ninth Regiment, familiarly known as the "Highlanders." A mass meeting was held at Port Richmond on August 11. Seven hundred and eighty-four men were required of Staten Island. An eloquent address was delivered by the Hon. Erastus Brooks, after which a bounty of fifty dollars each was offered to volunteers. Enlistments and subscriptions flowed in. Other meetings were held throughout the Island.

Mass meetings were also held in the various towns in August, for

JACQUES MANSION, PORT RICHMOND.

the purpose of encouraging enlistment and raising subscriptions to pay a bounty of fifty dollars to volunteers and to furnish aid for their families. There was one at Elm Park on the 16th, at which two thousand persons were present. The Supervisors were called upon to raise by taxation ten thousand dollars.

In New Brighton a similar meeting was held on the 18th, at which over three thousand dollars was subscribed. Another meeting of the people of Castleton was held on the 21st, at Factoryville.

The relief fund had already dispensed above five thousand dollars, and at this time had more than one hundred families dependent upon it. The citizens of Middletown held a meeting on the 20th, at which

Digitized by Google

the Supervisors were called upon to appropriate twenty thousand dollars.

The people of Westfield adopted a resolution to raise a company of seventy-five men. The Supervisors met on the 27th, and decided to issue bonds to the amount of twenty thousand dollars, the proceeds of which should be used for the payment of extra bounties and relief for the families of volunteers.

A new company, mostly from Castleton, was formed, with Louis Schaffner as captain; Orville D. Jewett, first lieutenant, and Clarence T. Barrett, second lieutenant. Recruiting stations were established at Dempsey's hotel, Factoryville, and at John Jewett & Sons' white lead works in Port Richmond. An extra bounty of fifty dollars each was paid to volunteers. The company's barracks were erected at the corner of Broadway and Church street, in Port Richmond.

On August 30, a county mass meeting was held at Clifton Park. Addresses were delivered by Judge Henry B. Metcalfe, who presided, George William Curtis, General Busteed, Hon. Erastus Brooks, and others.

The war committee of this senatorial district met at Jamaica, on Thursday the 4th of September, 1862, to aid in the organization of a regiment of volunteers, and to equalize the quotas of the several counties of the district and apportion any deficiencies in the counties among the towns that composed them. In this committee Richmond County was represented by Hon. Smith Ely, William Corry, Nathan Barrett, William H. Vanderbilt, and Henry Lee Norris. It was resolved to recognize Colonel Tompkins' regiment. Recruiting stations were established in various parts of the Island.

Spinola's Brigade was being organized at East New York, and, in September, a number of Staten Islanders enlisted in it. By the middle of the month fears of the draft subsided, as the quotas were nearly full.

The material of the Island had become greatly exhausted by the latter part of October, and Colonel Tompkins' regiment filled up very slowly. It was then that Inspector-General Van Vechten gave the order for three of its companies to be transferred to the One Hundred and Fifty-sixth Regiment, from Ulster County, then encamped in New York. Accordingly, on the 13th and 14th of November, the companies commanded by Captains Schaffner, Shelton and Vaughn were transferred.

This gave rise to great dissatisfaction, and much excitement prevailed, amounting almost to a riot. In the midst of the tumult one man was stabbed in the back with a bayonet. The remaining Island companies of Colonel Tompkins' regiment became disordered and took to the woods and hills, leaving the camp at Factoryville almost deserted, being occupied by only about forty officers and men. While

Digitized by Google

in this condition, on Monday morning, the 17th, the barracks took fire and were nearly destroyed. The Richmond County regiment, containing six hundred and fifty men, was broken up. The remaining companies were transferred to the One Hundred and Fifty-seventh. Of these, two companies, under command of Captains Mark Cox and William Hildebrandt, were mainly composed of Staten Island men. Colonel Tompkins was offered a position as lieutenant-colonel in the One Hundred and Fifty-eighth, but declined.

The prospect of a draft again began to agitate the people. Finally the day was appointed for the drawing to take place, and Judge Henry B. Metcalfe was appointed commissioner for superintending it, and Dr. William G. Eadie, of Port Richmond, examining surgeon. These officials sat daily at the Surrogate's office, in Richmond, from October 22 until the day before the draft was to take place, to hear any claims of persons liable to military duty for exemption. Especial efforts prevented the necessity of a draft. The following report was shown at the meeting of the Senatorial district committee, held at Jamaica, on the 6th of November:

Towns.	Quota.	Enlisted.
Middletown	193	211
Castleton	209	241
Southfield	113	123
Northfield	150	127
Westfield	123	94
County	788	796

The following is the list of men recruited by First Lieutenant Charles G. Smith, of Company B, One Hundred and Thirty-second Regiment: From Southfield: William Church, Edward Henkle, Bryan Carney, Edward Jaspart, Peter Schmidt. Middletown: Casper Elmer, William Elmer, James Foley, Patrick Gorman, Smith W. Higgins, Robert Houston, William L. Ludlum, George Lambert, Conrad Liebacher, Edward B. Murray, Thomas McKee, Charles Ockhert, Bernard Schmidt, Theodore Simonson, Frederick W. Taxter, Addison White, John Williams.

The following were recruited at Port Richmond, by First Lieutenant David Stothers, afterward captain of Company K, of the same regiment: Northfield: Charles H. Jones, Jacob V. P. Long, Cornelius Jones, sergeants; Charles J. Elms, Freeman W. Jones, corporals; Charles Applebee, William G. E. Decker, John R. Patterson, Joseph Emery, William Durrua, George W. Smith, James W. Housman, John H. Leonard. Castleton: James Mahoney, David McConnell, George Turner. Southfield: Gilbert H. Randolph.

Digitized by Google

The above were discharged at the disbandment of the regiment. The following were discharged previously:

Hiram C. Decker, John A. Taylor, Hyacinth Burke, Michael Valliere, Andrew P. Van Pelt, John B. Corson, and Garrett E. Van Pelt, of Northfield; William C. Dunn, of Southfield, and Joseph H. Caine, of Castleton, for disability; Richard C. Johnson, Nicholas Cubberly, Vreeland Johnson, Bedell Jones, John Brinley, and Peter S. Brinley, of Northfield, transferred to the navy; Henry Valliere, of Northfield, to be hospital steward; Henry B. Tibbetts, of Northfield, to United States Signal Corps; Charles E. Smith, of Castleton, to the Ninety-ninth Regiment, New York Volunteers; Jacob Bowman, of Northfield, killed at Bachelor's Creek, North Carolina; Edward V. Ford, sergeant, of Northfield; Benjamin B. Kinsey, sergeant, of Northfield; Abram B. Housman, of Castleton; George Davis, of Northfield; James Wilson, of Castleton, and Aaron Beatty, died in Andersonville prison; Jacob R. Decker and William W. Stillwell, of Northfield; Isaac B. Lewis and James G. Woglom, of Westfield, died of disease contracted in service, and James Shaunessy, deserted.

Company B, of Colonel Tompkins' regiment, became Company K of the One Hundred and Fifty-sixth. Captain Shelton resigned at Long Island. After that the officers were, Captain James J. Hoyt, of Castleton; First Lieutenant Magnus Bouscher, and Second Lieutenant Edward Openshaw, of New Brighton. The two former served through the war, but the latter resigned in June, 1864. First Sergeant Charles Webster, of Middletown, was promoted to captain, and remained, being later a captain in the regular army. William Seaton, sergeant, of Castleton, was promoted to the rank of captain. John J. Farrell, of Castleton, sergeant, returned from a Confederate prison at the close of the war, having been captured at Cedar Creek. John Peterson, private, became first sergeant; Isaac Fullager, corporal, and Evan Riley, of Castleton, served through the war; Michael Cotter, of Castleton, was discharged; William Gill, of Castleton, and Cornelius Sullivan, drummer, served through the war.

The Supervisors authorized an additional loan of twenty thousand dollars, in January, 1863, for the payment of bounties and relief. One hundred and twenty-two recruits had enlisted. Eighty-eight recruits in Northfield had received fifty dollars each, and ten dollars each was paid for recruiting them. Westfield spent five thousand one hundred and forty dollars for the same purpose.

Richmond County's quota in the call of 1863 was for four hundred men. Those appointed to make the enrollment under the conscription act of that year were: For Castleton, Edward Jones; Middletown, John J. Clute; Northfield, Simon Haughwout, and Southfield, John Jacobson.

A writer of the time said: "The celebrated draft riots of July,

Digitized by Google

1863, filled the Island with horrors. The public mind was in a state of high fermentation. Riot was in the air, and it would seem that men hardly knew what they did. For two years the public mind here had been almost constantly wrought up to fever heat, and now the prospect of a draft being made to fill the quota of four hundred men in this county, under the recent call, but few of whom were already enlisted, made a strain upon the public nerve which it was in a poor condition to bear with tranquillity. For a moment the steady arm of patriotism seemed to falter, weakened as it had been by the drain upon it, caused by the withdrawal of hundreds from the community to the field of war.

"Sober counsels wavered, and the influence of men of means was weak, because of the obnoxious clause in the conscription act, which promised exemption to all drafted men who should pay three hundred dollars. In this weak moment the baser elements of society gathered strength, and disorder attempted to block the wheels of organized government."

CORTELYOU HOMESTEAD, GREEN RIDGE.

In this critical moment the innocent colored population were among the first to receive the demoniacal thrusts of unchained hatred, and from day to day there were serious depredations committed on both the North and East shores.

A mass meeting was held at Clifton on Wednesday, July 15, 1863, and was in charge of Messrs. William Shaw, Dwight Townsend and Mr. Fellows. It was largely attended by laboring men from the fortifications. The public mind was greatly excited. The Rev. Father Lewis, of St. Mary's Roman Catholic Church, addressed the meeting with conciliatory language, earnestly pleading with his audience to respect the law, while he assured them that no unjust demands would be made. Dwight Townsend, Robert Christie, Jr., and Mr. Hull also made addresses, after which resolutions were adopted, calling upon the Governor to, without delay, have the constitutionality of this Conscription Act tested before our State Courts.

Digitized by Google

Handbills were immediately issued by the officials of the town of Southfield, announcing that "the draft had been stopped," and this timely and thoughtful action probably averted another riot.

A serious affray occurred at Vanderbilt landing on the 20th. In the early evening, two or three soldiers were in a saloon, when one of them fired his musket at a boy. This encouraged some others who were present to such an extent, that they set upon the soldiers and beat them so badly as to leave them for dead. A train of cars came up just then, having on board a company of soldiers, who came out and commenced firing upon the crowd. They no doubt took the crowd to be a mob gathering, and determined to scatter it. In doing so, their shot took effect in the body of Charles Murphy, with such force that he died shortly after. About ten men were arrested by the soldiers and taken to camp. One or both of the soldiers who began the disturbance, died within a few days.

The Courts were subsequently kept busy settling the various suits for damages sustained by the rioters. Total amount of damages awarded, $17,207.99. Added to this was an outlay of about ten thousand dollars incurred in contesting these claims.

The Supervisors authorized the County Treasurer to raise fifty thousand dollars, by the issue of county bonds, "to be appropriated as might be necessary in providing for those who might be drafted and were not able to pay the exemption fee of three hundred dollars, under the Conscription Act which, it was expected, would be enforced in the First Senatorial district."

On the 30th of August the draft took place at Jamaica. Richmond County's enrollment numbered 2,205, and was distributed among the towns thus: Castleton, 559; Southfield, 463; Northfield, 444; Westfield, 438; Middletown, 301. From this number five hundred and ninety-four were to be drawn, which included fifty per cent., to make up for deficiency which might result from exemption.

This draft, so far as gaining men for the service was concerned, amounted to very little. A majority took advantage of the three hundred dollar clause. The five hundred and ninety-four men, called for in the quota, were accounted for as follows: Seventy-four were aliens; ten furnished substitutes; ninety-four were exempt for physical disability; one hundred and three were exempt for other causes; one hundred and sixty-two commuted, and one hundred and fifty failed to report.

President Lincoln issued another call for troops in October, 1863, which was to be filled by January 5, 1864. The quota for Richmond County was as follows: Castleton, seventy-seven; Southfield, sixty-five; Northfield, sixty-two; Westfield, sixty-two; Middletown, forty-two. The Supervisors called a mass meeting at the County Court House on December 19, "to give popular expression to the means

Digitized by Google

to be adopted to meet the call." Resolutions were adopted, appealing to the Supervisors to "raise one hundred and twenty thousand dollars, or as much of that sum as might be necessary, and to pay each volunteer, drafted man or substitute, counting in the quota, four hundred dollars, and to open a recruiting office in each town, and to appoint suitable persons to attend to the same." The quota was filled early in March.

In March, 1864, came another call for troops. The Supervisors met on the 18th, and decided to "contract with some responsible party to fill the quota of one hundred men which belonged to this county to furnish." The Board published, on the following day, an advertisement, inviting parties wishing to contract for filling the quota, to present themselves with their sureties at a meeting appointed for the 22d instant. The authorities ordered a draft on April 15, unless the quota was filled by that time. The Supervisors had already offered a bounty of three hundred and fifty dollars each for recruits —"two hundred dollars of which was to be paid to the recruit and one hundred and fifty dollars to the party who should procure him." The month of April witnessed the completion of this task. In May, a new enrollment of persons liable to do military duty was ordered, and the work was commenced on the first of June. The President called for five hundred thousand men in July. Another mass meeting was held in Clifton Park on the 26th, when resolutions were adopted "placing the entire business of raising money and filling the quota in the hands of the Supervisors, and calling upon them to exercise those duties."

The committee, which had been appointed to solicit subscriptions to a loan, reported to the Supervisors on August 8, that they had secured seventy-five thousand dollars. The quota for the county, under this call, was: Middletown, 123; Southfield, 70; Westfield, 77; Castleton, 154; Northfield, 119; total, 543. On the 22d of August, the Supervisors established a recruiting office at Nautilus Hall, Tompkinsville, and offered "$200 for each recruit, and $200 additional to the agent or broker procuring him, or $400 to every man liable to draft who should secure a substitute to be credited to the county. For $600 deposited with the Supervisors, by any citizen liable to draft, before September 5, they would undertake to procure a substitute for him, such substitutes to be supplied in the order in which applications and deposits were made."

One great drawback was that the prices mentioned were insufficient to procure the needed recruits, and so an advance was made until seven hundred dollars a man was paid. Later in September the quota was still one hundred and eighty short, and there was no ready money in the county treasury to meet the emergency. In this extremity the Supervisors exchanged county bonds for recruits, and

Digitized by Google

the quota was filled, though a form of drafting was commenced on the 3d of October.

A memorable scene was witnessed at the County Court House on January 6, 1865, when a mass meeting was called "to provide for raising the quota under the call of December 19." The people had assembled so often under like circumstances, that the strain had become almost unbearable.

The Supervisors, however, were instructed to fill the quota, and raise the money necessary to the credit of the county, also to raise two hundred men. A draft finally took place on February 25, at which four hundred and forty-six names were drawn. The Supervisors had previously offered bounties of three hundred dollars for one year's men, four hundred dollars for two years' men, six hundred dollars for three years' men, and one hundred dollars additional "hand money" to the person presenting the recruit.

The war was a costly incident to Staten Island. The various sums authorized to be raised on bonds of the county for the purposes of the war were as follows:

August 22, 1862, for relief of volunteer families.....	$ 20,000.00
December 16, 1862 " " "	20,000.00
August 25, 1863. " drafted men.....	50,000.00
September 9, 1863, " " "	25,000.00
December 29, 1863, to obtain volunteers.....	125,000.00
February 3, 1864, " " "	180,000.00
July 28, 1864, bounties for volunteers.....	250,000.00
January 28, 1865, for filling the quota.....	75,000.00
February 16, 1865, " " " "	75,000.00
February 25, 1865, " " " "	75,000.00
	$895,000.00

Forty-five regiments of infantry and two of cavalry, besides notable contingents of other organizations were located here during the war. In the Empire Brigade there were two whole companies of Staten Islanders; Sickles' Excelsior Brigade had quite a number; Corcoran's Irish Legion had a good representation; so also with the Eighty-second, the One Hundred and Thirty-third, the One Hundred and Fifty-sixth, the One Hundred and Seventy-fifth, Serrell's Engineers, the Seventy-ninth, the First Mounted Rifles, the Fourth Heavy Artillery, the Fifth, Sixth, Ninth and Fifty-third Zouaves, the Fifth and Sixth Cavalry and a score of other organizations. Fully a thousand men volunteered from Staten Island. It is estimated that of this number about one hundred and eighty were killed in battle or died of disease in hospital or prison.

Digitized by Google

Besides Colonel Elliott and Major Hagadorn, the Seventy-ninth Regiment had in one company the following Staten Islanders: John W. Morse, Herman C. Buecke, Walter N. Brown, Theodore Hall, George H. McCready, William White, J. J. Thaxter, A. Miranda, Rheinhart Snyder, Richard Wall, James Banker, Edward Banker, John Cowhig, David Wilton, Benjamin Wilton, Daniel Beatty, William B. Lush, William Simonson, Edward Barker, James Breen, Edward Brice, Michael Kirkman, Robert Kelly, Patrick Carlin, Bernard Scanlon, Thomas McAdams, George Howarth, David Howarth, Eugene Burke, John Johnson, James Colgan, William Ross, John Racy, John Breen, David Sands, Peter Tushingham, William Smith, J. Smith, Richard Barrett, Charles Wilhelm, Charles Piratyki and Philip Daly.

The old Quarantine grounds were among the first scenes of encampment of the volunteers. Camp Washington occupied these and a considerable portion outside. Barracks were erected, the first occupants of which were Wilson's Zouaves, they being there in May and June, 1861; Serrell's Engineers, August and September; Gates' Rifles, August; The Empire Zouaves, August; the German Rangers, September; Siegel Rifles, September. all in 1861; Swain's Cavalry, March; Colonel Tompkins' regiment, September (whence it was moved to barracks erected for it on land of Colonel Nathan Barrett, at Factoryville); Second Duryea's Zouaves, October, 1862. Inside the grounds were Allen's Volunteers, May; Colonel Bartlett's Naval Brigade, May; Third Irish Volunteers, August; Union Rifles, September, all 1861; Scott's Nine Hundred (Eleventh Cavalry), March; Eighty-first, March; First National (Monitors), August and September, all 1862. Near the Quarantine grounds was also located Camp Arthur, having been established in June, 1861, and occupied by the British Volunteers and McClellan Rifles in August, and the Lancers in September of the same year.

VANDERBILT DOCK, NEW DORP.
From a painting by Fred. W. Kost.

Digitized by Google

Camp Scott was located at Old Town, on the Dr. Smith farm, and was occupied by the Corcoran Legion. Camp Vanderbilt was at New Dorp, and was the home of the Washington Zouaves in September, 1861. Camp Yates was also at New Dorp. It was occupied by the Seventh Regiment and Thirty-second Cavalry in May, 1861. Camp Lafayette was also at New Dorp, and was occupied by the Garde Lafayette (Fifty-fifth), in August and September, 1861, and by the Warren Rifles in March, 1862.

Camp Leslie was at Clifton Park, and the Clinton Guard, commanded by Colonel Cone, was stationed there in August, 1861, and the D'Epeneuil Zouaves (Fifty-third) in September of the same year. Camp McClellan was at Factoryville, on the Burger estate, between Richmond terrace and Castleton avenue. The McClellan Rifles were here from September to November, 1861. Camp Herndon was at Stapleton flats, and was occupied by the Ira Harris Cavalry in August and September, 1861. Camp Low was at Elm Park. The Morgan Artillery remained there for several weeks, leaving in November, 1861. Camp Morrison was on the Ward estate at the base of Pavilion Hill, and was occupid by the Cameron Light Infantry, in August, 1861.

Camp Ward was located at Port Richmond, and was the abiding place of Colonel Doubleday's Fourth New York Heavy Artillery. The Fourth remained in Port Richmond from November, 1861, to February 10, 1862. Camp Decker, also near Port Richmond, was occupied by the Second Fire Zouaves in August, 1861. The Second Artillery encamped at Tompkinsville in December, 1861, and the Seventy-first in March, 1862.

Camp Sprague, at New Dorp, was occupied by the Thirteenth Brooklyn, in September, 1861; the Stanton Legion, July to September, 1862; the One Hundred and Sixty-ninth in October, 1863; and the One Hundred and Fifty-ninth in November, 1862. A number of skeleton organizations were brought together at this camp and consolidated, in June, 1863. Among these were remnants of Colonel Tompkins' regiment, the Horatio Seymour Light Infantry, the Defenders, Davis' Cavalry, the Blair Rifles, the Burnside Rifles, the Pratt Guard, and the Westchester Light Infantry.

General George B. McClellan attended a review of the troops at Camp Sprague, on September 8, 1863. The post contained about three thousand men at the time. About eight thousand spectators were present. General McClellan having taken his position as reviewing officer, the troops marched before him, the following regiments being in line: Eleventh New York, the Thirty-first Duryea's Zouaves, Thirty-fourth, Ninth, Twelfth Cavalry, Coning's Eighteenth Light Cavalry, Twenty-first Cavalry, (dismounted), Seventeenth,

Digitized by Google

Thirteenth, and a few other organizations. After the column had passed, the General delivered an address.

A riot occurred among the soldiers at Camp Sprague on the night of the 4th of November, 1863, when the barracks were set on fire. Notwithstanding the vigilance displayed, on the following night flames again appeared at about the same hour, and before assistance could reach the scene everything was destroyed. A plot was discovered, a few days later, to also burn the hospital, notwithstanding it contained a number of sick soldiers.

The following list of Staten Islanders served in Company I, One Hundred and Fifty-sixth New York Volunteers: Orville D. Jewett, of Castleton, first lieutenant; captain; resigned 1863. Clarence T. Barrett, second lieutenant; first lieutenant; adjutant; captain and aide-de-camp, United States Army; brevetted major. Charles W. Kennedy, first sergeant; second lieutenant; first lieutenant; captain; brigade commissary, and acting assistant adjutant-general. Edward Steers, sergeant; first lieutenant; served until the end of war. William Cortelyou, Southfield, sergeant; second lieutenant; wounded at Cedar Creek; served until the end of war.

Bennett H. Buel, Castleton, sergeant, served until end of war. George G. Cadmus, Northfield, discharged for disability. Charles T. Pine, Castleton, corporal, discharged to accept commission as first lieutenant on Corps d' Afrique. George Mersereau, Castleton, corporal, served to end of war. Edward Haggerty, Northfield, killed before Port Hudson. Nathan M. Barrett, Castleton, corporal color-guard, served to end of war. William C. Simonson, Southfield, corporal, sergeant, served to end of war. Oscar Guyon, Southfield, corporal, sergeant, served to end of war. Albert P. Heal, Castleton, corporal, served to end of war. John Vanderbilt, Castleton, corporal, discharged to accept appointment as master-of-arms, United States Navy. Thomas Steers, Castleton, corporal, discharged to accept commission as assistant engineer, United States Navy. John G. Bott, Castleton, private, served to the end of war. Robert Bell, Southfield, private, died in service. William Bamber, Castleton, private, corporal, served to end of war. Henry V. Buel, Northfield, private, died in service. Edmund Blake, Castleton, private, wounded at Winchester, served to end of war and died. James Brogan, Castleton, private, served to end of war. Nathan T. Barrett, Castleton, private, sergeant-major, second lieutenant, served to end of war.

Abiel H. Burbank, Southfield, private, died in service. Ebenezer Chichester, Castleton, private, served to end of war. Daniel Collins, Castleton, private, served to end of war. DeWitt C. Conner, Southfield, private, killed at Fort Bisland. Edward Clary, Castleton, private, wounded at Cedar Creek, served to end of war. Patrick Colbert, Castleton, private, served to end of war. Thomas F. Donnelly,

Digitized by Google

Castleton, private, sergeant, served to end of war. Richard Dawlin, Castleton, private, wounded at Fisher's Hill, discharged. Albert G. Dunton, Castleton, private, discharged for disability. Daniel Elms, Northfield, private, served to end of war. Jacob G. Guyon, Southfield, private, corporal, discharged for disability. Nelson Gilby, Southfield, private, served to end of war.

Joseph Jacobs, Castleton, private, served to end of war. Bernard Jacobs, Castleton, private, drum-major, served to end of war. Albert Jones, Castleton, private, died in service. James H. Hood, Castleton, private, served to end of war. Ira McVeigh, Castleton, private, wounded at Cedar Creek, discharged. Reuben S. Miller, Castleton, private, served to end of war. Philip J. Miller, Southfield, private, corporal, served to the end of war. Mark Mallett, Castleton, private, taken prisoner at Cedar Creek, discharged. John Prosi, Castleton, private, served to end of war. Edward N. Pomeroy, Castleton, private, discharged to receive commission. Augustus W. Sexton, Jr., Castleton, private, discharged to receive commission.

William B. Smith, Castleton, private, served to end of war. James Watson, Castleton, private, taken prisoner at Cedar Creek, died from exposure. Robert Stewart, Castleton, private, served to end of war. George Wackerhagen, Castleton, private, discharged to receive appointment as hospital steward, United States Army. Thomas Wright, Castleton, private, wounded at Montesino Bayou, served to end of war.

The following is a list of names of recruits credited to Richmond County, under the call of February 1, 1864:

John McMahon, Richard Scott, John Smith, John Campbell, John R. Biskert, John O'Rourke, William Wall, William H. Johnson, Frank Wilson, George R. Ranson, John W. Webb, Hugh Daly, James Gogle, Hiram Watkins, Charles Frazer, Michael Evans, William A. Gordon, Martin Roberts, William Taylor, Joseph Snedeker, Robert Jones, Briclon Guielon, John W. Idell, William H. Walter, James Fagan, Charles Loveless, Charles Hedges, George Thomson, William H. Craney, Isaac Lake, John Aiken, Jacob Ensler, John Robinson, Emil Specker, James McGill, Michael Farrell, George José, William Orchard, John Howard, Henry Brister, James Logan, Andrew Allen, Frederick Collins, Isaac Leonard, John Campbell, James Conroy, John Finnigan, John Lynch, John Malony, Joseph Baker, Bernard Bayley, William A. Seeley, George H. Holbrook, Hugh McNunghton, Ralfe Wolfe, Nicholas Ryall, James Cleveland, Napoleon B. Seeley, Nicholas Gregier, James McNally, Thomas Burrows.

Frank L. Noyes, Albert C. Clark, Rodman C. Ridont, Osborn C. Montgomery, John Wilson, Benjamin Branon, Peter Brady, John O'Connor, Robert Kennedy, Peter Kelrave, John Crawford, James Gavin, James Dillon, John E. Nywan, Mark Blake, Frederick Buland, James T. Smith, William Van Zandt, Patrick Keenan, John H. Price,

Digitized by Google

John Williams, Joseph Montel, Lawrence Develin, John Hill, Patrick Hannon, George Brown, Charles Moore, Henry Clement, Arten Tappen, Daniel Daly, John Fox, William H. Crane, James Wind, John O'Brien, David King, Edward Keegen, Albert Johns, Thomas Jenkins, Edward Lockett, John McGears, William Hoegele, Oliver H. Daniel, Joseph Farley, Leonard Delgar, William Smith, George H. Jones, John Pately, Charles Dixon, William Hammond, Patrick Conway, Michael Malony, Michael McGlynn, Lewis J. Jenks, Michael Ring, Denis C. Shulz, John Lynch, Stephen Wiley, Robert Arnold, James Perry, Augustus Haas, Joseph Fingleir, Frank Kessner, Joseph Mason.

Moses Strauss, Charles Steincanss, Lewis Lamgert, John F. Butler, Christopher Armstrong, William Cramer, Charles Veime, Michael Joyce, William H. Wilson, John Smith, James Stewart, James Ford, Charles Gebhard, Octave Adams, Thomas Butler, Edward Treadwell, John Geary, John Healey, Henry Emille, John A. Smith, James Williams, Otto Brockenhaussen, Robert Tait, Patrick Curren, John Willolan, Francis Baine, John Kigorn, James Ferguson, Aaron Steinberg, N. W. Kenyon, Simon Thornton, William V. McGrath, Albert H. Brown, Walter H. Hyde, Simon J. Glass, Sebastian Glamb, John Dohorty, August Mier, Jans McGregan, William Neabel, James M. Smith, Peter Smith, William Gund, Nelson Bancroft, John Brown, Thomas Little, Patrick J. Boyle, Charles Waller, James Mullen, Thomas Flynn, George Thomas, William Leonard, Edmund Gammuny, Thomas Meacham, John Thomas, John Gregory, Bernard Brady, Henry Custanco, Emanuel Miller, John Donovan, John Francis, Chris. Fitzgerald, Charles Butler, John B. Grant, Belford Thomson.

James McCollok, John Winn, Justus Brooks, Allanson B. Fuller, Lysander Hammond, Fidelo Biddle, Samuel C. Williams, Daniel Blanchard, Franklin Pea, William H. Jennings, Arthur Bebee, Simon Shaffer, Adam Courtwright, Ezra Press, Milford E. Matthews, Michael Carey, Charles Davis, Henry E. Chamberlain, James W. Putnam, Oscar Gurtin, Lawrence W. Graters, Isaac B. Varian, Henry V. Leach, Michael Corcoran, Alfred Hammond, Patrick Hogan, George E. Bush, Lewis J. Utter, Robert Kolinska, Francis Fogan, John Ganch, Stephen D. Lawrence, Enoch R. Streeber, George Smally, James Cornelison, Jacob Brown, Daniel P. Weller, John W. Lewis, Samuel E. Blanchard, Fred. Newark, John R. Sage, Benjamin F. Road, DeWitt C. Streeter, George Wallis, John Smith, William W. Ladon, Charles Johnston, Russell Sisson, Oliver E. Wilcox, and Daniel Leonard.

The following are the names of the recruits credited to Richmond County, under the call of March 14, 1864:

James Horton, John Powers, Andrew Wengel, John H. Newall, Oscar F. Bradley, Lewis Kellogg, Abel Palmer, John Squires, Emery

Digitized by Google

Schenck, Zaren M. Carey, John Dempsey, John O'Brien, Ensan Bryan, Edwin Lambertson, Charles M. Hill, Justus A. Cooke, Alexander Murray, Silas F. Cables, George Allen, Thomas Gillan, George Wheeler, Wed'r Messino, Patrick Furman, Michael Kelly, Isaac Corby, Thomas Duffy, John A. Bergen, Joseph McGinness, John Williams, Washington L. Bell, Dennis Fitzgerald, Thomas Buckley, Peter Williams, Patrick Jennings, John Foster, Thomas Brady, Charles Brown, Peter C. Harris, William Plummer, Martin Mead, Joseph Frank, James H. Johnson, Demetia Cowles, William L. Walker, John Van Duzer, Charles L. McBride, Louis Williams, John Wilson, Michael Sullivan, Eli Smith, Michael O'Keefe, Richard Golden.

John Hammen, John McGreary, John Quigley, Thomas Wild, David Johnson, Thomas Cooper, William McKay, George Lander, William Harris, John Welsh, George H. DuBurgh, Jacob Brackson, John Smith, Owen Harris, Joseph Ferdinand, Lewis P. Worth, Lawrence Fling, Charles Smith, George W. Mills, Michael Corcoran, Peter Wager, Martin Hamley, Alexander Koat, Patrick Cain, John Hanlon, James Finley, Alfred Sammothe, Edward Listen, Frederick Pillerick, Oliver H. King, Joseph Clark, Alfred Derrickson, James Bane, William Smith (colored), Lawrence Seawell, Joseph Young, Daniel Callihan, Louis Harrick, Charles Smith, George Foster, Henry Wilson, John Mallory, Henry Sifke, William H. Entzmenger, Michael Kelley, Clarence Worden, Arthur Carson, George W. Perkins, John Donnelly, Carl Herman, Jacob Truck, James McCormack, James Gondy, P. P. Collins, Charles Cornell (colored), Alexander Ringler, Thomas Tobin, Robert Tappan (colored), Alexander Villoroy, John Dorton, James Campon, William Miller, W. H. Shipman, George Winton.

William Wills, Dennis Eagan, John Merrill, George C. March, James Matherson, John Watson, Delevan Lee, James Winn, Gustav Hart, William J. Sprall, James Howard, George W. Joyner, Isaac Hildreth, William Parish, S. G. H. Musgrave, Adelbert Shan, Thomas O'Brien, Martin Reynolds, A. B. Sharrott, James Mullen, Vincent Decker, Henry Rathgen, Thomas DePew, David Quinn, Thomas Sharrett, John T. Brown, Henry E. Decker, Louis McVickers, Joseph Thompson, Reuben F. Harris, W. H. Holcomb, George Brucher, Joseph Beule, Michael Flynn, Michael Dolphin, Henry Smith, John Hathway, Timothy Hanley, Joseph Wagner, Sidney Blatsch, John Schmallinger, Charles Anderson, Michael Riley, Armide Clarville, Charles Hunter, Timothy O'Donohue, Peter Richmyer, James Jackson (colored), Henry Nole, James O'Donnell, Henry Ostello.

Nathan King, Orville D. Wilson, Frederick Touschill, Moses Stein, Post J. Higgans, Louis Myers, Edward Murray, John Reisser, M. L. Templeman, Thomas Christy, Fritz Reimer, Edward Davidson, Benjamin Christie, John Fitzpatrick, William Wright, Samuel Johnson, William Halle, Herbert Nansse, Henry Sanders, W. J. McWilliams,

Digitized by Google

Aaron P. Fischer, Lewis Heist, Leon Gardner, W. S. Sanbourn, John Jackson, James Smith, Edward Munroe, John Williams, Robert Hattens, George Kaleisch, James Gallagher, John Brick, Charles Huss, John Burke, John Hastings, Charles Crocker, Stephen Whearty, Joseph Underhill, Thomas Doran.

The following recruits were credited to Richmond County, under the call of July 18, 1864:

John Kennedy, John Cronan, E. H. Jimmerson, Sullivan Lockwood, Wolfgang Heintz, John Thorlnay, James H. Anderson, Walter Gamble, Lawrence Kennedy, George Smith, Frederick Miller, James Wilkinson, Robert Clinton, Julius VanBraner, Levi Hoag, William Duffy, George Birch, Richard Williams, James Robinson, Charles Robb, John Roll, Richard Franey, Benjamin Weness, August Wittengel, Henry F. Nunnemaker, Frederick Goodyear, David Collins, George Hart, John Croake, James Miller, Olaf Carlsen, Patrick Kane, Olaf Errickson, Peter Nodine, John Anderson, Henry Woods, John Fox, William Griffin, Frank Tellyson, Antonio Dears, Peter Brady, William D. Haley, William McGilvey, Charles Smith, Jacob Geisser.

John Walsh, Thomas Callahan, William A. Dull, Louis Baptiste, Levi Smith, Robert Smith, George Wood, Frederick Rutty, John Meagher, Frederick Drick, John Williamson, Franz Einzel, William Howes, William Quinn, Ernest Herbert, John Donnelly, John Sullivan, John Campbell, Thomas Bowers, Ernest Cramer, Edward Gardst, Robert Rutherford, Matthew Baker, Daniel Geary, Peter Wall, Alexander Hill, William Hanley, Richard Potter, Owen King, Henry Smith, John Atkins, James Collins, Daniel Quinn, James Smith, Charles S. Schantz, James McGourdon, Thomas Carr, Samuel Price, Adam Herman, Henry Balling, Allen Williams, John Love, Thomas Sharkey, Frank McKenna, Samuel McAdams, Joseph Hook, Joshua M. Mansfield, William Wilson, Charles Washburn, John Gardener, Daniel Hook, Michael Leonard, Philip Hickey, Frank Lerden, Lewis H. Avery, William S. Shimmers, Charles E. Ball, James Dolan, Isaac Ritter, Joseph Morse.

Thomas Branan, Daniel Britton, Abner S. Adkins, Ebenezer Piago, Charles Britton, John B. Bolton, Thomas Poole, William Pool, Charles Somers, James Curran, Luther Wright, William H. Orser, Charles Chambers, William Beardsill, James H. Smith, Richard R. McMenn, William Wright, Frank G. McGrath, William H. Wood, Reuben Henderson, Judson Ecker, Jefferson Harlon, E. Talbridge, Thomas Flannagan, Robert Carlton, Patrick Guyman, Miles S. Outwaters, James McCarley, Edward B. Pierce, Thomas Plunkett, Michael Madden, John C. Daley, Henry H. Hind, Garret Miller, John W. Rice, Owen Bullard, John R. Castor, Danford Bronell, Stephen Bull, Frederick Clemens, William H. Dull, Charles R. Raven, Charles Williams, Charles Donaldson, Gardener Filkins, George M. Millen, Ocsher Shel-

Digitized by Google

don, Adelbert Cornell, Francis D. Greene, Daniel A. Jones, William Morrison, Philander Matheson, Edwin Potts.

Mitchel Putnam, George Y. Pomeroy, Elias Spicer, S. R. Seamans, Castilo Spicer, John J. Sheppard, Robert Waters, Henry C. Waterman, Richard Woodward, Ira G. Tonsley, George D. Davis, Joseph Eagan, William J. Smith, John Roach, Henry Housing, John Kelley, Cyrus Bradford, Eli H. Davis, John Nagle, Samuel Barker, George P. Patterson, John F. Brown, John Brennan, Christopher T. Moss, John Doherty, Charles Campbell, Thomas O'Donnell, August Bolte, Joseph Diamond, Patrick Dunn, George Read, William Brown, Patrick Crowley, Jacob Skedgee, Edward Kane, Eugene Schmith, John C. Anderson, Robert Howe, Frank Prosper, Henry Northenson, Louis Wildman, William Elliott, Francis Groppy, John Mills, William Dibblee, William Braison, Benjamin F. Headley, Patrick Hickey, Frank Willis, John McCoy, Thomas Flynn, Thomas Holmes, George Harris, Alfred W. Cook, Thomas Williams, Thomas Scomfield, Luke Japson, Alexander Vandergrift, John M. Smith, Charles Beauford, Christian Bender, Stephen Lovejoy, Charles Arnold, Jeremiah O'Brien, John Tydville.

Henry Tydville, John Mollilson, Joseph Romstock, William McGill, Andrew Maloney, Rudolph Ranner, Peter Palky, Charles W. Mickles, William Shetzakoff, Michael Kelly, Charles Cummings, Thomas Moore, George Smith, John Potter, Andrew Smith, John H. Linden, George McCloud, Charles Risch, John Quinn, William Rolle, Charles H. James, William Fanning, Albert Scott, Patrick Farley, Joseph Hull, Francis Fitch, John Spurrier, John Lee, Thomas Brussin, Frank Reiniff, Robert G. Wagener, Michael Foley, William Quiggs, Wolfe Marpe, Albert Skinner, Michael Devine, Charles Williams, Thomas Smith, Henry Alexander, Alexander M. Reid, William Bennett, Michael Barnes, Emil Rossearo, Charles Burns, Thomas McGuire, Robert Smith, James Clark, William H. Gildersleeve, Henry Gray, Francis Stintz, Charles Smith, John B. Stow, Francis McLaughlin, Henry Dorn, James King, John H. Geary, Jacob Myers, James H. Ross, James McIntosh, Robert Mitchell, John Clark, Michael Plunkett, John Lenz, John Breaston, Daniel Sweeny, Stephen A. Babcock, John Lee, Charles Beckham, John T. Oliver.

Patrick Dailey, Charles Elville, John Kelly, Patrick Rigney, James McCarson, Albert Pennington, Thomas West, John Kaven, Jacob Van Clief, Brazzilla Beattie, Thomas Dally, John Hogan, Henry Brown, Louis Donelson, Henry C. Nichols, John Welsh, Carl Schmidt, George Bohn, John Roth, John Riley, Patrick Brady, John H. Angel, John Bodesild, Jeremiah Crovley, Ludwig Bohn, Frederick Liabler, John Burville, John Kaver, George Somers, James McMahon, William Morgan, John Tague, Reuben Spencer, William Janes, Henry Voston, Patrick Fitzpatrick, John Hayes, Christian Seng, Peter Hooper, John McDonald, Patrick Loughley, Michael English, John

Digitized by Google

Brown, Charles Johnson, William Field, William Letzible, John Zer, Albert Hopkins, Albert De Groot, John Dougherty, Patrick Dolan, Symes G. Parker, John Maloney, John Riley, Andrew Copp, William Kelly, Thomas Braman, Gerard Harson, John Maher, Mark Habig, William Hubbard, Theodore Fortianatry, John Sleight, Henry Gertins, Michael Lear.

Patrick Murphy, Francis Houston, Edwin Davis, Michael McHugh, Wesley Alcott, Patrick O'Neal, Frederick Everts, John H. Smith, John White, Philip Fox, William Newman, Thomas Watkins, Julius A. Maddon, Joseph Stanett, Charles Huy, Joseph Cussick, Patrick Sullivan, Robert Smith, John Fitzgerald, John McLancey, Michael Keegan, Charles Creaton, Frederick Myers, Horace Lockman, Ernest Riester, John Heffarin, William Atkins, Henry Thomas, (colored), John Woodward, Samuel Harris, John McDavis, John McKay, Newton Loper, James Murphy, Michael Nelson, John Henderhahn, Joseph Osborn, Thomas Gosden, Jacob C. Frederick, Charles F. Lutz, Owen McMahon, Edward Carroll, Jacob Miller, Joseph Cox, Henry Jackson, William H. Hall, Emanuel Roberts, William Ryan, Henry C. Noble, Jeremiah Lionne, Patrick Rogers, Charles Nash, Albert Miller, Hiram E. Hubbard, John Ward, Henry Gardener, William Wall, John King, George Duncan, Charles J. Melville, Jacob Kines, Richard Pennefeather, James Lyons, John Hopkins, Joseph Farren, John F. Keenan, Frederick Tenor, John Martin, Malcombe Sinclair, George Anderson, and William Reed.

The following are the naval recruits credited to Richmond County, under the call of July 18, 1864:

Joseph Lockman, "Wabash;" Alexander Hamilton, "Montgomery;" John Houghwout, "Alabama;" John Goggin, "Daylight;" John McAuley and Michael Farrell, "Santee;" Francis P. Donnelly, "Savannah;" B. Finnerty and William H. Mayne, "Roanoke;" John E. Barnes, Alexander Lockman, Benjamin Decker, Frank S. Ellis, and Frank Stoddard, "Mississippi;" Michael Langton, "Potomac;" John Powers, "Stars and Stripes;" Michael McCormack, "James Adger;" John Dunn, (first), "New London;" John Dunn, (second), "Unandilla;" Louis McCormack, "Amanda;" F. De Plangue, "Brandywine;" James Patterson (colored), "Morning Light;" Howard Prior, Thomas Mayne, William J. Decker, and George Stewart, "Tecumseh;" Aenos R. Parker, "Huntsville;" John Goggin, "Philadelphia;" Charles E. Burbank, and Cornelius Houghwout.

The following is a list of those drafted on Staten Island, and their substitutes, under the call of July 18, 1864:

PRINCIPAL.	SUBSTITUTE.	PRINCIPAL.	SUBSTITUTE.
Eugene B. Dubois,	P. Sweeney,	Orville D. Jewett,	William Brown,
William H. Cross,	R. Coleman,	C. S. Jewett,	Benjamin West,
Frederick A. Lane,	James Conway,	John W. Simonson,	W. Fitzgibbons
Joseph A. Deane,	John Ward,	F. C. Moffatt,	A. Johnson,
James B. Pollick,	D. McCarthy,	David B. Williamson,	James Clavin,

Digitized by Google

PRINCIPAL.	SUBSTITUTE.	PRINCIPAL.	SUBSTITUTE.
L. D. Washburn,	John Paterson,	Albin C. Stryker,	Edward Murphy,
William R. Irving,	August Clint,	L. R. Means,	William Healey,
John W. Russell,	Charles Birch,	Alonzo P. Mayling,	Michael Manell,
David Joline,	Thomas Lynch,	John R. Smith,	John Donelson,
Elias P. Manee,	R. Morgan,	Richard B. Vroom,	Louis Brogle,
Henry Levinson,	O. McDonnell,	Joseph H. Bennett,	William Thomas,
George Merrill,	W. Thurston,	Ancil Vroom,	George Kolatch,
Seth C. Joline,	James Havens,	Garrett B. Vroom,	John Raoose,
David Van Name,	James P. Reese,	William Corry,	Charles Pregizere,
John E. Merrell,	John Carroll,	C. C. Ellis,	Henry Brown,
David E. Egbert,	George Herschell,	M. P. O'Brien,	Antonio Flesch,
William W. Decker,	William McArdell,	H. H. Lamport,	Joseph Knapp,
F. Marckham,	Joseph D. Bayley,	Robert Christie, Jr.,	John Roth,
F. A. Baker,	John McCarty,	Frederick C. Johnson,	Haans Delly Koll,
John Merrell,	Josiah Hazard,	Samuel F. Barger,	William Beach,
George C. Ward,	James P. Murphy,	George Smack,	Peter Olinson,
John T. Shepler,	James McFarlan,	Augustus Dejonge,	James Farrell,
W. C. Blintnall,	Thomas Mackenhath,	D. Bauer,	Francis Cois,
William Schall,	Emil Myer,	Max Rachgaber,	John Mann,
Moses Van Name,	Jacob Roth,	E. J. Donnell,	W. Caldwell,
Charles D. Washburn,	Jeane Brade,	John H. Clark,	James Freeman,
Martin L. Joline,	A. Rink,	John Maxwell,	B. Fox,
Henry Seawood,	James McCullough,	Jacob G. Winant,	William Bennett,
John E. Armstrong,	James Rogers,	Louis Dejonge,	Thomas O'Brien,
Michael Conklin,	A. Osborn,	Daniel Wandel, Jr.,	John Pampson,
Stephen Kettletas,	William W. Rolfe,	Peter H. Wandel,	Henry Wilson,
Benjamin F Errington,	John Beatty,	Gilbert Warden,	F. Brandetski,
Paul M. Drake,	H. Loomis,	George B. Mersereau,	L. Weitel,
Malcolm M. Gregier,	C. Roller,	Gilbert Worder,	B. Miller,
Obadiah Bowne,	Thomas Sexton,	Garrett Post,	Nicholas Levy,
M. B. Bryant,	Carl Kuntz,	Charles F. Meisner,	James O'Reilly,
C. D. Williams,	Jean Brade,	O. W. Bird,	M. Madden,
Charles Van Name,	Charles Fredericks,	Garret P. Wright,	William Maher,
Hiram W. Decker,	Tredwell Wood,	George T. Jones.	Edward Bowman.
Rev. E. W. Hitchcock,	Agustus Adanson,		

The average cost per man, including all expenses, interest, premium, etc., was $767.30.

The following is a list of the men drafted, and their substitutes, under the call of December 19, 1864:

PRINCIPAL.	SUBSTITUTE.	PRINCIPAL.	SUBSTITUTE.
George Mosle,	William Hunter,	William Totten,	Henry Ford,
Lewis E. Amswick,	John Moore,	Jeremiah Baker,	Andrew Brennan,
Patrick Kenney,	Hugh Callahan,	Edwin Banker, Jr.,	James Shiefele,
John H. Garretson,	Dennis Slattery,	Charles H. Van Name,	Soloman Keller,
John C. Cavelti,	William H. Housman (colored),	William E. Bradley,	Patrick Kelley,
		John Hornby,	Martin Condin,
Edward M. Cameron,	Patrick McGuire,	Jeane B. Weir,	John Wilson,
William H. Barrett,	Ferdinand St. Leger,	Raymond Decker,	John Wood,
Thomas Fitzachery,	John Murphy,	Elijah Kingston,	William Rice,
Edward Van Name,	Charles Strong,	John W. Tilbout,	Patrick Sheehan,
John H. Burbank,	James Bronson,	Isaac Winant,	Gustav Goosche,
Alfred H. Taylor,	Andrew M. Cann,	John P. Van Name,	William Stempf,
Thomas Mulgrave,	Michael Lane,	Joseph Vroom,	Max Goldsmith,
William M. Crane,	Matthew Carr,	James Jacklin,	John Carey,
Barnett D. Wood,	George Harrison,	Hubert Dickerson,	George Taylor,
Silas N. Havens,	Timothy Daley,	Abraham De Hart,	John McFarland,
Sanford W. Havens,	Herman Buchner,	Charles E. Taber,	Philip Miller,
Nicholas J. Wood,	John Robinson,	James W. Stephens,	Patrick Connolly,

Digitized by Google

PRINCIPAL.	SUBSTITUTE.	PRINCIPAL.	SUBSTITUTE.
Winant S. Androvette,	Edward W. Ferrilla,	William Houghwout,	William Kentzy,
John W. Mundy,	Antonio Gorrisala,	James M. Ellis,	Edward Mitchell,
Edward P. Chase,	Michael Denney,	John Campbell,	William Felton,
C. C. Androvette,	P. B. Wilmarth,	Charles H. Stebbens,	John Hecker,
Washington Hawes,	John T. Blackwell,	John V. Carroll,	John Williams,
Isaac Reed,	James M. Matthews,	John B. Seguine,	John Davis,
George W. Randolph,	Charles Riley,	A. Seely Van Pelt,	Alexander Reese,
Rev. G. T. Bugbee,	Mathias Siefert,	James Boyd, Jr.,	Franz Dahin,
James McGuire,	William E. Korts,	John Woglom,	William Davis,
James Dillon,	Patrick Murphy,	Michael Harding,	Charles Miller,
Giles Anderson,	George Robertson,	J. Billings Farnsworth,	Henry Greenon,
A J. Methfessel,	Charles E. Francis,	John Castine,	John Buck,
H. J. Munn,	David Kenney,	Benjamin Buckworth,	Joseph Powers,
Richard E. Kruser,	Michael O'Neal,	Reuben D. Stillwell,	Patrick Sullivan,
John Bonner,	Samuel Kinge,	Cornelius M. Braisted,	James Donnelly,
James J. Totten,	Michael Hagens,	William H. J. Bodine,	Samuel Clark,
Sebastian Ellis,	Oscar F. Stanton,	Carl Shafer,	Patrick Welsh,
John J. Seguine,	Thomas Quirk,	James Turney,	Martin Sorden,
William J. Vredenburgh,	Timothy Maher,	John H. Hedley,	William Schmidt,
John H. Decker,	John McDermot,	John Blatch,	James McClea,
Abraham Decker,	Thomas Williams (colored),	Joseph Burnes,	William Fay,
		Tyler M. Parker,	William Biggs,
Alfred Storer,	Michael Quinn,	John M. Egbert,	John Taylor,
George W. Chambers,	Michael Baker,	Jacob H. Van Pelt,	W. J Crooke,
George W. Vreeland,	Thomas Grant,	Matthias Egboff,	John B. Smith,
Amos B. Heal,	Alfred Moreland,	Henry Voght,	James Fischer,
John W. Snedeker,	Francis Croan,	George W. Anderson,	Henry Whenin,
Robert Lee,	Philip Perrill,	Samuel A. Merrill,	Patrick Cunan,
Stephen W. Johnson,	John McCullough,	Edward Housman,	Michael Coughlan,
Eugene Androvette,	William Fielding,	Aug. C. Achilles,	James Dailey,
Paul Latourette,	John Daly,	Isaac G. Boyce,	James O'Brien,
Bryon D. Herrick,	William Mortimore,	Elbert Poillon,	Charles Wade,
George F. Victor,	James Boner,	Jesse Twaddle,	Thomas M. Beane,
Charles Whelp,	George Williamson,	Jacob Sleight,	Thomas Hyland,
Elias Braisted,	Samuel Lester,	Alexander Grant,	James Murphy,
Cornelius E. Merrill,	Francis Manning,	Peter A. Woglom,	Patrick Brady,
Charles A. Grimes,	John Riley,	William Redmond,	Thomas Capener,
Beverly Robinson,	Charles Mars,	William Haxton,	Peter Gavazzi,
Thomas E. Davis, Jr.,	John Snedeker,	Anton Mosle,	Emil Mitchelson,
John Ingram,	James Whelehan,	Henry Widmyer,	Matthew Skinner,
Martin Zeloff,	Rufus Price,	Thomas M. Rainhard,	Seymour Canvin,
Asel Brainard,	Peter Duffy,	Lionel Jacobs,	Charles Elgie.

The average cost per man, including all charges and interest on loan, $760.72.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXXII.

THE BI-CENTENNIAL CELEBRATION.

IN the early summer of 1883, Supervisor Robert Moore, of Castleton, called the attention of his colleagues to the fact that Richmond County would close its second century, as a county organization, in the following November, and the Board decided to take proper steps to secure a suitable recognition of the event. Accordingly, on Wednesday, September 26, the Supervisors held a meeting at Richmond, in connection with a number of citizens, to commence arrangements for the Bi-Centennial Celebration. Professor A. G. Methfessel was appointed Chairman, and Counsellor Theodore Vermilye Secretary. The Supervisors having been instructed to appoint four citizens from each town, to be added to the committee, they made the following report:

Castleton—Erastus Wiman, Duncan R. Norvell, T. M. Rainhard and Read Benedict. Southfield—Cornelius A. Hart, David J. Tysen, Frederick Bachmann and George S. Scofield, Jr. Middletown—Philip Wolff, Professor A. G. Methfessel, Frederick White and George H. Daley. Northfield—William L. Ricard, Melville E. Wygant, Calvin D. Van Name and Henry Smith Kneip. Westfield—Charles C. Kreischer, Dr. R. H. Golder, Benjamin H. Warford and Ira K. Morris.

Fifty citizens were added to the committee at the following meeting, held at Nautilus Hall, and a permanent organization was effected, with the following executive committee: Middletown—George Bechtel, Frederick White, Philip Wolff and Edward King. Northfield—Abram Crocheron, John H. Van Clief, Sr., De Witt Stafford and C. C. Jones. Castleton—Robert Moore, Read Benedict, D. C. Norvell and R. B. Whittemore. Southfield—Nathaniel Marsh, Benjamin Brown, Cornelius A. Hart and David J. Tysen. Westfield—Jesse Oakley, Benjamin H. Warford, Michael Conklin and Percival G. Ullman. Frederick White was appointed Chairman, and D. R. Norvell Secretary.

Many meetings were held, and the people of the county generally manifested an interest in the event. The celebration occurred on Thursday, November 1, 1883, and was a great success. The day was generally observed as a holiday, many of the schools and business places being closed. The organizations which participated in the parade assembled at Elm Park, on the North Shore. Houses and public buildings generally along the route were gayly dressed.

Digitized by Google

The United States Sloop-of-war "Vandalia," Captain R. R. Wallace commanding, lay off Stapleton, and at noon fired a national salute of twenty-one guns.

The procession was made up as follows: Squad of mounted police, under command of Captain Daniel Blake; group of Kickapo Indians; Fort Hamilton Band; Grand Marshal Benjamin Brown and aides—Clarence M. Johnson and Captain J. J. Garretson; Staten Island Schuetzen Corps, Captain Frederick Bachmann commanding; chariot containing a representation of the Goddess of Liberty; a section of the Fifth United States Artillery, under command of Lieutenant Brown.

Westfield Division—Benjamin H. Warford, marshal; Reuben W. Wood and Abram Cole, aides. Tottenville Cornet Band, Edward C. Murphy, Jr., leader; Tottenville Drum Corps, David J. Peppers, drum-major; Battalion of the Grand Army of the Republic, Colonel W. M. Wermerscirch commanding—Shaw Post, No. 112, of Stapleton, Vice-Commander James Burke; Lenhart Post, No. 163, of Tottenville, Commander David Reckhow; Sons of Veterans, Shaw Post, No. 112, Captain Archie Eadie. Truck carrying disabled veterans of Shaw Post; Citizens' Association; coaches containing Hon. Erastus Brooks, Hon. George William Curtis, and Dr. Ephraim Clark; carriage containing Supervisors Nathaniel Marsh, Robert Moore, Abram Crocheron, and Jesse Oakley and Counselor Vermilye; carriage containing County Judge Stephen D. Stephens, County Clerk Cornelius A. Hart, County Treasurer James Tully, and School Commissioner Theodore Frean; carriage containing Supervisor George Bechtel and ex-County Treasurer James Robinson; carriage with Police Commissioners Philip Wolff, Edward Barton and Richard B. Whittemore and Chief Clerk George W. Ellis; carriage with Superintendents of the Poor John J. Vaughan, Jr., and Samuel Lewis and Counselor William S. Hornfager; carriage with members of the Staten Island Quartette; invited guests in carriages; Citizens' Cornet Band, of South Amboy; Red Cross Division, No. 6, Uniform

OLD HOUSMAN HOUSE, PORT RICHMOND.

Digitized by Google

Rank, Knights of Pythias, of South Amboy; Protection Hook and Ladder Company, of Perth Amboy; Lincoln Hose Company, of Perth Amboy; Tottenville Hook and Ladder Company, No. 1; Kreischerville Drum Corps, employés of Messrs. B. Kreischer & Sons; New Dorp Pioneer Corps; Mulligan's Band, of New York; New Dorp Volunteers.

Middletown Division—August Horrmann, marshal; John P. Smith and Harry C. Britton, aides. Washington Band; Enterprise Hook and Ladder Company, No. 1, of Stapleton; Neptune Engine Company, No. 6, of Edgewater; Protection Engine Company, No. 7, of Stapleton; Sixty-ninth Regiment Drum Corps; Excelsior Bucket Company, No. 1, of Stapleton; Relief Bucket Company, of Edgewater; Engine Company, No. 8, of Clifton; Columbia Cornet Band, of Pleasant Plains; Clifton Hose Company, No. 6; Excelsior Drum Corps, of Tompkinsville; Ben. Brown Hose Company, No. 3, of Stapleton; Eterick's Band, of Brooklyn; Engine Company, No. 9, of Edgewater; Robinson Hose, No. 9, of Stapleton; Forty-seventh Regiment Drum Corps; Neptune Engine Company, No. 1, of West Hoboken; Lincoln Club Band, of New Brighton; Niagara Engine Company, No. 5; Clifton Hose Company, No. 1; Olvany's Band; Columbia Hook and Ladder Company, of Stapleton; South Amboy Band; Continental Council, No. 27, O. U. A. M.; the Z. Z. Z. Z. Social Club; Newark Cornet Band; Colored Citizens' Association of Newark.

Northfield Division—William L. Ricard, marshal; George Van Name and Melville E. Wygant, aides. Twelfth Regiment Band; Washington Engine Company, No. 1, of Port Richmond; Oceola Cornet Band, of Mariners' Harbor; Aquehonga Hook and Ladder Company, No. 1, of Mariners' Harbor. The remainder of this division was composed of carriages and business wagons.

Castleton Division—R. Penn Smith, marshal; John L. Dobson and Frank Wiman, aides. West New Brighton Band, J. Egloff, leader; Cataract Engine Company, No. 2, of West New Brighton; Union Baseball Club of the Young Men's Catholic Union, of West New Brighton; Elizabeth Cornet Band; Granite Hook and Ladder Company, No. 2, of Graniteville; Port Richmond Engine Company, No. 3; Medora Hook and Ladder Company, No. 3, of West New Brighton; Joyce's Band, of New York; New Brighton Engine Company, No. 4; Friendship Hook and Ladder Company, No. 4, of New Brighton; Oceanic Hook and Ladder Company, No. 1, of Travisville; Linoleumville Social Club.

The business men of the Island were represented in a separate division. Among them were vehicles representing the establishments of Messrs. Louis DeJonge & Co., D. T. Cornell, Monroe Eckstein, Clark & Morton, Joseph Schell, George Ross, C. L. Meinekheim, Hillyer & Egbert, J. K. Vreeland, David Solomon, Jacob I. Housman, N. Boylan, Henry Williams, George Bechtel, Melville E. Wygant, Felix

Digitized by Google

O'Hanlon, John H. Price, F. W. Hulsebus, C. M. Pine & Sons, C. W. Alexander, C. S. Vreeland, D. W. Melvin, Van Name Brothers, D. F. Simonson, Chris. Bardes, E. A. Bourne, C. C. Jones, George Frake and very many others.

After the parade, an anniversary meeting was held on the Stapleton "flats." The venerable Dr. Ephraim Clark, of New Dorp, was chosen chairman, and Theodore C. Vermilye secretary.

Rev. Dr. James Brownlee offered prayer.

Dr. Clark made a short address, and the Hon. Erastus Brooks was then introduced and spoke for nearly an hour on the history of Staten Island, followed by Hon. Algernon S. Sullivan, Hon. Henry J. Scudder and Hon. George William Curtis, who in conclusion said:

"Here lies our Island, fair as when Hudson first beheld it, still as the Duke called it, the 'Pleasantest and most commodiousest' site in all the land, and to-day our beating and answering hearts are the promises that the genius of that spirit is opening its eyes and about to put forth its hand, which shall bring the Island still nearer to the great city, shall reclaim all its waste and watery spaces, shall fill its air with the hum of cheerful industry, and shall justify to every Staten Islander the promises that the beauty of our Island holds to every passer by, and to every stranger who lands upon our shores, and then shall it happen when we are gone, when our names are forgotten, and one hundred and two hundred years hereafter our children's children in the remotest generations come here to celebrate the fourth centennial anniversary of the Island and to pay their tribute of homage to us, long vanished old fogies of to-day, the spirit which this day, please God, shall stimulate this county, shall make the county what long ago it should have been, in Shakespeare's verse,

> "'This precious stone set in the silver sea,
> The most resplendent jewel of th' imperial crown,'

of the most imperial Commonwealth of New York."

After a short address by Hon. L. Bradford Prince, the people were dismissed with a benediction by the Rev. A. M. Palmer, of Tottenville.

During the day, thousands of people from the cities and surrounding country visited the Island. The celebration ended with a grand display of fireworks in the evening, on the Stapleton "flats."

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXXIII.

THE SAILORS' SNUG HARBOR.

IT is doubtful that any similar institution in the world has been written and talked so much about as the Sailors' Snug Harbor, which is located at New Brighton; nor has the history of any organization ever been more mutilated and distorted. Therefore, we go to the official records for our information.

Captain Thomas Randall, the father of Robert Richard Randall, whom historians have so unjustly ignored, was one of the most noted sea captains of his day, and took a prominent part in public affairs. In 1748, he commanded the privateer brigantine "The Fox," which brought in the French ship "L'Amazone." In 1757, he took out the brigantine "De Lancey" of fourteen guns. The next year he seems to have withdrawn from active service, and to have sent out privateers under the command of others. In 1757, he was joint owner of the ship "General Ambercrombie," sixteen guns, and the ship "Mary," ten guns. In 1760, the "De Lancey" in her turn was captured by the Dutch, and her commander and crew imprisoned.

In 1762, Captain Thomas Randall was the owner of the "Charming Sally" of six guns. On the breaking out of the war of the Revolution, he took an active part with the Americans. He was a member of the Committee of Fifty-one, and took part with the radical members of the New York Chamber of Commerce on the division caused by a meeting called by McDougall.

When the British entered the City of New York, Captain Thomas Randall withdrew to Elizabethtown, and aided the Provincial Congress in the care of the privateers commissioned by it. On the return of the exiles to New York, a meeting was held at Cape's tavern, November 18, 1783, which appointed a committee to prepare an address to General Washington. The name of Captain Thomas Randall leads the signatures to this paper. He was also one of the Committee of Thirteen, to conduct the procession to meet Governor Clinton on his entrance into the city on the 26th of November. He was one of the gentlemen who presented General Washington with the President's barge, used by him during his stay in New York. On President Washington's return to Virginia, in 1789, he returned the barge to the owners with a warm letter to Captain Thomas Randall.

Digitized by Google

The residence of Captain Thomas Randall was at No. 8 Whitehall street. He was one of the two hundred and three shareholders, in 1792, of the famous Tontine Coffee-House. One of the city papers of that date publishes this advertisement: "Randall, Son & Stewart, merchants, 10 Hanover Square. General assortment of dry goods, iron mongery. Removed to 211 Water street, where they have for sale a large assortment of European and East India goods."

Captain Thomas Randall was Vice-Consul to China, and captain of the ship "Jay," belonging to John Pintard, alderman, in 1783. He had also served on the Committee of One Hundred, chosen to control all the general affairs of the City of New York, in 1775. He belonged to the Sons of Liberty. He built the barge which carried General Washington from Elizabethtown to New York, at the time of the inauguration, and was coxswain with a crew of shipmasters. He was practically the founder of the Marine Society, and there is every reason to believe that he originated the call for that memorable meeting "for the relief of indigent ship-masters, their widows and orphans," for he was appointed chairman of the committee to formulate a plan to carry out the design, and the articles submitted by him were adopted. He was one of the incorporators named in the charter granted by George III.

This action of Captain Thomas Randall indicated his philanthropic nature. Undoubtedly it was his acquaintance with the needy work of the Marine Society that led his son, Robert Richard Randall, to bequeath his property for the establishment of a home for aged, decrepit and worn-out sailors. To this same influence we may trace the work and sympathy of other members of the Marine Society in other such well-known charities as the Mariners' Family Asylum and the Home for the Destitute Children of Seamen.

Captain Thomas Randall was one of the original twelve members of the New York Chamber of Commerce, also of the New York Banking Company, of which he was a director. It is interesting to know that, in 1784, the "Empress of China," the first American ship that went to China, cleared from New York with a miscellaneous cargo, with Major Shaw, of Boston, and Captain Thomas Randall, of New York, on board as commercial agents, and the Hon. John Jay, Minister of Foreign Affairs.

It was in 1774 that Stephen Girard first arrived in this country, as chief officer on board the ship "Le Julia," in the cargo of which he had a large venture. He met with Captain Thomas Randall, who was so much impressed with his business methods, that their acquaintance quickly ripened into intimacy. Girard was given the command of one of Captain Randall's boats, as a trial, and then the two became joint owners of the vessel. This co-partnership lasted for about two years.

Thus, it will be seen, Captain Thomas Randall helped to lay the foundation of the great fortune with which Stephen Girard in later

Digitized by Google

years blessed the world. Captain Thomas Randall died on Friday, October 27, 1797, aged seventy-four years. His remains were interred in the family plot in Trinity Church-yard on Broadway.

After reviewing the life of the father—filled with so many acts of practical kindness—we need not wonder that Captain Robert Richard Randall should have endowed such an institution as the Sailors' Snug Harbor. It is clearly evident that he first inherited from his father a desire to protect and help his unfortunate fellow seamen. These men—the father and son—moved in the very same channels in life; their desires, ambitions, and aims were practically the same. Therefore, it is reasonable to believe that the two planned, in a measure, the Sailors' Snug Harbor during their busy lives, little knowing how great was the structure they were building.

Captain G. D. S. Trask, late Governor of the Sailors' Snug Harbor, and now President of the Marine Society, gave years of patient and earnest toil to the work of compiling a history of the institution, and from his writings we quote:

"By deed bearing date June 5th, 1790, Frederick Charles Hans Bruno Paelintz—commonly called Baron Paelintz—conveyed for five thousand pounds to Robert Richard Randall the property known as the 'Minto farm,' consisting of twenty-one acres and more of land lying in the (now) Fifteenth Ward of New York City, (Borough of Manhattan). the Southern boundary of which was then the upper end of Broadway. Fourteen acres of this land was under the Stoutenburgh patent, from Governor Petrus Stuyvesant to Petrus Stoutenburgh, April 7th, 1661, and about seven acres from the Perro family; both tracts having been in the years 1766 and 1768 conveyed to Andrew Elliot, and in 1785, conveyed to John Jay, Isaac Rosevelt and Alexander Hamilton, and by them July 8th, 1787, to Baron Paelintz.

"The mansion on this estate was built of brick, and was one of the most reliable residences in the city. It was erected by Lieutenant-Governor Elliot, who was a son of Sir Gilbert Elliot, lord chief justice, clerk of Scotland. In 1764, he received the appointment of collector and receiver-general of the Province of New York, where he established his residence.

"In 1780, he was appointed Lieutenant-Governor of the Province, performing the duties of Governor until the city was evacuated by the British. His daughter was married here to Lord, after Earl Cathcart, then a major in the British Army, on duty in this city. In this house Captain Robert Richard Randall resided from 1790 till the time of his death, which occurred June 5th, 1801, and near it he was buried.

"In the early corporation manuals of the city, Captain Randall is spoken of as a merchant and a ship-master, and was uniformly by his contemporaries styled 'Captain,' both historically and in the recorded proceedings of the trustees by him appointed.

Digitized by Google

"In 1771, Captain Randall, then a young man, became a member of the Marine Society of New York, an organization for the relief of indigent and distressed masters of vessels, their widows and orphan children. The leaven of his inspiration to provide an asylum for the needy sailor may be traceable to his long connection and intimate acquaintance with the work of this Society, and to his knowledge of the fact that provision such as he devised would so far relieve the Society as to enable it the better to provide for the wants of widows and orphans; which result his action did in fact accomplish. Further evidence of this design, as well as of his confidence in the Society, is shown by his naming as trustees under the will, its President and Vice-President. In 1778, he became a member of the Chamber of Commerce of New York. The President of this body he also named as a trustee.

"The property left by Captain Randall for the Sailors' Snug Harbor, consisted of the 'Minto farm,' and four lots in the First Ward of the city, together with stocks valued at about ten thousand dollars. The farm lots in the First Ward he inherited from his father, Thomas Randall, a merchant of New York, who died in 1797, leaving two other children—Paul R. and Catharine, wife of George Brewerton, and appointing Catharine his executrix. Both the other children survived Robert Richard. * * *

"It was Captain Randall's intention, as expressed in the will, that the Sailors' Snug Harbor should be located on the estate conveyed; but with the delay incident to a sufficient increase of income properly to conform with his stipulation—that the proceeds of the said estate should be sufficient to 'support fifty of the said sailors and upwards' —the changes attending the growth of the city and other 'impervious circumstances,' rendered it advisable in the judgment of the trustees to address a memorial to the Legislature in February, 1817, for authority to locate the institution elsewhere; suggesting a site at the entrance of the harbor or on the margin of the bay, and representing that they were tendered gratuitously for such purpose a lot of land—not less than ten acres—situate on the bay between Fort Diamond, (now Lafayette), and the Quarantine ground, (Tompkinsville). This generous offer was made by his excellency Governor Daniel D. Tompkins, who aided General Hamilton in the drawing of the will of Captain Randall. Notwithstanding repeated applications to the same effect, amendment to the act of incorporation enabling the accomplishment of this design was not obtained until April 19th, 1828. The death of Governor Tompkins in the meantime rendered his proffer unavailable.

"In March, 1830, the last of the many suits which had been pressed by alleged heirs of Captain Randall was finally settled by the Supreme Court of the United States. The harass and anxiety to which the trustees had for a quarter of a century been subjected was forever

Digitized by Google

ended, and the legal acumen of the great lawyers who drew the will was demonstrated.

"After visiting many proposed sites on Long Island and on Staten Island, Captain John Whetten and William Whitlock, President and Vice-President of the Marine Society, selected the present location, and in May, 1831, concluded the purchase. Proposals for the erection of buildings thereon were at once advertised for, and the work of construction began."

Captain Randall's will, dated July 1, 1801, which is recorded in the Surrogate's office of New York County, reads as follows:

"In the name of God, Amen. I, Robert Richard Randall, of the Seventh Ward of the City of New York, being weak in body, but of sound and disposing mind and memory, do make and ordain this, my last will and testament, as follows:

"First—I direct all my just debts to be paid.

"Secondly—I give unto the legitimate children of my brother, Paul R. Randall, each an annuity or yearly sum of Forty Pounds until they respectively attain the age of fifteen years; and in addition thereto I give to each of the sons of my said brother the sum of one thousand pounds, to be paid to them as they may respectively attain the age of twenty-one years; and also to each daughter which my said brother may have, the like sum of one thousand pounds each, to be paid to them as they may respectively be married.

"Thirdly—I give and bequeath unto Betsy Hart, my housekeeper, my gold sleeve-buttons and an annuity or yearly payment of forty pounds, to be paid her on quarterly payments during her natural life.

"Fourthly—I give and bequeath unto Adam Shields, my faithful overseer, my gold watch and the sum of forty pounds, to be paid to him as soon after my decease as conveniently may be.

"Fifthly—I also give and bequeath unto Guwn Irwin, who now lives with me, my shoe-buckles and knee-buckles, and also the sum of twenty pounds, to be paid immediately after my decease.

"Sixthly—As to and concerning all the rest, residue and remainder of my estate, both real and personal, I give, devise and bequeath the same unto the Chancellor of the State of New York, the Mayor and Recorder of the City of New York, the President of the Chamber of Commerce in the City of New York, the President and Vice-President of the Marine Society of the City of New York, the Senior Minister of the Episcopal Church in the said city, and the Senior Minister of the Presbyterian Church in the said city, to have and to hold all and singular the said rest, residue and remainder of my said real and personal estate unto them, the said Chancellor of the State of New York, Mayor of the City of New York, the Recorder of the City of New York, the President of the Chamber of Commerce, President and Vice-President of the Marine Society, Senior Minister of the Episcopal Church and Senior Minister of the Presbyterian Church in the

Digitized by Google

said city, for the time being and their respective successors in the said offices forever, to, for and upon the uses, trusts, interests and purposes, and subject to the directions and appointments hereinafter mentioned and declared concerning the same—that is to say: Out of the rents, issues, and profits of the said rest, residue and remainder of my said real and personal estate to erect and build upon some eligible part of the land upon which I now reside an Asylum or Marine Hospital, to be called the 'Sailors' Snug Harbor,' for the purpose of maintaining and supporting aged, decrepit and worn-out sailors, as soon as they, my said Charity Trustees, or a majority of them, shall judge the proceeds of the said estate will support fifty of the said sailors and upwards; and I do hereby direct that the income of the said real and personal estate given as aforesaid to my said Charity Trustees shall forever hereafter be used and applied for supporting

THE SAILORS' SNUG HARBOR, NEW BRIGHTON.

the Asylum or Marine Hospital hereby directed to be built, and for maintaining sailors of the above description there in such manner as the Trustees, or a majority of them may from time (to time) or their successors in office may from time to time direct. And it is my intention hereby Directed and Created should be perpetual, and that the above-mentioned officers for the time being, and their successors should forever continue and be the Governors thereof, and have the superintendence of the same.

"And it is my will and desire that, if it cannot legally be done according to my above intention, by them, without an act of the Legislature, it is my will and desire that they will, as soon as possible, apply for an act of the Legislature to incorporate them for the purpose above specified. And I do further declare it to be (my) will and in-

Digitized by Google

tention that the said rest, residue and remainder of my real and personal estate, should be at all events applied for the uses and purposes above set forth, and that it is my desire (that) all courts of law and equity will so construe this, my said will, as to have the said estate appropriated to the above uses, and that the same should in no case for want of legal form or otherwise be so construed as that my relatives, or any other persons, should heir, possess or enjoy my property, except in the manner and for the uses herein above specified. And lastly I do nominate and appoint the Chancellor of the State of New York for the time being, at the time of my decease, the Mayor of the City of New York for the time being, the Recorder of the City of New York for the time being, the President of the Chamber of Commerce for the time being, the President and Vice-President of the Marine Society in the City of New York for the time being, the Senior Minister of the Episcopal Church in the City of New York and the Senior Presbyterian Minister in the said city for the time being, and their successors in office after them, to be the executors of this my last will and testament—hereby revoking all former and other wills, and declaring this to be my last will and testament.

"In witness whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and affixed my seal the first day of June, in the year of our Lord one thousand, eight hundred and one.

"ROBERT RICHARD RANDALL (L. S.)"

The first meeting of the corporation of the Sailors' Snug Harbor was held on April 21, 1806. Messrs. Farquhar and Farmar were appointed a committee to report on a monument to be erected to Captain Robert Richard Randall.

On May 28, 1806, the first election was held, resulting in the choice of Mayor DeWitt Clinton as President, and Thomas Farmar Treasurer.

July 7, 1806—Dr. Benjamin Moore and Dr. John Rogers, a committee, reported the device of a seal representing a secure and tranquil harbor, formed by two points of land projecting into the ocean. In this harbor a ship, which appears to have been injured by tempestuous weather, is seen riding safely at anchor. On the shore is represented a view of the building erected for the accommodation of infirm and decayed seamen. The motto, *Portum petimus fessi*, (signifying that those who were disabled by the toils and dangers of the sea have at last found a place of rest and safety). Also, ordered that the Treasurer and Clerk adjust the terms of the lease with Mr. Farquhar, at $750 per year. [This was the Randall property in the city, of which Mr. Farquhar became tenant, not proprietor, as is generally believed.]

October 6, 1806—The Treasurer reported a statement of the present annual income of the Sailors' Snug Harbor, amounting to $4,243.07.

Digitized by Google

May 9, 1808—De Witt Clinton, (Mayor), ordered that the Recorder take measures to defend the suits in ejectment lately commenced against the Trustees.

The next meeting was held on November 21, 1809, and the next, February 19, 1814, when a petition to the Legislature was adopted, asking that the pastor of the Wall Street Presbyterian Church, and Rector of Trinity Church be recognized as Trustees; that illness of the senior minister of Trinity Church, discontinuance of meetings and elections of the Chamber of Commerce, and separation of the Presbyterian Churches had prevented the calling of a legal meeting since November 21, 1809, and asking for a reduction in the quorum to three trustees. It was also stated at this meeting that the income amounted to about $6,000 per annum.

Suits were brought against the Trustees to recover the Randall property, in the Circuit Court of the Southern District of New York, September 1, 1823, by Stephen R. Brown, of New Jersey.

March 4, 1825, a committee was appointed consisting of William Bayard, President of the Chamber of Commerce; Captain John Whetton, President, and Captain William Whetlock, Vice-President of the Marine Society, to attend to the removal of the remains of Captain Robert Richard Randall from the city property to one of the vaults of St. Mark's Church; and it was recommended that whenever the hospital be erected, his remains be deposited in the chapel of the hospital, and a suitable monument erected to his memory. This removal of the remains was rendered necessary by the opening of Eighth street, which would run through the grave of Captain Randall. The remains were removed on June 21, 1825.

March 10, 1826—Process served on the President of the Board, Mayor Philip Hone, by the heirs of the late Bishop Charles Ingles, of Nova Scotia. Referred to the Recorder to direct the reference.

April 17, 1826—The following was reported to have been adopted by the State Senate: "Resolved, By the Senate, (if the Assembly concur), that the Attorney-General be and is hereby directed to assist in the defence in any suit or suits which have been or may hereafter be commenced to recover possession devised by Captain Randall to the use of the Sailors' Snug Harbor, whenever requested to do so by the Trustees thereof, and that a reasonable allowance for such services will be provided by law."

On October 4, 1828, nine suits were reported by J. L. Riker, attorney, as terminated. The *Richmond Republican* states that the presiding justice directed the jury to render a verdict for the defendants, the Trustees of Sailors' Snug Harbor, and that they did so without leaving their seats. There were several lawyers employed on each side in these noted cases, the chief of whom being Daniel Webster for the plaintiffs, and Robert Emmett for the defendants, the Trustees.

Digitized by Google

October 21, 1831—The corner-stone of the building at New Brighton was laid. All the Trustees were present, and also the Lieutenant-Governor of the State and the Chancellor and Vice-Chancellor. An address was delivered by Chancellor Walworth, who also laid the corner-stone. The ceremonies were opened with prayer by the Rev. William Berian, D. D., and the concluding prayer was offered by Rev. W. W. Phillips.

August 1, 1833—Captain Whetton reported that thirty inmates had been received, applications having been made on July 4. The building was formally opened with fitting exercises. Prayer was offered by Rev. Dr. Peter I. Van Pelt, of Port Richmond, and an address was delivered by Rev. W. W. Phillips, of New York. The closing prayer was offered by Rev. George E. Miller, of Tompkinsville. The main building was erected at a cost of $35,000.

December 30, 1833—The first physician's bill was presented. It was for medicines and services of Dr. Samuel R. Smith, for five months, $66.42.

January, 1834—Plan submitted by Mr. Thompson for a monument to the memory of Captain Randall, the erection of which would cost $1,200, without inscription.

August 31, 1834—The committee (Captains Whetton and Whetlock), caused the remains to be placed in a new case. They were conveyed to the steamboat in a private carriage, and received at the Snug Harbor dock by the inmates, who were dressed in blue jackets and white trousers, and they followed the remains in silent procession and deposited them beneath the monument in front of the main building.

The following is a copy of the inscriptions on this memorial stone, which was added in the following year:

North side. "The Trustees of the Sailors' Snug Harbor erected this monument to the memory of Robert Richard Randall, by whose munificence this institution was founded."

East side. "The humane institution of the Sailors' Snug Harbor, conceived in a spirit of enlarged benevolence with an endowment which time has proved fully adequate to the objects of the donor, and organized in a manner which shows wisdom and foresight. The founder of this noble charity will ever be held in grateful remembrance by the partakers of his bounty."

South side. "Charity never faileth; its memory is immortal."

West side. "The Trustees of the Sailors' Snug Harbor have caused the remains of Robert Richard Randall to be removed from the original place of interment and deposited beneath this monument on the 21st of August, 1834."

There were one hundred and thirty acres in the original tract of land connected with this institution. Additional tracts have been purchased, until now there are one hundred and eighty acres. Thirty

Digitized by Google

acres on the front are enclosed by a substantial fence with granite coping, within which are erected the buildings, about forty in all. There are eight large dormitory buildings, capable of accommodating one thousand men, a hospital with beds for two hundred patients, (while another hospital structure, one of the finest in the world, is now in course of construction); a magnificent church edifice, entertainment hall, dwellings for officers and employés, laundry and clothes rooms, machine shops, with engine room attached; blacksmith shop, carpenter shop, with steam sawing and planing machines, paint shop, boiler houses, ice house of six hundred and fifty tons capacity, constructed with refrigerating and meat rooms, kitchen buildings, morgue, hot-houses, lodges, barns, electric plant, etc.

The central building contains the main entrance. In it, on the ground floor, are the Governor's suite of offices, the reception rooms, library and reading rooms, all opening out of the grand entrance hall. The hall and the principal rooms are handsomely embellished in fresco and stained glass, the designs being principally of a nautical and astronomical character. Among the portraits in the reception hall are those of former Governors.

The five main buildings are connected by two wide corridors, and a covered way with three main buildings; all are tastefully furnished and serve as sitting-rooms. The large dining-rooms are in a central rear building, and connect with the steward's office and store-rooms, which also connect with the main kitchen below, as well as with the matron's office. The face of the five front buildings is of marble with massive columns, and the hospitals are of granite of similar style.

The unveiling of an heroic statue in bronze of Robert Richard Randall, designed by Agustus St. Gaudens, occurred on May 30, 1884. Addresses were delivered on the occasion by the Hon. Algernon S. Sullivan and the Hon. Erastus Brooks. It was erected upon a pedestal of polished granite, and located upon the lawn between the main buildings and the Governor's residence, fronting the Kills.

Rules and regulations, tending to the good order and the comfort and welfare of all the inmates, are assented to by each upon entering the institution. The By-laws specifically state that "The Sailors' Snug Harbor" was erected and established for the maintenance of "aged, decrepit and worn-out sailors," and that none other is eligible to admission. That no person shall be admitted to the institution who is afflicted with a contagious disease; who is possessed of adequate means of self-support, either by his own labor or from other sources; who cannot furnish satisfactory evidence of his having sailed at least for five years under the flag of the United States, either in the merchant or naval service; and who does not sign the following agreement:

"Having been received as an inmate of the Sailors' Snug Harbor, *I do hereby agree to abstain from all intoxicating liquors,* and to readily

Digitized by Google

and cheerfully perform such labor and service in and about the institution and farm as may be required of me by the Governor, without expecting or claiming any reward or remuneration therefor; also, to attend church at least once every Sunday in the Sailors' Snug Harbor Chapel, unless excused by the Governor; also, to conduct myself in a quiet, orderly manner, and to strictly obey all the rules and regulations of the institution."

The Governors of the Sailors' Snug Harbor, since its establishment, have been, Captain John Whetten, from August, 1833, to September, 1844; Dr. S. V. R. Bogert, (acting) from September, 1844, to September, 1845; Captain A. F. Depeyster, from September, 1845, to November, 1867; Captain Thomas Melville, from November, 1867, to March, 1884; Captain G. D. S. Trask, from March, 1884, to January, 1898; Captain Daniel Delehanty, from January 20, 1898. He still holds the position.

The Board of Directors of the Sailors' Snug Harbor is at present composed of the following gentlemen: Robert A. Van Wyck, Mayor; John W. Goff, Recorder; Morris K. Jessup, President Chamber of Commerce; G. D. S. Trask, President of the Marine Society; W. J. Woodbury, Vice-President Marine Society; Rev. Morgan Dix, Pastor of Trinity P. E. Church; Rev. Howard Duffield, Pastor First Presbyterian Church; Morris K. Jessup is President of the Board.

On the day the "Harbor" opened its doors—August 1, 1833—twenty inmates were received, and during that year there were fifty, about one-third of whom left on their own account, or were dismissed, while the remainder were finally laid to rest in the old cemetery, which is located about a quarter of a mile back of the Harbor buildings by a pretty ravine.

The first inmate of the Sailors' Snug Harbor was Samuel Newman, a native of Falmouth, England, and he left the institution on his own account on March 8, 1838. The first inmate who died was Solomon Cumming, a native of this country. He was admitted on August 1, 1833, and died on March 25, 1834, aged fifty-one years. That same year there were two deaths; three in 1835; one in 1836; four in 1837; four in 1838; one in 1840; thirty-five in 1853; forty-five in 1861; one hundred and eight in 1885; three hundred and thirty-one in 1897; three hundred and forty in 1898, and ninety in 1899. The total number of deaths between 1833 and 1900, is somewhat above two thousand.

Among the native Staten Islanders, who have been inmates of the Sailors' Snug Harbor, were Stephen Wood, Benjamin Butler, Abram Manee, James Murray, Moses H. Stewart, James L. Simonson, John Van Pelt, William Cozine, and Isaac Woglom.

The annual income of the Sailors' Snug Harbor is constantly increasing. In 1899, it was a fraction short of $400,000, while its expenses, exclusive of improvements, were about $200,000.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXXIV.

CHARITABLE ORGANIZATIONS.

IN 1784, an act was passed which levied a tax upon all incoming vessels, to be applied by the Health Officer, and "directed the Health Commissioners, after paying the expenses of the Quarantine Hospitals out of the tax collected, together with such expenses as were part of the contingent charges of the City of New York, to appropriate annually eight thousand dollars of the surplus of the Society for the reformation of juvenile delinquents, or, as it is more generally called, the House of Refuge. The remainder of such surplus, if any there were, was to be paid to the Comptroller, to be invested by him, and called the Marine fund."

During the whole of this period, the only hospital for the accommodation of sick and disabled seamen and passengers, was that erected at the Quarantine, and known as the Marine Hospital, and the tax upon sailors and passengers was collected by the State officers, known as Health Commissioners.

The apparent injustice of appropriating any part of the tax imposed upon the hard earnings of the seamen, to objects having no connection with their interest or support, a memorial was presented to the Legislature, asking that the money thereafter paid as a State tax by the mariner, might be appropriated to his exclusive benefit. The result of this application was the passage of an act in 1831, to which the Seaman's Retreat, at Stapleton, owes its origin.

This act authorized the Commissioners of Health to collect the State tax from masters, mariners, or seamen, and credited or substituted in their place the Board of Trustees of the Seamen's Fund and Retreat, who were empowered to receive from the Comptroller so much of the Mariner's Fund in the treasury as was then unappropriated, and thereafter to receive the tax imposed upon masters, mariners, and seamen.

This tax was to be used for the purchase of land, the erection of hospital buildings for sick and disabled seamen, and for providing nurses and medical attendance.

The Trustees held their first meeting on the 9th of May, 1831, and forthwith proceeded to make arrangements for the temporary accommodations. Having received from the Comptroller the unappropriated balance of the Mariner's Fund, amounting to $12,197.68, they

Digitized by Google

purchased a piece of land at Stapleton, (at Bay street and Vanderbilt avenue), containing forty acres, for $10,000—prepared a temporary hospital, engaged medical attendance, nurses and assistants, and on the 1st of October, 1831, received forty-seven patients. It became necessary to commence the erection of an additional building in the following year.

This, after being partly completed, was entirely destroyed, but was finally completed in 1832. The want of additional accommodation, and the absence of any separate hospital for infectious diseases and insane persons, being still severely felt, the Trustees were obliged to make suitable arrangements to meet the necessity, and the building was completed in 1837. The old hospital, standing in the rear of the new one, was converted into an insane asylum.

The years passed rapidly in the history of the Retreat. Thousands of poor sailors have been cared for within its walls. It went out of existence, so far as its old form of management was concerned, in the early eighties, when it was leased by the United States Government, and converted into a Marine Hospital.

Staten Island has always felt the need of a public hospital. It became an absolute necessity during the Civil War. At a meeting of the Richmond County Medical Society, in April, 1861, it was suggested that some step be taken in the matter. The Society had already maintained a dispensary for the relief of the out-door poor, but were convinced "that the charity should be placed upon a broader basis in order to meet the increasing demands upon it."

A proposition was then placed before the public to establish an infirmary "for the reception of the indigent sick, to be called the Samuel R. Smith Infirmary, making the name an appropriate tribute to the memory of a well-known and highly esteemed citizen and distinguished physician, whose reputation for activity in the line of benevolence which the proposed institution should follow, suggested his name for this honor. The constitution provided that the payment of five dollars should make any one a member, and twenty-five dollars a life member. The affairs of the Infirmary were to be managed by seven trustees, four of whom to be members of the Medical Society, who should be elected at the annual meetings of the members. The attendance at the Infirmary was to be under the charge of the Medical Society."

On the 28th of April, 1864, a meeting was held in the old Tompkinsville Lyceum, to perfect the organization, and the following directors were elected: Messrs. Shaw, Marsh and Despard, and Drs. Anderson, Lea, Moffatt and Eady. The Commissioners of Quarantine granted the use of two of the hospitals on the late Quarantine grounds to the Infirmary, until such times as the grounds should be sold.

A formal opening of the Infirmary building was held on Monday afternoon, June 20, 1864. William Shaw presided. A dwelling,

Digitized by Google

standing on Sarah Ann street, Tompkinsville, was secured and fitted up for the purposes of the hospital. This was occupied until the present handsome building on Castleton avenue was completed.

A "Ladies' Auxiliary Society of the S. R. Smith Infirmary," was organized on November 20, 1863, and has always done good work. Its officers are, Mrs. George F. Hicks, President; Mrs. George W. Dix, Vice-President; Miss H. Evelina Bogart, Secretary; and Mrs. C. W. Hunt, Treasurer.

The Infirmary is now upon a safe and comfortable foundation, having been the subject of several liberal donations. The officials of the Infirmary to-day are: Orrin S. Wood, President; DeWitt Stafford, Vice-President; E. C. Bridgman, Secretary; F. C. Townsend, Treasurer; Clarence T. Barrett, DeFrees Critten, James M. Davis, J. Eberhard Faber, Stephen D. Stephens, Ferdinand C. Townsend, J. J. O'Dea, DeWitt Stafford, Theodore Walser, Lewis F. Whitin, Orrin S. Wood, Charles F. Zentgraf, Hugh A. Bain, Edward C. Bridgman, Louis F. Benziger, Nicholas Muller, Joseph Tate and Louis L. Tribus, Trustees.

S. R. SMITH INFIRMARY, NEW BRIGHTON.

In 1843, the managers of the Female Bethel Society, of New York City, decided to undertake the "Charity of Wages," changing their name to the "Mariners' Family Industrial Society." Its object was to provide work at a fair remuneration for the female members of the families of seamen. For this purpose application was made to the Sailors' Snug Harbor and the Seamen's Retreat, for the manufacture of a portion of the clothing annually required at those institutions, which was granted. A store was opened, and was in operation for eighteen years.

Application was made and an order obtained from the Government at Washington, for the manufacture of a portion of the clothing annually required for the navy. Of those who aided in this work of charity we can only here mention the names of Rev. R. C. Parker and the venerable Mrs. Alexander Hamilton, then in her ninety-second year, who made personal efforts for this object.

The managers saw the necessity of a Home for the aged women who were unable to earn their own support. A tax was first imposed upon

Digitized by Google

seamen and passengers arriving in this port, while the State was yet a Colony in 1754, and in 1784 it became a State tax. The Retreat surplus fund was rapidly accruing, and it seemed but just that a portion of the hard-earned wages of the sailor should be appropriated to the erection of an Asylum for his aged wife and mother. From the time of this State tax, 1784 to 1831, the amount paid by the sailor, above that expended for his benefit, was $341,000.

Consulting with friends upon the subject, among whom were masters of vessels, officers and sailors, they assured the managers that such an object would be hailed with joy by the seamen.

A petition was presented to the Legislature by Mrs. R. H. Lambert, who obtained an interview with the Governor, and the members who gave their approval and influence in its favor. The petition was presented by the Hon. Daniel E. Sickles. A few days later it was reported favorably and passed the Assembly.

In 1851, the Legislature appropriated $10,000 for the erection of an Asylum for aged and infirm relatives of seamen, and subsequently $6,000 more for this purpose, and ten per cent. of seamen's tax, collected each month by law upon masters, mates, mariners and sailors, for the maintenance of said Asylum.

Meanwhile opposition arose from the Board of Trustees of the Seamen's Retreat, which was contested in the Legislature for years. An act, however, settling the matter, was finally passed in 1854.

On the 9th of May following, the building committee, by invitation of the Board of Trustees, visited the farm of the Seamen's Retreat for the purpose of choosing the site for the Asylum. The site chosen was on the "southerly side of the farm," in the rear of the Retreat. The building now fronts on Centre street, which was laid out but a few years since through the Retreat property. On the 9th of the following June, the building was dedicated with appropriate ceremonies, and the first group of old ladies who enjoyed its hospitality made the first Stars and Stripes that floated above it.

The following are the officials of the Mariners' Family Asylum: Mrs. H. B. Jackson, Honorary President; Mrs. Frances Mac Donald, President; Mrs. Captain G. A. Carver, Vice-President; Mrs. Captain Stephen Whitman, Corresponding Secretary; Mrs. G. D. Pine, Recording Secretary; Mrs. G. W. Johnson, Treasurer; Messrs. James W. Elwell, Frank H. Moffatt, Richard Luce, John Miller, Albert T. Ropes, J. Winchester, G. D. S. Trask and G. A. Carver, Board of Council.

The attention of several benevolent ladies in the city of New York and vicinity, having been called to the destitute condition of the families of our seamen, it was determined by them that an effort should be made to relieve those necessities, by providing an asylum where such children might be sheltered and instructed.

A meeting of ladies of different denominations was accordingly

Digitized by Google

held in the lecture-room of the Brick Church, Beekman street, on Thursday, April 2, 1846. The meeting was organized for business by the appointment of Mrs. Tomlinson as President, and Mrs. Bement Secretary. A constitution was adopted, one of the articles of which being that "at the asylum the children shall have religious instruction, and habits of industry shall be inculcated. No child shall be admitted into the asylum under three years of age. The entire charge of the clothing, board and instruction, of each child shall be fifty cents per week. When the children shall have attained a suitable age, and proper qualifications, they shall severally be placed with some respectable person or family."

The officers for the first year, 1846, were as follows: Mrs. Peter Stuyvesant, First Directress; Mrs. Vredenburgh, Second Directress; Mrs. W. H. Aspinwall, Treasurer; Mrs. Edward Bement, Secretary. There was also a large board of managers and advisers.

From the first annual report we quote: "When the Board was first organized, the question as to the location of the Home for Seamen's Children was discussed, and the unanimous opinion was, that Staten Island presented advantages over every situation in the neighborhood of the city. A house was accordingly hired in Port Richmond, which, however, was soon found too small, and too remote from the steamboat landing, and it was concluded, in concurrence with the opinion of the Board of Advisers, to remove to the present situation, which for beauty, health and convenience, is unsurpassed."

OLD SEAMEN'S RETREAT, STAPLETON.

In 1852, a suitable building was erected on the grounds belonging to the Sailors' Snug Harbor, which was leased. The building was partly paid for by the donations of the managers at the time, and the balance, advanced by the Snug Harbor Trustees, was secured to them by a mortgage on the premises. The Home was so greatly in debt by 1857, that its managers concluded to sell it to the owners of the ground, and thus dispense with the mortgage. This was accomplished in 1858. The privilege was reserved to the Home, however, of occupying it, rent free, for a term of fourteen years.

The Home was incorporated in 1851. An annual payment of two

Digitized by Google

dollars constitutes a member, and a single payment of twenty-five dollars makes one a life member. This institution is chiefly managed by ladies, and the yearly expenditure is about $7,000. The inmates now are seldom less than one hundred in number.

Miss Anna M. Drew, the present Matron, came to the Home in 1863, as an assistant, and was very soon promoted to the chief office. From that year on Miss Drew has been the only mother that hundreds of otherwise homeless children have known. She is a woman of wonderful executive ability, with a keen perception for right and justice, and a heart full of love and sympathy for those upon whom the shadows of life have fallen. Little "tots," whom circumstances place under her gentle care, grow up to be men and women; but, no matter where they go, when they leave the Home roof, they carry with them hearts full of the tenderest love for the noble woman who has given her whole life to their interests, and they come back in the fleeting years to crown her with their blessings.

MRS. SARAH ROBERTS MORRIS, COUNTY PRESIDENT W. C. T. U.

The Woman's Christian Temperance Union is the largest organization, composed of women, on Staten Island. It numbers between three hundred and four hundred members. Its work was begun here in 1875, the year following the great temperance crusade in Ohio. Mrs. Alice Barrett was the first County President, and held the position for many years. She and her helpers started several local Unions on the Island, the first of which was at West New Brighton, in 1875. The county organization was permanently effected in 1885. In 1887, the work went down, until there was only one working Union in the county.

In 1889 and 1890, Mrs. Sarah Roberts Morris, who had been made County Corresponding Secretary, helped to re-organize several of the old Unions, and in 1891, Mrs. Ella A. Boole, then the State Corresponding Secretary, and now the President of the State organization, was elected County Vice-President. In 1892, Mrs. Barrett was made President emeritus, and Mrs. Boole was elected active President, and re-elected in 1893. Owing to pressure of outside work, however, Mrs. Boole resigned the Presidency that year, and Mrs. Morris, who had been elected County Vice-President, filled the Pres-

Digitized by Google

idency for the unexpired term. Mrs. Morris was elected President in 1894, and by re-election has held the office ever since.

In the first year of Mrs. Morris's administration five new Unions were added to the county, and since then others have been gained. The good that has been done by this faithful band of consecrated Christian women is incalculable. They help to feed the hungry and clothe the naked; they gather the street children and teach them to avoid intoxicants and other evils; they go to the jails and the alms houses, the hospitals, and the tenements, with words of kindness on their lips, carrying fragrant flowers, to bring a ray of love into darkened lives. The county officers are as follows: Mrs. Sarah Roberts Morris, President; Miss Anna M. Drew, Vice-President; Mrs. B. F. Funk, Corresponding Secretary; Miss Adelaide B. Morgan, Recording Secretary; Mrs. Ella M. Horton, Treasurer.

The following are the Local Unions of the Island: West New Brighton, Mrs. Sarah Roberts Morris, President; Mariners' Harbor, Mrs. Ella Kinsey, President; Port Richmond, Mrs. Harriet E. Weed, President; Stapleton, Miss Anna M. Drew, President; Linoleumville, Mrs. William Simmonds, President; Prohibition Park, Mrs. B. F. Funk, President; Pleasant Plains, Mrs. Arthur W. Browne, President; A. M. E. Church Union, Mrs E. Wells, President; Tottenville, Mrs. E. P. Manee, President.

The organization has two junior branches—the Young Woman's Christian Temperance Union, which organizes the young women, with the young men as honorary members, and the Loyal Temperance Legion, into which the children are gathered. There are hundreds of young people and children in these societies in the county.

Mount Loretto, situated on the South side of the Island, near Richmond Valley, is under the charge of the Mission of the Immaculate Virgin, and is conducted according to the Roman Catholic faith. The land occupied by it was known for many years as the Seguine and Bennett farms. Beside containing some of the finest buildings on the Island, it has the handsomest church, also large machine, clothing and shoe shops and an extensive printing office.

The institution was founded by Rev. John Drumgoole, about fifteen years ago; but death removed the grand old man from the busy scene of action, in the prime of his usefulness. Rev. James J. Dougherty is at the head of the institution to-day, having for his assistants, the Rev. Fathers Fitzpatrick, Harold, Pellieux and Wilson. Mother Catharine, of the Franciscan Sisters, is in charge of both the boys and girls. Of the former there are twelve hundred and fifty, and of the latter, one hundred and seventy-five.

St. Michael's Home, at Green Ridge, a similar institution, is doing its own good work, but not on so large a scale as the Home at Mount Loretto. It is located on what is familiarly known as the Frost estate.

Digitized by Google

The Staten Island Diet Kitchen has for its object the supplying of wholesome and nutritious food for the sick poor, and was organized at a parlor meeting in the German Club Rooms, in Stapleton, on December 8, 1881. The institution is located in a pretty building, on the corner of Van Duzer and Grant streets, Stapleton. It was opened on January 9, 1882, and incorporated on June 21, of the same year. The first officers were, Mrs. W. W. MacFarland, President; Mrs. Lowery, Vice-President; Mrs. F. U. Johnson, Secretary; and Mrs. L. H. Meyer, Treasurer.

The charter members were, S. B. MacFarland, Eliza Macdonald, Margaret A. Johnston, Caroline L. Peniston, A. C. H. Meyer, Elizabeth W. Clark, Clara K. Osborne, Mary T. Ripley, Rev. J. C. Eccleston, and L. H. Meyer.

The institution is maintained by subscriptions, donations in money, and contributions of various articles of food, delicacies, flowers, etc. The first year $1,084.77 in cash was received, and $803.77 expended. In response to the requisitions of the physicians during the year, nearly three thousand orders were filled to over five hundred patients.

The work of this noble institution goes grandly on, to the joy of hundreds of poor people in the vicinity, as well as to the kind-hearted people who are at its head.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXXV.

THE ISLAND'S POOR AND THEIR HOME.

WE find among the English Colonial manuscripts, preserved in the State Department, under date of November 23, 1692, "a petition from John Teunissen van Pelt and thomas Morgan, Members of Assembly for Richmond County, praying that the estate there of the late Peter Testemaker, heretofore minister of the Gospel on Staten Island, may be bestowed to the use of the poor of said Island in accordance with the expressed wishes of the deceased."

Also, a petition from the same gentlemen, "praying that the lot on Staten Island, set apart for the church, be construed to the said use, notwithstanding a grant thereof through misinformation, to one William Butler." Again, a petition from the same parties, "for a restitution of the middle part of Staten Island, as commons for the inhabitants, notwithstanding the late Governor Dongan craftily engrossed said commons to himself."

In those early days annual appropriations were made for the support of the poor, and they were "boarded out" throughout the Island. It sometimes happened that the children of aged parents were paid by the county for the support of those whom, by every tie of kindred and honor, they were in duty bound to care for.

The first public institution erected and maintained as an alms house, on Staten Island, was built some time prior to 1700, and was located on the spot where the little brick building known as the County Clerk's and Surrogate's offices stood, recently destroyed by fire, in Richmond. This is proven by the fact that when the Supervisors and others decided to "build a public gaol at Cucklestowne," the location of that structure was designated as "adjoining ye site of ye County poor-house." Old people have described it to the writer as a low, Dutch-style of a house, built of stone, and containing a story and a-half. It had evidently been a dwelling. It was demolished when the alleged fire-proof County Clerk's and Surrogate's offices were built, in 1827.

There are no records relative to the poor of the Island, prior to 1766; and, indeed, after that date for many years the story of that branch of the public service is very meagre. The first record which we have found reads as follows:

Digitized by Google

"Martha Garret, for Keep'g one of the —— at £6 pr. annum.

"Peter Perine, for Keepg Ann Vanamah £4 (and) pr Annum from ye 15th of Octor, £4.

"Widow Johnson, for Keepg Ann Vanamah £2. 9. 4.

"Dearkes for Keepg her Father Jacob Vanpelt, at £8 pr An'm from Octo^{r} ye 7th, £8.

"Jn^{o}. Burbanck for Keep^{g} his Father at £8 pr An. from Octo^{r}. ye 7th, £8.

"Francis Jonson for Keep^{g} a Poor Child at £6 pr An. from Octo^{r} ye 7th, £6.

"Mary Powel for Keep^{g} her Mother at £10 pr An. Octo^{r}. ye 7th, £10.

"John Conon, for Keep^{g} Paggy Baty at £8 pr An. from Octo^{r}. ye 7th, £8.

"Ja^{s}. Egbert for Keep^{g} Mrs. Frairai, £10.

"Ja^{s}. Latourette for Keep^{g} the Widow Andris, for the time she is sick, £4."

The total amount of money raised by the Supervisors, during the year 1766, for the support of the poor and other expenses, was £187. ($935.) The Supervisors that year were: Richard Conner, Castleton; John Poillon, Southfield; Nicholas Dupuy, Westfield, and John Hillyer, Northfield.

The Revolution made many poor people on Staten Island. The homeless were everywhere. While some cast their lot in what promised to be more congenial places, there were many who could not get away. In the reorganization of the County government the poor, of course, were remembered. This was in 1784. The original records read as follows:

"At a Meeting of the Supervisors held at Richmond May ye 31, 1784 we Examined the Excise List, And found we had Rais^{d} by Excise the Sum of Sixty five pounds Seventeen Shillings for the Benefit of the poor, £65. 17. 0.

"HENRY GARRISON, CORNELIUS CORSEN,
"JOHN TOTTEN, ANTHONY FOUNTAIN,
"P. B. SPONG, Clerk. Supervisors."

"RICHMOND TOWN, Aug^{t} 21st, 1784.

"A Tax agreed to be raised for the Gaol, Poor and Contingencies for the Year 1784, vizt. for the gaol £120, for the Poor £169. 9. 0., and for Contingencies £125. 11. 0.—amount £415. 0. 0.

"Quota for each Quarter or Precinct as follows:

"West Quarter	£143. 06. 1.	£3. 17. 6.	£146. 19. 7.
"North q^{r}	102. 16. 10.	2. 12. 9.	105. 9. 7.
"South q^{r}	92. 14. 6.	2. 7. 7.	95. 2. 1.
"Manor	65. 14. 11.	1. 13. 10.	67. 8, 9.
	£10. 7. 8.		£415. 9. 0.

Digitized by Google

"Collector's fees deducted, £10. 7. 8.

"Paid to the poor masters: Charles Dubois, £62. 10. 0.; John Tysen & Peter prall £55. 00. 0.; Harman^{s} Garrison & Isaac Lak^{n} £14. 17. 0.; Daniel Corson £36. 11. 0.—£179. 5. 8.

"Neat Balance paid to the Treasurer: By Collectors—West Quarter £80. 16. 1.; North q^{r} £47. 16. 10.; South q^{r} £77. 17. 6.; Manor £33. 14. 11.

"Accounts of Orders drawn on the Treasurer of the County for the use of the Poor for the year 1784.

"July 30 To Daniel Corson poor master for the Manor £5. 0. 0.

"August 14th To John Tysen poor master for the North Q^{r} £6. 0. 0.

"To Joseph McDonald on Charles Du Bois poor Master £1. 4. 0."

In the year 1800, the expenses for the maintenance of the poor had

RICHMOND COUNTY ALMS HOUSE.

materially increased, and the "quota," as adopted by the Board of Supervisors, was as follows: Northfield, $150.00; Southfield, $107.50; Castleton, $77.55; and Westfield, $197.00. Total, $532.00.

On the 2d of May, 1803, Joseph Barton, Sr., carpenter, and Mary, his wife, sold to George Barnes and others, justices; Gilbert Totten, Henry Crocheron, John Garretson and John V. D. Jacobson, Supervisors, and Daniel Corsen and others, poor masters, for the sum of $262.50, two acres of land, on the road leading from Richmond to

Digitized by Google

New Dorp, on which was a small frame house, containing two or three rooms. This property was purchased for the purpose of providing a County poor-house, though it was not able to accommodate one-fourth of the poor of the county. The remainder were disposed of as above stated. From the records it appears that the public charity continued to be dispensed in this manner for more than a quarter of a century after the purchase of the property.

The number of poor was constantly on the increase, and became a leading topic of conversation everywhere on the Island. The officials were puzzled very greatly as to the proper step to take to meet the emergency. It became the issue, in part, at the elections, and any candidate sealed his official doom if he did not possess the "foxy duplicity" to be able to steer between the two factions thus divided upon this question. One faction was composed of the taxpayers, and the other the element which, either through a desire or necessity, wanted to live upon public charity.

Finally, in January, 1829, the Supervisors called a public meeting of the taxpayers of the county, to devise some cheaper method of supporting the poor, "as the taxes were becoming burdensome." Whatever methods may have been proposed at that meeting, the proposition "to purchase a farm large enough to enable the poor to earn their subsistence by their own labor," was adopted, and John Guyon and Richard D. Littell were appointed a committee "to ascertain what farms could be purchased, and at what prices, and to report at an adjourned meeting."

In the meantime, an application was made to the Legislature for authority to make a purchase for the purpose proposed, and to levy a tax to pay for it. On the 8th day of April, 1829, the following act was passed:

"An Act to provide for a County Poor-house, in the County of Richmond.

"Section 1. The Act entitled, 'An Act to provide for the establishment of County Poor-houses,' passed November 27th, 1824, shall apply to and include the County of Richmond, the exception in the said act notwithstanding; but the sum to be raised by a tax, as specified in the first section, shall not exceed four thousand dollars," etc.

The farm of Stephen Martino, containing between ninety and one hundred acres, on the old Manor road, in the Town of Northfield, was purchased for about three thousand dollars. It still belongs to the county, and continues to be used as a poor-house farm.

On the 13th day of April, 1830, the Supervisors sold the old poor-house property to William D. Maltbie, for the sum of one thousand and fifty dollars. This is the property now occupied by Dr. Isaac L. Millspaugh, near Richmond. Isaac Britton was appointed the keeper.

In those days Dr. Crowell Munday was the County physician, and, in accordance with a contract with the Board of Supervisors, "at-

Digitized by Google

tended the paupers and furnished the medicines for the same, for $19.50 per annum."

The "annual requisition" for maintenance of the institution, in 1832, amounted to $800. The number supported during the year was thirty-eight. The total amount received in salaries by the keeper and other officials was $499.33.

The report states that "the paupers has with the keeper done all the Labour on the Farm; but we have no means at present of ascertaining the actual value of the Labour of the paupers or the amount saved by this Labour." The number of poor on December 1, was twenty-six—females, ten, and males, sixteen.

In February, 1832, it was decided to advertise for a keeper, "believing it to be the duty to give others an offer of the house." The following is a verbatim copy of the advertisement:

"Notice.—wanted a man and his wife to take charge of the county house proposals to be in writeing for one year, to commence the first of April next for further information apply to either of the subscribers on or before the 10th of March."

On March 10 proposals were received, and the minutes say: "After examining proposals from Mr. Estel Wood, Peter Miller, Japhet Alston, Cornelius Egbert, and Isaac Britton, concluded to employ Mr. Isaac Britton for another year, and to pay him two hundred Dollars and to furnish him whith a house for him and his family and firewood for the same for further particulars see articles of agreement."

In consequence of the terrible ravages caused by the careless management of the Quarantine hospitals, a cholera hospital was established at the County-house in 1832. Garret Martling, D. L. Clawson and Henry Crocheron were Superintendents. Randolph Drake was appointed keeper in 1833.

The new County-house was built of stone, much of which was gathered on the premises. David Moore was the builder. The keeper's residence in those days was the little building that stood nearly in front of the main structure, and which for many years afterward was utilized as a store-house for farm-tools.

Japhet Alston became keeper in 1834, and was reappointed in 1835. In 1837, the low part of the main building, containing cells, etc., was built for the better accommodation of the sick and insane. A story was also added to the main building.

John B. Wood was appointed keeper in 1837, and continued in office until 1844. An announcement in 1837 was that "we do also further report that the expense for clothing and provisions during the year has been paid for out of the proceeds of the farm."

On February 14, 1844, the Board of Superintendents, consisting of Garret Martling, chairman; Richard Tysen, secretary; William Shea and A. B. Decker, met in the old Black Horse Tavern, at New Dorp, and appointed Joseph Sharrett keeper of the County-house.

Digitized by Google

The cells, which in late years had created so much discussion, and provided such a convenient theme for the city press, were built this year. The expenses were gradually increasing. They had, in 1845, reached $1,601.08.

The question of high taxes again shook the Island. The result was that, when the Board organized, in 1846, every member was a new man. They were Abraham Crocheron, John C. Garretson, Benjamin P. Prall and Israel Vreeland. Mr. Crocheron was chairman, and Mr. Vreeland secretary. The average cost of paupers that year was fifty-five cents a week each; the number cared for was eighty, and the aggregate expense was $1,305.93. In anticipation of a "hard Winter," however, in 1847, the Board asked for $2,000.

Stephen Crocheron was appointed keeper in 1848. Dr. Mundy ceased to be the physician in 1849. The salary had crawled up to fifty dollars. Dr. Eadie was appointed to fill vacancy. He was "allowed a dollar a head for each pauper treated."

Throughout the fifties and sixties the County-house continued to grow in importance, and it finally became a part of the political machinery of the county. We do not charge that, in those years, dishonest men controlled the business matters of the institution; but affairs so shaped themselves, that, eventually, the place became a hot-bed of politics of the most corrupt type. The place finally fell into the hands of men whose acts made the County-house a stench in the nostrils of every decent citizen of the County. It sank to a by-word and a mockery of the term charity.

Frequent attempts were made to bring about a reform, but to no avail. Rumors, that seemed like the wildest exaggeration, floated everywhere. Spasmodic efforts on the part of the Supervisors, to arrive at the truth, that the guilty might be brought to justice, were made. First a little excitement, then a long silence. In the meantime the taxpayers were being delightfully entertained, and the elastic abilities of the county treasury were put to their test. Public opinion, now and then, would drive the Supervisors to "take some action;" but the investigations were too mild to amount to anything.

Finally, when the glaring evils, constantly being perpetrated at the County-house, were making Staten Island notorious, one paper alone—the *Richmond County Standard*—took up the matter in the interest of the people. The deep-rooted system of granting thousands of dollars annually to chronic alms-seekers, under the mask of "temporary relief," was battled with with an earnestness certainly worthy of the cause. The effect was, that the practice was somewhat changed.

The editor of the paper in question then secured the services of Superintendent Bowen, of Southfield, who was the oldest member of the Board, in point of years of service, and the two set to work with earnestness to expose the condition of the institution. Sometimes it happened that, when these gentlemen were present, the "ma-

Digitized by Google

jority" would not hold the regular meetings. Mr. Bowen's thorough knowledge of County-house affairs, and he being a man with the courage of his convictions, the reader can readily believe that there were some animated scenes at the meetings of the Board. The verbatim reports of those meetings kept the public posted, and in a great degree moulded and prepared public opinion for the final crisis.

Enormous heaps of beef bones in secluded parts of the premises, told the story of the quality of meat given to the unfortunate inmates. Bills for fancy groceries, which never reached the paupers, came before the Board for audit. Expensive machinery and farming implements, neglected and ruined by exposure to weather, revealed the carelessness with which the farm was managed. Big manure contracts came up like annual reminders that somebody was lying in wait for a share in the appropriations. The annual letting of the "contract" for furnishing provisions was simply to a quiet on-looker a political weather-vane, showing plainly the direction of the significant "pull."

Each and every week, for more than four years, the public was kept informed of what was going on "over the hills to the poor-house." Towards the close of the battle, Edward D. Clark, of Castleton, was elected to the Board, and joined forces with Mr. Bowen. The Board stood two to three on almost every question that came before it. Yet the majority, which was known by the appropriate title of "Alms-House Combine," had an assistant right at the County-house capable of maneuvering the jobs that usually came up. The exposure each week, however, was a great annoyance to the "Combine," and finally some very pointed threats were made against the editor of the *Standard*, and an effort was made to prohibit his attendance at the meetings; but, understanding what his rights were, he kept at his post and did his duty.

Public opinion had reached the limit of endurance, and patience had ceased to be a virtue. The members of the "Combine" knew this, and were smarting under the censure that greeted them from every side. Enraged, in fact, by the prospects of their impending doom, they resorted to extremes. A bill was before the Legislature, which provided for the total abolition of the nefarious system by which the institution was mismanaged. Emissaries, almost without number were sent to Albany to thwart the measure, and it looked, for a time, as if the "Combine" would be successful.

But it was ordered otherwise. Evidently emboldened by the prospects of success, one of the number—whose name shall not blot this page—generally believed to have been acting upon the instructions of his colleagues, assaulted the editor of the *Standard*. And still the editor remained at his post. He went there for a purpose, and he was there to stay. Mr. Clark offered a resolution, censuring the fellow who had brought disgrace upon the Board, as well as upon the people

Digitized by Google

of Staten Island; but the "Combine," as a matter of course, defeated it.

It was this assault that hastened the downfall of the unsavory clique. The story was told to the Governor, who had been inclined to be friendly to it, so cutely had the matter been misrepresented to him. But when he learned what desperate means were being resorted to, he unhesitatingly signed the bill.

Thus, in the spring of 1890, the men who had made a political fester of the County Alms House were driven out by the law. Thomas McCormack had been the keeper for more than a score of years; he, too, took his departure. Several lawyers were consulted, by the members of the "Combine," with the hope of "upsetting the law," as they expressed it, but to no avail.

Benjamin J. Bodine was appointed to fill the vacancy as Superintendent, and an entire new system was inaugurated at the County-house. He found the premises in a most demoralized form, and it took much time, labor and money to place the institution and its surroundings in a condition consistent with decency and safety.

The paupers' graveyard on the county farm received its first occupants more than half a century ago, but the oldest marked grave bears the date of June 8, 1862. It is located on the bank of a little brook that ripples among the shade trees, and seeks its level in the meadow beyond. Throughout the older portion of the Field are hundreds of graves, not more than half a dozen or so of which are marked, or are in a condition to admit of identification.

A few years ago—just after Mr. Benjamin J. Bodine became the Superintendent of the County Alms House—the Potter's Field became an object for consideration. The poor wretch, whose spirit went out under the clouds of adversity, would be remembered and respected by leaving a name above his grave.

On the advent of the Borough of Richmond, Superintendent Bodine was elected a member of the Board of Councilmen for the City of New York, and resigned his position in this institution. Joseph B. Pearce, Jr., was appointed his successor, and is still in charge. Dr. Isaac L. Millspaugh is the County physician.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXXVI.

STATEN ISLAND VILLAGES.

OUDE Dorp (the Dutch words for Old Town), the first settlement on Staten Island, is often spoken of as a village. The settlement is known to have had seven Holland cottages—perhaps more. After its third destruction by the Indians, however, the place was abandoned and for very many years it was unused for dwelling purposes. Oude Dorp was on the present site of Arrochar Park, a short distance south-west of Fort Wadsworth.

Stony Brook must have been quite a village. Old people, living in our time, have told us that they could remember more than a score of dwellings in the vicinity of the Court House and Waldensian Church, which had completely passed away before the arrival of the present generation. Nieuwe Dorp (New Town) was practically a continuation of Stony Brook, and in the early part of the present century contained about one hundred dwellings. Quite a number of foundations of the old buildings may be found in the neighborhood.

Cucklestown was one of the very earliest settlements on the Island. The main reason for selecting it for the County Seat was its central location. The name was changed to Richmond about 1710, when the County Jail, (which had been partially destroyed by fire at Stony Brook, a few years previous), was rebuilt at Richmond. The Court House was built very shortly afterward. A charter was granted by the Legislature, in 1823, for the incorporation of Richmond Village, but it was never put into effect. Fifty years ago, Richmond was a bustling little village, and was the centre of all the social and business affairs of the Island.

Long Neck, (of which New Springville is a part), became quite a village in the early part of the Eighteenth century, although it had been an important settlement many years prior to that time. It had one of the first public school-buildings on the Island. One of the original buildings erected in this settlement was destroyed by fire at a recent date. It was the old Simonson homestead. In the conflagration were destroyed many very valuable relics and documents, among which were the original deed for the property, bearing the eccentric marks which the law recognized as the signatures of Indian landowners; old guns of the pattern of three hundred years ago, and scores of trinkets and heirlooms of generations long gone. Close by is the companion of more than two centuries—the old Blake homestead—

Digitized by Google

well preserved. The original Crocheron homestead also stands a short distance from those we have mentioned, in a North-westerly direction, but in a shattered condition. There are a number of other old buildings still standing in the locality; but the Long Neck which our fathers knew, has almost completely passed away.

Fresh Kill, (afterwards called Marshland, but now known as Green Ridge), is a very old settlement. It was originally a French hamlet, and contained forty or fifty houses very early in the history of the county. Near by, the shattered wreck of its former self, stands the old Bedell homestead, in and around which there has been so much done to help make the history of the American nation.

Smoking Point, called Blazing Star just before the Revolution, but changed to Rossville in the early thirties, is a very old settlement. It has two or three houses considerably over a hundred years old. For many years prior to the establishment of the Staten Island Railroad, Rossville was a thriving village. It was one of the main landing places for the boats that ran between New York and South Amboy, in connection with the Camden and Amboy Railroad, and was a business centre for a large territory. Repeated prospects of railroad communication have had the effect of aiding Rossville to retain its commercial and residential importance.

New Blazing Star, (now known as Linoleumville), in the old days of mail-coaches used to be one of the most important points of travel in this part of the country. There used to be a post-road running from Richmond Village to it, which started from a point near St. Andrew's Church and ran along the foot of the hill in a Westerly direction. This road is still used as far West as the site of the Old Woolen Mill. It ran in a North-westerly course across the meadows of the Simonson estate to the New Blazing Star Landing. One of the rudest ferries imaginable was maintained at that point, and it was in the direct line of the mail-coach route from New York to Philadelphia. The old ferry house is still standing on the premises of the Linoleum works.

Tompkinsville, situated on the East Shore, became a village through the personal efforts of Governor Daniel D. Tompkins. He acquired a tract of land of seven hundred acres, and in laying out the streets of the village named one after each of his children. These streets retain their original names.

The village was laid out during the years 1814 and 1815. In the following year, Governor Tompkins, at the head of a company, built a post road, leading from Tompkinsville through Castleton Corners, and Bull's Head to New Blazing Star ferry. This road is still known as the Richmond Turnpike. Tompkinsville was incorporated by act of the Legislature; but shortly after Governor Tompkins' death, in 1825, the charter was revoked.

Stapleton lies on the upper part of the Narrows, on the East Shore.

Digitized by Google

It was an independent village prior to 1868, but had no charter. Today it is one of the main harbors of Staten Island, and was a part of the incorporated village of Edgewater. Stapleton was named in honor of William J. Staples, who resided there many years ago, and owned a great deal of the land upon which the village now stands.

Clifton, situated on the Narrows, was founded in 1835. Thomas Scott came to this country that year, and the laying out of this village was his first professional work in this country. The location is now called Rosebank, on account of the post-office by that name. Clifton is eminently a residential place, and contains the great fortifications known as Fort Wadsworth. The Quarantine station, since its re-establishment, has been located at Clifton. Vanderbilt Landing, where for many years the old Staten Island Railroad connected with the ferry to New York, is also in Clifton.

PATTEN HOUSE, NEW DORP.

Tottenville, at the extreme Southerly end of the Island, was formerly known as the Manor of Bentley, named after the old Manor of the Billopps, and the peninsula at the extreme point of the land was for more than a century known as Billopp's, afterwards Ward's Point. For many years it was called "West Quarter." Later the village was known as Bentley, and finally as Tottenville. At one time a spirit of rivalry existed between the upper and lower sections of the village, and a most animated warfare was carried on. It all came from a factional feeling relative to the name. The upper section insisted upon the name of "Bentley," while those in the lower part demanded that it should be called "Tottenville." Great banners were stretched across the main street, bearing the favorite names of the sections, with corresponding devices, and some time was spent in the warfare. Now and then the most enthusiastic residents would come to blows, but it was generally a wordy conflict.

The name of Tottenville was finally adopted. It was incorporated in 1869; but, the charter being imperfectly drawn, its provisions were not put in force. It was incorporated again in 1894, and the charter remained in force until Staten Island became a part of the Greater City.

Digitized by Google

Concord used to be called "Dutch Farms," and has become quite a prominent place on account of the junction of the two main lines of the Midland Railroad. This location was once the home of Judge William Emerson, while there lived with him his distinguished brother, Ralph Waldo Emerson, and Charles Thoreau. We are informed that they called the place "Concord," in honor of the city of that name in Massachusetts.

Castleton Corners is at the crossing of Richmond turnpike and Manor road. It is also the junction of two lines of the Midland Railroad. It was the home of Walter Dongan, an heir of the Governor. His portrait appears on page 168, of Volume I. Castleton Corners has been commonly called "Four Corners."

Garretsons has grown up around a station on the old Staten Island Railroad, and is called by the Post-office Department "Dongan Hills." It was named in honor of John C. Garretson, who was a prominent citizen and office-holder of Southfield for many years, and whose Colonial dwelling used to stand near the railroad station. The new home of the Richmond County Country Club is located on the mountain overlooking the village.

Grant City, lying close to New Dorp, used to be called "Red Lane." It is the main avenue leading from Richmond road to Midland Beach, and contains the tracks of the branch of the Midland Electric Railroad running to that resort. Lincoln avenue is the name of the main thoroughfare.

Oakwood superseded Court House Station, and the old Guyon or Clark estate, on which it is located, has been laid out into streets. Here still stands, although greatly altered, the first clubhouse on the Island. It was the scene of the encampment of thousands of the King's soldiers during the Revolution.

Giffords is located on the Amboy road and the old Staten Island Railroad. It is named in honor of Major Gifford, who once owned the property where it stands. Gifford's lane begins at this point.

Eltingville was formerly styled Sea-side, by which name the post-office of that locality is still called. The name was finally changed in honor of a resident named Elting. In the days of plank roads this place was quite a popular resort. The plank-road upon which this village was located, was built from Bergen Point ferry in Port Richmond, and ran through Graniteville, Bull's Head, New Springville, Green Ridge, and Sea-side to the shore. The first Fresh Kill bridge was erected by the Plank Road Company, and the road leading from Green Ridge to the Amboy road at Eltingville, was built through private property.

Annadale was so named in honor of Mrs. Anna Seguine, a lady who resided there years ago. The Sea-side post-office is located at this place. It is on the railroad.

Huguenot, another station on the old Staten Island Railroad, used

Digitized by Google

to be called Bloomingview, but changed its name at the time of the erection of the Huguenot or Dutch Reformed Church at that place. It is a travel-centre for Woodrow, Rossville and Richmond Beach.

Prince's Bay consists of two neighborhoods—one along the shore, known as Seguine's Point, and the other along the railroad and the Amboy road. Prince's Bay was named in honor of an English prince, and is often erroneously written "Princess." The Post-office Department has attempted to mutilate the name by spelling it "Princebay." The leading dental manufactory of the country is located at this place.

The Prince's Bay post-office is located at Pleasant Plains. To a stranger the two villages appear as one. They are divided by a small stream called Lemon Creek. Pleasant Plains was for many years the home of the world-famed opera managers, the Maretzeks and the Strackosches.

Richmond Valley was an important location before Tottenville began to assume importance as a village. In 1828, a post-office was established at Richmond Valley, and President Andrew Jackson appointed Jacob Cole postmaster.

Kreischerville sprang into existence as a village as the result of the discovery of valuable kaolin beds at that place. The late Balthaser Kreischer, the discoverer, established his fire brick factories there.

Woodrow is between Huguenot and Rossville. It possessed the second Methodist Episcopal Church erected in America, and the old Van Pelt house is still standing there in which Bishop Asbury preached his first sermon this side of the Atlantic. Almost opposite the church still stands the old Winant homestead, one of the very oldest structures on the Island, and which was occupied during the Revolution as a rendezvous for the marauding Tories.

Bogardus's Corner, lying midway between Pleasant Plains and Rossville, is named in honor of Mr. Charles Bogardus, Sr., who has resided there for many years. Sandy Ground is the name of a colored settlement a short distance away. Its people are principally from the South, and are engaged in the oyster business.

Valley Forge was known for many years as Laforge's Corners, so called because Mr. Stephen Laforge carried on business there.

Mariners' Harbor is that portion of the North Shore settlement farthest west. It still contains some of the oldest dwellings on the Island. Holland's Hook, the terminus of the Staten Island Electric Railroad, was for many years prior to, during and after the Revolution, the principal outlet to Staten Island on the North Side. In 1828 it was called Jacksonville.

Elm Park lies just East of Mariners' Harbor, and in the days of North Shore steamboats had its own landing. The location took its name from a park in which stood for many years the handsome resi-

Digitized by Google

dence of Dr. John T. Harrison. The old mansion was finally converted into a hotel, and a few years ago was burned to the ground.

Graniteville, near the North Shore, was so named because of the granite quarries in that section. It used to be called, sometimes, "Bennett's Corner," in honor of the proprietor of the Colonial tavern at that place.

Bull's Head, at the crossing of the Richmond turnpike and the Old Stone road, was a hamlet long before the Revolution, and became notorious during that period in consequence of being the headquarters of the Tories.

THE OLD VAN NAME COTTAGE, AT OLD PLACE.

Willow Brook is a romantic spot, a distance in land North of Richmond. It was the scene of many an anxious hour during the Revolution, for it was here that the Committee of Safety met in secret sessions. In those days it was one of the largest settlements on the Island. No location in the county has a more thrilling history than this.

Chelsea is a settlement on the shore in Northfield and has quite a number of residences. Quarry Hill is between Port Richmond proper and Elm Park, and it grew up around the stone quarries of Northfield. Egbertville used to be called "Tipperary Corners," and is located at the junction of Richmond road and Egbert avenue, just back of New Dorp. About a mile North is Morganville, a hamlet containing several houses. Elliottville is now called Livingston, after the former owner and occupant of the old residence now utilized as a railroad station.

Prohibition Park was established in 1889, the late Rev. Dr. William H. Boole being at the head of the movement, Dr. Isaac K. Funk and a number of other capitalists being in the corporation. A tract of land containing twenty-eight acres was the first purchase; but several large additions have since been made. The Park contains a large number of streets and some of the neatest residences in the Borough. It also has an auditorium seating about five thousand people. Westerleigh Collegiate Institute is located in Prohibition

Digitized by Google

Park. The location is also called Westerleigh. The Park is managed by a Board of Directors, of which B. F. Funk is President.

Edgewater, comprising part of Tompkinsville, and all of Stapleton and Clifton, was originally incorporated in 1866, being then divided into nine wards; but some legal defect having been detected, a new charter was obtained in the following year. The names of the first trustees, under the new charter, and the wards they represented were as follows: William C. Denyse, First; David Burgher, Second; George Bechtel, Third; Theodore Frean, Fourth; Dr. Thomas C. Moffatt, Fifth; James R. Robinson, Sixth; Alfred Wandell, Seventh; Dennis Keeley, Eighth; John Duigan, Ninth. Theodore Frean was President, Henry F. Standerwick Clerk, and Thomas Garrett Police Justice.

So unsuccessful was the village government that many of the people of the place were in favor of returning to the former status under the town. Amendments were made to the charter by acts of the Legislature in 1870, and almost each and every year thereafter, while it existed. The village was divided into two wards, under the charter of 1875, with one trustee in each, and a third trustee at large, who was President of the village. Under this charter Benjamin Brown and William Fellowes were the trustees, with William Corry President, and Henry F. Standerwick Clerk. The village was again divided into five wards by the charter of 1884, with one trustee from each ward.

The officials of the Village of Edgewater, at the time that the Greater City charter went into effect, were, Louis A. Johnston, President; August Horrmann, James Lestrange, David Marsh, Joseph Curren, Trustees; M. J. Collins, Clerk; Michael Cahill, Treasurer; and Nathaniel Marsh, Police Magistrate.

New Brighton was incorporated on April 26, 1866, and embraced the Northerly half of the Town of Castleton, being about two and a-half miles long, and about one mile in width. At that time the village embraced four wards, and the Trustees appointed were Augustus Prentice, First ward; James W. Simonson, Second ward; Francis G. Shaw, Third ward; and William H. J. Bodine, Fourth ward.

The portion of the town outside of the corporation was very sparsely populated; but was obliged to have a full corps of town officers, some of whom resided within the village limits, and exercised the office without, as well as within, and the duties of some, within the village, could be performed only in the unincorporated remnant of the town. The taxes outside the village were greater than those within, in consequence of the large bills which the town officers rendered for their services. This caused the people outside to seek admission into the corporation, which they succeeded in doing in 1872. The new territory was divided into two wards, and were called the Fifth and Sixth. The village of New Brighton then included the

Digitized by Google

whole town of Castleton, and was about four miles long and two wide. A large village hall was built on Lafayette avenue, in 1871, at a cost of thirty-six thousand dollars, including the land.

Presidents of the village were as follows: Augustus Prentice, John Laforge, Anson Livingston, George M. Usher, M. J. Fowler, D. A. Pell, William Chorlton, R. B. Whittemore, William H. J. Bodine, Harry L. Horton, David J. H. Willcox, John J. Fetherston, Thomas Farrelly, Daniel Dempsey, P. J. Connelly, Joseph H. Maloy, John L. Dobson, James Kerr, and Guy S. Brantingham. The following were village clerks: Mark Cox, George Bowman, C. T. McCarthy, James C. Hill, John J. Kenney and Joseph F. O'Grady.

Port Richmond was incorporated on April 24, 1866, but by reason of the unconstitutionality of the act no government was attempted until the Legislature amended the charter on April 25, 1867. An election was held on May 11, 1867, and Nicholas Van Pelt, George W. Jewett, William A. Ross, Garret P. Wright, James B. Pollick and Henry Miller, Jr., were elected trustees.

The position of President was held by Captain Nicholas Van Pelt from the first till his death in December, 1881, when Captain Garret P. Wright succeeded him, and held the office till 1885. George T. Egbert, and Frank Foggin held the office throughout the remainder of the time that the village government continued. DeWitt C. Stafford was clerk for many years; he was succeeded by Frederick W. Hulsebus, and he by George H. Tredwell. The charter was eventually amended so as to enlarge the limits very materially. It took in Elm Park and Mariners' Harbor.

South Beach, located near the site of historic Oude Dorp, was made a summer resort about fifteen years since. It is the terminus of branches of the Rapid Transit and Staten Island Electric Railroads. The place has a large number of summer hotels.

Midland Beach is located West of South Beach, and is a summer resort. It was opened in 1897, by the Midland Electric Railroad Company. It is the terminus of a branch of that road.

Richmond Beach is the new title given to Arbutus Lake. It lies near the shore of Prince's Bay, below Huguenot. A large hotel and other buildings have been erected there.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXXVII.

THE PUBLIC HIGHWAYS—PAST AND PRESENT.

THE first mention of the public highways of Staten Island is that of the old Indian trails which led here and there from the little hamlets and wigwams. The oldest thoroughfare of which there is any authentic record is now known as the "Old Town Road," which winds its way from South Beach to the Richmond road, a short distance East of Garretsons. The next is the old trail along the North Shore, now called Richmond terrace; while another is the Richmond road, running from Tompkinsville to Richmond Village. Among the old records we find the following:

"This following Instrument was Recorded for the Inhabitants of the west divishone by the order of the worshipefull bench sitting in Coarte of seshones the week In september 1694 for the Regelating & Laying out all the highways with in said quarter & Entered upon Record the :9th day of Sep^{tr} 1694. Richmond County this first day of september annoque dom: 1694. By vertue of Awarend dyreckted to the Constabell of the west dyvishone with In the fore said County to sommonse the free holders of said quarter to Assemble & meete to Gather to Ereckte Apoainte & Lay out such hyghwaies with in said quarter As the Inhabitants shall thinke futt and most Conveainent for the youse & behoofe of his magistie and his subjeckts & for the Inhabitants That lives back in the woods to transport themselvfes & Goods to the water sid. The freeholders having ustt to Gather on the day & yeare Above written And ordred and apoainted & Laid out the highwayes as heare after are spresified

" :1: ordered one highway of six Rod to be betwene Anthoney deshon and Iofa fonoay Cut by Consent Alltred and Laid out betwene Anthoney deshon and Jerome deshon beginning att the Could spring

" :2: To one highway betwene Clays Lazeleare & John Conealisone of six Rood

" :3: To one highway betwene Williame Elstones Land deceased & abraham Coole by six Rod.

" :4: To one highway betwene mr Leflore & peter Jonsea of six Rod

" :5: To one highway betwene Adame hud & mr Emet next to adem hud of six Rod

Digitized by Google

" :6: To one high way betwene fransis barber & the Copper Planes of six Rod

" :7: To one highway betwene John Ray & markes disosway of six Rods

" :8: To one highway betwene mr. John Lecont & Capten bilope of six Rod

" :9: To one highway from the west side begining att mr Lecounts fronnt & Runes Cleare over throw the wods by the line of Capten bilope to the widow bealies house

" :10: To one highway betwene Cornell dongones Land and anthoney Tyse throw the wods To the west side betwene the Guset and Richard wods Land but Left out of the Guset & soe downe betwene Abraham Cooles & the Land that was william Elstones

" :11: To one highway betwene mr Cathentone & the widow haule of six Rod

" :12: To one highway betwene domeney tarsmaker & John bodine of six rood.

" :13: To one highway by the water side from John bodines to Capten bilopes Land at eight Rod

" :14: To one highway by the water side begining att mr John Lecounts & soe to the pipe makers and from thence throw the woods to the water side by Jonseames his house and from thence by the water side to the Land of John hendricksone.

" :15: To one highway from peter Jonseameses alongst the water side in the frount of mr Stimroles Land & adaham huds & Elishea parbers and soe alongst the water side to the Coper planers

" :16: To one highway from the koirb of John hendrickson alongst the water side To Clais Laselaire

" This is atrew Record by the order of the Coarte of seshones

" Entred and Recorded by mee JACOB CORBETT : Cla:"

On March 4, 1700, in compliance with a similar order of the Court of Sessions, relating to the inhabitants of the North Division, the following roads were laid out in that quarter, and recorded on the 17th day of March following:

" :1: To one highway along the front of Karels neck Six Rods in breadth & so along royl land where oswald ford liveth

" :2: To one highway between the land of Christian Corson & Segir gerritse running to Coecles Town Six rodd breadth."

Former historians claim that Richmond road was the course of an Indian trail—that's all. It is said that it was originally laid out eight rods in width. The object of this was to prevent as much as possible the danger caused by Indians lying in ambush and attacking travelers by surprise.

A road from Betty Morgan's house to Dongan's lower mill was closed, and another opened in its stead, on April 8, 1758. The latter is said to be the one that connected Karle's Neck and Richmond.

Digitized by Google

"Beginning on that road at a point on John Betty's land, thence past Betty Morgan's house, taking on its way the course of the 'gully running to Mr. Totten's Bridge,' and other lines and paths till it reached Colonel Dongan's mill."

A road from Darby Doyle's ferry to Billopp's ferry, and another from the Narrows or Simonson's ferry, (to meet the other at the school-house at Garrisons), were laid out March 14, 1774. A road from the "Soldiers' Lots, (the level tract west of Prohibition Park), to John Bodine's, was laid out at the same time.

The following account of the Richmond and Amboy roads, running from Tompkinsville to Tottenville, was found among the papers of Rev. Joseph Totten, and was written some time prior to 1774:

"The road from New York Ferry to Amboy Ferry to be opened two and a-half rods wide all the way through, beginning at Darbe dials (Darbe Dial's) dock, near the watering place; from thence as the road is now used along by the south-east corner of his barn, remove the incumbrances on the north side, from thence as the road is now used, through Corsen's land, remove the encumbrances on both sides so as to straighten the road on proper grounds, to John Vanderbilt's well; from thence to a bridge opposite the little clove along as the road is now used, remove the encumbrance there is on the north side; from thence along Perrine's land to Garrison's land, remove the encumbrances on the north side so as to straighten the road along as it is now used, from thence to Jacob Baragoe's smith's shop, remove the encumbrances on both sides so as to straighten the road along as it is now used; thence to the north-west corner of Cornelius Martinnow's land, remove the encumbrance that is on the north side; from thence through Henry Garrison's land, remove the encumbrances on both sides so as to straighten the road along as it is now used, to the south division; thence to Mawness Garrison's house, remove the encumbrance on the north side; thence to the north-west corner of Founten's land, remove the encumbrance that is on the south side; thence through Perrine's land, remove the encumbrances on both sides so as to straighten the road along as it is now used; thence to Cortelyeloe's well, remove the encumbrance that is on the south side; from thence to John Bate's land, remove the encumbrance that is on the north side; thence to John Vanderbilt's smith's shop, remove the encumbrances that is on both sides, so as to straighten the road along as it is now used; from thence to Stony Brook, remove the encumbrance that is on the south side; thence to Cortelyoe's southwest corner, remove the encumbrance that is on the north side; thence through Valentine's land, so along De Young's to Justice Lake's land, remove the encumbrance that is on both sides, so as to straighten the road along as it is now used, so along Lake's land to a walnut saplin' marked, remove the encumbrance that is on the south side, so as to straighten the road on proper ground; from

Digitized by Google

thence the road altered along by a chestnut tree and a black oak tree, both marked, to be to the southward of said trees along to his barn, if he makes it good and passable at his own cost; thence through the woods, as the road is now used to Silas Bedle's house, remove the encumbrance that is on the south side; thence to La-Forge's hill, remove the encumbrance that is on the north side; thence to Indian Hill, remove the encumbrances that is on both sides, so as to straighten the road, as it is now used; thence to Richard Cole's house, remove the encumbrances that is on the north side; thence to Captain LaForge's house, remove the encumbrance that is on the south side; thence to Moore's hill, remove the encumbrance that is on the north side; thence to Sandy brook, remove the encumbrances that is on both sides so as to straighten the road as it is now used; from thence to DuBois land, remove the encumbrances that is on both sides, so as to straighten the road as it is now used; so along DuBois land to his south-west corner, remove the encumbrance that is on the north side, so as to straighten the road along as it is now used; from thence to John Winninent's house, remove the encumbrance that is on the north side; from thence to a white oak tree standing in the road, remove the encumbrances that is on both sides along as the road is now used; thence ten feet from the north-west corner of Gilbert Totten's house, remove the encumbrance that is on the north side, along as the road is now used; from thence to an apple-tree opposite to Jacob Rickhouse's barn, remove the encumbrances that is on both sides, so as to straighten the road along as it is now used; from thence to Jacob Rickhouse's house, remove the encumbrance that is on the north side; from thence to Colonel Billopp's ferry, remove the encumbrances that is on both sides, so as to straighten the road along as it is now used, this road to be opened two rods and a-half wide, clear of all encumbrances through the whole of it."

HON. HENRY P. MORRISON,
DEPUTY COMMISSIONER AND CHIEF ENGINEER.

Digitized by Google

It is quite interesting to read over the faded records, and recall the simple story of road-making and repairing in the old days. We can go back to 1766. In those days citizens of the Island performed labor on the roads, in lieu of taxes, the poorer classes holding out their hats to passers-by, for collections, while they were at work. Indeed, the practice of soliciting money by workmen on the roads, was kept up until the district system went out of existence at a recent date.

It is evident, however, that the people of the Island were satisfied with the condition of the roads. They were patched up a little each year; but there were seasons when they were impassable. We may get a glimpse at the condition of the roads from an editorial in the *Richmond Republican*, of December 26, 1828:

"We doubt whether a county exists in the United States, (so long inhabited as Richmond), so proverbial for the badness of its roads. From one end of the county to the other, it is dangerous to travel in the dark, except for those to whom every inch of ground is familiar. It is not for the want of materials to make a good road—they are abundant, and on the spot. Neither is it for want of hands to work the roads, for they can be procured in abundance, and the law gives the road-masters sufficient power. It is true, public spirit is somewhat deficient, but this is no excuse for public officers. They should perform their duty, regardless of whom they may offend. The public will justify them, and their own consciences will acquit them. The road from Quarantine to Richmond, than which, none in the county is more travelled, is in a shockng condition. The water, in most places, is made to run in the middle of the road, instead of running off, as should be the case, and the unlucky traveller, whose fate leads him on this road, is obliged to drive his horse knee-deep in the mire and clay, nearly all the journey, if he happens to commence it within a few days after the road has been sprinkled with a slight rain."

Through all the years that followed, the tone of the local press was precisely the same as that which we have quoted. There was a constant reminding of road officials that "something must be done." Now and then a piece of public road would be patched up to meet an emergency, and then neglected again until it was as dangerous as ever. There were people in our midst who argued that "these roads were good enough for our fathers and our grandfathers, and therefore they are good enough for us!" And, absurd as it may seem, this theory was deep-rooted, and had the effect to help keep the Island back at least half a century.

There was commotion throughout the Island, especially among the old-fashioned, conservative element, when the good roads movement began to assume a business air. Indeed, it did seem that there would be serious opposition to the great outlay of money which the project required. Its success at the commencement, however, was no doubt

Digitized by Google

due to the fact that it was made a Citizens' movement, in which taxpayers of all political faiths were invited to participate, instead of confining it strictly to the routine business circles of county and town officials. But it had to be talked over for a year or so before any actual movement was inaugurated.

The spring of 1890 was the commencement of a new era for Staten Island. At the close of a Town Board meeting, in Southfield, Supervisor Nathaniel Marsh placed in the hands of Mr. David J. Tysen (a resident of that town and the largest landholder in the county), a Road bill, which was then before the Legislature for passage, a copy having been sent to Supervisor Marsh, for criticism and suggestions. The bill had been introduced by Assemblyman Daniel T. Cornell. The important provision of the bill was that each town in the county should build annually one mile of improved macadam roadbed. After a careful consideration of its provisions, Messrs. Marsh and Tysen concluded that the pending measure would not accomplish within reasonable time the road system which they conceived necessary to place Staten Island on a plane with other metropolitan suburbs, with the additional liability that while continuity within towns was reasonably likely, that intertown road improvements were not guaranteed.

Agreement was reached which resulted in the calling of an informal meeting of the Board of Supervisors, when a Road bill, more suitable to the requirements, could be drafted. The Board of Supervisors at the time consisted of Nathaniel Marsh, of Southfield; Robert Moore, of Castleton; Edward P. Doyle, of Northfield; Peter H. Wandall, of Middletown, and Abram Cole, of Westfield. It was concluded at that meeting that invitation should be extended to and voice required of citizens of the county.

A meeting was arranged for a later period, and organized by the selection of General Livingston Satterlee as President, and Hon. Edward P. Doyle as Secretary. Mr. David J. Tysen suggested that Staten Island's wants in the road line could be guided by the New Jersey road law, (a copy of which he submitted to the meeting). The New Jersey bill was discussed and a committee appointed, consisting of Messrs. George J. Greenfield, David Willcox and James McNamee, to frame a law along its general lines which would meet the local requirements.

A second meeting was held, and Mr. Greenfield presented for its consideration what was almost without change the present Road law. Opposition to the measure was evinced by one gentleman; but after he had been allowed to alter two words, it was unanimously adopted, and substituted for the bill previously introduced in the Legislature. The new bill passed both houses quickly, and was placed in the hands of the Governor. His interest was enlisted, and on the 7th day of

Digitized by Google

June, it received the desired signature, and the Road law became operative.

The borrowing of the money needed for the improvement on the credit of the county was authorized. The sums so borrowed were not to exceed in any year an amount which, with the then outstanding bonded indebtedness of the county, was in excess of ten per centum of the assessed valuation as shown in the assessment rolls of the preceding year, the time for the obligations not to exceed twenty-five years from the date of issue.

Shortly after the organization of the road system, Mr. William S. Bacot was appointed County Engineer, and held the office for three years. His successor was Mr. Henry P. Morrison, who had for a considerable time been near the head of the Department of Public Streets of New York City. Mr. Morrison brought with him much experience in road building, and the result was that many important reforms were at once inaugurated.

The County of Richmond, (including the towns), has issued bonds for the construction of the road system to the amount of a million and a-half of dollars, and out of two hundred and eighty-three miles of roads on the Island, one hundred and twenty have been macadamized, while contracts have been granted for the building of twelve miles more, under the former system. Hereafter, such improvements can alone be secured through the Borough Board, by means of assessment upon the abutting property. In addition to the completed mileage of roads, there has been laid or constructed about three miles in length of pipe, brick, masonry, steel and wooden culverts and highway bridges.

The maintenance of macadamized roads is an important question. Under this heading patching, repairing, renewing, cleaning and sprinkling of the constructed county roads were prosecuted, and the cost thereof drawn from a fund appropriated and placed to the credit of the road department, by the Board of Supervisors. This maintenance fund was in no wise related to the fund used for the construction of the highways, which was raised entirely by bond issue on the credit of the county.

Hon. Henry P. Morrison, in an address before the Staten Island Chamber of Commerce, some time since, commenting on the work, said:

"Every acre of our land is being considered. The market gardener is coming, and his coming is rendered possible by the roads we have constructed. The overflow of the city, and the seeker for a summer home are finding enrollment on our tax-books, attracted to us in many instances by a road system which gives full play for healthy exercise and recreation. The highway system of this county, offering as it does complete opportunity for local intercourse, is rapidly dissipat-

Digitized by Google

ing the characteristic conservatism of certain sections, and introducing a spirit of progress.

"Our local freight and passenger service, seeking boat and railroad connection, is to-day enjoying a highway system for transportation, such as is enjoyed by no other rural county in this State.

"If this body will accept the proposition, and I believe it will, that the possibility of the expansion of trade or commerce in a community is directly proportional to the common highway facility offered for the movement of persons or the exchange of commodities, it will follow that Richmond County must, within the near future, be more generally considered as a desirable seat for manufacturing, and its heretofore failure to realize what might be considered the legitimate share has been largely due to the absence of the present system of roads."

When the charter of the Greater City of New York went into effect, there was a radical change in this Department. Instead of the county road remaining a separate department, all the public highways of the Island now come under the care of the Deputy Commissioner and Chief Engineer of the Borough. Added to his responsibilities are also the Departments of Sewers and Water Supply. The retention of Henry P. Morrison at the head of all three Departments, by Mayor Van Wyck, was not only a consideration for the people of Staten Island, but a just recognition of merit and worth.

The roads and streets which have been macadamized throughout the Borough, up to the present time, are as follows:

First Ward, (Castleton)—Richmond terrace, Broadway, Columbia street, Clove road, Cary avenue, Post avenue, Henderson avenue, Fourth street, Franklin avenue, Richmond turnpike, Westervelt avenue, Cherry lane, York avenue, Forest avenue, Burger avenue, Lafayette avenue, Glen avenue, Castleton avenue, Cebra avenue, Bement avenue, Bard avenue, Brook avenue, Davis avenue, Prospect avenue, Taylor street, Clinton avenue, Jersey street, St. Mark's place, Fort place, Montgomery avenue, Monroe avenue, Madison avenue, Tompkins avenue, Wall street, Hyatt street, Jay street, Weiner place, South street, Seventh avenue, Sherman avenue, DeKalb avenue, Manor road, Barker street, Central avenue, Stuyvesant place, Second street, Tysen street, First avenue, Second avenue, Third avenue, Fifth avenue, Sixth avenue and Seventh avenue.

Second Ward, (Middletown)—Bay street, Griffin street, Richmond road, Richmond turnpike, Brownell street, Bradley avenue, Broad street, Beach street, Brewster street, Brook street, Cedar street, Clinton street, Catlin avenue, Grant street, Grove street, Gordon street, Harrison street, Henry street, Hannah street, Housman avenue, Hillside avenue, Howard avenue, Jackson street, Laurel avenue, Lewis street, Little Clove road, McKeon street, Manor road, Occident avenue, Orient avenue, Prospect avenue, Pleasant Valley avenue, Prospect

Digitized by Google

street, Patten street, Quinn street, Swan street, Schmidt's lane, Simonson avenue, Sand street, Thompson street, Todt Hill road, Targee street, Varian street, Warren street, Wright street, William street, Clove road, Oak street, Broad street, Water street, Beach street, St. Paul's avenue, Cebra avenue, Egbert avenue, Canal street, Riker street, Centre street, Tompkins avenue, Sea View avenue, Serpentine road, Ocean terrace, New Dorp lane, Pine street, Elm street, Osgood avenue, Sarahann street, William street and Vanderbilt avenue.

Third Ward, (Northfield)—Morning Star road, Old Stone road, Richmond avenue, Bloomfield road, Decker avenue, Heberton avenue, Harbor road, Hughes avenue, Lexington avenue, Laforge avenue, Laforge place, Merrill avenue, Old Watchogue road, Prospect street, Port Richmond road, Rockland avenue, St. Mary's avenue, South avenue, Sherman avenue, Union avenue, (Springville), Union avenue, (Mariners' Harbor), Van Pelt avenue, Richmond road, Richmond terrace, Washington avenue, Richmond turnpike, Western avenue, Simonson avenue, Chelsea road, Zeluff avenue, Harrison avenue, Post avenue, Broadway, Bennett street, Cherry lane, Jewett avenue, Van Name avenue, Bay avenue, Housman avenue, John street, Sharpe avenue, Lafayette avenue, Elm street, Maple avenue, Grove street, Blackford avenue, Vreeland street, Ann street, Albion place, Grace Church place, New street, Elizabeth street, and Charles avenue.

Fourth Ward, (Southfield)—New York avenue, The Boulevard, Bay View avenue, Cliff street, Clove avenue, Clifton avenue, DeKalb street, Danube avenue, First street, Grant street, Garfield avenue, Guyon avenue, Hope avenue, Lyman avenue, Lincoln avenue, Mill road, Mosel avenue, Maple avenue, Old Town road, Parkinson avenue, Rhine avenue, Rosebank place, Sherman avenue, Sea View avenue, Sea avenue, Steuben street, Second street, St. John's avenue, St. Mary's avenue, Simonson avenue, Townsend avenue, Third street, Wandel place, Willow avenue, Washington avenue, Maryland avenue, Amboy road, Fingerboard road, Moore street, Centre street, Clark avenue, Sand lane, Richmond avenue, Giffords lane, Bay street, Pennsylvania avenue, Rose avenue, Garretson's avenue and Nelson avenue.

Fifth Ward, (Westfield)—Amboy road, Vanderbilt avenue, Arents avenue, Beach street, Broadway, Bay View avenue, Brehaut avenue, Butler street, Church street, Central avenue, Centre street, Eureka place, Elliott avenue, Excelsior avenue, Fisher avenue, Foster's road, Huguenot avenue, Journeay avenue, Johnson avenue, Prince's Bay avenue, Patton avenue, School street, Shore avenue, Slaight avenue, Swaim's lane, Sprague avenue, Washington street, Washington avenue, William street, Wood street, Fresh Kill road, Woodrow road, Rossville avenue, Main street, Bentley street, Hopping avenue, Sharrett avenue, Fisher avenue, Annadale road and Bloomingview road.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

STATEN ISLAND BANKS.

THE Staten Island Bank began business about September, 1838, and was located in the two-story frame structure still standing at the junction of Richmond terrace and Broadway, in Port Richmond. It is now occupied by stores. The first Board of Directors was composed of Richard D. Littell, John H. Smith, William A. Swain, Franklin S. Kinney, William Woram, William Colgate, Eder P. Houghwout, Jacob Bodine, John Totten, Sen., Joseph Seguine, John T. Harrison, and Samuel Sherwood. Richard D. Littell was President, and John West Cashier.

On the 20th of January, 1838, the following appeared in the *Richmond County Mirror*, under the caption of "Public Meeting at Factoryville:"

"Notice.—A meeting of the citizens of Richmond County, without distinction of party, opposed to all monopolies, will be held at the Shakespeare Hotel, in Factoryville, (the old Fountain House, West New Brighton), on Thursday, the 11th inst., at 6 p. m., to take into consideration the best method of paralyzing the efforts about to be made by certain individuals to procure charters for a bank, a whaling company, and a steamboat ferry company."

Agreebly to the above notice, a large meeting was convened, when the Hon. Samuel Barton was appointed chairman, and Paul Mersereau, Jr., secretary. Resolutions denouncing the bank, etc., were adopted, and a remonstrance sent to the Legislature, which read as follows:

"To the Honorable the Legislature of the State of New York:

"WHEREAS, Notice has been given in the *Richmond County Mirror*, that application will be made to your honorable body at its present session, for the passage of an act to incorporate 'the Richmond County Bank,' to be located on Staten Island; also, for an act to incorporate an association for the purpose of carrying on the whaling business, and the manufacture of oil and candles, to be located at Mersereau's Ferry (Port Richmond), in the County of Richmond; also, for an act to incorporate an association for running a steamboat between New York and the north side of Staten Island.

"Your petitioners therefore humbly represent to your honorable body that in their opinion it is inexpedient and unjust to grant said acts of incorporation; that it is also their opinion that your honorable body should grant no exclusive privileges for any purposes what-

Digitized by Google

ever, unless the object to be obtained is beyond the reach of individual enterprise, or of an association of individuals in the form of a co-partnership, and of vital importance to the well being of the whole community. That a whaling company or a steamboat company are neither of them of this character, must be obvious to the meanest character. With respect to the bank there is such a diversity of opinions as to the best method of preserving a sound paper currency, and so many objections to our present system of banking, that it is confidently expected that your honorable body will refuse to extend it, until you have fully considered the subject, and are satisfied that a better and more equitable system cannot be adopted."

On February 17, 1838, the *Mirror* stated that "on Tuesday, Mr. Oakley, in the Assembly, presented two several petitions: one to incorporate 'the Staten Island Whaling and Manufacturing Company;' the other, to incorporate a literary institution to be called the University of the United States, to be located on the highlands of Staten Island. Also a remonstrance of the citizens of Richmond County against the proposed banking and whaling companies, and incorporations generally."

STATEN ISLAND BANK BUILDING, PORT RICHMOND.

The remonstrance, so far as the bank was concerned, could have had but little influence, for on August 11, 1838, the *Mirror* stated that "the Richmond County Bank is soon to commence business." On November 3, of the same year, the paper said, editorially:

"STATEN ISLAND BANK.—This institution—so interesting to those whose friendly feelings are enlisted with our little county—is now on the full tide of successful experiment. Although it has not been so long in embryo as some of its sister institutions, it has been the *very first* in the State to issue notes! We have now barely room to say that the notes are beautiful specimens of art, and reflect credit upon both the artists who have executed them and the company whose enterprise furnished the design. Each bill bears the signature of the Register at Albany, and the vignette of the State, with the comprehensive sentence, viz.: 'Secured by State Stocks and Real Estate—Registered and Countersigned in the Comptroller's office of

Digitized by Google

the State of New York.' It would be superfluous for us to express any hopes for the credit of an institution with such a basis."

It will be noticed that there is a close connection between the Bank, the Whaling Company and the North Shore Ferry. That is accounted for by the fact that almost the same company of capitalists were managing all three enterprises. The last, however, that we have been able to discover in print relative to the bank, was in the *Mirror* of December 1, 1838, as follows:

"The Staten Island Bank has disappointed many of its opponents by merely going into operation. It was the first to issue notes under the new banking law, and it seems to be fast recovering from the imbecility of infancy and vigorously taking its stand among its kindred institutions."

It was about the year 1842, that the Staten Island Bank ceased to exist. Financial failures were daily occurrences all over the country, and Staten Island depositors, becoming alarmed, withdrew their money from the institution in such a determined manner, that one morning people passing along the Shore road saw a piece of paper tacked on the front door, bearing these words: "This Bank is permanently closed. RICHARD D. LITTELL, President."

So few depositors were there left at the time of the suspension, that the occurrence caused scarcely a ripple among the business men of Staten Island. The last depositor, however, who was fortunate enough to withdraw his money before the suspension, was the late James Bennett, of Elm Park.

In this day of rush and speculation it seems quite appropriate to repeat a remark made by one of the depositors of this defunct bank: "I liked the President of that bank," he said; "I knew him personally, and I believe there never lived a more honest man. But, you see, he would trade horses, and I think that effected the confidence of the public."

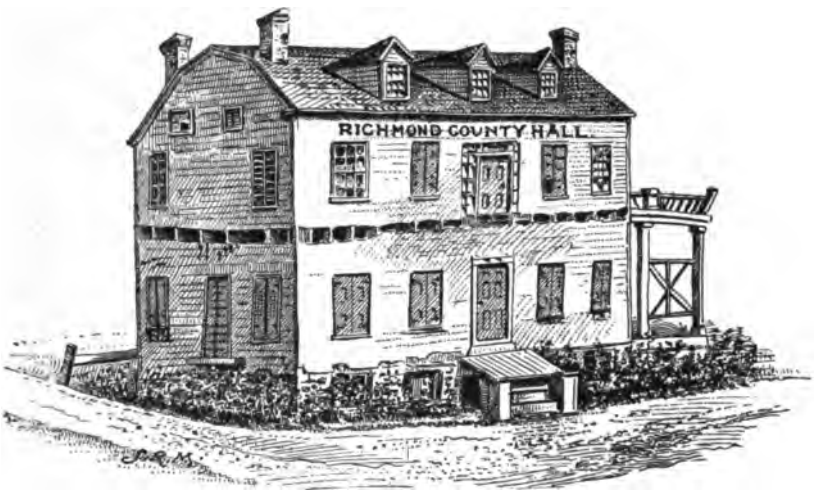
We have been shown a two-dollar bill, issued by the old Staten Island Bank, and dated June 21, 1841. It belongs to Mr. Charles H. Ingalls, President of the First National Bank of Staten Island. It came into his possession in a peculiar manner. An old lady, a resident of the Island, heard that the bank with which Mr. Ingalls is connected had commenced operations, and she wrote to him to ask if he proposed to redeem the notes of the old bank, as she had saved this one for many years, hoping to get her money back. Mr. Ingalls wrote her that it was not the intention of the company to redeem the notes of the old bank; but he would gladly buy this one at its face value, and he therefore gave her two dollars for the relic.

The Staten Island Savings Bank was organized on December 21, 1866, at Stapleton. Its first officers were Louis H. Meyers, President; Dwight Townsend, Vice-President; George M. Root, Secretary; and G. D. L'Huillier, Cashier. The trustees were Livingston Satterlee,

Digitized by Google

John Lewis, George Francis Shaw, William Corry, John Bechtel, Abraham Ellis, William C. Anderson and William McLean. The list of incorporators included with the above the following: William Fellows, David L. Gardiner, George B. Davis, William A. Bayley, Silas N. Havens, James L. Conrow, Dennis Kelley, Lewis H. Meyer, Clarence T. Barrett, Alexander M. Proudfoot, William W. Lee and C. M. Pine.

L. H. Meyer continued to serve as President until 1879, when Louis DeJonge was elected to that office. He served until 1881, when G. D. L'Huillier was elected. He served two years, and was succeeded by Captain A. L. King. The following are the officers at the present time: Charles F. Zentgraf, First Vice-President; William H. Clark, Second Vice-President; H. C. Hagadorn, Cashier; Charles F. Zentgraf, George H. Daly, E. C. Bridgeman, Willy Sontag, William H. Clark, Ulrich W. Decker, John C. Siemer, Rhd. Siedenburg, Fedor Schmidt, William A. Johnston, J. B. Pearson, Ernest Wehncke, Otto Lindemann, Carl Schumann, R. W. Pollick, George H. Kendall, A. J. Badenhausen and Casper H. Herbert, Directors.



RICHMOND COUNTY HALL, RICHMOND.
From a Sketch by Mrs. Sarah Roberts Morris.

The resources of this institution are, bonds and mortgages, $650,000.00. There are five thousand four hundred and fifty-five accounts with depositors, to whom is due $1,288,350.56. There is also a surplus account of $117,104.38. The bank occupies neat quarters in the building formerly known as the Edgewater Village Hall.

The Bank of Staten Island, located on Bay street, Stapleton, was organized in December, 1885, through the efforts of William Byrne, representing some capitalists of New York City. The capital stock was $25,000.00, with a surplus of $40,000.00.

The following are the officials of the Bank of Staten Island to-day:

Digitized by Google

Augustus Prentice, President; Otto Ahlmann, Cashier; Augustus Prentice, R. L'H. Finch, A. B. Prentice, Otto Ahlmann, and George A. Wood, directors. The resources of this bank are, loans, discounts, mortgages, circulating notes of national banks, $612,712.81. The liabilities, capital stock, $25,000.00; surplus, $40,000.00; undivided profits, $8,734.70; due depositors, $538,978.11.

The First National Bank of Staten Island was organized on December 15, 1885. The application was granted on January 9, 1896. The following were the original stockholders: Erastus Wiman, James M. Davis, Eberhard Faber, J. Frank Emmons, James Tully, Adolph L. King, Ex. Norton, H. E. Alexander, W. A. Collins, Albert B. Boardman, James B. Pollick, Cyrus Walser, J. F. H. Mayo, I. Kingsley Martin, Erastus Brooks, Frederick White, John B. Shope, Charles H. Ingalls, John Irving, Reuben Lord, N. C. Miller, Louis DeJonge, Thomas M. King, A. G. Methfessel and C. C. Eddy.

The capital stock was $100,000.00. The bank was at first located in the post-office building at New Brighton, on Richmond terrace, two doors from Jersey street. It was later removed to Wall street, near the ferry at St. George. On March 1, 1897, it again moved, this time into the handsome building which it now occupies, opposite the approach to the St. George ferry. Its first officers were: James M. Davis, President; Charles H. Ingalls, Vice-President, and Cyrus Walser, Cashier. Those positions are filled to-day by Charles H. Ingalls as President; J. Frank Emmons, Vice-President, and Theodore H. Spratt, Cashier.

The resources of the First National Bank amount to $828,497.25.

The Richmond County Savings Bank was organized on October 30, 1886. It was located in Odd Fellows' Hall, West New Brighton, until 1899, when it removed to its own building on Richmond terrace, nearly opposite Tompkins place. Its officers, at the commencement, were: Monroe Eckstein, President; John Westbrook, First Vice-President; Jacob I. Housman, Second Vice-President; Robert Moore, Cashier; George Bechtel, Monroe Eckstein, John Westbrook, Robert Moore, Thomas Humphrey, Stephen D. Simonson, Richard L'H. Finch, Charles T. Pine, Charles W. Hunt, Jacob I. Housman, Charles W. Kennedy, John W. Winmill, Otto Ahlmann, Daniel T. Cornell, Thomas Byrne and David Soloman, trustees.

The following are the officers at the present time: John Westbrook, President; Jacob I. Housman, First Vice-President; Charles W. Hunt, Second Vice-President; A. R. Butler, Secretary; John Westbrook, Jacob I. Housman, Charles W. Hunt, Richard L'H. Finch, Otto Ahlmann, Edward D. Clark, John F. Smith, George W. Matthius, Samuel A. Robinson, Azel F. Merrell, Benedict Parker, J. A. Snyder, Herbert Crabtree, Frank W. Tompkins and Henry P. Morrison, trustees.

The amount due depositors is $250,000.00; total assets and liabilities, $260,000.00.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXXIX.

STATEN ISLAND RAILROADS.

ABOUT 1849 and 1850, prominent farmers and others of Staten Island and Perth Amboy, held meetings in reference to the establishment of a railroad from Stapleton to Tottenville. Articles of association were prepared, dated August 2, 1851, and construction work was commenced. The articles named as the first board of directors the following: Joseph H. Seguine, Joel Wolf, Henry I. Seaman, E. R. Bennet, S. Seguine, Henry Cole, H. Van Hovenburg, Peter C. Cortelyou, J. G. Seguine, William Totten, and George White, of Staten Island, and William King and Cornelius White, of Perth Amboy. These gentlemen becoming involved, with a partly-built road upon their hands, appealed to Commodore Vanderbilt to help them out of their difficulty. This he did, but diverted the original route to Stapleton to his landing further east, and the road was finished about 1860. The road soon afterward fell into the hands of William H. Vanderbilt, as receiver, and he thus took his first lessons in railroading.

George Law, the street car magnate, assumed control of the North Shore Ferry, which had long been in Commodore Vanderbilt's hands, and in 1864, a call was made to increase the capital stock of the Staten Island Road, so as to purchase the East Shore ferry boats. When this was fully accomplished, Captain Jacob H. Vanderbilt became President of the consolidated company. Among the larger shareholders at that time, were Messrs. B. Kreischer, R. W. Cameron, William H. Vanderbilt, A. N. Marsh, John W. Mersereau, A. F. Ockershausen, Dwight Townsend, and Jacob H. Vanderbilt.

Joseph H. Seguine was elected President; Stephen Seguine, Treasurer, and George White, Secretary. The first anuual report was made to the State Engineer and Surveyor on the 30th day of September, 1852. Numerous obstacles presented themselves to prevent the speedy completion of the road, not the least of which was the difficulty of securing a right of way over the lands of several landed proprietors. and in January, 1855, it became necessary for the company to apply to the Legislature for an extension of time to construct their road. The first receipts from passengers were on the 23d day of April, 1860, the trains running only part of the way; but on the 2d day of June, of the same year, there was a formal opening of the road.

Digitized by Google

When the well-remembered "Westfield" explosion of July 30, 1871, threw the company into default, Mr. L. H. Meyer became the receiver, and took charge of the affairs of the company. He sold the company's property on September 7, 1872, to George Law, with the exception of the ferryboat "Westfield," which was purchased by Horace Theall. After operating the road and ferry for a time, Messrs. Law and Theall sold out to a company formed largely of the old shareholders, Mr. Law threatening to form a company of his own, if they did not come to his terms promptly. Some of the smaller shareholders neglected to join in the purchase, and their worthless stock certificates still occasionally make their appearance. The new organization took the name of the Staten Island Railway, and it so remains.

Many years ago Commodore Vanderbilt planned a scheme for a central dock on Staten Island, opposite to the city, for freighting and distribution of passengers, somewhat on the plan that was later worked out by Erastus Wiman; but a storm broke up and scattered the timber-work, and the scheme was abandoned, leaving only the large stone foundation which is still visible at low tide, near St. George.

During the Southern Rebellion, one of the boats connected with the Staten Island Railroad, the "Southfield," was sold to the Government, and was converted into a gun-boat. It was destroyed during a bombardment on the Mississippi. A new "Southfield" was built in 1881, at Clifton, and is still running on the line. After the commencement of the war, the Commodore lost interest in this road and ferry, and they were turned over to his brother, Captain Jacob H. Vanderbilt, who was the President of the company until 1883.

In 1876, a ferry war broke out on the North Shore. Commodore Garner obtained possession of the ferry against the old company, and ran the "D. R. Martin" on the East Shore, in opposition to the regular line. Garner's tragic death, however, put a sudden terminus to this enterprise. His boats were purchased by John H. Starin, who paid five thousand dollars each for them, and, obtaining a franchise, he operated the ferry until it, too, fell into the hands of the Rapid Transit Company, in 1884.

The scheme of concentrating the ferry traffic into one line of boats running to one point on the Island, that point being the nearest to the city, and connecting with arms of railroads which should reach out and deliver the passengers along either shore, was for some time in process of development before it assumed tangible existence. A company was organized in 1883, and incorporated under the general railroad law of the State, having a capital of five hundred thousand dollars, which was fully paid. Surveys were then made for the prospective line along the Eastern and Northern Shores of the Island. Captain Adolph L. King was for a time President of the Company; but in September, 1883, he resigned, and J. Frank Emmons was

Digitized by Google

chosen to fill the position. Messrs. Clarence T. Barrett, Horatio Judah and Theodore C. Vermilye were appointed commissioners to appraise the damages caused to land through which the road was to pass. The work of grading began in the spring of 1884, and by the end of July the grading was done and the track laid between Clifton and Tompkinsville. The first train passed over this part of the road on the forenoon of July 31, 1884. It contained the managers and officers of the road, a few invited guests and several passengers who had come upon the train, as it came on its regular time from Tottenville, one of whom the writer had the honor of being.

The change in the arrangement of the road and ferry had by this time become about complete. The Staten Island Rapid Transit Railroad Company effected a ninety-nine years' lease of the property of the Staten Island Railway, and under this management the railroad to Tottenville and all its appurtenances became, on the 31st day of July, 1884, a part of the Rapid Transit system. Notwithstanding the many impediments that arose, work on the road was pushed on with remarkable rapidity. A considerable distance the road runs under the bluff, where ground had to be made upon which to build it. State laws were powerless to grant the right to run a railroad through the property of the United States. It is related that Erastus Wiman secured this right of way through a technicality respecting the word "tunnel," as it appeared in different dictionaries.

The grant, however, was surrounded by restrictions that made the work move along very slowly, but it was finally finished and pronounced by engineers to be very good. The tunnel is about nine hundred and eighty-five feet long, and contains a double track. It is protected by massive walls of masonry on the sides, and an arch of brick two feet in thickness over-head. The cost of building it was $190,000.

The greatest transformation scene occurred at the north-east point of the Island, which at that time was called St. George. An area of several acres of ground was made, out from the shore, to afford room for terminal facilities. Piers were erected, extending about six hundred feet into the water, and terminating in several large ferry slips. Temporary arrangements were made for sheltering passengers going to and from the boats, and about three years ago a large and handsome ferry-house was erected at considerable expense.

On February 23, 1886, the Rapid Transit Railroad was opened for passenger traffic. The people along the North Shore in particular celebrated the event. Trains on that day ran as far as Elm Park. The South Beach branch of the road was completed so that trains were running upon it on the 8th of March. For a time the Rapid Transit Company had a monopoly of the passenger traffic of the Island; but in 1895, the trolley roads were built, and at once became very popular with the people.

Digitized by Google

The Rapid Transit Railroad and all of its real and personal property held in the name of the company, was sold at auction, at the First National Bank at St. George, on Thursday, April 20, 1899. The sale was in foreclosure proceedings in the name of Charles E. Lewis, as trustee for the holders of the secured mortgage bonds, and the property was purchased by representatives of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad Company, at the "upset" price of $2,000,000.

Shortly after the opening of the old Staten Island Railroad, another enterprise of a similar nature was started on the Island, with Frederick White, the banker, at its head. The road was surveyed and graded over a considerable portion of the route, and there was a

POWER HOUSE OF THE STATEN ISLAND ELECTRIC RAILWAY.

bright prospect of its completion. It started from a point near the "Causeway," at West New Brighton, running thence through the meadow along Palmer's run, branching off so as to run directly through what is now Prohibition Park; thence on to a point near Richmond, and so on along the West Shore, through Green Ridge, Valley Forge, Rossville, Kreischerville and terminating at Tottenville. Through the failure to secure capital, the enterprise was abandoned. Here and there portions of the road-bed may still be seen—notably, through the meadow south of the Causeway, at Prohibition Park, and in the woods on the Latourette estate.

In November, 1863, it was proposed to build a horse railroad from the west gate of Fort Wadsworth, on the Narrows, around through Stapleton, Tompkinsville, New Brighton, West New Brighton, Port Richmond, Elm Park, Mariners' Harbor and Holland's Hook. A

Digitized by Google

company was formed and a charter obtained, under the title of the Staten Island Shore Railroad Company, with a capital of $350,000. The first directors were Minthorne Tompkins, S. B. Coles, Henry A. Morrison, George Catlin, Thomas Colgan, John C. Burling, Cornelius McArdell, Alfred Hornby, Joseph G. Ward, Earl K. Cooly, John Ellard, P. H. Ward, and George Sexton.

The first officers of the road were Joseph G. Ward, President; George Catlin, Vice-President; and Cornelius McArdell, Secretary and Treasurer. The company met with a great deal of opposition, all along the route, and portions of the track had to be laid at midnight, to prevent the impediments which the courts were called upon to furnish. While the track was laid for a considerable distance through Port Richmond, the cars never ran above Columbia street, West New Brighton. Hourly trips were made from each end of the road. The road practically suspended operations when the Rapid Transit system went into effect. It was in the hands of a receiver for a long time, and E. J. Cunningham was its manager for a number of years. The entire property was purchased by the Staten Island Electric Railroad Company.

The North and South Shore Railroad was designed to run from Elm Park, on the North Shore, to a spot just east of Seguine's Point, at Prince's Bay, where a summer resort was to be established to be called Algernon. The company organized in 1882, with William K. Souter as President. The work of grading commenced on the 28th of November, 1882. This was completed, and all the bridges were built, after which the iron and woodwork were strewn along the entire route, preparatory to being placed in their proper position.

According to the plan of this road, it was to run from a point near the steamboat landing at Elm Park, thence to Graniteville; thence to Bull's Head, and thence to New Springville.

The course then lay through the farms until it reached Richmond. Here the course of the road described a horseshoe, and ran close to the village from the vicinity of the old fort on the hill, and turned suddenly when near the Court House. From this point the road ran in the direction of Green Ridge, crossed the Staten Island Railroad, and made a direct line for the shore. The discontinuance of the enterprise was caused by the financial failure of William K. Souter, who was furnishing the capital.

The next enterprise in this line was the Richmond County Railroad, a horse road, running from the foot of Broadway, West New Brighton, through that street to Castleton avenue, to Columbia street, to Prospect avenue, to Manor road, and from thence to Eckstein's brewery. The charter was granted in March, 1885, and the formal opening of the road took place on July 18, 1885. The first directors were John McDonald, Monroe Eckstein, Hiram Dixon, Robert Moore, Clarence Delafield, Henry D. Leslie and Edward A. Moore. The first

Digitized by Google

officers were Hiram Dixon, President; Monroe Eckstein, Treasurer, and Henry D. Leslie, Secretary. The road ran for a time with comparatively fair prospects; but through mismanagement it suspended operations. The name was changed to the "Midland Railroad," but it proved a failure a second time, and again suspended. It was sold to the Midland Electric Railroad Company, which rebuilt the road and changed its motive power.

Shortly after the opening of Prohibition Park, the managers of that enterprise built a trolley road from the Port Richmond railroad station to the Park, and placed in service a number of small cars. The service was so imperfect, however, that hundreds of people walked in preference to riding. After running a year or so, this road was sold to the Midland Company.

The question of a bridge across the Kills, connecting Staten Island with the main land, had long been under consideration. In fact, as long ago as June 10, 1812, the State of New York, by an act of the Legislature, incorporated a company for the object of building a bridge across the Sound from New Jersey to Staten Island, at some point to be decided on by commissioners appointed for the purpose. The act named John Perine, David Mersereau, Jacob Crocheron, John V. D. Jacobson, Jesse Oakley, James Guyon, Sr., Tunis Egbert, John Garrison, and John Hilliker as commissioners.

The capital stock was to consist of two thousand shares of fifty dollars each, and the commissioners appointed to designate the site of the bridge were John C. Vanderveer, William Furman and John Lefferts, of the County of Kings, and Gabriel Furman and John Vanderbilt, Jr., of the City of New York, who were to act with an equal number to be named and authorized for the purpose by or on the part of New Jersey.

In 1883, through the unceasing efforts of Erastus Wiman, the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad Company became interested in railroad affairs on Staten Island. It was soon arranged to begin work on the great iron bridge which now spans the Achter Kill, just above Holland's Hook. The structure was completed in 1884, at a cost of $480,000.

In the spring of 1897, a charter was granted to the New York and Staten Island Electric Railroad Company. Edward P. Doyle was the President of the company, and J. E. Comins Secretary and Treasurer. The company, with Colonel G. B. M. Harvey at its head, purchased the plant which was abandoned by Erastus Wiman, and soon had in full operation one of the largest power-houses in the country. At the same time the company purchased from the receiver the plant and franchises of the Electric Power Company, the Port Richmond Electric Light Company, and the franchises, etc., of the old Belt Line Railroad.

A double-track was built from South Beach, via St. George, to

Digitized by Google

Holland's Hook, and through Jersey street, at New Brighton. Single-track roads were built from Jersey street up through Castleton avenue, and also up Richmond turnpike to the Clove road. The re-opening of the old ferry at Holland's Hook, in connection with this road, was a popular outlet for the people.

There are practically two companies in the organization to-day. The New York and Staten Island Electric Company's officials are as follows: Samuel Thomas, President; J. H. Swinarton, Vice-President and Treasurer; William E. Finley, Secretary; F. Lewis, Superintendent; A. B. Proal, Chief Engineer.

The following are the officials of the New York and Staten Island Electric Railroad Company: J. H. Swinarton, President; William E. Finley, Secretary and Treasurer; H. S. Kemp, Superintendent; Arthur B. Proal, Chief Engineer.

The Midland Electric Railroad Company, having purchased the road to Castleton Corners and to Prohibition Park, entered into the regulation contest with its natural rival—the "Syndicate" road. Both branches of the old roads, recently purchased, were rebuilt. The company then continued the Jewett avenue route to Richmond turnpike, thence to the Clove road, and thence to Concord, where it intersected with another branch running from Stapleton, on the Richmond road, to Richmond. Another branch was soon built from the junction at Grant City to Midland Beach. Later on, the road was continued from Stapleton to St. George.

Many changes have taken place in the management of the road since the commencement, but few of the original managers remaining with it to-day. The following are the officials of the Midland Company: Robert Wetherell, President; H. T. Walter, Secretary; W. H. Hantsch, Superintendent; Robert Wetherell, Richard Wetherell, W. B. Rockwell, M. J. Wightman, A. G. Paine, M.M. Armstrong and H. T. Walter, Directors.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XL.

STATEN ISLAND INDUSTRIES.

THE chief industries of Staten Island, about three-quarters of a century ago, were farming and oyster-planting. Farming, however, became unpopular for various reasons, although truck-farming, encouraged by the city markets, has been carried on of late to a considerable extent.

The New York Dyeing and Printing Establishment was located at Factoryville (West New Brighton), in 1819. Its work was that of dyeing, printing and refinishing dress goods and other textile fabrics. The factory, which is still in operation, is located on Broadway, about one hundred yards from Richmond terrace. For many years after the erection of the buildings, vessels used to pass in from the Kills to the office door of the factory, there being a bridge on Shore road about at the southeast corner of Odd Fellows' Hall. The old factory was started by the firm of Barrett, Tileston & Company. About six years later it was incorporated. The late Samuel Marsh was elected President, which office he held for forty-nine years, when he died.

Colonel Nathan Barrett became its head. He was a man of great push and energy, while some of the company were conservative. The opportunity presented itself to procure some land at a low figure, which he knew would be very valuable some day, and he purchased it in the name of the company. It lead to a disagreement, and Colonel Barrett withdrew from the company. It is but just to Colonel Barrett's memory to state that the land in question not only became very valuable, but the money which the sale of it, many years afterward, brought to the company, prevented the "Old Dye Works" from going done in a financial panic.

The Old Staten Island Dyeing Establishment is known all over the civilized world. It employs about five hundred hands, and has a vast amount of machinery. Some of the original buildings are still standing, although many years ago a great conflagration swept a number away.

In 1850, Colonel Barrett, having severed his connection with the Old Dyeing Establishment, sought to establish a new firm "in which he would be able to carry into effect, with greater freedom from the restraints of conservative routine, his ideas as to the proper method of conducting the business."

Digitized by Google

Colonel Barrett then organized a new firm known as Barrett, Nephews & Company, associating with him his three nephews, Messrs. Nathan M., J. H. and E. B. Heal, and Abraham C. Wood, all of whom had served at the head of similar institutions. Colonel Barrett purchased eight acres of land on Cherry lane, in Castleton, where suitable buildings were erected, and they were fitted up to carry on the work of dyeing and printing. The business proved a great success. In 1865, the establishment was incorporated with Colonel Nathan Barrett as President; Nathan M. Heal Vice-President, and Abraham C. Wood Treasurer.

Colonel Barrett was succeeded by Nathan M. Heal, who held the position until 1879, when he resigned. In 1867, a large tract of land adjoining Mill creek, known as the "Post farm," on which were located many valuable springs of water, exactly adapted to the requirements of their establishment, was purchased. A portion of this land was laid out in streets, along which trees were planted, and the place was called "Barrett Park." A few years since the park was purchased by Edward D. Clark, and several houses have been erected thereon.

Major Clarence T. Barrett, a nephew of the founder, in 1880, was elected President of the company.

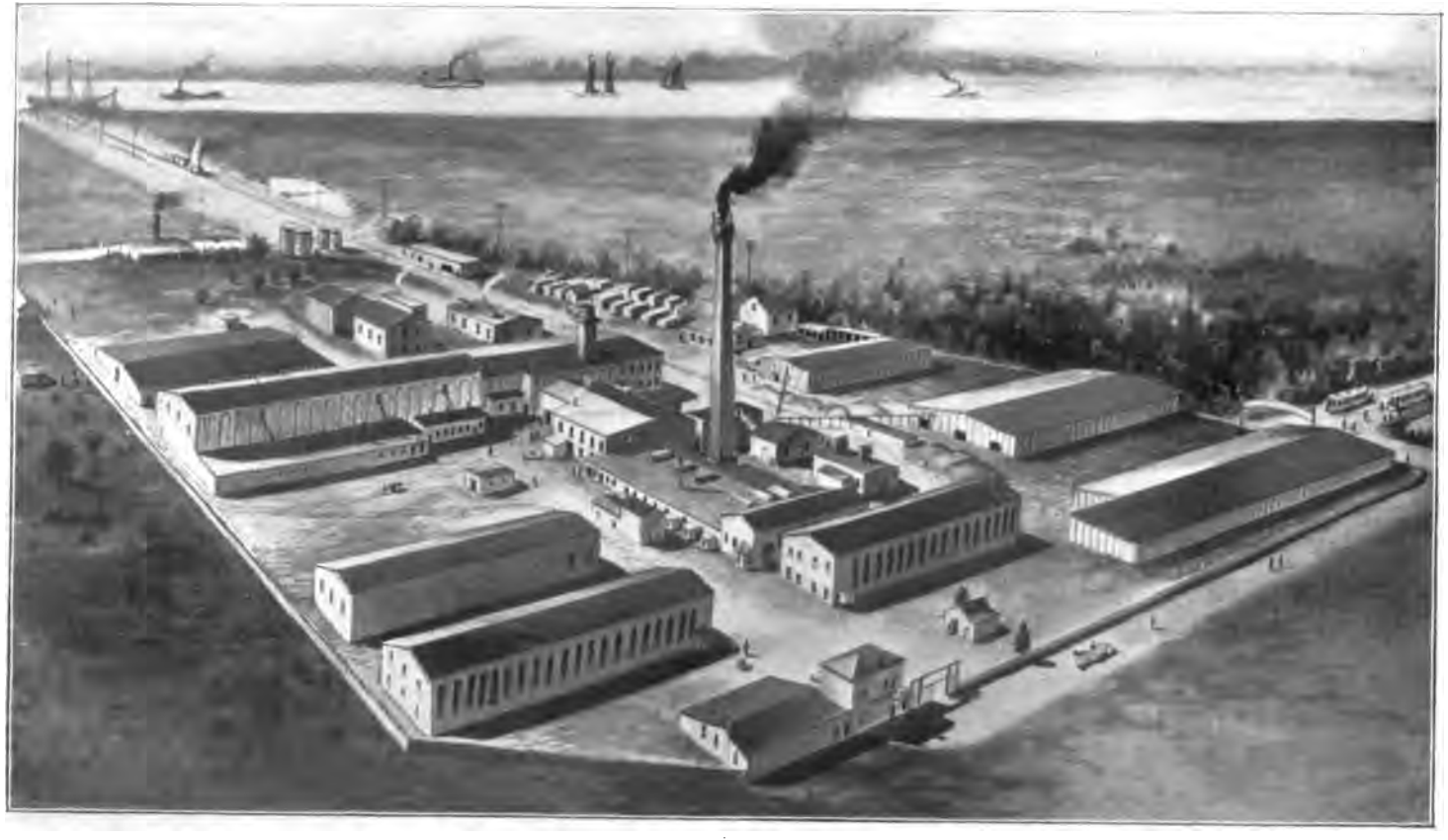
Barrett, Nephews & Company purchased the establishment, in 1895. The Cherry lane property was vacated, and the company that had occupied it from the first removed to the Old Dye Works on Broadway. The business is now prospering, with Captain C. W. Kennedy as general manager.

The old silk factory at Hessian Springs, New Brighton, established by Messrs. Crabtree & Wilkinson, about 1820, was an important business enterprise for several years. The financial panics which came some years later destroyed the usefulness of the establishment. The buildings have been used for various kinds of business since that time, and but little of the original structures remains. They are now owned by John Irving & Company, manufacturers of dress linings.

The wall-paper factory of West New Brighton, for several years past owned and managed by Mrs. M. A. Baldwin-Douglas, was originally a rubber factory, and during the war of 1861 was utilized for the manufacture of flags. Several other business enterprises were undertaken there from time to time, with more or less success.

Ship building has long been an important industry on Staten Island. As far back as 1775, the work was carried on here by Richard Lawrence. The business became the most thriving in 1861, when there was a demand for small vessels. The central point of this business at present is at Port Richmond and West New Brighton, where the yards of John H. Starin, the Burlee Dry Dock Company, David J. Jones and Frank McWilliams are located. In Tottenville are shipyards of A. C. Brown & Sons and Jacob Ellis & Sons; while at Prince's

Digitized by Google



LINOLEUM WORKS AT LINOLEUMVILLE.

Digitized by Google

Bay is Stephen Bartine; at Mariners' Harbor, L. H. St. John, John H. Falk and William H. Haughwaut; at Tompkinsville, Thomas Murphy, Sr.; at Rosebank, Thomas and J. J. Lawler; at Stapleton, J. R. Reynolds.

The Coast Wrecking Company has its yards at Stapleton, and engages in the specialty of saving vessels that are wrecked along the coast, or have been sunk by collision, or otherwise, in and around New York Harbor. The company owns a number of steamers and schooners, and employs a large force of men for this purpose. Among the workmen are submarine divers.

The manufacture of clay gas-retorts, fire-brick, blocks and kindred fire-clay goods, was commenced by Belthaser Kreischer at what is now known as Kreischerville, in 1876. The first name was afterward changed, but it is now remembered best as B. Kreischer & Sons. The principal owner now is George Kreischer, the eldest son.

The Jewett white lead mills, at Port Richmond, stand on the site of the old whale oil factory. The establishment dates back to the year 1842, when John Jewett & Sons began it on a much smaller scale than that of to-day. It was re-organized in 1882, with Benjamin C. Webster as President; James W. Sedlick, Secretary; and Charles H. Jewett, Treasurer.

Messrs. G. W. Jewett and J. A. Dean, who were connected with the above, commenced the manufacture of linseed oil in Port Richmond, in 1869, and the business is still carried on there with great success.

Back in the early seventies, the locality long known as the New Blazing Star Ferry was converted into a busy manufacturing village, and it assumed the name of Linoleumville. The factories at that place are among the most important business enterprises on the Island, and the title of the corporation is "The American Linoleum Manufacturing Company." The article manufactured there is a floor-cloth, which is made from ground cork and linseed oil.

This was the first venture in the manufacture of such an article in this country. The company is one of joint stock, having a capital of $450,000. The goods here manufactured were first placed on the market in 1875. Joseph Wild was the President of the company at the beginning of its operations, and J. Cartledge was the manufacturing director. The company has been very successful, the demand for goods being constantly ahead of the supply. David L. Melvin is the present manager, and under his guidance the business is carried on in a most progressive manner.

DeJonge's paper factory was first located in New York City, but was removed to Staten Island in 1852. It is located on the south side of Richmond turnpike, a short distance from Tompkinsville. Louis DeJonge and Charles Zentgraff are the proprietors. The capital invested is about $200,000. At times as high as one hundred and fifty hands are employed.

Digitized by Google

The Windsor plaster mills are located on the shore at New Brighton. The works were established many years ago, but were burned down on July 19, 1885, destroying property to the amount of $225,000. The establishment is now owned by J. B. King & Company.

About 1860, Joseph H. and Stephen Seguine, Isaac K. Jessup and Major Bennett erected a factory at Seguine's Point, Prince's Bay, for the purpose of obtaining oil from palm nuts. The venture did not prove a success, and the establishment was afterward devoted to the manufacture of candles. It was rented by agents of William M. Tweed, later on, and a system of street sewer was manufactured for the use of the city.

In 1865, the premises were sold to Algernon K. Johnston. Shortly afterwards, Mr. Johnston, with three of his brothers—M. M., William and Wilbur—placed considerable machinery in the building for the manufacture of dental instruments. This work consists of whatever a dentist requires in the practice of his profession. It is an important fact that the liquefaction of nitrous oxide gas was first accomplished on a commercial scale at these works.

The establishment of the Messrs. Johnston has been consolidated with that of the S. S. White Dental Manufacturing Company, of Philadelphia, and the goods here made are sent to all parts of the civilized world. Arthur W. Browne, one of the cleverest of inventors, is connected with this establishment, and his many patents control to a great degree the modern appliances of dentistry.

For several years prior to and during the war of the Rebellion, McCullough's shot factory was in operation at Stapleton, and furnished a great deal of material to the army. After the war it ceased to be of any practical use, and was converted into a cream-of-tartar factory, and being declared a nuisance by the Board of Health, was finally demolished.

Staten Island has long been a favorite place for the location of breweries, chiefly on account of the quality of water which is found here. Bechtel's, the largest, stands at the head of Broad street, Stapleton, and was founded by John Bechtel, in 1853. In 1865, he sold it to his son, George, who managed it until the time of his death, in 1889.

The Clifton Brewery, located a short distance west of Vanderbilt landing, was established by General Garibaldi and Antonio Meucci, in 1851. Some say that their names only were used to give the enterprise a business footing. The establishment is managed to-day by Frederick Bachmann, who entered it many years ago as an employé. This brewery was destroyed by fire in 1881, but was immediately rebuilt.

The Atlantic Brewery, at Stapleton, was established by Joseph Rubsam and August Horrmann, both of whom are dead. It is now

Digitized by Google

run by the Rubsam & Horrmann Brewing Company. It was established in 1870.

Bishoff's Brewery, at Stapleton, was established in 1854. It afterward became the property of the Atlantic Brewing Company, and a few years ago closed.

The Constanz Brewery is located at Castleton Corners, and was established in August, 1852, by August Schmidt. Subsequently passing into the hands of Joseph Setz, it was conveyed by him to Monroe Eckstein, in 1857, who controlled it until his death in 1895. It is now managed by the Monroe Eckstein Brewing Company.

The manufacture of blocks and prints for wall paper, oil cloth, carpets, and other printed goods, is carried on by John Westbrook, John Robertson, Jr., and John Bain & Son, all of West New Brighton.

Schneider's chemical works are at Stapleton, and the International Ultramarine works are located near Rossville.

Henry Warth, of Stapleton, manufactures cloth-cutting machinery, and carries on an extensive business.

The C. W. Hunt Company, of West New Brighton, manufactures coal-handling machinery, etc. It is one of the leading business firms of the Island. They have an extensive factory on Van street, West New Brighton, but the main offices are in the city.

DECKER HOMESTEAD, GRANITEVILLE.

The Consolidated Fire Works Company of America have their works at Graniteville, and is the leading establishment of its class in the world.

The Hecker-Jones-Jewell Company have an extensive flour-mill at Mariners' Harbor.

S. B. Wardell & Company and Lord & Roberts manage extensive handkerchief factories at West New Brighton.

The granite and trap-rock quarries, near Port Richmond, are managed by Frank Bennett. Material taken from these quarries was used in the construction of the breakwater at Fort Sumter, Charleston, South Carolina, and in the walls of Fort Richmond, on the Narrows, at Fort Wadsworth. Thousands of tons have been utilized in building the roads of the Island.

George Ross, of Port Richmond, is one of the most successful and extensive sail and awning-makers in this part of the country.

Digitized by Google

The manufacture of sash, doors and blinds is carried on by A. B. Mersereau & Son, at Port Richmond; William S. Van Clief, at West New Brighton and Port Richmond; Alvin Conklin, at Port Richmond, and James Graham, at Pleasant Plains.

Silk mills are managed by O. H. Barnard, at Tottenville, and the Empire State Silk Label Company, at West New Brighton.

One of the most reliable and extensive canning establishments in the country is that owned by David J. Tysen, at New Dorp.

The Standard Varnish Works, at Port Richmond, carries on an extensive manufacture of varnishes and japans.

W. J. Davidson & Company, of Port Richmond, have extensive boiler and machine works.

Steps were first taken to supply water for the village of New Brighton, in 1879, and the works of the Staten Island Water Supply Company were begun in 1880. In August of that year, a contract was made, and the work was begun on October 5. By the end of July, 1881, the works were completed sufficiently to furnish water, and on August 4 were first operated.

The pumping station is located in the ravine near Palmer's run, on the North Shore, and water is obtained by means of a large number of artesian wells. An extensive reservoir occupies a position on Fort Hill, at New Brighton. A few years ago a new pumping-station with enlarged machinery was provided, at West New Brighton, and another pumping-station has been erected near Bull's Head. The works are still controlled by a private company. The officers are H. Brightman, President; H. I. Brightman, Secretary; John S. Warde, Sr., Superintendent.

The first steps towards establishing the Crystal Water Works was in 1883. It was intended at first to utilize the deep ravine back of Egbertville as a reservoir, but the scheme proved impracticable. After the consideration of several plans, a tank was finally erected on Grymmes' Hill, back of Stapleton.

A pumping-station was erected near the junction of Clove and Little Clove roads, for the purpose of elevating water from the large main to the tank on Grymmes' Hill. The company at first had sheet-iron mains as an experiment, but these were soon discarded. The water which this company procures, like that of the one on the North Shore, is from the great veins in the Catskills and Orange mountains. Under the superintendency of Mr. J. B. Newhall, who lately withdrew from the company, these works were brought up to a state of efficiency. The officers at present are: Louis Rosenfeld, President; J. P. Piper, Secretary; and W. Volkhardt, Superintendent.

The South Shore Water Works are located at New Dorp, and are capable of supplying a large settlement. During the past year the works were sold to J. B. Newhall & Company, under whose management they are now successfully running.

Digitized by Google

The Tottenville Water Works, the erection of which was commenced in 1897, are under the supervision of the Hon. Henry P. Morrison, Deputy Commissioner of the Department of Water Supply. L. W. Freeman is the Supervising Engineer of the department, and David C. Butler inspector. These works are capable of furnishing eight hundred thousand gallons of water a day.

The New York and New Jersey Telephone Company began operations on Staten Island in 1882, and its business has been constantly increasing, until it now has nearly fifteen hundred instruments in service here. There are central offices at West New Brighton and Tompkinsville, and all parts of the Island are in easy communication.

The oyster industry has long been an important matter on Staten Island. It dates back long before the earliest civilization in these parts. The Indians were very fond of them. The first settlers in these parts discovered shell mounds which then may have been hundreds of years old. The cultivation of oysters was carried on here prior to the Revolution.

Both New York and New Jersey adopted laws for the protection of the oyster planters, but they have undergone many changes. The general statutes of this State bearing upon the subject are as follows: Forbidding any natural bed being staked off for private use, or being planted upon; forbidding any person, not for six months previous a resident of the State, from taking any shellfish within the State (but an actual resident may employ any non-resident); and prohibiting the use of any dredge weighing over thirty pounds, or operated by steam-power.

The special statutes are thus: Asserting that no person not an inhabitant of the State may plant oysters in the waters surrounding Staten Island, "except the consent of the owner first be obtained;" and no non-inhabitant may take oysters or clams "from the beds of natural growth in any of said waters." Forbidding dredging or dragging for oysters in the neighborhood of Staten Island "upon beds of natural growth of oysters (not planted)." Forbidding any person taking up or disturbing oysters planted under all the waters of this State surrounding Staten Island, without previous permission from the owners.

For a period of many years, ending in the early sixties, Messrs. Arnold & Merritt carried on the business of brick making in an extensive manner at Elm Park. Hundreds of men were employed. A gravity railroad was employed to carry the brick-clay from the pits to the factory. Granite avenue was completely dug out, and the earth replaced when taken from another source. The bricks manufactured there were sent all over the country.

At Green Ridge the manufacturing of bricks has been carried on for years.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XLI.

THE FIRE DEPARTMENTS.

THERE were organized fire companies on Staten Island, though of a very rude nature, as far back as 1825—probably earlier. "Bucket Brigades" at that date had been in service for a few years—how long, we can not say. We read in the local paper of efficient service long rendered by "the fire company at Factoryville," in 1828, and again in the following year. This company was composed of young men residing along the North Shore, and originated in a target company, which met on the few holidays then celebrated, and practiced with old-fashioned flint-lock muskets. There was a bucket company in Richmond Village at about the same time.

Tompkinsville had two companies in 1841. They were kept up for some time. There were two or more companies at that place in 1858, and Ray Tompkins was Chief of the Department.

The difficulty in procuring water for the fire engines led to some speculation. About 1825, when Tompkinsville was the leading village of the Island, the question of establishing public water works for the place was given much consideration. Minthorne Tompkins was at the head of a company of gentlemen who applied to the Legislature for an act of incorporation. The site for the reservoir, which Mr. Tompkins selected, was the little natural lake located in the park surrounding the residence of Mr. David J. Tysen, on Todt Hill. It is the highest point on Staten Island.

There was a fire company located on Richmond road, between Garretsons and New Dorp, in the sixties. Some of the boys who "ran with the machine," the last time that old St. Andrew's Church, at Richmond, was on fire, are still living in the neighborhood.

The Edgewater Fire Department was organized in 1871, with Benjamin Brown as Chief Engineer. James R. Robinson and John Garvey were afterward elected chiefs. The Department was re-organized in 1879, with William D. Burbank as Chief.

The following companies form the Department at the present time: Niagara Engine Company, No. 5 (organized in 1873 as the Neptune Hose Company, and reorganized in 1878 as an engine company); Neptune Engine Company, No. 6, organized in 1867; Protection Engine Company, No. 7, organized October 16, 1858; Clifton Engine

Digitized by Google

Company, No. 8, organized June 2, 1863; Rescue Engine Company, No. 9, organized May 1, 1879; Enterprise Hook and Ladder Company, No. 1, organized December 5, 1856; Columbia Hook and Ladder Company, No. 5, organized in 1889; Neptune Hose Company, No. 1, organized March 16, 1878; Benjamin Brown Hose Company, No. 3, organized January 1, 1869; Clifton Hose Company, No. 6, organized September 6, 1863; Robinson Hose Company, No. 9, organized February 17, 1880; Excelsior Bucket Company, No. 1, organized October 20, 1858; Relief Bucket Company, No. 2, organized May 11, 1863, also has a chemical engine attached; Tompkinsville Fire Police Company, organized in 1859.

The officers of the Edgewater Fire Department at present are James H. Lestrange, Chief Engineer; Albert W. Jones, Charles Kemether, and John Timlin, Jr., Assistant Chiefs. The Board of Representatives, which is composed of two members from each company in the Department, holds regular monthly meetings in the Village Hall. The officers are: Nicholas J. Macklin, President; Michael Hardin, Vice-President; Joseph Scott, Secretary, and Robert Goggin, Treasurer.

SWAN HOTEL, WEST NEW BRIGHTON; ERECTED IN 1798.

The North Shore Fire Department, which is composed of companies located in the First and Third wards, was organized on April 2, 1874, and was chartered on March 10, 1875. The first meeting of the Board of Representatives was held in the house of Zephyr Hose Company, in Port Richmond, on Monday, May 18, 1874, when W. M. Washburne was elected President, and Wilbur F. Disosway Secretary. At that time the following companies formed the Department: Washington Engine, No. 1, Port Richmond; Cataract Engine, No. 2, West New Brighton; Port Richmond Engine, No. 3; New Brighton Engine, No. 4; Zephyr Hose Company, No. 4, Port Richmond, and Medora Hook and Ladder Company, No. 3, of West New Brighton.

The North Shore Department is now composed of the following companies: Washington Engine Company, No. 1, Port Richmond, organized October 7, 1853; Cataract Steam Engine Company, No. 2, West New Brighton, organized August 19, 1844; Port Richmond

Digitized by Google

Steam Engine Company, No. 3, organized August 24, 1859; New Brighton Steam Engine Company, No. 4, October 24, 1856; Monroe Engine Company, No. 5, organized September 11, 1894; Aquehonga Hook and Ladder Company, No. 1, Mariners' Harbor, organized January 1, 1879; Granite Hook and Ladder Company, No. 2, Graniteville, organized August 4, 1881; Medora Hook and Ladder Company, No. 3, West New Brighton, organized June 10, 1868; Richmond Hook and Ladder Company, No. 4, New Brighton, organized in June, 1895; Wyandotte Hook and Ladder Company, No. 5, West New Brighton, organized in 1885; Zephyr Hose Company, No. 4, Port Richmond, organized February 22, 1861; Oceanic Hook and Ladder Company, No. 1, Travisville, organized in 1880; Steady Stream Hose and Bucket Company, No. 2, Port Richmond, organized November 14, 1885; Alert Hose Company, No. 1, New Brighton, organized in 1885; Lafayette Hose Company, No. 3, New Brighton, organized in 1885; Starin Hose Company, No. 5, organized in September, 1885; Tompkins Hose Company, No. 6, Tompkinsville, organized May 11, 1890; Active Hose Company, No. 7, Mariners' Harbor, organized in 1894; Castleton Fire Patrol, No. 1, West New Brighton, organized in 1893.

The officers of the North Shore Department at present are as follows:

James Corcoran, Chief Engineer; Herman Burkhardt, William Ragne, William Henry and Ainsley Jones, Assistant Chiefs.

The following have been Chief Engineers of the Department; Lester A. Scofield, John J. Featherston, David Pero, George Tredwell, John Seaton, William Carpenter, George C. Trantor, William Crowley, John Ragan, Horace E. Buel, Edward A. Bourne, Elijah Vanderbilt, Robert Brown, Henry Holtkamp, William Janes, William Burlee, William H. O'Hara, Ernest Seehusen, Edward Hicks, John Dewhurst, James T. Rourke, Isaac Booth, Clinton C. Daniels, Thomas Doudican and John Corcoran.

The Board of Representatives is composed of two members from each company, and the officers are: John L. Dobson, President; John Trimble, Vice-President; William Snedeker, Secretary, and Charles M. Schwalbe, Treasurer.

Tottenville has an efficient fire department. There are three companies—Eureka Steam Fire Engine Company, No. 1; Protection Hook and Ladder Company, No. 2, and Eureka Hook and Ladder Company, No. 3. Since the City Charter went into effect a steam engine has been added to the Department. It had been in service in Manhattan. The officers of the Department are: Arthur M. Donaldson, Chief Engineer; George Cunningham and William O'Conner, Assistant Chiefs; Rufus Journeay and D. R. Robbins, Fire Wardens.

The village of New Dorp has a very efficient organization in Hook and Ladder Company, No. 1. It has a nicely furnished house near the railroad station. Its chief officer is John Coleman.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XLII.

THE POLICE DEPARTMENT.

THE first police department organized on Staten Island was some time prior to the Revolution, and Christopher Billopp was the Chief. When Sir William Howe's army was on the Island, the force was re-organized, and Christopher Billopp remained in command.

The constables elected annually did service for many years. The village of Tompkinsville, during the period of its incorporation, had special or private police, who were not uniformed and were paid by individual citizens. In the fifties the New York Police Department looked after the Island in a half-hearted manner. In 1867, the law placed Staten Island within the jurisdiction of the Metropolitan police force of New York City. A small force of men were enlisted and detailed for the express duty of patrolling the Island. Criminals arrested by those officers were taken before police justices within the limits of Edgewater and New Brighton, and throughout the remainder of the county they were disposed of by justices of the peace.

The Legislature enacted a law in 1870 which made Staten Island a separate police district, and gave it power to establish a department with its essential duties and powers. The act placed the Department under the control of three commissioners, who were elected by an appointing board, consisting of the County Judge and the five Supervisors. These commissioners were residents of the county, and were elected for three years, one entering upon the duties of the office each year.

The first Board of Commissioners was composed of William C. Denyse, of Middletown; Abraham Wood, of Castleton, and Garret P. Wright, of Northfield. They organized on May 9, 1870, by "drawing lots" as to the terms, with the following result: Mr. Wood, one year; Mr. Denyse, two years, and Mr. Wright, three years. Mr. Wood was elected President; George H. Hitchcock, Chief Clerk; John Laforge, Captain; Dr. Isaac Lea, Surgeon; James E. Esterbrook, Sergeant; Daniel Blake, roundsman; Edward Roe, Alexander McIlhargy, Edward Brice, Robert Lyons, James E. Brown, Stephen McEvoy, Alexander Young and Edward F. Roy, patrolmen.

The various incorporated villages made a demand upon the Department, and New Brighton and Port Richmond were each allowed

Digitized by Google

seven, Edgewater fourteen, and Tottenville two. The experiment of having mounted police was tried at first, but was soon abandoned. A police station was established in Port Richmond on the 28th of June, in a building belonging to ex-Chief John Decker, opposite the park. The force was increased the first year to thirty men.

Considerable confusion arose in the Department in 1871. In May of that year, the Appointing Board unanimously elected one of its members, George W. Ellis, Supervisor from Westfield. Mr. Ellis took his seat and was made President of the Board, notwithstanding the earnest protest of Mr. Wood, the outgoing commissioner. The matter was carried to the courts, and finally reached the court of appeals, where it was decided against Mr. Ellis. During his incumbency, however, many changes were made in the Department. Commissioner Wright did not attend the meetings of the Board. Captain Laforge refused to obey the orders of President Ellis and was suspended. He was not reinstated, however, but Sergeant M. I. Holbrook was appointed in his place. Chief Clerk Hitchcock also refused to obey orders, and Peter H. Wandel was appointed to serve in his place. Isaac M. Marsh was appointed to fill the vacancy caused by Mr. Ellis's removal, and served until May, 1883, when he was succeeded by Edward P. Barton. Mr. Hitchcock was reappointed clerk on the re-organization of the Board.

DE HART HOMESTEAD, AT HOLLAND'S HOOK.

Major Clarence T. Barrett, of Castleton, was appointed Commissioner in 1872, and served until 1878, when he was succeeded by Philip Wolff, who served until the Board was abolished on January 1, 1898.

Mr. Wright remained in the Board until 1879, when he was succeeded by Francis McQuade. Richard B. Whittemore, of Castleton, was appointed in 1882. Chief Clerk Hitchcock resigned, in 1880, and George W. Ellis was appointed to succeed him.

Hon. Nicholas Muller was elected to succeed Mr. Whittemore in 1888. He was also made President of the Board, and many changes were made in the management of the Department. George D. L'Huillier, Edward P. Barton, Philip Wolff and Dr. George C. Hubbard were also members of the Board during Mr. Muller's incumbency.

In the year 1894, the Legislature passed a law, making the Police Commissioners, with two additional citizens, the County Board of

Digitized by Google

Excise. Commissioners Muller, Wolff and Hubbard resigned, and the Appointing Board, County Judge Stephens presiding, reappointed them to the dual office. The citizen members were George W. Van Name, of Northfield, and Thomas Mullins, of Southfield. These gentlemen remained in office until 1896, when the law was again changed.

In 1895, all the commissioners resigned, and Major Clarence T. Barrett, Major Benjamin H. Warford and Richard M. Hazzard were appointed. Major Warford died, and Major Barrett resigned. Mr. Muller was reappointed, and served a short term. The law was again changed.

The Legislature, being Republican, at the time, and the new Appointing Board being also of that political complexion, none of the old commissioners were reappointed. Charles W. Alexander and Cornelius A. Hart were appointed to the office, and they continued to serve until the new City Charter went into effect, and the police force was consolidated with that of New York.

An attempt to render the force more efficient by having mounted policemen was made during the winter of 1883-4, when a number of good horses and accoutrements were purchased. The men selected had had no experience in the saddle, and the movement proved a failure. Another attempt was made about three years since. Young men were secured and they were well mounted, and a non-commissioned cavalry officer from the regular army was detailed as drill-master. The force, consequently, is quite efficient, and renders good service where dismounted men are of less account.

The force to-day consists of one captain, six sergeants, four roundsmen and sixty patrolmen. There are also a large number of men wearing the uniform who are not quite directly under the jurisdiction of the Department, but are special officers on the ferry boats, etc.

Staten Island forms the Eightieth precinct of the Greater New York, and the commandant receives his orders directly from the Chief of Police in Manhattan Borough.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XLIII.

SOCIAL AND BENEFICIAL ORGANIZATIONS.

THE first organization of which there is any authentic record, was that which met in the building, since enlarged, standing at the sharp bend in the Amboy road, near Oakwood station. Among its members were Commodore Vanderbilt, Dr. Ephraim Clark, Dr. Doane, Dr. J. T. Harrison, and many other prominent men of the time. Aside from social affairs, gunning was the principal sport of its members.

About forty years ago, the Neptune Boat Club was started at West New Brighton. A house was built at considerable cost and furnished very neatly. This building is still standing, opposite the West New Brighton police station (No. 2).

The Staten Island Athletic Club was first planned in 1877; but it was not until the following year that a permanent organization was effected. The officers then selected were as follows: William K. Souter, President; D. J. H. Willcox, Recording Secretary; H. A. Caeser, Treasurer; R. T. P. Fiske, Corresponding Secretary; Oliver T. Johnson, Captain; C. Thorp, First Lieutenant; D. H. Rowland, Second Lieutenant; John D. Vermule, John W. Edwards, Louis Henderson, D. R. Norvell, Arthur T. Shand and F. L. Rodewald, Trustees.

In the autumn of that year the first games were held, open to all amateurs. A temporary grand stand was built for the occasion by the members, prominent among whom were Johnson, Chute, Janssens, Collins, Hayward, Wemple, Dedrechsen, Shand and True. The success of the first entertainment was a good start for the club, and soon made it very popular.

A boat-house was erected on the Kills, between York and Franklin avenues, New Brighton, in time for the season of 1881, and that year the membership ran up to two hundred and sixty. A few years later, the club purchased the Campbell mansion at the Cove, on the North Shore, and fitted it up for a club-house, at the same time building a large boat-house on the river bank in front. The club joined the National Association of Amateur Athletics and the Kill van Kull Rowing Association. It became well known throughout the country for its success in athletic sports and for its hospitality. In a short time it had over a thousand members.

For several years the "S. I. A. C." was a centre of pleasure to the

Digitized by Google

people of Staten Island. The list of officers at the close was as follows: John W. Edwards, President; Henry O. Bailey, Vice-President; William C. Davis, Recording Secretary; George M. McKellar, Treasurer; Edgar Hicks, Corresponding Secretary; William C. Rowland, Captain; R. T. P. Fiske, First Lieutenant; Anson L. Carroll, Second Lieutenant; Oliver T. Johnson, William A. Lentilhon, Frank G. Janssen, J. Eberhard Faber, W. F. Disosway, A. L. Faris and Harvey B. Rich, Trustees.

The Clifton Boat Club was organized in 1881. Its membership at one time was but eight. In the course of a very few years it had increased in numbers until it was one of the largest social organizations of the East Shore. It has a delightful boat-house facing the Narrows. It was first organized as a social club.

The Staten Island Rowing Club was established at New Brighton, in 1878, having about fifty members. Its officers were A. P. Stokes, President; H. L. Horton, Vice-President; E. Kelley, Captain; G. B. West, Secretary; G. S. McCulloh, Treasurer, and C. D. Ingersoll, Lieutenant.

The Staten Island Cricket and Base Ball Club, which for years was rated as the leading amateur organization of its class in the State, had its grounds for many years at Camp Washington, or what may now be described as the grounds at the land approach to the St. George ferry. These premises had to be vacated in 1886, and the club purchased the Delafield property on Bard avenue, for $40,000, and the house and grounds were fitted up in an appropriate manner. At that time the club had over five hundred members, and it increased steadily for years. The officers at that time were William Krebs, President; George S. Scofield, Vice-President; N. S. Walker, Jr., Secretary, and E. J. Shiver, Treasurer. The club was incorporated in January, 1866. During the summer it was a centre of social attractions. Friday in each week was set apart for ladies, who had exclusive use of the grounds on that day. There was a Ladies' Club for Outdoor Sports connected with it. During the past year the club became financially embarrassed, through the loss of members, and the property is now in the hands of a receiver.

The German Association Erheiterung of Staten Island, which was organized on December 10, 1861, and incorporated on June 15, 1865, has for its object the social, dramatic, and musical entertainment and instruction of its members. Its headquarters for many years have been in the German Club Rooms, at Stapleton. Its building was erected at a cost of $40,000. It has a large membership.

Robert G. Shaw Post, No. 112, Grand Army of the Republic, was organized at Stapleton, in 1881, and was named in honor of Colonel Robert G. Shaw, of Staten Island, the commandant of a Massachusetts regiment of colored troops, who was killed in a charge at Fort Wagner, South Carolina. Colonel W. M. Wermerskirch was the first com-

Digitized by Google

mander. Others who have held the office were Captain James Burke and Lieutenant Edward Openshaw. Several years ago the Post removed its headquarters to New Brighton, where it still remains. Its presiding officer at present is Peter Dimler, Commander.

Lenhart Post, No. 163, Grand Army of the Republic, was organized at Tottenville on May 22, 1880. Its first commander was David S. Reckhow. This post was named in honor of Chaplain Lenhart, of the United States Navy, who went down with his vessel, the "Cumberland," in Hampton Roads, Virginia, in the memorable battle at that place. He resided at Tottenville prior to the war, and was the first chaplain on the Union side that lost his life in the Rebellion. The presiding officer of the Post is Hubbard R. Yetman, Commander.

Richmond Post, No. 524, Grand Army of the Republic, was organized on November 22, 1884, at Port Richmond. Its first Commander was Moses H. Leman. He was succeeded by Bernard Mullin, and he by Benjamin J. Bodine, and he by Captain David M. Stothers. The Post was named in honor of the County of Richmond. Its presiding officer at present is Bernard Mullen, Commander.

LAKE HOUSE, AT PORT RICHMOND.

The Richmond County Country Club was organized in 1888, and was incorporated on October 23, 1891, by Messrs. Clarence Whitman, W. Henry Motley, Adolph J. Outerbridge, Gugy Æ. Irving, Wethered B. Thomas and Eugene H. Outerbridge. A beautiful residence and grounds on the Little Clove road were rented, and the club remained there for about six years. Then it purchased the grounds known as the Alexandre estate, on Todt Hill, facing the Lower bay, where extensive improvements have been made. Besides remodelling the Alexandre residence, several additional dwellings have been erected, and the grounds are constantly being beautified.

There are three classes of membership—resident, non-resident and summer.

The following are the officers of the club: Gugy Æ Irving, President; Edmund S. Twining, Vice-President; Otto Ahlmann, Treasurer; Courtland V. Anable, Secretary; H. B. Montgomery, Walter C. Kerr,

Digitized by Google

George Cromwell, Nathaniel B. Day, J. H. Alexandre, Stacy C. Pichard and James Park, Directors. The club has about two hundred and fifty members.

Metamora Council, No. 650, American Legion of Honor, the only organization at present connected with that Order on Staten Island, meets in Masonic Hall, Port Richmond, on the first and third Wednesday evenings of each month.

Of the Ancient Order of Foresters, there are courts as follows: Court Staten Island, No. 50, located at Stapleton; Court Castleton, No. 128, at West New Brighton; Court Linoleum, No. 162, at Travisville; Court Tompkins, No. 180, at New Brighton; Court Port Richmond, No. 205, at Port Richmond; Court Edgewater, No. 255, at Tompkinsville; Court Southfield, No. 266, at Grasmere; Thomas A. Butler Conclave, No. 100, at West New Brighton.

Of the Ancient Order of Hibernians, Division No. 1 is located at Tompkinsville, and Division No. 2 at Port Richmond.

The Ancient Order of United Workmen is represented as follows: Pioneer Lodge, No. 355, is located at Stapleton; Benjamin Brown Lodge, No. 387, at Stapleton; Port Richmond Lodge, No. 379, at Port Richmond; Westfield Lodge, No. 385, at Tottenville; Northfield Lodge, No. 396, at Travisville; Southfield Lodge, No. 401, at Clifton; Great Kills Lodge, No. 426, at Great Kills; Vigilant Lodge, No. 429, at New Brighton; Palestine Lodge, No. 430, at Stapleton.

Catholic Benevolent Legion: Castleton Council, No. 108, at New Brighton; Edgewater Council, No. 137, at Stapleton; Father Mark Murphy Council, No. 157, at Port Richmond; Father Drumgoole Council, No. 236, at Rossville; Rosebank Council, No. 339, at Rosebank; West Brighton Council, No. 341, at West New Brighton; Tompkinsville Council, No. 423, at Tompkinsville; Immaculate Conception Council, No. 2, of the Catholic Conception Legion, meets in Stapleton.

Companions of the Forest: Pride of Castleton Circle, No. 159, meets at West New Brighton; Pride of Northfield Circle, No. 181, at Travisville.

Improved Order of Red Men: Aquehonga Tribe, No. 324, at West New Brighton; Raritan Tribe, No. 260, at New Brighton.

Independent Order of Foresters: Court Richmond, No. 234, at Port Richmond; Court West Brighton, No. 1790, at West New Brighton. Olive Leaf Lodge, No. 155, Daughters of Rebecca, meets at Port Richmond.

Independent Order of Odd Fellows: Bentley Lodge, No. 570, at Tottenville; Clifton Lodge, No. 311, at Rosebank; Neptune Lodge, No. 125, at Stapleton; Northfield Lodge, No. 338, at Port Richmond; Richmond County Lodge, No. 88, at West New Brighton.

Knights and Ladies of Honor: Excelsior Lodge, No. 1133, at Stapleton; Arlington Lodge, No. 1520, at Clifton; Balthaser Kreischer Lodge, No. 1809, at Kreischerville.

Digitized by Google

Knights of Maccabees: Richmond Borough Tent, No. 250, at New Brighton; Staten Island Tent, No. 331, at New Brighton. Ladies of the Maccabees: Castleton Hive, No. 221, at New Brighton; Staten Island Hive, No. 252, at New Brighton.

Knights of Pythias: Richmond Lodge, No. 80, at Tottenville; Stapleton Lodge, No. 262, at Stapleton; Staten Island Lodge, No. 346, at Port Richmond; New Brighton Lodge, No. 354, at New Brighton; Tompkinsville Lodge, No. 371, at Tompkinsville.

Staten Island Council, No. 12, Order of American Firemen, meets at Port Richmond.

Order of Germania: Lodge No. 26, at Kreischerville; Atlantic Lodge, No. 55, at Stapleton.

Richmond Lodge, No. 155, Order of Harugari, meets at Stapleton.

COUNTY CLERK'S AND SURROGATE'S OFFICES, RICHMOND.

Continental Council, No. 27, Order of United Americans, has its Council room at Port Richmond.

Junior Order of United American Mechanics: United Council, No. 17, at Tottenville; Balthaser Council, No. 22, at Kreischerville.

Royal Arcanum: Arthur Kill Council, No. 1408, at Tottenville; George William Curtis Council, No. 1554, at Tompkinsville; New Dorp Council, No. 1219, at New Dorp; Stapleton Council, No. 1435, at Stapleton; Staten Island Council, No. 1145, at Port Richmond.

Sons of Veterans: Richmond Camp, No. 63, at Port Richmond; Major Frank B. Ward Camp, No. 211, at Tottenville.

Templars of Liberty of America: Excelsior Temple, No. 10, at Stapleton; Cleveland Temple, No. 20, at Stapleton; Plymouth Rock Temple, No. 28, at New Brighton; Richmond Temple, No. 33, at Port Richmond; Concord Temple, No. 43, at Stapleton; Rosebank Temple, No. 44, at Clifton; Tompkins Temple, No. 45, at Tompkinsville.

Building, Loan and Savings Associations: Edgewater Co-operative Savings and Building Loan Association, at Stapleton; Northfield Building, Loan and Savings Association, at Mariners' Harbor; North Shore Building, Loan and Savings Association, at Port Richmond; Prohibition Park Building, Loan and Savings Association, at Pro-

Digitized by Google

hibition Park; Staten Island Building, Loan and Savings Association, at West New Brighton.

Miscellaneous: German Ladies' Benevolent Society, Tompkinsville; German Mutual Benevolent Society, Stapleton; Philatilic Society, Stapleton; Staten Island Chess Club, Tompkinsville; Staten Island Quartette Club, Stapleton; Staten Island Scheutzen Corps, Stapleton; Young Men's Catholic Lyceum, New Brighton; Young Men's Catholic Union, West New Brighton; Young Men's Christian Association, Tompkinsville; Young Men's Christian Association, Port Richmond.

SILVER LAKE PARK COMMISSION.—The need of a public park has long been felt on Staten Island, although there are thousands of acres, located at various points, which nature seems to have designed for that purpose. Public interest, however, has centered in Silver Lake, and at last, by act of the Legislature, it is decided to convert the beautiful tract of land and water into a public park. The commission, after several changes, now stands as follows: Joseph Tate, President; E. J. Cunningham, J. D. Kohlman, Arthur Hollick and Walter C. Kerr; Theodor S. Oxholm, Chief Engineer; Nathan Barrett, Landscape Architect; George T. Ellett, Secretary.

CHAMBER OF COMMERCE.—The Staten Island Chamber of Commerce was organized on July 1, 1895, and has given a great deal of attention to the business interests of Staten Island. It holds regular monthly meetings. Charles W. Hunt has been its President from the commencement, and Cornelius G. Kolff its secretary.

NATURAL SCIENCE ASSOCIATION.—The Natural Science Association was organized in 1880, with Dr. A. Carroll President, and Arthur Hollick Secretary. It has one of the largest local collections of materials, etc., gathered exclusively on Staten Island, possessed by any similar organization in the country. The Association occupies a room in the Staten Island Academy building, at St. George. Walter C. Kerr is the President, and Arthur Hollick Secretary.

STATEN ISLAND HISTORICAL SOCIETY.—This society was originally organized in 1826, with the Hon. Gabriel P. Disosway as President. It was very active and did a great service to Staten Island in gathering material relative to its early history. It kept up its organization until the sixties.

The society was temporarily re-organized on the evening of Thursday, August 16, 1900, in the old Fountain homestead, at New Dorp (now the residence of Mr. Justus J. Smith), with the following officers: President, Rev. Wilbur Fisk Wood; Vice-President, Ernest Flagg; Treasurer, Justus J. Smith; Secretary, Ira K. Morris; Counsel, Calvin D. Van Name; Incorporators, David J. Tysen, Ernest Flagg, Henry P. Morrison, George Cromwell, Wilbur Fisk Wood, Justus J. Smith, E. C. Bridgman, Theodor S. Oxholm, William H. Steele, Charles H. Blair, Nathaniel J. Wyeth, David H. Cortelyou and Ira K. Morris.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XLIV.

THE BOROUGH OF RICHMOND.

FOR many years past the people of Staten Island have been very restless relative to the local governments under which they were living. There was a conflict of authority and interests between the towns, the villages, and the various localities, and it is but the simple truth to say that local jealousies kept back the hand of progress, and drew a veil over one of the most beautiful and enticing spots on the earth.

There has long been a plan to make a separate city of Staten Island; but, like many a wise measure, it lacked a proper leader and sufficient public interest to enable it to reach a tangible form, in time to prevent the tide of popular opinion from making the success of such a plan impossible.

The Greater New York scheme came to the surface at a time when the people were longing for a change. They wanted something, but did not know exactly what it should be. Very many advocated consolidation through mercenary motives; others in the hope that it would add to the general welfare of the Island and its people, and others still because it was a "fad," so to speak, to be within the limits of the second greatest city in the world!

When the matter finally came up before the people of Staten Island, for their approval or rejection, it became entangled in one of those political tidal waves that sweep over the country occasionally, and decide measures of great moment without regard to reason. People went to the polls and voted in favor of consolidation. Some reasoned that "it can not be worse than it is now, and it *may* possibly be better!" And thus, it was adopted by a majority of over 4,000.

It was a greater change than any one had anticipated. About seventy separate and distinct official boards existed on the Island, such as supervisors, village trustees, assessors, highway commissioners, town boards, etc., and a small army of officials was thus suddenly disbanded and thrown out of employment.

The project of uniting the cities of New York, Brooklyn, and the adjacent territory lying in the counties of Westchester, Queens, Kings and Richmond, was first mooted a score of years ago; but it did not take definite form until 1890. In that year the Legislature passed an act "to create a commission to inquire into the expediency of consolidating the various municipalities in the State of New York, occupying the several islands in the harbor of New York."

Digitized by Google

A commission was appointed, consisting of the Mayor of New York, the Mayor of Brooklyn, the Boards of Supervisors of Westchester, Queens, Kings, and Richmond Counties, to inquire into the expediency of consolidation, and to report their conclusions thereon to the Legislature, with such recommendations as they might deem proper.

Pursuant to the provisions of this act, a commission, consisting of the following members, was appointed: Andrew H. Green, Frederick W. Devoe, John L. Hamilton, and J. Seaver Page, of New York; J. S. T. Stranahan, Edward F. Linton and William D. Veeder, of Brooklyn; John H. Brinkerhoff, of Queens County; George J. Greenfield, of Richmond County; Charles P. McClelland, of Westchester County, and Daniel W. Adams, State Engineer and Surveyor ex-officio, and Albert E. Henschel acting as Secretary.

In 1893, the Commission presented to the Legislature a bill providing for the submission of the question of consolidation to a vote of the residents of the various municipalities proposed to be united into one city. The following year the Legislature provided for the referendum suggested by the Commission, by an act covering this question.

The territory referred to in this act is as follows: "The City of New York, Long Island City, the County of Kings, the County of Richmond, the towns of Westchester, Flushing, Newtown, and Jamaica, and that portion of the towns of Eastchester and Pelham which lies southerly of a straight line drawn from the point where the northerly line of the City of New York meets the centre line of the Bronx river to the middle of the channel between Hunters and Glen Islands in the Long Island Sound, and that part of the town of Hempstead which is westerly of a straight line drawn from the southeasterly point of the town of Flushing, through the middle of the channel between Rockaway Beach and Shelter Island to the Atlantic ocean."

The act also provided that the question should be submitted to a vote at the general election following, a separate ballot-box being provided therefor. The following is the result of the vote: New York, for consolidation, 96,938; against, 59,959. Kings County, for, 64,744; against, 64,467. Queens County, for, 7,712; against, 4,741. Richmond County, for, 5,531; against, 1,505. Mount Vernon, for, 837; against, 1,603. Eastchester, for, 374; against, 260. Westchester, for, 620; against, 621. Pelham, for, 261; against, 153.

At the opening of the Legislature in 1895 the Commission of Municipal Consolidation Inquiries presented a report with a proposed bill declaring the entire district before mentioned (with the exception of the city of Mount Vernon) consolidated with the city of New York. The bill, however, failed of passage because of the addition of an amendment of referendum in the last hours of the session of 1895—too late for further action.

Digitized by Google

Early in January, 1896, the Legislature appointed a joint subcommittee of the Cities Committees of both Houses, to inquire into the subject of the proposed consolidation. It did so on March 1, and favored consolidation. The bill as reported was passed by the Legislature, and was submitted to the Mayors of the cities of New York and Brooklyn, and to the Mayor and Common Council of Long Island City, pursuant to the provisions of the Constitution. The bill was returned to the Legislature without the acceptance of the cities of New York and Brooklyn. The Legislature re-passed the bill over the vetoes of the Mayors of New York and Brooklyn, and it became a law on May 11, 1896, with the approval of the Governor.

"THE RICHMOND," MUNICIPAL BUILDING OF THE BOROUGH OF RICHMOND.

Pursuant to the act of consolidation, Governor Morton appointed on June 9, 1896, the following members of the Commission to draft the proposed charter: Seth Low, Benjamin F. Tracy, John F. Dillon, Ashbel P. Fitch, Stewart L. Woodford, Silas B. Dutcher, William C. De Witt, George M. Pinney, Jr., and Harrison S. Moore. Mr. Fitch having resigned, the Governor appointed Thomas F. Gilroy in his place.

The Commission organized on June 25, 1896, appointed Benjamin F. Tracy President, and George M. Pinney, Jr., Secretary. It also named William C. De Witt, John F. Dillon, Thomas F. Gilroy, Seth Low, Andrew H. Green, Benjamin F. Tracy, and George M. Pinney, Jr., as a committee on draft of the proposed charter, which in due time was presented. It provides for departments as follows: Legislative, the Mayor, Administrative, Boroughs and Local Boards, Board of Public Improvements, Law, Education, Taxes and Assessments, Civil Service, Municipal Statistics, the Tax of 1898, the City Debt, Municipal Ownership, County Officers, etc. After public hearings, the Commission amended and revised the draft, and submitted the same as the proposed charter to the Legislature, on February 13, 1897.

Digitized by Google

The provisions of the act, in which Richmond County was practically interested, were as follows:

I. That in such counties the Boards of Supervisors shall consist of the members of the Municipal Assembly, to be elected as such, and also as Supervisors, by the people of the county.

II. That such Boards of Supervisors may act as County Canvassers, and shall have the power conferred by the Constitution upon Supervisors of subdividing the counties into Assembly districts.

III. That such Boards of Supervisors shall have no other power of local legislation or administration, and shall have no power to create debt.

IV. All other Boards of Supervisors within such counties are abolished from and after January 1, 1898.

The first general election, under the new charter, was held on Tuesday, November 8, 1897. It led to the most memorable contest in the history of Staten Island, so far as the present generation is concerned. Dr. John L. Feeny was the Democratic candidate for President of the Borough, while the Hon. George Cromwell was the Republican candidate. The election was in doubt for fully six months, when the courts decided in favor of Mr. Cromwell.

Benjamin J. Bodine and Joseph F. O'Grady, members of the Municipal Council, and John J. Vaughan, Jr., Alderman, were elected by large majorities on the Democratic ticket. Consequently, the Borough Board is made up as follows: Hon. George Cromwell, President; Hon. Benjamin J. Bodine, Councilman; Hon. Joseph F. O'Grady, Councilman; Hon. John J. Vaughan, Jr., Alderman; Albert E. Hadlock, Secretary; John Cochran, Private Secretary.

Under the new system there is a great variety of offices, almost all of which are filled by appointment by the Mayor. The following are the most important of those which have been appointed for the Borough of Richmond:

DEPARTMENT OF HIGHWAYS.—Hon. Henry P. Morrison, Deputy Commissioner and Chief Engineer; Theodor S. Oxholm, Supervising Engineer; Ellarson Stout, Assistant Engineer; Ira K. Morris, Secretary; William B. Kenney, Chief Clerk; Edward B. Sheeran, Senior Clerk; Mortimer Denyse, Assistant Clerk; Spire Pitou, Jr., Cashier; Moses H. Leman, Permit Clerk. General Inspectors—William F. Hegarty, Cornelius C. Jones, and Harry R. Denyse.

About twenty-five inspectors, ten foremen, and seventy-five to one hundred laborers are also employed in this Department.

DEPARTMENT OF LIGHTING, HEATING AND SUPPLIES.—Hon. Edward I. Miller, Deputy Commissioner; John A. Driscoll, Chief Clerk; J. Louis Garretson, Private Secretary. Three foremen and five inspectors are employed in this Department.

DEPARTMENT OF BUILDINGS.—Hon. Daniel Campbell, Commissioner; James Nolan, Chief Clerk; John J. Vaughn, Superintendent.

Digitized by Google

Stenographers—Daniel Campbell, Jr., and John E. Croak. There are seven inspectors in this Department.

DEPARTMENT OF SEWERS.—Hon. Henry P. Morrison, Deputy Commissioner; Lewellyn W. Freeman, Assistant Engineer; John T. Fetherston, Transitman; George Wood, Draughtsman; Adolph H. Rottmann, Chief Clerk; John Wilt, Secretary. Chief Inspector—John J. Kaltenmeier.

DEPARTMENT OF BRIDGES.—Patrick Larkin, Superintendent; Cornelius J. Lynch, Inspector. Bridge-keepers—John McCabe and Edward E. Vaughan.

DEPARTMENT OF WATER SUPPLY.—Hon. Henry P. Morrison, Deputy Commissioner; Jacques Mersch, Cashier. Inspectors—David C. Butler and Francis N. Miller.

DEPARTMENT OF FINANCE.—Hon. Walter H. Holt, Auditor; Edwin S. Twyford, Deputy Auditor; Ralph Cranmer, Inspector; George Brand, Deputy Collector. Assistant Deputy Collectors — Bernard McDonough, Michael Cahill, Matthew J. Cahill, Abram Greenwald, Reinhardt Kaltenmeier, Jacob Herrell; Deputy Receiver of Taxes—Matthew Tully. Warrant Clerks—James McCabe, John F. Carey, and Otto Stutzbach; Disbursing Clerks—Forest L'G. Wright and Henry A. Cunliffe.

RESIDENCE OF ERNEST FLAGG, ESQ., DONGAN HILLS.

DEPARTMENT OF EDUCATION.—Hon. Hubbard R. Yetman, Superintendent; George Hogan, and Mrs. Anna M. Gordon, Assistant Superintendents. Member of Central School Board—William R. Cole, Stapleton. Local School Board—William R. Cole, President; John T. Burke, George T. Egbert, Thomas J. Flannigan, Frank Perlet, Emil Bottger, Samuel Anderson, Thomas Vaughan, Willis Barton, Franklin C. Vitt, Secretary, Stapleton. Clerks—William S. West, George W. Egbert, Frederick W. Pfaff, and Margaret A. Dermody; Arthur S. Brasefield, Superintendent of Supplies. Inspectors—H. M. Devoe, Stephen A. Thomas, A. E. Schretter, Charles C. Ellis. Samuel R. Brick, Deputy Superintendent School Buildings. John W. Lisk, Fuel Inspector.

Digitized by Google

MUNICIPAL COURTS.—Hon. John J. Kenney, Justice, First District; Francis F. Leman, Clerk; Robert Humphrey, Assistant Clerk; Frank McGoey, Stenographer; Edward Finnerty and Frank Langford, Attendants; Hon. George Stake, Justice, (successor to Hon. Albert Reynaud), Second District; Peter Tiernan, Clerk; William J. Browne, Assistant Clerk; John G. Farrell, Stenographer; James J. Cahill, and Charles Warneke, Assistants.

COURT OF SPECIAL SESSIONS.—Hon. Thomas W. Fitzgerald, Justice; James Seaton, Clerk; John J. Darcey, Court Attendant; John F. Blake, Subpœna Clerk.

BOARD OF CITY MAGISTRATES.—Hon. John Croak, City Magistrate, First District; William C. Casey, Police Clerk; John Redmond, Assistant Police Clerk; Edgar H. Ross, Stenographer; Hon. Nathaniel Marsh, Justice, Second District; Michael Brannan, Police Clerk; John M. Kelly, Assistant Police Clerk; Hugh W. O'Reiley, Stenographer; Henry Brown, Interpreter.

DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH.—John L. Feeny, M. D., Assistant Sanitary Superintendent; J. Walter Wood, M. D., Assistant Registrar of Records; Charles E. Hoyer, Assistant Chief Clerk; Adalaide L. McNamara, Stenographer. There are several inspectors in this Department. Medical Inspectors—Fritz Mechtold, M. D., J. J. Van Rensselaer, M. D., John T. Sprague, M. D. Medical School Inspectors—Edward D. Wisely, M. D., E. J. Callahan, M. D., F. D. E. Revere, M. D., Francis L. Stansky, and Joseph Coffey. Percival K. Nichols, Veterinarian; Frederick W. Kerr, Milk Analyst. Milk Inspectors—James H. Seguine and Louis Wolf.

POLICE DEPARTMENT—EIGHTIETH PRECINCT.—Captain—Daniel Blake. Sergeants—Henry Brand, Joseph Cobb, Joseph H. Cook, Hugh J. Canlon, Edward J. Fulton, Stephen Hannon. Roundsmen—Frank S. Hodge, John Shea, George H. Wilson, Charles Smith, and James E. Devlin.

CORONERS' OFFICE.—George C. Tranter and John Seaver, Coroners; George Mord, M. D., and Stephen E. Whitman, M. D., Coroner's Physicians; Martin Hughes, Chief Clerk; Archibald Fulton, Assistant Clerk; Eugene J. Williams, Stenographer.

DEPARTMENT OF TAXES AND ASSESSMENT.—Henry T. Metcalfe and Andrew Fetherston, Deputy Commissioners; Charles A. Mulligan, Samuel A. Moore, and John A. Minnahan, Clerks.

EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT.—William H. McCabe, Deputy Chief; Felix Hall, Cashier; Michael J. Collins, Deputy City Clerk.

COUNTY OFFICIALS, (not included in Borough Appointments).—Hon. Stephen D. Stephens, County Judge and Surrogate; Hon. Edward M. Muller, County Clerk; Hon. Edward Sidney Rawson, District Attorney; Hon. Augustus Acker, Sheriff; Thomas H. Banning, Under Sheriff; Thomas Kenny, Jr., Stenographer; William Finley, Surrogate's Clerk; C. Livingston Bostwick, Assistant Clerk; Joseph

Digitized by Google

E. Mullins, Assistant Clerk; John Rooney, Court Crier; Edith M. Corson, Stenographer, District Attorney's Office.

DEPARTMENT OF JURORS.— Charles J. Kullmann, Commissioner; William J. Dowling, Deputy; Daniel P. Libby, Clerk.

BUREAU OF ELECTIONS.—Charles A. Jones, Supervisor; Alexander M. Ross, Chief Clerk.

DEPARTMENT OF CHARITIES AND CORRECTIONS.—James Feeny, Commissioner; Thomas Kenny, Sr., Superintendent of Outdoor Relief; Joseph B. Pearce, Jr., Superintendent County Alms House; Dr. Isaac L. Millspaugh, Physician.

A moment's retrospection carries the mind back over the checkered scenes that have formed the history of Staten Island. One epoch follows another in rapid succession, like the changes of a restless panorama, and the years, one after another, fade beyond the mist of time. Amid the countless changes of the centuries, the ambitions and disappointments, and the achievements and failures of our fathers, have all passed on from busy scenes of action, and mayhap mingle with the dust which rests in the urns of their ashes.

OLD HOUSE BY THE MILL, GREEN RIDGE.

God, in His boundless providence, has dealt with liberal hand in the formation of this superb Island. So long neglected that it has been called "a sleeping beauty," it has awakened, we believe, to join the throng that is pushing onward and upward to the great goal of financial prosperity and advanced civilization. Awakened from its long dream of quietude, its tree-crowned hills and grassy plains echo and re-echo the music of the electric bell, while the smoke of busy factories tells the story of labor's honest conquests.

The Hand that holds forever in its hollow the destiny of mankind—the Hand that made the worlds and polished the stars—in it we must place the future of our Eden Island home. In it we must rest our every interest as a people, and trust to its All-wise guidance for peace and prosperity.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XLV.

LOCAL BIOGRAPHY.

CHRISTOPHER ARCHER.—Mr. Archer is a native of England. He is a contracting mason, and resides on Bodine Street, West New Brighton. He was an active participant in one of the most noted events in the military history of the Nineteenth century. He was a member of the Second Battalion, of the English Rifle Brigade, under General Windham, in the memorable Siege of Lucknow, during the Sepoy Rebellion in India, in November, 1857. When the fight commenced there were but sixteen hundred British soldiers to face twenty-five thousand well-drilled and equipped Sepoys. And yet, this little army "kept up the honor and glory of England by preserving communication with Oude, and prevented the enemy from destroying the bridge across the Ganges, whereby they would have cut off all supplies from Lucknow; as well as restraining the Sepoys from cutting up the small detachments of troops that were daily arriving and keeping up communication with Allahabad and Calcutta."

JOHN C. THOMPSON.

One day the Sepoys, in overwhelming numbers, made such a sudden and desperate attack, that, in the retreat of the British to the trenches, officers and men lost all their property, not having time even to strike their tents. The scene in the "entrenched hospital," and the struggle to reach the fort, are matters of history.

Mr. Archer tells the thrilling story in his own quiet way, so often told wherever the English language is spoken, in song and story, of the reinforcements coming to their relief, under Sir Colin Campbell. It was then

Digitized by Google

that the writer of the familiar song, "The Campbells Are Coming," received his inspiration. Mr. Archer was one of the "forlorn hope" that volunteered to perform services in the face of almost certain death—one of the very few that lived to tell the story.

Mr. Archer possesses a medal which Queen Victoria presented to him, as she also did to his comrades, for his services in an event that shook the world. He is naturally very proud of the token of appreciation from his noble sovereign.

OWEN HOWARD BARNARD.—Mr. Barnard was born in Symesbury, Connecticut, in 1830. At the age of nine years he removed to New York City with his parents, and while still a lad, entered the silk house of William H. Dale, determined to learn the business in its minutest detail. That he proved to be a thorough business man is clearly shown by the fact that in time he owned and managed seven factories, and possessed his own vessels to carry his wares across the ocean.

OWEN HOWARD BARNARD.

Mr. Barnard became very wealthy in time, but the reverses that came to him in rapid succession, were more than sufficient to discourage the average man. Five vessels belonging to him, and laden with his wares, went to the bottom of the ocean in the year 1875, and were a total loss.

In 1890, having purchased the Totten estate, near Tottenville, he built a factory, which has ever since been in successful operation. It is now managed by Miss Barnard, a daughter, who has very plainly proven her ability as a business woman. The articles manufactured are exclusively undertakers' supplies.

For a year or so prior to his decease, Mr. Barnard had been in ill health. He had long made his home at Tottenville, where he gained many warm friends by his kindly disposition. He lived a quiet, reserved life; but always took an interest in the welfare of his neighbors and the general prosperity of Staten Island.

In the autumn of 1898 he was removed to one of the leading hospitals of the city, where an operation was performed; but a second effort was deemed necessary, and it cost him his life.

Mr. Barnard died on November 14, 1898, and was buried in Greenwood Cemetery. He was related to Justice Joseph F. Barnard, late of the Supreme Court.

MAJOR CLARENCE T. BARRETT.—Major Barrett was born near Rahway,

Digitized by Google

New Jersey, on August 19, 1840, and is the son of the late John Thorndike and Alice Tynan Barrett. He lineally descends from Humphrey Barrett, who was born in Kent, England, in 1592, came to America with his son, Humphrey, Jr., in 1639, and settled at Concord, Massachusetts. Colonel James Barrett, grandson of Humphrey Barrett, Jr., was in command of the American forces in the first engagement of the American Revolution. He made his stand at the North Bridge, at Concord, on the morning of April 19, 1775, and engaged and repulsed the British troops under General Gage. Captain Nathan Barrett, who commanded a company under his father in this fight, was the great-grandfather of Major Clarence T. Barrett. The latter's father, until his retirement from active business, was connected with the New York Dyeing and Printing Establishment, was a stockholder, and succeeded his older brother, Nathan, as its superintendent.

Major Barrett's parents returned to their home on Staten Island, when he was but a few months old, and he has resided here ever since. He was educated in the schools of the Island, and when a young man began the study of landscape architecture. On the formation of the One Hundred and Seventy-fifth New York Volunteers, he was appointed second lieutenant of one of the Staten Island companies.

MAJOR CLARENCE T. BARRETT.

Major Barrett served with his regiment in the Department of the Gulf. He became its adjutant, and subsequently acted as Adjutant-General of the Third Brigade, Second Division, Ninth Army Corps. He was also aide-de-camp to General Grover, Division commander. He next became acting Adjutant-General on the staff of Major-General William H. Emery, commanding the Nineteenth Army Corps. At the close of the Red River campaign, General Canby having relieved General Banks as department commander, Major Barrett was assigned to his personal staff as aide-de-camp.

He was mustered out of the New York Volunteers, and promoted to captain and aide-de-camp of the United States Volunteers, and as such served on the staff of General Canby until he was honorably discharged, at his own request, in the autumn of 1865. He was promoted to the rank of major by brevet, for gallant and meritorious services during the siege of Spanish Fort, and the assault upon it, and in the assault on Fort Blakeley, during the campaign against Mobile, Alabama, which ended in the capture of that city, and the final surrender of General Taylor's army at Citionelle, in the same State.

Digitized by Google

Major Barrett served in all the campaigns and most of the skirmishes, in the Department of the Gulf, under General Banks, and in the Military Division of West Mississippi, under General Canby. He was in the last contest of the civil war.

Major Barrett came back to his home on Staten Island and resumed the practice of his profession as landscape architect, in connection with sanitary engineering, and in both has been one of the most successful men in the country. Throughout the United States he is considered an authority in both branches of his profession.

Major Barrett's neighbors have repeatedly called upon him to fill public positions. He served as Police Commissioner for seven years, and as Superintendent of the Poor for five. He was school trustee for a number of years, and held various other offices. He is now a trustee of the old Staten Island Dyeing and Printing Establishment, and was formerly President and director of the First National Bank and trustee of the Smith Infirmary. He is a member of the Military Order of the Loyal Legion, and of Tompkins Lodge, No. 471, F. and A. M. He married Miss Anna E., daughter of William D. Hutchings, of New York City.

HON. GUSTAV A. BARTH.

GUSTAV A. BARTH.—Mr. Barth was born in Stapleton, Staten Island, on December 22, 1868. After attending the private schools in his native village, he took the regular course in the Staten Island Academy, from which he graduated with honors. He was repeatedly elected a trustee of the Broad Street Public School, retiring from the office when it was abolished by the City charter. Mr. Barth is the Secretary and Treasurer of the Bechtel Brewing Company. He is the nephew of Mrs. Bechtel.

Notwithstanding while as yet a young man, Mr. Barth's business qualifications were so highly appreciated, that he was elected to the State Assembly in 1896. His course there was not only a credit to himself, but also to the people of the county that selected him. One of the most important issues that came up in the Legislature during Mr. Barth's term, was the annexation of Staten Island to New York City. In one of the numerous debates on this subject, Mr. Barth, in the course of his remarks, said:

"When the question of consolidation was submitted to the people of the territory effected, Richmond County, which I have the honor to represent

Digitized by Google

on the floor of this house, declared itself in favor of this gigantic scheme by a majority of almost four thousand votes. I stand here to-day ready for a second time to voice that pronounced sentiment and expressed wish of my constituency. * * * I say Greater New York is not complete without Richmond County. Greater New York, to become one of the greatest cities on the face of the globe, must also have one of the most perfect and complete railroad terminals on the face of the globe. * * * By way of the great Achter Kill bridge which connects the great West with Staten Island territory, and a line running across this territory leading to the most accessible and most valuable water front property in the world, ten of the greatest trunk lines in the country can be intercepted. All freight consigned to New York can be taken to that wonderful water front, and we have, if you will, receipt, storage and shipment almost simultaneously, or in other words, a complete railroad terminal."

Mr. Barth is actively engaged in every movement effecting the public welfare.

GEORGE BECHTEL.

GEORGE BECHTEL.—Mr. Bechtel was born in Germany in 1840. He came with his parents to America at the age of sixteen months, and in 1851 entered the Grammar School of Columbia College. After finishing his course at that institution, he began an apprenticeship in the brewery which his father had established at Stapleton in 1833. From 1860 to 1865 he occupied the position of superintendent of the establishment. In 1865 he rented the property from his father, and in 1870 purchased his entire interests, becoming the sole proprietor. In the course of a few years he erected the large building which now stands on Richmond road, at the head of Broad street, Stapleton, where the business is still carried on.

Mr. Bechtel was foremost in public and benevolent matters. During the memorable negro riots, in 1861, he sheltered large numbers of those homeless people in the woods, and sent them nourishment daily till the trouble had subsided, a circumstance which the colored people of Staten Island have never forgotten.

On the organization of the Village of Edgewater, Mr. Bechtel was elected Trustee of the Third Ward. From 1871 to 1879 he devoted himself entirely to business, taking little interest in political matters. In 1879 he

Digitized by Google

WILLIAM H. M'CABE.

received the joint nomination of the Republican and Democratic parties. He was yearly re-elected, and during one year served as chairman of the Board. From 1879 to 1883 he also served as trustee of the Village of Edgewater from the First Ward.

Mr. Bechtel's benevolent qualities will long be remembered. He was a man of cordial temperament, and was connected with many associations, societies and clubs, among which were Klopstock Lodge, F. and A. M., the Arion and Liederkranz Societies of New York, and the German Society Erheiterung. He became the largest taxpayer on Staten Island.

Mr. Bechtel married, in 1865, Miss Eva Schoen, of New York City. They had four daughters and one son. Mr. Bechtel died in 1889.

OLD POST ROAD, RICHMOND.

Digitized by Google

READ BENEDICT.—Mr. Benedict was born in New York City in 1834. He is the son of Samuel Ward Benedict, who was born in Danbury, Connecticut, in 1798. He was a direct descendant of Thomas Benedict, who was born in Nottinghamshire, England, in 1617, and came to this country seventeen years after the landing in Massachusetts Bay. He soon removed to Long Island. He established himself in a watch and jewelry business in New York in 1818, first in Broadway, at the corner of Maiden lane, and some time previous to the great fire in 1835 he removed his establishment to the junction of Wall and William streets, where the Custom House now stands.

At that period the first stage or omnibus line had started from in front of his store, and the drivers were accustomed to ask Mr. Benedict if it were time for them to start. At that early date and here it was that "Benedict's time" first became a synonym for the correct time. In 1836, the elder Mr. Benedict purchased from Daniel Winant and Benjamin Brewster their adjoining farms, near Rossville, Staten Island, and removed with his family to that place.

READ BENEDICT.

The old family mansion stood on the Winant place, and at that time was one of the most substantial, as well as one of the oldest houses on the Island. It was erected in the Seventeenth century, and was claimed by Daniel Winant to have been built and occupied by Pietersen De Vries. The walls were built of rough stone and Dutch cement, thick and strong enough to withstand a siege.

The old house was burned to the ground in 1858. After the inside and all the woodwork were consumed the walls remained standing, apparently as firmly and securely as when they were erected, about two hundred years before. Mr. Benedict built a new house on the same site, in which he died in the spring of 1882.

The mother of Read Benedict was Mary E., daughter of Mark Winant, of Rossville. His father, Peter Winant, during the Revolution, although a lad at the time, was obliged to flee to New Jersey, owing to his strong anti-tory sentiments, and returned after the war. Peter Winant was one of the first members from Richmond County to the State Legislature, serving in 1788, and again in 1790 and 1791. He was Supervisor for the Town of Westfield from 1785 to 1787, and served many years as justice of the peace.

Read Benedict has a charming residence on the site of the birthplace of

Digitized by Google

Commodore Vanderbilt, the spacious grounds running from the Manor road to Jewett avenue, West New Brighton. He is the senior member of the well-known firm of Benedict Brothers, jewelers, of New York City. He lives in a quiet, unostentatious manner, but there is no movement in the community for the good of his neighbors that lacks the assistance of his liberal hand. He was one of the founders of Grace M. E. Church at Port Richmond, and is a member of Tompkins Lodge, No. 407, F. and A. M., and other fraternal organizations.

BENJAMIN J. BODINE.—Mr. Bodine was born at Castleton Corners, Staten Island, on January 7, 1848. Abram Bodine, his father, was one of the pioneers of 1849 to the gold regions of California. He spent his boyhood on Staten Island and attended the public schools.

BENJAMIN J. BODINE.

At the age of fourteen Mr. Bodine enlisted in Battery C, Third United States Artillery, Captain D. R. Ransom commanding, and at that time in active service in the Shenandoah Valley, Virginia. He served in the Army of the Potomac, under General Hancock, participating in many of the important battles fought along the Potomac and around Richmond. After the close of the war he went with his battery to the Platte Valley, in Nebraska, where he served in the Indian war then prevailing, until after the surrender of Spotted Tail. He was mustered out of the service in 1866, and returned to his home on Staten Island.

Mr. Bodine formed a copartnership with Mr. John Smith, of Long Island, in 1868, and carried on a fruit commission business in Norwalk, Connecticut. The firm was dissolved in 1872, and Mr. Bodine accepted the position of head salesman in the employ of Messrs. Davis & Mayo, ship chandlers, of Hoboken, New Jersey. In 1876, he again engaged in the fruit business, in company with Mr. George W. Thackery, which he continued for nine years, running a boat between New York, Elizabeth and Port Johnson. In 1885, he became manager of the store of the late Isaac Van Name, in Mariners' Harbor, which he continued until 1890, at which time he received the appointment of Superintendent of the County Alms House.

In 1897, Mr. Bodine was elected to represent the Borough of Richmond in the City Council of Greater New York, and, in consequence, retired from his position at the Alms House. He was elected by a large majority on the Democratic ticket. He is a member of several social organizations.

Digitized by Google

WILLIAM BOWEN.—Mr. Bowen was born in Boston, in 1840, and received his education in the grammar schools of that city. When he was fifteen years of age his family removed to New York. In 1861, he started in business for himself at 31 Broadway. He removed to Staten Island in 1868. He later purchased the Leaycroft homestead on Simonson avenue, Clifton, and entered the real estate business.

Mr. Bowen was appointed Superintendent of the Poor for the Town of Southfield, in 1873, and served for one year to fill vacancy, caused by the death of Captain Coppers. At the expiration of his term he received the Democratic nomination and was elected. He was renominated in 1878, but was defeated by a very small vote. In 1883, he was again nominated and elected.

During the latter term Mr. Bowen made a splendid record for himself as a public official. With the aid of one of the local newspapers, he and its editor made a fight on the mismanagement of the Alms House that eventually led to the complete overthrow of the notorious "Alms House Combine." He failed to receive the nomination again at the hands of the Democracy; but the Republican convention selected him and very many Democrats rallied to his support. He was elected by a safe majority and continued to serve in the office until it was abolished.

WILLIAM BOWEN.

Mr. Bowen has given but little attention to politics of late, giving his whole time to real estate.

GUY STEPHENS BRANTINGHAM.—Mr. Brantingham was born in Springfield, Illinois, in 1858, and came to Staten Island with his parents in 1860, and has resided here ever since. He attended the public schools of the Island for some time, but finally graduated from Trinity School of New York City.

Mr. Brantingham received an appointment in the office of the Staten Island Ferry Company in 1869, and by the year 1881 had served, among other positions, as paymaster and general freight agent. In the latter year he left the Staten Island Ferry Company, and was appointed chief clerk of the floating equipment of the New York, West Shore and Buffalo Railroad. In 1884 he was appointed assistant superintendent of ferries of the West Shore Railroad, and in 1886 was appointed chief engineer of the line.

On May 1, 1899, Mr. Brantingham resigned to accept the position of superintendent of the "Bee line," connected with the Lehigh Valley Rail-

Digitized by Google

GUY STEPHENS BRANTINGHAM.

road, the route being from Perth Amboy, New Jersey, to Portland, Maine. He has superintended the building of forty barges for the company, together with four sea-going tugs, beside several other important vessels.

Mr. Brantingham served two terms as Trustee of the Sixth Ward of New Brighton, the latter of which he was President of the Village. He was serving in that capacity when the office was abolished by reason of the new charter.

BENJAMIN BROWN.—Mr. Brown was born and educated in New York City, and came to Staten Island in 1853, and finished at the public school at Stapleton. He entered politics in 1861, casting his fortune with the Democratic party. In 1869, after one of the old-time political battles, he was elected trustee of the Village of Edgewater, which he held for several years, one term serving as President.

Mr. Brown, in 1876, was elected to the office of Sheriff, and at the expiration of his term, was elected treasurer and collector of the Village of Edgewater, which he held until 1882, when he was re-elected Sheriff. At the expiration of his second term he was appointed Under Sheriff by Sheriff John J. Vaughan, Jr., thus serving nine years as Sheriff and Under Sheriff.

BENJAMIN BROWN.

Digitized by Google

Mr. Brown was a natural fireman, and on several occasions displayed great skill in his work. He organized the Edgewater Fire Department in the days of the "Old Volunteer Fire Department," and was for a time its President and Treasurer. In 1861, he helped to organize the Fifth New York (Ira Harris) Cavalry, and served as its first forage master. He has taken much interest in Building and Loan Associations, and has been the means of helping many a poor man to lay the foundation for a home.

In 1887, Mr. Brown organized Pioneer Lodge, of the Ancient Order of United Workmen, which soon reached a membership of over two hundred persons. His success in this organization led him to go on with the good work, and before he had stopped he had completed the organization of ten lodges.

For several years past Mr. Brown has been carrying on the coal business, having purchased the long-established coal-yard of S. C. Hall, at Stapleton.

ABRAM COLE.

ABRAM COLE.—Mr. Cole was born near Tottenville, Staten Island, in 1856, and belongs to the fourth generation of his family bearing the name of Abram. He comes from a long line of Staten Island ancestors, his great - great - grandfather, Isaac Cole, having been one of the earliest settlers here, and the owner of a large tract of land at Prince's Bay.

Mr. Cole's father died in 1876. He had been the manager of a large lumber and coal business, which he had established in 1857; but at his death the business fell to his sons, who carried it on under the firm name of Cole Brothers, the members of which, beside the subject of this sketch, are his brothers, Jacob W. and James T.

After being educated in the public schools of Tottenville, Mr. Cole took a course of study at the Polytechnic Institute, in Brooklyn. His biographer, writing of him in 1893, said:

"He has always been an active Republican, and, although never courting office, has been, by the urgency of his party, kept almost constantly in office for the past nine years, having been three times elected to the office of town clerk, and for six successive years elected to the office of Supervisor, which office he still holds, of a town almost uniformly polling a Democratic vote at State elections. When Mr. Cole began his first term as Supervisor, he was the youngest man in that position that ever represented his town, and he held the office for more consecutive years than any other

Digitized by Google

man during the present generation. Mr. Cole's strength lies not so much in his politics, as in the fact that he always brings to bear on questions of public policy the same sound principles that he applies to his own business."

Mr. Cole has repeatedly refused nominations for county offices from his party. In 1880, he married Miss Blanche, daughter of Captain Abel Martin, and has two sons, Chester A. and Ralph M.

JOHN LINDERMAN DAILEY.—Mr. Dailey was born at Flemington, New Jersey, in 1853, and was the only son of the Rev. J. P. Dailey, who, in 1874, was appointed pastor of St. Paul's M. E. Church, at Tottenville, Staten Island. His mother was a direct descendant of General Daniel Broadhead, one of Washington's most able and trusted officers during the Revolution. Mr. Dailey has been a resident of Tottenville since 1874, and has always taken a lively interest in public affairs.

JOHN LINDERMAN DAILEY.

Mr. Dailey entered politics when a young man, being a staunch Republican. In 1877, he received the nomination for justice of the peace from both parties in the town of Westfield. He was elected highway commissioner of that town in 1883, and re-elected in 1886, being the only Republican elected in the latter year. In 1885, he ran for Member of Assembly against the late Edward A. Moore, and again in 1889, against Daniel T. Cornell.

On the accession of John H. Elsworth to the office of sheriff, in 1889, Mr. Dailey was appointed Under Sheriff, and continued in the office until the close of Mr. Elsworth's term. In 1891, he received the Republican nomination for Sheriff, and was defeated by one hundred and fifteen votes, notwithstanding Roswell P. Flower, the Democratic candidate for Governor, carried the county by nearly sixteen hundred majority.

Three years later, the Republicans nominated Mr. Dailey again for Sheriff, and he was elected by about seventeen hundred majority. He held the office for the full term, vacating it on January 1, 1898.

Mr. Dailey's thorough business education has proved of good service to the county of Richmond. In whatever position he has held, he has performed his duties so as to win the credit and admiration of all who were associated with him. As Under Sheriff and Sheriff, he was frequently complimented by the presiding judges, as well as by the members of the

Digitized by Google

bar and the grand jury, for the thorough manner in which he performed his work.

EDWARD P. DOYLE.—Mr. Doyle was born at Mariners' Harbor, Staten Island, on June 8, 1860. At the age of twelve years he graduated from the public school at that place. His first position was in a New York ship broker's office, after which he spent eleven years with a wholesale shoe house.

Mr. Doyle entered politics when quite a young man. He was secretary of the Democratic Congressional Convention for this district in 1882, and was chairman of the County convention in 1883. He was elected Member of Assembly for Richmond County in 1885, and was repeatedly elected Supervisor of Northfield, holding the office at the time of its abolishment, in 1897. It was largely owing to his labor that many laws for the protection of fish and oysters were placed on the statute books of the State.

From 1886 to 1892, Mr. Doyle was secretary of the joint commission for fixing the boundary line between the States of New York and New Jersey, and was for many years secretary of the New York Fish Commission, was secretary of the New York Free Trade Club, was the first secretary of the Reform Club and American correspondent of the Cobden Club, is a member of the Reform and Commonwealth Clubs and of the Staten Island Cricket Club. He was also an officer in the Staten Island Produce Company, Aquehonga and Manor Park Land Companies, Northfield and Prohibition Park Building and Loan Associations, Co-operative Building Bank and a trustee of the Richmond County Savings Bank.

HON. EDWARD P. DOYLE.

Mr. Doyle was very active in establishing the Staten Island Electric Railroad Company, and became its general manager on Staten Island. Many other important improvements in our midst can be traced back to Mr. Doyle's busy life.

GEORGE T. EGBERT.—Mr. Egbert was born at Mariners' Harbor, Staten Island, on July 30, 1851. He entered Mount Washington Collegiate Institute, of New York City, when he was twelve years of age. He graduated with high honors, and began his business life with the firm of Gasheric, Emery & Company, 48 Walker street, New York City. He at once displayed ability which enabled him to take full charge of the books of that house.

Digitized by Google

GEORGE T. EGBERT.

Mr. Egbert remained with the firm for about eight years, when he resigned, and in 1876, accepted the position of cashier of the Consolidated Fireworks Company of America, at 9 and 11 Park place, an organization with a capital stock of two and a-half millions of dollars, and the largest manufacturers and exporters of fireworks and celebration goods in the world, having branches in the leading cities, and doing a business of one and a-half millions of dollars annually, their trade extending to Canada, Mexico, South America, Europe and the Sandwich Islands. The principal factories are at Graniteville, Staten Island, and cover over sixty acres. At the annual meeting in 1892, Mr. Egbert, who is a large stockholder, was unanimously elected secretary, a position which he still holds.

Mr. Egbert was one of the charter members of the Northfield Building and Loan Association; he was also a member of the Mariners' Harbor School Board. He is a member of the Summerfield Methodist Episcopal Church, of Mariners' Harbor, and has held every position in the gift of the church.

In 1893, he was made President of the Port Richmond Sewer Commission, which he resigned a year

THOMAS H. HARPER.

Digitized by Google

later to accept the office of trustee of the village. He was elected President of the Board.

JOHN H. ELSWORTH.—Mr. Elsworth was born at Bayonne, New Jersey, in 1843, his father being Captain William Elsworth, one of the leading citizens of that locality. He was educated in the Bayonne public schools, and after graduating entered into business with his brothers, the most extensive oyster planters in this section.

Mr. Elsworth came to Staten Island in 1877, and entered into co-partnership with Captain Peter Polworth, in the oyster-planting business, which was carried on successfully until the firm was dissolved by death.

Mr. Elsworth was a most active political worker since his boyhood, and rendered yeoman service to his party; he always had the ability to make and hold friends in both the Republican and Democratic ranks. In 1888, he received the unanimous nomination of the Richmond County Republican convention for the office of Sheriff, and was elected by about two hundred majority, notwithstanding the fact that Mr. Cleveland had carried the county in the previous year by nearly nineteen hundred majority. His term of office continued through the years 1889-'90-'91, during which time he was frequently complimented by the Supreme Court justices, as well as by the County Judge. At the close of his official term Justice Cullen, of the Supreme Court, and the members of the Richmond County bar, irrespective of their political principles, paid a high tribute to the manner in which Mr. Elsworth had performed his duties.

HON. JOHN H. ELSWORTH.

At the end of his term as Sheriff, Mr. Elsworth was elected County Clerk after one of the most exciting elections known in the political annals of Richmond County. His rival claimed the election, and was finally given the certificate. But Mr. Elsworth did not give up the contest; he carried the case to the Supreme Court, determined to fight "to the finish."

The trial, however, came to a sudden termination, and at the end of six months the office was surrendered, and Mr. Elsworth was sworn in. Three years later he was re-elected by a large majority. He died from the effects of a stroke of paralysis, at his home at Prince's Bay, on April 8, 1899, and was buried in the Moravian Cemetery, at New Dorp.

FRANK FOGGIN.—Mr. Foggin was born in New York City on September

Digitized by Google

16, 1860, and with his father and mother removed to Staten Island in 1862. He attended the Port Richmond Union Free School. He has served in the Port Richmond postoffice for twenty-one years, in various positions. He resigned as Postmaster in 1894, having purchased the largest retail shoe establishment on the Island. He served as clerk of the Town of Northfield during the years of 1887-'88-'89, and clerk to the Town Board of Health during the same years.

Mr. Foggin was elected a member of the Port Richmond Board of Trustees in 1896, and in the following year was elected chairman of the Board, and was, consequently, President of the Village. He was serving in that capacity when the new city charter went into effect. He was re-appointed Postmaster of Port Richmond in 1898, and is still serving in that position beside continuing his shoe trade.

FRANK FOGGIN.

Mr. Foggin was the Republican candidate for Supervisor of Northfield in 1895. He has been a Republican all his life, and has labored very earnestly for party success. He always held the confidence and respect of the rank and file.

Mr. Foggin is a member of Richmond Lodge, No. 66, F. and A. M., Metamora Council, No. 650, A. L. of H., Port Richmond Engine Company, No. 3, and several other organizations.

THOMAS H. HARPER.—Mr. Harper was born near Belfast, Ireland, in 1856. At the age of eighteen he left his native land and came to this country, settling in Brooklyn. In 1879, he came to Staten Island, first locating at Stapleton, but a few years later he removed to New Brighton. In both places he conducted a general provision store. By an upright course in business and social affairs he has won many friends.

Mr. Harper has always taken a lively interest in public affairs, and he has made a very useful citizen. In 1896, he was elected a Trustee of the New Brighton public school, and was re-elected without a dissenting vote. He also served as President of the Board for two years. He was elected Trustee of the First Ward of New Brighton, and served for one and a-half years, going out of office when the new city charter went into effect. At the time of the last election of a President of the Board of Trustees, Mr. Harper was a candidate for that position. Several attempts were made to select a presiding officer, but without effect. The firemen could not get their money, the laborers upon the streets were in great need, and business generally was blocked.

Digitized by Google

Scores of citizens were entreating Mr. Harper to stand; but he reasoned that while he would be very proud of the honor, he could not conscientiously become an impediment to the public interests, and so withdrew from the contest.

CORNELIUS A. HART.—Mr. Hart was born in New Brighton in 1851. After a preliminary course at the public school he attended the academy conducted by Dr. Schenck, in the building now known as Belmont Hall, in New Brighton. In 1868, he commenced a course of study at the New York Commercial College, which he left to enter the importing house of James Reid & Company, of New York City. In a short time he succeeded in raising himself to the highest position in the employ of the firm, passing through every grade in the office, and having nine clerks under his charge at the time of his departure.

CORNELIUS A. HART.

Patrick Hart, the father of Cornelius, had been for many years a prominent and successful contractor on Staten Island. Under his guidance Bard avenue was made one of the most beautiful thoroughfares on the Island, and, under the father's influence, the son became engaged in the business with him. He met with remarkable success.

Mr. Hart's connection with the laying out of streets and with improvements generally, induced him to make numerous investments in real estate. In 1884, he purchased a large tract of land in New Brighton, through which he opened seven avenues, known as Forest, Hart, Sharon, Oakwood, Greenwood, Laurel and University place. The whole is divided into three hundred and fifty city lots, and is known as Hart Park.

Mr. Hart entered politics when a young man. He was elected Trustee of the Second Ward of New Brighton in 1876. In 1878, he was elected County Clerk, and was re-elected in 1881, 1884, 1887, and 1891, thus serving in that important office for fifteen successive years. When he entered the Clerk's Office at Richmond, he found the books and papers scattered about in confusion, and the most valuable historical documents in process of destruction from want of care. He immediately set to work to reform the Department, and his success is a matter of pride to the people of the county.

Mr. Hart served as Police Commissioner for a part of a term, and until the office was abolished by the city charter.

Digitized by Google

On June 23, 1875, Mr. Hart married Miss Hannah Bowman, of New Brighton, whose gentle life endeared her to all, and whose sad death was regretted by the entire community. Mr. Hart is a member of St. Peter's Roman Catholic Church of New Brighton, and is also connected with several clubs and social organizations.

THOMAS HUMPHREY.—Mr. Humphrey was born in Belfast, Ireland, on March 16, 1846. He learned the trade of printer in his native city. In 1863, he came to America, and for a time was connected with *The Union*, a paper published at West New Brighton. In 1864, he enlisted in a New York regiment, and served just a year to the close of the war. He came back to Staten Island and made his home here, and worked for the New York Printing Company, in which William M. Tweed was interested, for a time, and then started an establishment for himself. This did not prove a success, and he gave it up, going back to his trade as a journeyman. Later he started another job printing office, which is now located in Canal street, Manhattan.

THOMAS HUMPHREY.

In 1881, in company with Hans S. Beatty, also from Belfast, Mr. Humphrey started the Richmond County *Sentinel*, at New Brighton, which was finally sold to Erastus Wiman, and consolidated with the Richmond County *Gazette*. Mr. Humphrey was one of the founders of the Staten Island Building and Loan Association, at West New Brighton. He has been very successful in business, and now resides in Manhattan.

JAMES KERR.—Mr. Kerr was born in Chatham, near Detroit, Michigan, on March 20, 1858, and was educated in Toronto, Canada. In 1873, he entered the drug business, and in 1878, graduated from the Ontario College of Pharmacy as a pharmaceutical chemist.

Mr. Kerr established a drug store in Toronto, Canada, when he was but twenty years of age, which he conducted for some time. After a time he came to New York, desiring to locate in business again, and accepted a position as clerk in a drug store in Brooklyn. He was induced by Mr. Johnson, proprietor of a drug store in West New Brighton, to accept a position in his establishment. He was soon admitted to partnership which continued for five years, at which time Mr. Johnson retired, and Mr. Kerr became sole proprietor.

Mr. Kerr was foreman of Medora Hook and Ladder Company, of West

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

New Brighton, for three years, and during that time rendered efficient service to his neighbors.

Mr. Kerr is a member of Richmond Lodge, No. 66, F. and A. M., Tyrian Chapter, No. 219, R. A. M., and also of the Order of Odd Fellows. He was twice elected to the office of Trustee of the Fourth Ward of New Brighton, and served during the year 1897 as President of the Village. It was during his administration that the electric system of railroads was introduced on the Island, and he did much to make it a success.

WILLIAM H. MCCABE.—Mr. McCabe was born in Albany, New York, in 1841, his father having left Quebec, Canada, during the rebellion of 1837, because of the unjust taxation which the Government placed upon the people at that time. His people were Irish, and many generations before had the honor of being among the early settlers of that ancient city. William remained in Albany until he was nineteen years of age, in the meantime having been sent a portion of the time to Quebec to school. Shortly after graduating he came to New York, where he commenced business as a contractor.

JAMES KERR.

In 1878, Mr. McCabe came to Staten Island, and has resided here ever since. He was appointed superintendent of the barrel yards of the Standard Oil Works at Constable Hook, opposite New Brighton, where he had full charge of the cars and all transportation of material. This position he held, to the perfect satisfaction of the company, for nineteen years. He resigned about three years since, and accepted a position with the Staten Island Electric Light Company, which, after six months' service, he resigned on account of ill health.

Mr. McCabe served as Trustee of the Fifth Ward of New Brighton from 1892 to 1896, being three times elected. He now holds the position of Deputy Chief Marshal of the Bureau of Licenses for the Borough of Richmond.

During the Civil War, Mr. McCabe was three years in the Union Army, participating in several of the main battles.

LEWIS HENRY MEYER.—Mr. Meyer was born at Bremen, in October, 1815, and was the son of Theodore Meyer, a prominent ship owner, of New York City, who at the time of the son's birth was engaged in the operation of a line of packets between that city and Bremen.

Digitized by Google

At the age of five months Mr. Meyer came to America in a vessel under the command of Captain, afterward Commodore, Perry, then in the employ of the elder Meyer. The passage was accomplished in the extraordinary short period of one hundred and seven days—just twenty-one days shorter than any previous voyage—a fact which the owner at the time attributed to reckless sailing.

Mr. Meyer attended school in New York City until 1828, when he went to Bremen, where he remained until 1836. There he completed his college life, and came back to New York in 1840, and engaged in business as a broker, remaining until 1858, under the firm names of Meyer, Hupeden & Co., Theodore Meyer, Sons & Co., Meyer, Schoene & Co., and Meyer & Stucken.

THOMAS R. EAGLESON.
("Thomas W. Keane.")

Between 1850 and 1857, having sold large amounts of American securities in European markets, many of which failed to pay interest, Mr. Meyer turned his attention in 1858 to the protection of European friends. Besides bringing numerous suits against repudiating cities and counties, and compelling them to respect their creditors, he succeeded in placing several railroads in the hands of receivers and reorganizing them after foreclosure. This he did with the Milwaukee and Mississippi (later Milwaukee and Prairie Du Chien, now owned by the Milwaukee and St. Paul); the Pittsburgh, Fort Wayne Railway Company, and the Chicago and Mississippi (now the Chicago and Alton).

Mr. Meyer also represented large interests in the Ohio Central, Scioto and Hocking Valley, Alabama and Tennessee River, Atlantic and Great Western, Kansas Pacific, Mississippi, Kansas and Texas, Steubenville and Indiana, New Orleans and Mobile, and others, most of which he was instrumental in foreclosing and reorganizing. He finally became President of the Fort Wayne Railway Company.

Mr. Meyer organized the Staten Island Savings Bank, and was its President for ten years. He was a public spirited and courteous gentleman, and took a lively interest in all that counted for the welfare of Staten Island. He had one of the handsomest residences in the county, at Clifton. His hospitality to the needy will long be remembered by the people of the Island. Mr. Meyer died at his home in 1898.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XLVI.

LOCAL BIOGRAPHY—CONCLUDED.

DAVID NEILSON MELVIN.—Mr. Melvin lineally descends from Sir James Melvin, page to Mary, Queen of Scots. He is the son of the late David Melvin, a native of Paisley, Scotland, a graduate from the University of Glasgow, and a successful paper and card manufacturer of Oxford, England. He was also a notable figure in the temperance movement in Great Britain. He assisted in organizing the Paisley Youths' Total Abstinence Society in 1832, the first organization of total abstainers from alcoholic beverages in the United Kingdom. When he died he was the only survivor among the original members. He continued to be prominent in this movement up to the time of his death; was a Radical in politics, and was a prominent member of the Congregational Church in Glasgow.

DAVID NEILSON MELVIN.

Mr. Melvin was born in Glasgow, Scotland, on July 21, 1840, and has been a resident of the United States since 1867. He was educated in private schools and the Andersonian University of Glasgow, Scotland, and served several years as an engineer and draughtsman, with Messrs. Crawhall & Campbell, the eminent engineers and tool makers. A little later he designed fireproof buildings for some of the largest sugar-refining houses in Scotland, as well as machinery for the sugar business in Cuba and the West Indies. He also purchased an interest in paper mills near Oxford, England, and successfully operated them until the abolition of the British tariff on paper made the business unprofitable. He then followed his profession for some time in Manchester and Birmingham, England.

Digitized by Google

Mr. Melvin has been superintendent of the extensive works of the American Linoleum Manufacturing Company, at Linoleumville, in this Borough, since 1874. He enjoys an extensive reputation, both as an inventor and as a mechanical and civil engineer. During the year of his arrival in this country he obtained a patent for an improved steam boiler. He has also taken out other patents, including important ones connected with the manufacture of linoleum. He is the patentee of the new process of manufacturing "inlaid" linoleum.

Forming a connection with T. A. Weston, inventor of the differential chain-pulley, he came to the United States in 1867 and opened an engineering office in Buffalo. Subsequently, for four years, he followed his profession in the Michigan lumber region, where he erected some of the largest lumber Mills. In 1873, he formed a connection with Frederick Walton, the inventor of linoleum, and erected the large works for its manufacture on Staten Island. When the works were completed, he succeeded Mr. Walton as their superintendent, and has carried on the business since. In 1888, when the Walton patents expired, he invented what is known as inlaid linoleum. These goods, which are very popular, are manufactured exclusively under his patents.

JAMES WHEELER.

Mr. Melvin is a member of the American Society of Civil Engineers, and was one of the original members of the American Society of Mechanical Engineers, of which he is also a life member.

Mr. Melvin resides on the Old Stone road, south of New Springville, where he and Mrs. Melvin have a home garnished with all that refinement and culture may dictate for their pleasure and comfort as well as for their many friends.

Hon. Henry Prentice Morrison.—Mr. Morrison was born in Troy, New York, on January 14, 1858. His early schooling was received in New York City, and he graduated in 1873. He then entered Clark's Academy, from which he graduated in 1876. He immediately entered the University of the City of New York as a freshman, graduating in 1880 with the degrees of Bachelor of Science and Civil Engineer. While an under-graduate he was twice elected President of the Philomatheon Society, a member of the Psi-Upsilon Fraternity, and was selected by the faculty to represent the University in oratory at the inter-collegiate contest of 1880, receiving second award at the contest, there being ten colleges represented.

Digitized by Google

Shortly after his graduation from the University, Mr. Morrison received a position with John S. Bogart, then secretary of the American Society of Civil Engineers, as secretary to that gentleman. Ill health, however, compelled Mr. Morrison to seek active field work, and he secured an engagement on the Eastern Shore Railroad of Maryland, where he remained until he received an appointment in the Department of Public Works of New York City, being assigned to the Bureau of Sewers.

Mr. Morrison engaged in sewer engineering for eighteen months, when he was promoted and transferred to the Paving Department, becoming first assistant to Horace Loomis, chief engineer in charge of paving. For the past seven years Mr. Morrison has made a specialty of paving and road building, refusing all offers that might lead him to abandon his special class of work. He has planned, estimated for, and performed the engineering work on over six millions of dollars' worth of pavement of all classes, an experience in that line such as few engineers in the United States have had. A large private clientage has also been built up, among whom are some of the heaviest quarry and iron contractors in the country.

JAMES E. MULLIGAN.

Mr. Morrison was appointed engineer of county roads for Richmond County, in the spring of 1893, and the skill he displayed has been keenly appreciated by the taxpayers of the Island. He took up a great deal of unfinished work and disentangled much that had impeded the progress of the work. One of the chief benefits derived from Mr. Morrison's administration is the cutting down of the price of general repairs from forty-eight cents per square yard to about twenty-four cents. Many similar important reforms have been accomplished throughout the Department.

Mr. Morrison has a delightful home on upper Broadway, West New Brighton, where he entertains his friends.

JAMES E. MULLIGAN.—Mr. Mulligan was born in Columbia County, New York, in 1845, and was the eldest son of Edward Mulligan. Soon after his birth his family removed to Troy, his father being in the employ of the New York Central and Hudson River Railroad. The family removed to Staten Island in 1853, and James, being eight years of age, was sent to the New Brighton public school, of which he was afterward trustee for seventeen years.

Mr. Mulligan formed a co-partnership in 1874 with Paul F. Brazo, in the

Digitized by Google

painting, decorating and paper-hanging business, at New Brighton. In 1881, the firm extended its business to Long Branch, New Jersey, where it established a store, and now employs about seventy-five men. They have also established a third store at Seabright.

Mr. Mulligan served as a member of the Castleton Excise Board for a term, and refused re-election. He was in favor of high license, but stood alone in the Board. In 1890, he was appointed a member of the Board of Health of New Brighton, and became its President, which he resigned in 1892, to fill a vacancy in the Board of Supervisors. At the expiration of this term he was elected for a full term, which he served with honor and credit.

In 1894, Mr. Mulligan was appointed Postmaster of New Brighton, and made many warm friends by his kindness and courtesy to the patrons of the office. He retired from this position on September 1, 1898, having served four years and five months.

JOHN B. NEWHALL.

JOHN B. NEWHALL.—Mr. Newhall was born at Randolph, near Boston, Massachusetts, on March 9, 1855. When he was two years old, his father moved to South Boston, where, in the course of time, the lad attended the public school. His father died when the son was but seven years old, and his mother when he was nine. He was sent to Farmington, Maine, and became an inmate of the Abbott family, where he remained until he was seventeen years of age, and then went back to Boston and learned the trade of wood-moulder.

Much to his regret, Mr. Newhall had been compelled to leave school, and he very keenly felt his deficiency in the general knowledge essential to a useful life; and, although he worked all through the day, he went to evening school, studied hard, and in time graduated with honors. This put him on his feet, but he kept right on studying. He entered the employ of the Whilton Machine Company, of South Boston, where he was soon given responsible positions; he was placed in full charge of the manufacture of hydrants, water gates, etc. At that time he became a member of the Society of Mechanical Engineers, in which he still retains his membership.

Mr. Newhall travelled through the country considerably, in the interest of the company which he was serving in South Boston. Later he went back to Maine, and held the position of general superintendent of a syndi-

Digitized by Google

cate of water works, there being five in number. This position he held to the great satisfaction of the company for a number of years. He resigned the position in 1892, to come to Staten Island, where he became superintendent and stockholder of the Crystal Water Works. His ability as a manager in this line may be fully appreciated when it is known that the company served eleven hundred consumers in 1892, and that when he left it it had two thousand five hundred and fifty.

Mr. Newhall has made many warm friends on Staten Island by his manly mode of treating people in social and business circles, and Staten Island is pleased to have him for one of its citizens.

THEODOR S. OXHOLM.—Mr. Oxholm was born at Fort Willets Point, New York, on June 29, 1866. His father, C. W. E. Oxholm, was the resident engineer at that post for twenty-two years, and designed and constructed the fort which guards that important part of the harbor of New York.

THEODOR S. OXHOLM.

Mr. Oxholm attended school at St. Paul's, at Garden City, and at Flushing Institute, both on Long Island, and is also a graduate of Cooper Institute, where he took the scientific course and received the degree of C. E. In May, 1884, he was assistant to the New York City Surveyor, and in July was appointed rodman in the Department of Public Works, New York City, and later as leveller and transitman, and did service on the Quaker Bridge and other reservoirs in the Croton water shed.

In 1888-'9, he was in the Water Purveyors' and Sewer Bureaus, where he had charge of the surveys of the Washington Bridge road. In 1889, he was assistant on the Spuyten Duyvil canal, under the United States Government. The same year he returned to the Department of Public Works, and had charge of all grades for street pavements, involving the expenditure of six millions of dollars, and for cable railroad and other track construction in New York City, north of Fourteenth street. In 1892, he was the engineer in charge of the construction of three hundred thousand dollars' worth of asphalt and granite block pavements in the city of Yonkers, the work still standing in almost perfect condition.

Mr. Oxholm resigned and came to Staten Island in January, 1894, when he was appointed chief engineer of New Brighton. He continued to hold this position until the office was abolished by the city charter. He was

Digitized by Google

then appointed supervising engineer in charge of Highways, Sewers and Water Supply for the Borough of Richmond.

He has designed and built steel girder and stone highway bridges, heavy retaining walls, systems of sewers, many miles of macadam pavements, several miles of cement sidewalks, curbs and gutters, and has travelled extensively throughout the Western and Southern States, with the object of acquiring knowledge of the sanitary disposal of garbage. His report and recommendations have been adopted.

In 1897, Mr. Oxholm was admitted to full membership in the American Society of Civil Engineers. Among the offices held by him during the past few years, were chief engineer of all new construction of the New York and Staten Island Electric Railroad Company, and resident engineer in charge of the improvement of about four hundred acres of land on Staten Island, which is being developed by a company, and chief engineer to the Richmond County Park Commissioners.

Mr. Oxholm has a delightful home on St. Austin's place, New Brighton. In 1894, he married Miss Louise Be Vier Deyo, of Yonkers.

CORNELIUS F. TIMPSON.

CORNELIUS F. TIMPSON.—Mr. Timpson was born in New York City, on October 12, 1834, of old Knickerbocker stock. His grandfather, Thomas Timpson, was born in England in 1760. He married Lady Van Thorne. They were the first settlers in that part of Westchester County known as Timpson. He owned a large estate, and erected a church edifice at his own expense. Timpson station, on the New York and Portchester Railroad, is on his estate. His father was Colonel Charles White Timpson, who commanded the famous New York Greys, and was one of the largest wholesale drygoods merchants in New York City. His old residence still stands at Warwick, Orange County. Colonel Timpson and General Washington and other leading men of his day, were on the most intimate terms. He was once Speaker of the House of Representatives.

Cornelius F. Timpson was educated at the Mechanic Society School in New York City, and at the age of sixteen entered the drygoods house of Stone, Starr & Company, where he remained until 1856, when he entered the Continental Bank, in the same city, filling various positions from clerk to cashier. He resigned in 1881, after twenty-five years' service. He was presented with two handsome testimonials.

Digitized by Google

After retiring from the Continental Bank, Mr. Timpson formed the banking house of Timpson & Gillespie, and later was a member of the firm of C. J. Osborne & Company, bankers, and later still of the firm of C. F. Timpson & Company. He retired from business about 1890, and died on August 21, 1897, aged sixty-five years. His remains were interred in the Moravian Cemetery at New Dorp.

Mr. Timpson married a granddaughter of General Hawthorne, of Revolutionary fame, who resides with her daughter, Mrs. Dickerson, at St. George.

CAPTAIN G. D. S. TRASK.—Captain Trask was born at Martha's Vineyard, Massachusetts, on May 14, 1837. He is a descendant of Osmond Trask, one of the early settlers of Salem, in that State. He received a preparatory course at Fairhaven, Massachusetts, and completed his education at Hamilton Collegiate Institute, at White Plains, New York.

After a brief trial of mercantile pursuits, he shipped for a voyage around Cape Horn, and began his seafaring experience. In six years, while engaged in the Atlantic, Pacific and Mediterranean trades, he passed through the grades of sea-service from before the mast to master. He commanded successively and for a number of years, the ships "Switzerland," "Manchester," "Carrier Dove," and "General McClellan," all well-known vessels, sailing out of the port of New York. He was later employed in the management of vessels, and was for several years a marine surveyor for the New York Board of Underwriters.

CAPTAIN G. D. S. TRASK.

Captain Trask became a member of the New York Marine Society, in 1857, and was for many years its treasurer; and since 1878 a member of the New York Chamber of Commerce. In 1884 he was appointed Governor of the Sailors' Snug Harbor, which position he resigned in 1898. Soon after assuming the duties of the position, he set to work making improvements in the institution, both in its character and appearance, displaying rare ability. Scarcely a nook or corner of this wonderful home for the worn-out men of the sea, but speaks to-day of Governor Trask's genius. His theory that surroundings which appeal to cultivated and refined natures must favorably affect all who come within such influence, was manifested in the added and improved buildings and the beauty of the grounds surrounding them, fields and pastures being transformed into

Digitized by Google

parks and gardens, so designed as to render the whole place harmonious and tasteful. Governor Trask was, in his management, a disciplinarian, and believed a strict enforcement of rules, and the maintenance of exact system in every department, to be essential to the welfare of the beneficiaries and the credit of the institution, as well as for the best interest of the neighborhood.

One of the greatest evils which Governor Trask had to face, on assuming charge of the Harbor, was the buying and selling of the votes of the inmates at elections—the purchasable element being sufficient to turn the political scales of the county. This practice had become notorious, and was an outrage upon the honest voters. In dealing with this evil, Governor Trask did not shrink from the responsibility which devolved upon him; but enforced the orders of the Board of Trustees with firmness and fidelity, though his life was threatened and his good name assailed.

W. H. B. TOTTEN.

Governor Trask is entitled to full credit for his successful efforts to break down the nonsensical myths that have so long veiled the truthful history of the Sailors' Snug Harbor. More vague fabrications have been written about this institution and its founder, we believe, than of any other public matter in the country; and the reason for this is, that not until Governor Trask succeeded in getting at the official records, and writing the story in an intelligent manner, was the truth attainable.

At the election of officers of the Marine Society, in January, 1900, Governor Trask was elected its President, and consequently became a trustee of the Sailors' Snug Harbor. Having the interests of the institution at heart, he entered upon the duties of the position in the same earnest manner that characterized his administration as Governor.

WILLIAM HENRY BRACKETT TOTTEN.—Mr. Totten is the son of Abraham Cole Totten and Mary Brackett. He was born at Tottenville, on February 14, 1831, and attended the district school in that village until he was sixteen years of age. He then entered Woodbridge Hall, at Perth Amboy, New Jersey, where he finished his education.

Mr. Totten resided at Tottenville until 1850, when he went to New York City and embarked in the grocery business. He was married to Miss Sarah B. Castree, daughter of John Castree, in 1856. He retired from the grocery business in 1858, and became a commission merchant.

Digitized by Google

In January, 1895, Mr. Totten was elected President of the Irving Savings Institution, over which he still presides. Mr. Totten is very much interested in Staten Island, and is always among those who are doing something for the advancement and welfare of his native home.

ALBIN WARTH.—Mr. Warth was born at Kuppenheim, Baden, on April 6, 1821, and was the son of Hon. Peter Warth, who held the position of Burgermeister.

The son received an education in the schools of his native city, and afterward served an apprenticeship as a locksmith. His father died when the lad was but thirteen years of age, and, he not only supported himself, but cared for his mother throughout the remainder of her life.

He became an inventor at an early age, a tricycle being among his first productions. In 1845, he formed a co-partnership and established a factory at Leipsic, where he manufactured weighing-machines.

"His participation in the movement of '48," says his biographer, "had the merit of leading him eventually to a country where a spirit of progress existed congenial to his nature. He enlisted in the rebel ranks, and was the man who defended Robert Blum, the statesman, from the insults of the Peters Church at Leipsic."

ALBIN WARTH.

Mr. Warth participated in the exciting events of that period, and with difficulty, being pursued by the authorities, made his way into Hassen, and thence to Baden. He went to Switzerland, where he commenced the manufacture of scales. Refusing to submit to a conspiracy, in which an attempt at extortion was made against him, he was banished to Canton Wallis, where he requested his passport, and came to America.

Finding this country well supplied with inventions similar to his own, Mr. Warth contented himself with working as a mechanic in Newark, New Jersey, until 1854, when he invented a self-acting lathe for turning all regular forms of wood. It inaugurated the era of cheap furniture.

Mr. Warth was a natural inventor, and in time took out over one hundred and fifty patents, among which are those on the machines used by the Messrs. Faber, in manufacturing lead pencils. He also invented the locked-can for carrying petroleum, a machine for dyeing wall paper, improvements in sewing-machines, fire-escapes, rotary-pump, cloth-cutting apparatus, and many other pieces of machinery.

Digitized by Google

Mr. Warth established his business in Stapleton in 1856, which is now conducted by his sons. He also made Stapleton his residence from that year until his death, on May 7, 1892. He was a member of several local social organizations. He left a widow, three sons and two daughters.

HENRY WARTH.—Mr. Warth was born in New York City, on April 6, 1853, and was the eldest son of the late Albin Warth, of Stapleton, having resided here since 1856. He was associated with the father, the noted inventor, for many years. He inherited his father's inventive genius, but has spent most of his time in the commercial branch of the business.

Mr. Warth contributed very materially in the perfecting of the celebrated cloth-cutting machine, and has continued to inprove it since his father's death. He has rendered similar service in connection with many ingenious devices contrived for use in orthopedic surgery. He became manager of the establishment many years ago, and continues at its head to-day.

HENRY WARTH.

Mr. Warth was married, in April, 1883, to Miss Mary Louise Hendrickson, of Albany, she belonging to an old Dutch family, the founder of which in America emigrated from Holland to New York in early Colonial days. Mr. and Mrs. Warth have two sons and two daughters—Albin Henry, Charles Edward, Selma Louise and Elsie.

JOHN WESTBROOK.—Mr. Westbrook was born in England, in 1832, but spent several years of his early life in Scotland. He first came to America in 1851; but prior to 1867, when he settled here permanently, had twice visited this country. After his settlement here, Mr. Westbrook studied block-cutting for a year, and then started in business for himself, and has met with great success. He has a factory of considerable importance, on Broadway, West New Brighton, near his residence, and employs several expert mechanics.

Mr. Westbrook's social and business career has won for him the respect and esteem of the community. He served for five years as trustee of the West New Brighton public school, and resigned the position. He is President of the Richmond County Savings Bank, which position he has held for the past ten years; he has also held the office of President of the Staten Island Building and Loan Association, (said to be the oldest organization of its class in the State, now in its twenty-fifth year). He is also a director of the First National Bank, President of the Burns Association,

Digitized by Google

and has held the office of Treasurer of Richmond County Lodge, No. 88, I. O. of O. F., for the past twenty years.

JAMES WHEELER.—Mr. Wheeler was born in Dublin, Ireland, on the 4th of July, 1843. He came with his parents to America in 1845. They settled on Staten Island on their arrival. Mr. Wheeler first went to school in the little old building that used to stand directly opposite the Church of the Ascension, West New Brighton, and when the public school building on Elizabeth street was opened, in 1851, he was among the children that attended there on the first day. While still in his "teens" he left school to learn the trade of carpenter, and served his apprenticeship with R. P. Smith, a well-known builder, residing in Port Richmond in those days. In 1869, he started in the building business for himself, and has carried it on successfully ever since.

Mr. Wheeler has always taken an interest in public affairs. He served as trustee of the Third Ward of New Brighton during the years 1878 and 1879 and was elected County Treasurer in 1894, serving during the three years following and until the office was abolished. He has also been the secretary of the Staten Island Building and Loan Association since 1881.

JOHN WESTBROOK.

JAMES WILKINSON.—Mr. Wilkinson was born in Lancashire, England, in 1808. He graduated from the schools of his homeland, and also studied portrait painting there. At eighteen years of age, in 1826, he came to America, and entered the Old Staten Island Dyeing and Printing Establishment, at Factoryville, as manager of one of the departments, where he remained until later, when he formed a copartnership with John Crabtree, under the firm name of Crabtree & Wilkinson, and conducted a silk factory that stood at the Hessian Springs, New Brighton, (now owned by John Irving & Company). Over one hundred men were employed. On the death of Mr. Crabtree, Mr. Wilkinson became sole owner of the factory, and continued the business as James Wilkinson & Son. Stephen, the son alluded to, continued the business a few years after his father's death, which occurred in 1870. The factory was purchased by John Irving in 1881.

In 1832, an English syndicate built the dwellings now standing on Richmond terrace, east of Westervelt avenue and for some distance past the Pavilion Hotel, at New Brighton. One of these structures, now familiarly

Digitized by Google

known as the Mansion House or Windsor Hotel, was purchased by Mr. Wilkinson in 1849, when the upper stories were added to it. It is now occupied by his grandson, Dr. William B. Wilkinson, one of the most successful physicians on the Island.

The venerable widow of James Wilkinson died in 1896, and the two are interred in Fountain Cemetery, West New Brighton.

HON. HUBBARD R. YETMAN.—Mr. Yetman was born in Monmouth County, New Jersey, in 1847, and was educated at Monmouth Hall, Freehold. He left school, however, when scarcely fifteen years of age, and enlisted in the Fourteenth New Jersey Volunteers, then being organized near his home, and served for a time as a drummer. He was afterward appointed adjutant's clerk. The Fourteenth was well known as one of the fighting regiments of the Army of the Potomac, and Mr. Yetman was in all its engagements. He was once wounded. He remained with the regiment until its muster out at the close of the war.

On his return from the army, Mr. Yetman came to Staten Island and settled at Tottenville. He at once took up his studies where he had left off, to go to war, and after a time took up the profession of teacher in the public schools, spending about fifteen years at that work. During this period he was repeatedly elected justice of the peace and school trustee, and carried on a large real estate and insurance business.

Mr. Yetman was elected on the Democratic ticket to the State Assembly in 1888, and was re-elected in 1891 and 1892. Many important laws were enacted for Richmond County during Mr. Yetman's service in the Legislature, among which were an act to settle the boundary line between New York and New Jersey; to establish a county board of assessors; to establish a county board of excise commissioners; to change the senatorial and congressional districts; to tax the property of the Sailors' Snug Harbor; to amend the laws relating to water supply for villages; to extend the terms of supervisors; to extend the terms of police commissioners; to increase the county police force; to cede property at Fort Wadsworth to the United States, and to create a police pension fund.

Mr. Yetman was elected School Commissioner in 1893; but as a contest was made for the possession of the office, he gave it up, rather than have a question as to his title. He was elected Supervisor for the town of Westfield. in 1897, and served until the office was abolished. He was appointed by Mayor Van Wyck, Superintendent of the public schools of the Borough of Richmond, in 1898, and continues in that office at the present time.

Digitized by Google

INDEX.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

INDEX.

Achter Cull.....I., 5, 68, 357
Acker, Augustus.....II., 335
Acts for removal of Quarantine.....II., 376
Adams, John.....I., 144, 173, 188, 217, 228, 323
Adams, Samuel.....I., 188, 189
Adams, Dr. M. L.....II., 344
Aiken, Moses.....I., 321
Albany .....I., 4, 27, 71, 115
Alden, Capt. Judah.....I., 239
Algernon .....I., 412
Allen, Daniel B.....II., 237
Allen, Lieut.-Col. Isaac.....I., 224, 266
Almshouse, New.....II., 434
Almshouse records.....II., 432
Almshouse evils and reform.....II., 436
Alricks, Lieutenant-Governor.....I., 62
Alston, David.....I., 321
Alston Family.....II., 53
Althouse, John.....I., 240
Amboy road.....I., 40
American Loyalists.....I., 318
A. M. E. Zion church.....II., 301
Amherst, Sir Jeffery.....I., 155
André's will, Major John.....I., 298
Andros, Major Edmond.....I., 69, 102
Andros, Governor.....I., 137
Androvette family.....II., 54
Androvetteville .....I., 413
Androvette's Hill.....I., 378
Annadale .....II., 442
Ansley, Ozias.....I., 332
Anthon, John and William H.....II., 336
Anthon, Prof. Charles.....I., 311
Anti-Leislerians.....I., 72
Appleton, Daniel L.....II., 238
Appleton, John A.....II., 237
Aquehonga Man-ack-nong.....I., 1, 8, 28, 64
Aquehongas.....I., 15, 85, 104
Aquehonga Lodge.....II., 272
Arbutus Lake.....I., 388
Archer, Christopher.....II., 495
Arentsville .....I., 413
Armstrong, Richard.....I., 332
Arnold, Gen'l Benedict.....I., 163, 268, 298
Arrochar .....I., 32
Arrowsmith family.....II., 54
Arrowsmith, Capt. Thomas.....I., 157
Asbury church.....II., 297
Aspinwall, General Lloyd.....I., 139
Aspinwall, William H.....II., 237
Auchmuty, Rev. Dr.....I., 286
Aunt Gertie's Hill.....I., 379
Austin House.....II., 160
Auten, James W.....II., 197
Aycrigg, Major.....I., 278

Bad roads.....II., 451
Baker, Dr.....II., 342
Baker's Field.....I., 389
Baldwin, Luther.....I., 303
Bancker, Adrian.....I., 197, 199
Bank of Staten Island.....II., 460
Baptist churches.....II., 310
Barbarie, Capt. John.....I., 268, 332
Barnard, Owen H.....II., 496
Barnard, Judge Joseph F.....II., 329
Barnes' Creek.....I., 361
Barnes family.....II., 54
Barnes, George.....I., 121, 198, 332
Barnes, Joshua.....I., 332
Barnes' Lead.....I., 373
Barnes, Major John.....I., 265
Barnett, Judge George C.....II., 237
Barrett, Major C. T.....II., 496
Barrett, Nathan.....I., 122
Barrett, Nephews & Co.....II., 469
Barrett's Pond.....I., 383
Barth, Gustav A.....II., 498
Barton's or Seaver's Creek.....I., 361
Barton, Mr. Willard.....I., 298
Barton, Lieut.-Col. Thomas.....I., 224, 226, 332
Barton, Lieut.-Col. Joseph.....I., 264
Barton, Samuel.....II., 237
Bass Creek.....I., 362
Battle Hill.....I., 379
Battle Row.....I., 413
Baxter's Ledge.....I., 372
Bay City.....I., 411
Bayley, Richard.....I., 333
" Bay and Port of New York ".....I., 355
Bay View Post office.....I., 411
Beach avenue.....I., 401
Beacon Light Lodge.....II., 273
Beardsley, Rev. John.....I., 333
Beatty family.....II., 55
Beatty, Ned.....I., 315
Be Bow, James.....I., 333
Bechtel, George.....II., 499
Bedell, Bishop.....I., 45
Bedell, Cornelius.....I., 121, 333
Bedell family.....II., 55
Bedell, Freeman.....I., 333
Bedell Homestead.....II., 164, 219
Bedell, Israel D.....I., 202
Bedle, John.....I., 333
Belmont Hall.....II., 195
Belvealle, Hester G. H.....I., 51
Belvealle, John I. B.....I., 51
Benedict's Creek.....I., 363
Benedict, Read.....II., 501
Benham, Andrew E. K.....II., 199
Benham's Brook.....I., 364
Benham Mansion.....II., 172
Benham, Timothy Greene.....II., 198
Bentley .....I., 413
Bentley Dock Road.....I., 402
Ben Williams' Haunted Swamp.....I., 387
Bergen hill and Point.....I., 6, 91

Digitized by Google

Berkeley, Lord William....I., 136
Bethel M. E. church....II., 297
Betts, Walter....I., 122
Betty Holmes' or Taylor's Brook....I., 364
Beulah....I., 360
Bi-centennial committee and speeches, I., 409, 412
Biddle Grove....I., 413
Big Beds....I., 374
Bigell, Dr....II., 342
Big Hummock....I., 379
Billingsport....I., 266
Billopp, Barnard....I., 135
Billopp, Capt. Christopher....I., 88, 136
Billopp, Col. Christopher, I., 149, 147, 194, 201, 289, 314, 334
Billopp, Descendants of Col. Christopher, I., 148
Billopp, Eugenia....I., 138
Billopp family....II., 56
Billopp House....I., 18, 139, 144, 150, 209
Billopp House Commission....I., 151
Billopp, James....I., 135
Billopp, Jane....I., 140
Billopp, John Willett....I., 148
Billopp, Joseph....II., 326
Billopp's Point....I., 5, 358
Billopp, Sally....I., 139
Billopp, Thomas Farmar....I., 139
Billopp, Thomas....I., 148
Birch, Brigadier-Gen'l....I., 240
Bird, Interview with Mrs....I., 313
"Black Horse" Tavern....II., 180
Black Point....I., 359
Black Pond....I., 387
Blake family....II., 56
Blake, Capt....I., 311
Blake, Isaac....I., 334
Blake, Interview with Mrs....I., 317
Blake's Pond....I., 384
Blauvelt, Capt. Abraham....I., 267
Blazing Star (Rossville)....I., 209
Blazing Star, New (Linoleumville)..I., 220, 225
Blazing Star, Old....I., 219, 225
Bleak House....I., 406
Bleau, Waldron....I., 334
Block fort....I., 41
Block-cutting....II., 473
Bloodgood's Swamp....I., 386
Bloodroot Valley....I., 381
Bloomfield M. E. church....II., 297
Bloomingdale Road....I. 402
Blooming View....I., 412
Board of City Magistrates....II., 493
Board of Education....II., 369
Bodine, Albert....I., 111
Bodine, Benjamin J....II., 502
Bodine family....II., 57
Bodine's Inn....II., 191
Bodine, John....I., 117, 334
Bodine's Pond....I., 384
Boudinot, Elisha....I., 141, 267
Bogardus Corners....I., 413; II., 444
Bogardus, Rev. Everardus....I., 37, 57
Bogart family....II., 58
Boggy Meadows....I., 386
Boiling Spring Brook....I., 368
Bollen, Capt. James....I., 65, 67
Bonnell, Isaac....I., 324
Bonsall, Richard....I., 335
Boole, Rev. William H....II., 200
Boston port bill....I., 175
Bounties....II., 389, 392, 396
Bowden, Thomas....I., 325
Bowen, William....II., 508
Boyd, John James....I., 200
Boyd's Hill....I., 375
Boylsted's Swamp....I., 388
Bradley, Alvin C....II., 336
Bradley, Hon. James A....II., 200
Brady, M B....II., 237
Brady's Little Pond....I., 385
Braisted's Creek....I., 367
Braisted family....II., 58
Brantingham, Guy S....II., 503
Breed's Hill....I., 184
Brewton Hill....I., 266
Brewerton, George....I., 335
Breweries....II., 472
Brick manufacture....II., 471, 475
Brigade, Skinner's....I., 224
Brighton Heights....I., 380
Brighton Park....I., 411
Brighton Point....I., 357
Bristol....I., 410
British Brigades....I., 214
British fleet....I., 213
Brittain, Joseph....I., 336
Britton's Mill....II., 172
Britton, Dr. N. L....II., 237
Britton family....I., 45, 80, 106, 294; II., 59
Britton House....I., 41
Britton's Upper Pond, etc....I., 384
Brockholst, Lieut.-Gov....I., 69, 102
Brogan's Rock....I., 373
Broileau family....II., 60
Brook Street Brook....I., 360
Brooks, Hon. Erastus....II., 201, 390
Brown, Benjamin....II., 504
Brownlee, Rev. James....II., 279
Brown's Pond....I., 386
Bruce, Brigadier-Gen'l....I., 240
Buchanan, James....II., 254
Bucket Brigades....II., 476
Buckram Field....I., 390
Buckwheat Is....I., 4, 371
Bull's Head....I., 119, 317, 445
Bull's Head Pond....I., 388
Bull's Head Tavern....I., 320; II., 183
Bunker's Hill....I., 184, 189, 378
Burnt Island....I., 369
Butcherville....I., 410
Butler's Cove....I., 360
Butler family....II., 63
Butler's Pond....I., 387
Butler's Point....I., 358
Butler's Tavern....II., 190
Butt Field....I., 390
Burbanck family....I., 39, 121, 200; II., 60
Burger family....I., 117, 196, 336; II., 62
Burger's Hill....I., 379
Burgoyne, General....I., 144, 183, 325
Bureau of Elections....II, 494
Burial Ridge....I., 378
Burnet, Governor....I., 74
Burnt House....I., 406
Burr, Col. Aaron....I., 111, 217, 280; II., 141, 241
Burying Hill....I., 379

Digitized by Google

Bush family....II., 63
Buskirk, Peter....I., 315

Caldwell, Rev. Mr....I., 234, 237
Calvary church....II., 288
Cambridge Common....I., 184
Camden, Lord....I., 178
Camp Hill....I., 287, 291, 377
Campaign of 1884....II., 256
Camps....I., 408
Campbell, Gen'l John....I., 225
Campbell, Capt. Peter....I., 266
Campbell, Capt. Patrick....I., 268
Canada Hill....I., 378
Canavello's Point....I., 358
Canning establishment....II., 474
Cannon's or Landing Creek....I., 365
Cannon family....II., 64
Capo Di Monte....I., 375
Carleton, Sir Guy....I., 142, 240
Carroll, Dr. A. L....II., 350
Carroll Town....I., 413
Carteret, Sir George....I., 136
Carteret, Capt. Philip....I., 136
Castleton Heights....I., 380
Castleton House....II., 196
Castleton Corners....II., 442
Cedar Hill....I., 379
Cedar Grove....I., 412
Cedar Point....I., 358, 359
Centerville....I., 410
Chambers, Capt....I., 162
Chamber of Commerce....II., 487
Charlestown....I., 413
Charlestown heights....I., 184
Charlottetown....I., 203
Charter Commission....II., 490
"Chart of N. Y. Harbor"....I., 255
Chatham, Lord....I., 171, 177
Chelsea....I., 305; II., 444
Chelsea Heights....I., 380
Chemical works....II., 473
Cherry Pond....I., 385
Chestnut Hill....I., 378
Child, Joseph....I., 336
Chipman, Hon. Ward....I., 142, 336
Christ P. E. church....II., 309
Christopher family....I., 196; II., 64
Christopher, Capt. Richard..I., 294, 336; II., 202
Christopher's Swamp....I., 388
Church, Lady of Good Counsel, R. C....II, 325
Church of the Sacred Heart, R. C....II., 325
Church of the Evangelists....II., 319
Church of the Ascension....I., 210, 226; II., 305
Church Road, etc....I., 397
Church of the Holy Comforter....II., 308
Church, St. Andrew's....I., 209, 218, 223; II., 303
Churchward, James....I., 143
Cityville....I., 411
Civil officers in 1693....II., 326
Clanch, Christopher Pearce....II., 238
Clarke, Bradbury....I., 64
Clark, Capt. Ephraim....II., 81
Clark, Dr. Ephraim....II., 205
Clarke, Major....I., 218
Clark, Lot C....II., 337
Clark, William....I., 337
Clay pits and beds....I., 9, 405
Clay Ponds....I., 388
Clerk's and Surrogate's office....I., 122
Cleveland, Gen'l....I., 207
Clifton Avenue....I., 401
Clifton Lake....I., 385
Clifton Park....I., 411
Climate of Island....I., 7
Clinton, Gen'l Sir Henry....I., 144-299
Clove Valley Brook....I., 368
Clove Lake Swamp....I., 386
Club, S. I. Athletic....II., 482
Club, S. I. Cricket and B. B....II., 483
Club, Clifton Boat....II., 483
Club, Country....II., 484
Club, First social....II., 482
Club, German....II., 483
Club, S. I. Rowing....II., 483
Coast Wrecking Company....II., 471
Cod-Fish Lane....I., 402
Coddington, Samuel....I., 122
Coghlan, Capt. John....I., 236
Colden, Governor....I., 160
Colden, Dr. Cadwallader....I., 76
Coldstream Guards....I., 235
Cole family....II., 65
Cole, Cornelius....I., 121
Cole, Abram....II., 505
Coleman, John....I., 22
Coleman's Point....I., 22
Colon family....II., 67
Colonial military supplies....I., 177
Colve, Capt. Anthony....I., 68
Commanders-in-chief, British....I., 214
Committee of Tammany Society....I., 277
Communipaw....I., 85
Concord....I., 307; II, 442
Concord Downs....I., 375
Congress, Colonial....I., 160-195
Conklin, Michael....II., 257
Conner, Ralph....I., 337
Conner family....II., 67
Conner, Col. Richard....I., 196; II., 31, 241
Connor's Pond....I., 385
Connecticut Farms....I., 237, 268
Conscription Act....II., 394
Consolidation Act....II., 489
Continental Congress....I., 144, 199
Continentals....I., 210, 218, 321
Cooke, Rev. Samuel, D.D....I., 337
Cooper's Point....I., 266
Cork Hill....I., 374
Corktown....I., 414
Cornwallis, General....I., 144, 220, 325
Coroner's Office....II., 493
Corse, Col....I., 157
Corson family....I., 45, 196, 337; II., 68, 326
Corson's Brook....I., 365
Cortelyou, Col. Aaron....I., 84, 196, 314
Cortelyou family....II., 70
Court House....I., 41, 53, 113, 412
Court of Special Sessions....II., 493
County School Commissioner....II., 366
County Jail....I., 113, 118
County officials....II., 493
County Clerks....I., 125
County Justices....I., 84
County Treasurers....I., 126
Cox, Jacob Dolsen....II., 207
Crane, Col. Ichabod B....II., 207
Craven's Shoal....I., 373

Digitized by Google

Creek of Granees....I., 362
Cripp's Back....I., 377
Crips family....II., 71
Crittenden, Gen. T. L....II., 237
Croak, Judge J....II., 335
Crocheron, Ann....I., 337
Crocheron family....II., 71
Crocheron's Hill....I., 377
Crocheron, Nicholas....I., 122
Crocheron's Swamp....I., 389
Cromwell, George....II., 259, 338
Cronk's Hill....I., 378
Cropsey family....II., 72
Cruser family....II., 74
Cruser Spring....I., 382
Crystal Water Works....II., 474
Cubberly family....II., 75
Cucklestowne Inn....I., 298; II., 181
Cucklestowne....I., 80, 118, 408, 440
Cunningham, James....I., 338
Curtis, George Wm....II., 208, 257

Daddy's Creek....I., 366
Dailey, John L....II., 506
Daille, Rev. Pierre....II., 275
Dalrymple, Lieut.-Col....I., 214
Dam, Meadow Creek....I., 367
Daniel's Neck....I., 368
Davis, Wm. T....II., 237
Dayton, Col....I., 225, 264
Dayton, Capt. Jonathan....I., 268, 303
Dead Man's Creek....I., 363
Dead Man's Island....I., 369
Dead Man's Pond....I., 384
De Borro, Brig.-Gen'l Chevalier Proudhomme....I., 264
De Borre, Gen'l....I., 224
Decatur, Commodore Stephen....II., 238
Decker estate, Samuel....I., 321
Decker's House....I., 234
Decker's Swamp....I., 388
Decker Town....I., 414
Decker family....I., 45, 199, 314, 338; II., 75
De Deckers....I., 67, 84
Declaration of Independence..I., 163, 203, 207
De Hart's point....I., 5
De Hart's Cove....I., 360
De Hart family....II., 77
De Hart's or Bowman's Brook....I., 367
De Heister, General....I., 213
Deep Hole....I., 374
De Groot family....II., 76
De Kalb, Baron....II., 262
Delafield, Gen. Richard....II., 238
De Lancey, Oliver....I., 75, 240, 338
Delawares....I., 85
Del Mar, Alexander....II., 209
Demarest, Rev. Alfred H....II., 279
Dental Works....II., 472
Denyse family....II., 77, 205
Denyse's Rock....I., 372
Dep't of Bridges....II., 492
Dep't of Buildings....II., 491
Dep't of Charities and Corrections....II., 494
Dep't of Education....II., 492
Dep't of Finance....II., 492
Dep't of Health....II., 493
Dep't of Highways....II., 491
Dep't of Jurors....II., 494
Dep't of Lighting, Heating, etc....II., 491
Dep't of Sewers....II., 492
Dep't of Taxes and Assessments....II., 493
Dep't of Water Supply....II., 492
De Puy family....II., 79, 196
Deutsche Staten Islander....II., 360
De Vries, David Pietersen....I., 28, 37, 57
Dickenson, Gen'l Philemon....I., 227, 233, 265
Digby, Rear Admiral Robert....I., 241
Disosway, Clement....II., 210
Disosway family....I., 196, 316; II., 79, 238
District Attorneys....I., 125
Doane, Dr. A. J....II., 350
Dock Hotel....II., 195
Dock or New Springville Creek....I., 364
Dock Road....I., 400
Dongan Cedars....I., 404
Dongan family....I., 69, 90, 107, 117, 223, 265, 339
Dongan's Island....I., 370
Dongan Knoll....I., 377
Dongan Manor House....I., 111, 317
Dongan's Mill....I., 104, 233, 267
Donnelly, Gen. Richard A....II., 212
Dooland family....II., 81
Dorchester heights....I., 184
Doty, Dr. A. H....II., 350
Doyle, Edward P....II., 507
"Draft of New York"....I., 355
Drafted men and substitute from S. I..II., 406
Drake, Jeremiah....I., 339
Draper, Dr. William....II., 212
Dring, Thomas....I., 271, 272, 273
Drisius, Rev. Samuel....II., 275
Drummond, Major....I., 223, 226
Dubois family....II., 82
Duck Lane....I., 402
Duck Pond....I., 384
Duck Creek....I., 362
Duelling Ground....I., 287
Duffié, Gen. Alfred Napoleon....II., 213
Dugdale, Richard L....II., 239
Dunn family....II., 82
Dunn, John....I., 339
Dunmore, Governor....I., 76, 161
Dustan family....II., 82
Dutch Reformed churches....I., 119; II., 275
Dutch Farms....I., 408
Du Puy's Point....I., 359
Du Puy, William....I., 389
Duxbury Point....I., 354, 357
Duxbury st....I., 400
Duxbury, Ellis....I., 54; II., 303, 326

Eadie, Dr. Wm. G....II., 391
Eage, Lieut....II., 31
Eagle's Nest Point....I., 357
Eagleson, Thomas Robert....II., 214
Earle, Dr. Charles....I., 339
Early names for Hudson River....I., 356
Early names for Lower Bay....I., 357
Early names of Staten Island....I., 356
Early school-masters....II., 363
Eastern Star....II., 273
Eddy family....II., 82
Edgewater church....II., 288
Edgewater....II., 445
Edsall's Island....I., 369
Edwards, Judge Ogden....I., 111; II., 328
Egbert family....II., 83

Digitized by Google

Egbert, George T.....II., 507
Egbert's Lane.....I., 400
Egbertville Ravine.....I., 381
Egg Harbor Inlet.....I., 266
Electric railroads.....II., 466
Elliot, Andrew.....I., 223
Elliot's Pond.....I., 386
Elliott Place.....I., 396
Elliottville.....I., 411
Ellis family.....II., 84
Ellis' Point.....I., 358
Ellis' Swamp.....I., 388
Elizabethtown.....I., 194, 199, 207, 314
Elizabethtown Point.....I., 235, 266, 304
Elmore's Pond.....I., 385
Elm Park.....II., 443
Elm Tree.....I., 403
Elsworth, John H.....II., 509
Elting's Landing.....I., 394
Eltingville.....II., 442
Eltingwood Road.....I., 396
Emerson, Judge William.....II., 214
Empire Commandery.....II., 273
Enyard family.....II., 84
Episcopal churches.....II., 302
Erskine, Gen'l.....I., 289
Esek's Creek.....I., 364
Evacuation Day.....II., 1
Executive Dep't.....II., 493
Expediency commission.....II., 489

Factory Creek.....I., 365
Factoryville.....I., 411
False Pond.....I., 384
Fanning, Edmund.....I., 340
Farmar, Thomas.....I., 137, 139
Father Boehm.....II., 296, 371
Fay, Joseph D.....I., 279
Federal Party.....II., 247
Federalist nominees.....II., 244
Feeny, John L.....II., 259, 345
Ferguson, Capt. Patrick.....I., 266, 268
Ferry Company, North Shore.....II., 265
Ferry Road.....I., 402
Ferries of Staten Island, I., 278. 391, 394; II., 263
Fest's Pond.....I., 386
Fiddler's Green.....I., 415
Fiedler's Hill.....I., 375
Fiedler's Park.....I., 411
Fire companies, Tompkinsville.....II., 476
Fire Department, Tottenville.....II., 478
Fire Department, Edgewater.....II..476
Fire Department, North Shore.....II., 477
Fire-works Co.....II., 473
First Almshouse.....II., 431
First Baptist church, New Brighton..II., 316
First distillery.....I., 35
First grants of land.....I., 63
First Medical Society.....II., 342
First National Bank.....II., 460
First police department.....II., 479
First, Second, and Third Landings.....I., 393
First S. I. Bank.....II., 456
Fitzgerald, Judge T. W.....II., 334
Five Nations.....I., 55, 105
Flagg, Ernest.....II., 239
Flag Staff.....I., 403
Flat Brook.....I., 366
Flat Creek.....I., 362
Fletcher, Colonel Benjamin.....I., 72
Flouring Mills.....II., 473
Flowk Creek.....I., 364
Foggin, Frank.....II., 509
Ford, John.....I., 340
Forest Hill.....I., 377
Forest Hill Road.....I., 399
Fork Creek.....I., 365
Fort Pond.....I., 385
Forts, Colonial.....I., 5, 28, 55, 58, 61, 64, 68, 74
Forts, Revolutionary..I., 193, 205, 210, 268, 279, 374, 406
Forts Richmond and Tompkins.....II., 31, 34
Fountain's Point.....I., 358
Fountain House.....I., 41; II., 185
Fountain Homestead.....I., 285; II., 175
Fountain family.....II., 85
Fountain St.....I., 400
Four Corners.....I., 7, 410
Four Corners Iron Mines.....I., 405
Fourth of July celebrations.....II., 8
Fox Avenue.....I., 401
Fox Hill.....I., 375
Fox, Lieutenant Humphrey.....I., 64, 68
Franklin, Benjamin.....I., 144, 324
Fraternal organizations.....II., 485
Freeman Winant's Swamp.....I., 388
Freemasonry.....II., 266
Free Press, Richmond County.....II., 248
Fremont, Gen. John Charles.....II., 216, 253
French church.....II., 276
French and Indian War.....I., 152
Fresh Kill.....I., 363, 409; II., 440
Fresh Kill bridge.....I., 209
Fresh Pond.....I., 384
Frog Pond.....I., 385
Fronkels' Pond.....I., 386
Frost family.....I., 121, 206, 340; II., 86

Gage, General.....I., 175
Gallows.....II., 51
Gardiner, Alexander.....I., 231
Garibaldi, Gen. Joseph.....II., 217
Garner, Commodore William J.....II., 237
Garretsons.....II., 442
Garretson's Bar.....I., 374
Garretson's Swamp.....I., 387
Garretson's Road.....I., 398
Garrison family.....I., 200, 340; II., 86
Gates, Horatio.....I., 190
Geibs Mill Pond.....I., 388
Gene's or Tappen's Creek.....I., 363
Generals, Revolutionary.....I., 190
Giffords.....II., 442
Gifford's church.....II., 292
Gifford family.....II., 87
Girard, Stephen.....II., 413
Goat Hill.....I., 374
Gordon, Major.....I., 221
Gore's Brook.....I., 361
Gore St.....I., 401
Gottschalk's Pond.....I., 386
Governor's Lot.....I., 408
Government, Local.....II., 3
Grace M. E. church.....II., 299
Graham, Col. Augustine.....II., 326
Grand View Park.....I., 412
Granite village.....I., 410

Digitized by Google

Graniteville ..... II., 444
Graniteville Baptist church..... II., 311
Grant City..... II., 442
Great Kill..... I., 362
Great Kill Shoal..... I., 373
Great Kill Meadow..... I., 390
Great Kill Point..... I., 358
Greater New York Charter election, II., 258, 491
Greater New York..... II., 488
Great Neck..... I., 297
Great Plain..... I., 390
Great Swamp Ditch..... I., 368
Great Swamp..... I., 389
Greene, Gen'l N..... I., 190, 222, 322
Green Ridge Avenue..... I., 402
Green Ridge Mill Pond..... I., 388
Green Ridge..... I., 15, 18, 50
Gridley, Col..... I., 184
Griffin, Colonel..... I., 218, 219
Grimes Hill..... I., 375
Guilford ..... I., 267
Gun Factory Road..... I., 398
Guyon family..... I., 45, 65, 122, 340; II., 89
Guyon Homestead..... II., 166

Haggerty, Patrick..... I., 340
Hait, Rev. Benjamin..... I., 237
Haley's Lane..... I., 396
Halstead, Major Matthias..... I., 267
Halstead's Point..... I., 264, 303
Hamels' Hoofden..... I., 93, 375
Hamilton, Alexander..... II., 240
Hampton, Jonathan..... I., 195
Handkerchief factory..... II., 473
Hanne's or Ball's Creek..... I., 363
Harbor Hill..... I., 379
Harbor Ponds..... I., 383
Harcourt, Dr. J..... II., 350
Hard Shells, The..... II., 251
Hardy, Sir Charles..... I., 76
Harlem Heights..... I., 216
Harper, Thomas H..... II., 510
Harring, Capt. Cornelius..... I., 267
Harris, Richard..... I., 341
Harrison, Dr. J. T..... II., 351
Harrisville ..... I., 414
Hart, Cornelius A..... II., 511
Hatfield, Cornelius..... I., 341
Hatfield family..... I., 302; II., 90
Hatfield, John Smith..... I., 341
Hatfield Tory band..... I., 119
Haughwout family..... II., 90
Haunted Bridge..... I., 407
Haunted House..... I., 407
Haunted Swamp..... I., 387
Haunted Woods..... I., 407
Haviland, Lieut. John..... I., 266
Hawthorne Place..... I., 412
Haycock, Morris..... I., 342
Hayes, Rutherford B..... II., 256
Health Board of Castleton..... II., 376
Heath, William..... I., 190
Hempstead Harbor..... I., 297
Henderson, Dr. Richard..... II., 342
Hendricks, Capt. Baker..... I., 303
Henry Bedell's Mill Creek..... I., 363
Herd, Colonel..... I., 199, 202, 206
Herpich, Chas. A..... I., 210
Hessians ..... I., 209
Hessian Springs..... I., 7, 217, 382
Hickory Corner..... I., 379
Highlanders ..... II., 389
Hillieker's Swamp..... I., 389
Hillyer family..... II., 91
Hillyerd, Asher..... I., 342
Historical Society..... II., 487
Hitchcock, Dr. D. M..... II., 350
Hoffman Island..... I., 369
Holland's Hook..... I., 206, 228, 235, 445
Holland's Hook Village..... I., 409
Hollick, Dr. F..... II., 378
Holmes family..... II., 91
Home for Seamen's Children..... II., 426
Horse railroad..... II., 464
Horseshoe Spring..... I., 382
Housman family..... I., 45, 342; II., 92
Housman House..... II., 170
Howe, Gen'l William, I., 140, 183, 204, 261, 284, 297, 313
Howe, Admiral Lord, I., 144, 204, 221, 271, 284
Hubbell, C. L..... II., 338
Huckleberry Creek..... I., 366
Hudson, Henry..... I., 2, 21
Hudson's Spring..... I., 382
Huguenot ..... II., 442
Huguenots ..... I., 42, 46, 99
Huguenot Heights..... I., 380
Huguenot Lodge..... II., 270
Hull, General..... II., 80
Humphrey, Thomas..... II., 512
Hunter ..... I., 272, 275
Hunter, Governor..... I., 73
Hurst, Rev. John F..... II., 239
Hutchinson, Governor..... I., 175
Huyler, Capt. John..... I., 267
Hyler, Capt. Adam..... I., 239

Indian Hill..... I., 377
Indian origin..... I., 10
Indian relics..... I., 8, 16
Indian tribes..... I., 13, 37, 52
Industries ..... II., 6
Infirmary, S. R. Smith..... II., 424
Ingoldsby, Lieut.-Gov..... I., 71
Insley, Christopher..... I., 343
Insley, Ozias..... I., 343
Ipe's Pond..... I., 386
Iron Hill..... I., 376
Iron Mines..... I., 405
Iron Mine Ponds..... I., 383
Iroquois ..... I., 13, 69, 74
Irvine, Brig.-Gen'l William..... I., 267
Irving, Major..... I., 223
Irvington ..... I., 411
Island Creek..... I., 365
Island Pond..... I., 386

Jack's or Butler's Creek..... I., 362
Jackson Park..... I., 411
Jacksonville ..... I., 409
Jackson's Hill..... I., 375
Jackson, Gen'l Jacob S..... I., 240
Jackson, Gen'l..... II., 31, 244
Jackson, John..... I., 278
Jacobson, Capt. Christian..... I., 196, 202
Jacobson, Christian..... I., 197, 201, 317
Jacobson family..... II., 93
Jacques family..... II., 93

Digitized by Google

James, Duke of York.....I., 62, 88, 136
Jan. Tunissen's Valley.....I., 382
Jarvis, William.....I., 344
Jay, Mr.....I., 324
Jefferson, Thomas.....I., 324
Jenkins, Dr. H. T.....II., 350
Jerseys, The.....I., 220
Jersey St. Brook.....I., 361
Jersey Prison Ship.....I., 271
Jesse Bedell's or Wagner's Creek.....I., 363
John Bedell's or Simonson's Creek.....I., 364
Johnson, Anthony.....I., 113
Johnson family.....II., 94
Johnson, Mrs. Laura Winthrop.....II., 238
Johnson's Pond.....I., 387
Johnson, Sir John.....I., 163
Jones, Abraham.....I., 207, 344
Jones family.....II., 95
Jones' Wolf-Pit.....I., 406
Jourdan, Gen. James.....II., 237
Journalism on S. I.....II., 351
Journeay family.....II., 97
Journeay, John.....I., 193, 202
Judges of Court of Common Pleas in 1739, II., 326
Judges of the County Court.....I., 125
Jumping-off Place.....I., 414

Kargé, Gen. Joseph.....II., 218
Karle's Neck.....I., 355, 368
Karle's Neck Settlement.....I., 409
Kellett's Hill.....I., 377
Kenney, John J.....II., 257, 333
Kerr, James.....II., 512
Ketchum's Hill.....I., 377
Ketchum's Mill Pond Brook.....I., 364
Ketchum Mill Pond.....I., 387
Kieft, Gov. Wm.....I., 34, 42, 58, 70; II., 240
Kingsbridge.....I., 163, 297
King's County.....I., 113, 202, 319
King-Fish Hole.....I., 374
King's Highway.....I., 395
Killi-fish Brook.....I., 363
Kill van Kull.....I., 6, 65, 98, 205
Kingsley M. E. church.....II., 300
Kite Hill.....I., 377
Kittletas, Capt. John.....I., 196
Kleine Kill.....I., 409
Klopstock Lodge.....II., 273
Know-nothing party.....II., 252
Knowlton, Major.....I., 220
Knox, Gen'l.....I., 284
Knyphausen, Gen'l....I., 144, 217, 235, 268, 313
Knyphausen Heights.....I., 380
Kossuth, Louis.....II., 219
Kreischer's Hill.....I., 378
Kreischerville.....I., 209; II., 443
Kreischerville Flats.....I., 374
Kruzer's Cove.....I., 226
Kruzer Homestead.....II., 175
Kruse Road.....I., 398

La Fayette, Marquis de.....I., 119; II., 220
La Forge family.....II., 98
La Forge's Corner.....I., 223
Lake family.....II., 98
Lake House.....II., 170
Lakeman, William.....I., 345
Lake's Island.....I., 370
Lake's Mill Pond.....I., 388
Lambert's Lane.....I., 400
Lambert's Point, etc.....I., 359
Lamfort, Hiram H.....II., 238
"Land Papers".....I., 354
Larzelere family.....II., 99
Last purchase of Island.....I., 30
La Tourette's Canal.....I., 365
Latourette family.....I., 196, 313, 344; II., 99
Latourette Homestead.....II., 176
Lawrence or Bridge Creek.....I., 367
Lawrence, Lieut.-Col. Elisha.....I., 264
Lawrence Island Skirmish.....I., 264
Lawrence, Richard.....I., 196, 201
Lawrence, St.....I., 400
Law's Reef.....I., 372
Lawyers residing on S. I.....II., 341
Leavitt's Pond.....I., 385
Ledyard, Lieut.-Col. William.....I., 268
Lee, Gen'l Charles.....I., 190, 200
Lee, Richard Henry.....I., 177, 203
Leisler, Jacob.....I., 70, 100, 106, 115
Leislerians.....I., 72
Lemon Creek P. O.....I., 412
Lemon or Seguine's Creek.....I., 362
Leshier, John.....I., 141
Lewis' Beds.....I., 374
Lewis Creek.....I., 364
Lexington, Battle of.....I., 163, 180
Liberty Ditch.....I., 365
Lightning Rock.....I., 372
Lily Pond.....I., 385
Lind, Jenny.....II., 221
Linden Park Swamp.....I., 387
Linden Park.....I., 412
Linoleumville.....II., 440
Linoleum factory.....II., 471
Linseed oil factory.....II., 471
Little Cove Valley.....I., 380
Little and Great Fresh Kill.....I., 363
Little Fort Hill.....I., 375
Little Flowk or Jones' Creek.....I., 365
Little Hummock.....I., 379
Little North River.....I., 362
Little Plains.....I., 390
Little Pond Road.....I., 396
Lisk family.....II., 100
Lisk, John.....I., 345
Livingston, Gov.....I., 202, 230, 266
Locke, Richard Adams.....II., 238
Lockman, Abraham.....II., 326
Lockman's Creek.....I., 362
Lockman family.....II., 102
Log Brook.....I., 367
Log Pond.....I., 384
Logan's Spring or Harbor Brook.....I., 368
Logan's Spring Swamp.....I., 386
Logan's Spring.....I., 382
London Bridge.....I., 410
Long and Short Points.....I., 359
Long Creplebush.....I., 389
Long Dike.....I., 405
Long Island, Battle of.....I., 211
"Long Island Survey".....I., 355
Long Neck.....I., 304, 368; II., 439
Long Neck Road.....I., 397
Long Neck Village.....I., 409
Longstreet, John.....I., 345
Long Point.....I., 358
Long Pond.....I., 384, 386

Digitized by Google

Lord Dunmore....I., 243
Lord Lovelace, John....I., 73
Lottery, County....I., 157
Louse Island....I., 368
Lovelace, Governor....I., 30, 137
Lovelace, Colonel Francis....I., 68
Lovelace, Thomas....I., 80
Love Lane....I., 290
Low, George....II., 238
Lower Cove....I., 360
Lower Terrace....I., 380
Lowville....I., 413
Loyalist Claims....I., 328
Loyalists killed....I., 325
Loyalist organizations....I., 325
Loyalists, Skinner's....I., 218
Ludlow, Cary....I., 299
Ludlow, Major-Gen. William....II., 237
Lutheran and Congregational churches II., 317
Lutheran church of Stapleton....II., 317
Lutrell, S. W....II., 387
Lyon, Gov. Caleb....II., 237
Lyster's Pond....I., 386

MacCoy, Robert....I., 346
Machine works....II., 474
Machinery firms....II., 473
Mackaye, Charles....II., 238
Mackenzie, Fred'k....I., 241
Madison, Mr....I., 325
Magee, John....I., 230
Main Creek....I., 364
Manee family....I., 349; II., 103
Manifesto of Congress....I., 189
Manor of Bentley....I., 89, 136, 142, 404; II., 211
Manor Dale....I., 380
Manor road....I., 104, 399
Map of New Netherlands....I., 356
"Map of New York"....I., 355
"Mapp of Richmond County"....I., 356
Maretzek, Max, Sr....II., 221
Marine Fund and Hospital....II., 423
Mariners' Family Asylum....II., 426
Mariners' Family Industrial Society....II., 425
Mariners' Harbor....I., 6; II, 443
Mariners' Harbor Baptist church....II., 313
Mark's Creek....I., 366
Marsh, Nathaniel....II., 238, 334
Marshall, Chief Justice....I., 322
Marshall's Creek....I., 365
Marshlands....I., 50, 140, 219, 409
Marston's wharf....I., 297
Masonic Hall and Asylum....II., 267
Masonic Relief Association....II., 274
Martino family....II., 103
Martling family....II., 103
Martling Dale....I., 380
Matthews, Brigadier-Gen'l....I., 235, 268
Mawhood, Col....I., 288
Maxwell's Brigade....I., 235
Maxwell, Gen'l William....I., 266
May Muster....II., 26
Mayer's Hill....I., 376
Mayo, Col. J. F. H....II., 237
McCabe, Wm. H....II., 513
McGill, John....I., 349
McGinnis, Ensign Richard....I., 268
McGuire, Michael....II., 257
McIntosh, Commodore James....II., 238
McIntosh, Maria J....II., 239
Mean's Hollow....I., 381
Medical Fraternity....II., 342
Meissner's Hill....I., 377
Melvin, David Neilson....II., 515
Melyn, Cornelis....I., 29, 37, 40, 78
Members of Assembly under State Government....I., 126
Members of the Colonial Assembly....I., 126
Members of the State Constitutional Conventions....I., 124
Members of Provisional Congress....I., 124
Mercer, General Hugh....I., 218, 220
Merrill family....II., 104, 196
Merrill Town....I., 414
Merry's Well....I., 403
Mersereau family..I., 173, 193, 196, 207, 210, 313; II., 31, 105
Mersereau's Pond....I., 384
Mersereau's Point....I., 360
Mersous, Dr....II., 342
Metcalfe, Judge H. B....II., 331, 391
Metcalfe family....II., 107
Methodist churches....II., 294
Meucci, Antonio....II., 222
Meyer, Lewis H....II., 513
Micheau, Paul....I., 196, 202
Middle Ground....I., 373
Middletown....I., 114
Middletown Guard....II., 387
Mifflin, Colonel....I., 200, 282, 286
Milborne, Jacob....I., 70
Militia....II., 13, 27
Military camps....II., 397
Military organizations....II., 396
Mill Brook....I., 367
Mill Creek....I., 363
Mill Creek Shoals....I., 373
Mill or Holmes Creek....I., 362
Mill Lane....I., 396
Miller's Pond....I., 386
Mills Dale....I., 380
Mineral Spring....I., 384
Minuit, Peter....I., 26, 55
Mirror, Richmond County....II., 249
Mitchell, Hon. Samuel L....I., 276
Monckton, General Robert....I., 76, 155
Moncrieffe, Capt. James....I., 280, 347
Moncrieffe, Margaret....I., 280
Monee's Point....I., 358
Montgomery, Colonel....I., 74
Montgomery, Richard....I., 163, 190
Moody, Ensign James....I., 266
Moore, David....I., 348
Moore, Sir Henry....I., 76, 160
Moore's or Keteltas' Brook....I., 363
Moore, Rev. Richard Channing....II., 304
Moore, Col. Thomas W. C....II., 239
Moravian churches....I., 311; II., 290
Moravian Spring....I., 383
Morgan's Corner....I., 410
Morgan family....II., 108
Morgan, "Middy" and Jane....II., 222
Morgan's Road....I., 398
Morrison, Henry P....II., 516
Morse's Creek....I., 264
Mount Loretto....II., 429
Mount Marion....I., 375
Mount Tobey....I., 379

Digitized by Google

Mount Zion M. E. church....II., 301
Muddy Ditch....I., 362
Mud Lane....I., 402
Muller, Nicholas....II., 258
Mulligan, James E....II., 517
Mundy, Dr. E. C....II., 376
Mundy, Nathaniel....I., 348
Municipal Courts....II., 493

Nanfan, John....I., 72
Nanny-berry Hill....I., 379
Nassau Island....I., 279
Natural Science Association....II., 487
Nautilus Hall....II., 190
Neck or Long Neck Creek....I., 364
Neddie Ward's Hill....I., 378
Never Fail Point....I., 359
New Amsterdam....I., 28, 34, 44, 54, 64, 77
New-Berryville....I., 411
New Brighton....II., 445
New Brighton Pavilion....II., 194
New church buildings....II., 279
New Creek....I., 361
New Creek Shoal....I., 373
New Dorp....I., 40, 96, 155
New Dorp lane....I., 272
New Dorp Moravian church....II., 290
Newhall, John B....II., 518
New or Harbor Road....I., 400
New Jersey....I., 88, 141
New Jersey Continentals....I., 264
New London....I., 269
New Lots at the Old Town....I., 408
New Netherlands....I., 25, 54, 77, 136
New Paris....I., 414
New Road....I., 399
News-Independent....II., 360
New Springville Brook....I., 365
New Springville Spring....I., 384
Newton....I., 412
Newton's Creek....I., 367
New York....I., 63, 89, 280, 321
New York County....I., 113
New York and N. J. Telephone Co....II., 475
Nicolls, Colonel....I., 62, 78, 115, 136
Nicholson, Arthur....I., 348
Nicholson, Colonel....I., 70, 73, 100
Nigger-head Rock....I., 373
North Shore Advocate....II., 358
North Side or North Shore....I., 404
North Side (Port Richmond) church....II., 276

Oaklands....I., 412
Oakley's Creek....I., 363
Oakwood....II., 442
Oceana....I., 412
Ocean Hill....I., 377
Ocean Terrace....I., 379
Ocean View....I., 412
Oceanville....I., 412
Officers in Richmond County, 1689....I., 116
Ogden, Col. Matthias....I., 225, 264, 268
Old Blue-Bent Field....I., 390
Old Burying Hill Road....I., 397
Old Clove Baptist church....II., 310
Old Dutch church diagram....II., 279
Old Dutch Parsonage....II., 174
Old Ferry Tavern....II., 182
Old Forts....I., 405
Old Fresh Kills Bridge....I., 405
Old House by the Mill....II., 182
Old Orchard Shoal....I., 373
Old Place....I., 409
Old Place Brook....I., 367
Old Place Mill....II., 162
Old Place Road....I., 400
Old Place or Tunissen's Creek....I., 366
Old Quarry Road....I., 400
Old Red Jail....I., 122; II., 177
Old Red Woolen Mill....II., 173
Old S. I. Dyeing Establishment....II., 468
Old Town or Pole Creek....I., 361
Old Town Pond....I., 387
Old Town Road....II., 447
Old Track House....II., 194
Olmstead, Frederick Law....II., 237
Organization of School system....II., 366
Osborne, Sir Danvers....I., 75
Osgood Avenue church....II., 292
Oude Dorp....I., 32, 35, 45, 55, 95, 408; II., 439
Owl's Hollow....I., 381
Oxholm, Theodor S....II., 519
Oyster Banks....I., 372
Oyster Beds....I., 373
Oyster or Deep Creek....I., 366
Oyster Island....I., 369
Oyster Planters' Statutes....II., 475

Packard, Benjamin....I., 349
Packenham, Sir Edward....II., 31
Page, William....II., 224
Palmer, John....I., 80, 101
Palmer, John M....II., 237
Palmer, Thos. M....I., 241
Palmer's Run....I., 101, 225, 367
Paradise....I., 414
Park Baptist church....II., 312
Parker Avenue....I., 396
Parker, Gen. Ely S....II., 225
Parker, Sir Peter....I., 221
Parnell, Mrs. Delia....II., 227
Patroons....I., 27, 56, 77
Patten House....II., 193
Pauw, Michael....I., 27, 56, 85
Pavilion Hill....I., 205, 210, 375
Pavonia....I., 27, 56, 85
Peace Commission....I., 217
Peggy's Point....I., 360
Pelton House....I., 226
Perine, Capt....II., 31
Perine's Creek....I., 361
Perine family....II., 108
Perine's Hole....I., 374
Perine Homestead....II., 165
Pero, Peter....II., 227
Perth Amboy Academy....II., 362
Peter's Creek....I., 365
Petition for the poor....II., 431
Petticoat Lane....I., 399
Phair, William Barry....I., 349
Philadelphia Turnpike....I., 396
Phoenixville....I., 410
Physicians registered since 1880....II., 343
Pig Alley....I., 402
Pine Tree Swamp....I., 389
"Plan of New York"....I., 355
Planter's Hotel....II., 194
Plaster mills....II., 472

Digitized by Google

Pleasant Valley....I., 381
Poillon family....I., 117, 196, 202, 350; II., 109
Point No Point....I., 359
Pole Hill....I., 375
Police Commissioners....II., 479
Police Dep't....II., 493
Police mounted....II., 481
Political campaign of 1844....II., 250
Political candidates 1804....II., 241
Polly Fountain's Bar....I., 373
Pomeroy, Gen'l Seth....I., 190
Pomona Grove....I., 413
Pompey's Knoll....I., 379
Pond Road....I., 396
Poppy Joe's Island....I., 354, 369
Port Richmond....I., 206, 314; II., 185, 446
Port Richmond Hotel....II., 185
Post, Lenhart....II., 484
Post, Robert G. Shaw....II., 483
Post, Richmond....II., 484
Post routes and ferries....II., 260
Poverty Hollow....I., 381
Poverty Lane....I., 400
Powell, Enoch....I., 350
Pownall, Governor....I., 171
Prall, Abraham....I., 305
Prall's Creek....I., 365
Presbyterian churches....II., 283
Presbyterian church deed....II., 283
Presidential electors....I., 124
Price's Island....I., 354
Prince's Bay....I., 142, 209, 357; II., 443
Private schools....II., 370
Prohibition Park....II., 444
Prominent men prior to the Revolution.II., 1
Prospect Hill....I., 375
Prospect Square....I., 409
Provincial Committee....I., 196
Provincial Congress....I., 207
Pryer family....II., 111
Public Schools and principals....II., 369
Purcell, John....I., 350
Purdy's Hotel....II., 182
Putnam, Gen'l....I., 183, 190, 201, 280
Pyse Creek....I., 362

Quality Hill....I., 374
Quarantine....I., 210, 402; II., 248, 375
Quarries....II., 473
Quarry Hill....I., 379
Queen's Rangers....I., 141, 223, 243
Queen's Rangers, Officers....I., 244

Radcliff's Pond....I., 385
Rag-picker's Row....I., 413
Railroad of S. I....II., 461
Ralph's Island....I., 370
Randall, Bornt G....I., 350
Randal, Capt. Nathaniel....I., 141
Randall, Capt. Robert Richard....II., 415
Randall, Capt. Thomas....II., 412
Randall Memorial P. E. church....II., 309
Randall Monument....II., 420
Randall Monument Committee....II., 418
Randall's will, Capt....II., 416
Rapid Transit R. R....II., 463
Raritan Bay....I., 357
Rawson, E. S....II., 339
Real Estate Record....II., 360
Reardon, Jerry....II., 387
Recruits from S. I....II., 388, 400, 405
Red Bank....I., 378
Red Lake....I., 384
Red Lane....I., 402
Redoubt Hill....I., 375
Reed's Basket Willow Swamp....I., 387
Reed's Valley....I., 381
Reformed Dutch church....I., 78
Reformed Protestant church....II., 275
Regiment, 132d....II., 391
Regiment, 156th....II., 392, 399
Relief fund....II., 389
Rensselaerwyck....I., 56
Representatives in Congress....I., 124
Republic, First days of....II., 2
Republican, The Richmond....II., 243
Republican party....II., 253
Reservoir Pond....I., 384
Revolution, Causes of....I., 164
Rhind, A. Colden....II., 238
Richard, Earl of Bellomont....I., 72
Richmond and Amboy roads....II., 449
Richmond County....I., 79, 113, 194, 206
Richmond County Advance....II., 359
Richmond County Advertiser....II., 359
Richmond County Democrat....II., 359
Richmond County Gazette....II., 359
Richmond County Hall....II., 192
Richmond County Herald....II., 359
Richmond County Savings Bank....II., 460
Richmond County Standard....II., 359
Richmond Creek....I., 363
Richmond Hill....I., 377
Richmond Lodge....II., 267
Richmond Park....I., 412
Richmond Plank Road....I., 396
Richmond Republican....II., 353
Richmond Road Fire Co....II., 476
Richmond or Sawmill Brook....I., 364
Richmond Valley....II., 443
Richmond Village....I., 80, 173, 218
Ridings....I., 78
Riots on S. I....II., 390, 393
Rivington's Gazette....I., 227, 319
Road Records....II., 447
Roads macadamized....II., 454
Robertson, Gen'l James....I., 230, 237, 287
Robbins Corners....I., 410
Robbins, John....I., 350
Robbins, Nathaniel....I., 304
Robbin's or Winant's Point....I., 359
Robinson, Dr. S. A....II., 346
Robyn's Rift....I., 372
Rockwell, Dr. Wm....II., 350
Rocky Hollow....I., 381
Roelandsen, Adam....I., 57
Roguery Hill....I., 376
Roguery Hill Road....I., 401
Roman Catholic churches....II., 321
Rose and Crown....I., 41, 44, 287; II., 179
Rose and Crown Farmhouse....I., 207, 212, 223, 285
Ross' Cove....I., 360
Ross, George....I., 195
Ross' or Winant's Brook....I., 363
Rossville....I., 193; II., 440
Rossville Hotel....II., 192
Roumaine, Benjamin....I., 278

Digitized by Google

Round Shoal....I., 373
Rutledge, Edward....I., 144
Ryerss family....I., 268, 317, 350; II., 112
Ryerson, Martin....I., 351

Sailor's Hill....I., 379
Sailors' Snug Harbor....II., 257, 415
Salt Pond....I., 386
Sand Bay....I., 357
Sand Ridges....I., 378
Sand Road....I., 400
Sandy Brook....I., 362
Sandy Ground....I., 404
Sandy Hook Tea party....I., 162
Sandy Leer....I., 384
Santa Anna, Antonio Lopez de....II., 230
Sash and blinds manufacture....II., 474
Savings Bank of S. I....II., 458
Sawmill or Conner Road....I., 399
Saw Mill or Maggie Merrill's Creek....I., 365
Saw Mill Pond....I., 388
Sayre, James....I., 351
Schaefer's Hill....I., 375
Schley, Winfield S....II., 237
School Commissioners....I., 125
School-houses....II., 368
School legislation....II., 366
Schout Fiscal....I., 56, 77
Schutter's Island....I., 371
Schuyler, Colonel....I., 74
Schuyler, Philip....I., 163, 190
Scorpion....I., 272, 275
Scott, Gen'l....II., 29
Scott House....II., 174
Sea-Dog Shoal....I., 374
Seal Rocks....I., 373
Seaman Homestead....II., 174
Seaman, Judge Benjamin..I., 84, 174, 194, 202, 206, 351; II., 327
Seaman's Retreat....II., 423
Seamans, Thomas....I., 352
Seaman Town....I., 414
Seaton, William....I., 352
Sea View Park....I., 412
Sedge Pond Creek....I., 366
Sedge Pond....I., 384
Seguine family....II., 112
Seguine, Joseph....I., 122
Seguine's Point, Hill, Pond, Landing, Road....I., 358, 378, 388, 394, 401
Sexton's Pond....I., 383
Shannon's Hole....I., 374
Sharrot family....II., 113
Sharrott's Road....I., 401
Shea's Lane....I., 401
Sheriffs....I., 126
Ship-building....II., 469
Shore Trail....I., 396
Shotwell, John....II., 326
Sickles, Garrett....I., 279
Signal Hill....I., 375
Signal House....I., 403
Silent Village....I., 414
Silk Factory....II., 469, 474
Silver Lake Park Commission....II., 487
Simcoe, Capt. John....I., 243
Simcoe, Lieut.-Col. John Graves..I., 243, 260, 288, 293, 299
Simonson's Brook....I., 364
Simonson family..I., 122, 209, 313, 352; II., 113, 237
Simonson's Ferry....I., 206
Sinclaire, Mrs. Catherine N....II., 238
Skinner's Brigade in 1778-83....I., 263, 269
Skinner, Gen'l Cortlandt....I., 261, 265, 289, 352
Skinner, Philip Kearney....I., 352
Slack's (Slaght's) Creek....I., 363
Slave, Benjamin Perine....II., 47
Slavery on Staten Island....II., 36
Slave owners, records, children, Abolition, II., 37, 41, 45
Sloat, John Drake....II., 230
Sloughter, Colonel Henry....I., 71, 116
Smallwood, Gen'l....I., 224, 264
Smidt, Dr. Carl....II., 237
Smith, Dr. S. R....II., 348
Smith, Dr. W. M....II., 350
Smith, Hon. William Peartree....I., 267
Smith Terrace....I., 380
Smoking Point....I., 358
Snug Harbor buildings....II., 421
Snug Harbor Directors....II., 422
Snug Harbor Governors....II., 422
Snug Harbor inmates and income....II., 422
Snug Harbor rules....II., 421
Soft Shells, The....II., 251
Soldiers' Lots....I., 408
Sons of Liberty....I., 160, 326
South Baptist church....II., 315
South Beach....I., 404
South Broadway....I., 398
South Elliottville....I., 411
South Shore Water Works....II., 474
South Side or South Shore....I., 404
Spear's or Spirit Point....I., 360
Spencer, Hon. Samuel....II., 327
Spinola's Brigade....II., 390
Split Rock....I., 372
Spragg, Thomas....I., 353
Sprague family....II., 115
Stony Brook builders....I., 45
St. James Hotel....I., 210
St. John's Lutheran church....II., 317
St. John's M. E. church....II., 301
St. John's P. E. church....II., 306
St. Joseph's R. C. church....II., 322
St. Luke's P. E. church....II., 308
St. Mark's Hotel....II., 195
St. Mark's M. E. church....II., 300
St. Mary's P. E. church....II., 309
St. Mary's R. C. church....II., 323
St. Michael's Home....II., 429
St. Patrick's R. C. church....II., 324
St. Paul's Lutheran church....II., 320
St. Paul's M. E. church....II., 297
St. Paul's P. E. church....II., 307
St. Peter's Lutheran church....II., 318
St. Peter's R. C. church....II., 322
St. Stephen's P. E. church....II., 309
Stamp Act....I., 168
Standring's Pond....I., 388
Stapleton....II., 440
State Land....I., 406
State Senators....I., 124
Staten Island Chapter....II., 273
Staten Island Diet Kitchen....II., 430
Staten Islander, The....II., 250, 252
Staten Island, Hostilities on....I., 216

Digitized by Google

Staten Island Military Co. 1689.....I., 116
Staten Island Star.....II., 359
Staten Island's taxes.....I., 88
S. I. Water Supply Co.....II., 474
Staten Island Transcript.....II., 360
Steep Point.....I., 359
Stephens, Judge S. D.....II., 332
Sterling, Brigadier-Gen'l.....I., 235
Still House Landing.....I., 392
Stillwell family.....I., 116; II., 114, 326
Stimers, Alban C.....II., 238
Stinking Brook.....I., 368
Stirling, Maj.-Gen'l Lord..I., 200, 222, 233, 267, 315
Stony Brook..I., 40, 49, 80, 113, 118, 362; II., 439
Stony Brook church.....II., 283
Stony Brook Settlement.....I., 408
Storer's or Hughes' Point.....I., 358
Story's Flats.....I., 374
Straubenzie, Major Turner.....I., 297
Strawberry Rock.....I., 373
Strombolo.....I., 272, 275
Struve, Gustav.....II., 232
Stuyvesant, General Peter.....I., 59
Sugar Loaf Rock.....I., 372
Suits against Randall trustees.....II., 419
Sullivan, General.....I., 217, 224, 265
Summerfield M. E. church.....II., 299
Summerville.....I., 409
Sunny or Lovers' Lane.....I., 402
Sunsbury Mines.....I., 326
Supervisors.....I., 120
Supervisors in Colonial times.....I., 127
Supervisors since 1766.....I., 128
Surrogates under Colonial Government..I., 125
Surrogates under Federal Government..I., 125
Swaim's or La Forge's Lane.....I., 401
Swan Hotel.....II., 184
Swinburne, Dr. John.....II., 348
Swinburne Island.....I., 369

Talbot, Rev. John.....II., 302
Tanglewood.....I., 405
Taylor family.....II., 115
Taylor's or Moravian Brook.....I., 361
Teacher's certificate 1769.....II., 365
Texas.....I., 173
The Argus.....II., 360
The Basin.....I., 403
The Beaches.....II., 446
The Bench and Bar.....II., 326
The Bend.....I., 405
The Bluff.....I., 378
The Canal.....I., 368
The Causeway.....I., 405
The Cave.....I., 404
The Cedars.....I., 407
"The Chronicle".....II., 253, 354
The Citizen.....II., 360
The Cliff House.....II., 190
The Clove.....I., 380
The Cottages.....I., 414
The Cove.....I., 360
The Dike.....I., 405
The Draft.....II., 394
The "Fifty-five".....I., 329
The first public School.....II., 361, 363
The Free Press.....II., 355
The Fresh Meadow.....I., 389
The Glebe.....I., 402
The Glen.....I., 380
The Goose Patch.....I., 414
The Independent.....II., 359
The Jewish Synagogue.....II., 320
The Lawn.....I., 413
The Little Corporal.....II., 358
The Long, Long Lane that has no turning.....I., 400
The Manor.....I., 404
The Meadows.....I., 390
The Mirror.....II., 354
The Neck.....I., 368
The News-Letter.....II., 360
The Nook.....I., 413
The Oakley House.....II., 184
The Old Comp.....I., 408
The Orchard.....I., 414
The Park.....I., 412
The Pavilion.....II., 191
The Pines.....I., 407
The Plaindealer.....II., 355
The Plains.....I., 415
The Post.....II., 360
The present road law.....II., 452
The Quarantine Hospitals.....II., 375
The Red Horse.....II., 184
The Richmond College.....II., 371
The Richmond County Sentinel.....II., 359
The Sepoy.....II., 358
The Signs.....I., 407
The S. I. Deutsche Zeitung.....II., 360
The Staten Island Leader.....II., 358
The Stone Jug.....II., 196
The Swamp.....I., 389
The Swamp Pond.....I., 385
"The Tabernacle".....II., 296
The Telegraph.....I., 403
The Ventilator.....II., 360
Thomas Creek.....I., 366
Thompson, Chas.....I., 199
Thompson's Road.....I., 400
Thoreau, Henry D.....II., 232
Three Elms.....I., 404
Three Musk-rat Ponds.....I., 386
Thrifty Valley.....I., 380
Timpson, Cornelius F.....II., 520
Tipperary Corners.....I., 414
Todt or Toad Hill.....I., 376
Tom Bell's Island.....I., 369
Tomb of the Martyrs.....I., 279
Tompkins, Col. M.....II., 387
Tompkins, Gov. Daniel D.....II., 31, 232
Tompkins Lodge.....II., 271
Tompkins' or Quarantine Landing.....I., 393
Tompkinsville.....II., 440
Totten family.....II., 116
Totten, Gen. Joseph G.....II., 238
Totten's Landing.....I., 394
Totten, W. H. B.....II., 522
Tottenville.....II., 441
Tottenville Water Works.....II., 475
Townsend, Dr. C. W.....II., 348
Townsend family.....II., 117
Trask, Capt. G. D. S.....II., 521
Trinity M. E. church.....II., 298
Tryon, Governor.....I., 161, 200, 296
Tunissen's Neck.....I., 368
Turney's Hill.....I., 375

Digitized by Google

Turtle Point....I., 359
Tushy's Pond....I., 383
Tyler Mansion....II., 170
Tyrian Chapter....II., 273
Tysen, David J....I., 311
Tysen family....II., 119
Tysen Homestead....I., 41
Tyson's Creek....I., 361

Uncle Ed. Wood's Brook....I., 363
Uncle Ike's Points....I., 359
Uncle Nick Lot....I., 412
Union Hotel....II., 184
Unionville....I., 413
United church....II., 277
Upham, Lieut.-Col. Joshua....I., 268
Upper or Pelton's Cove....I., 360
Up Shore and Down Shore....I., 404
Upper Quarry Spring....I., 382
Upper Terrace....I., 380

Vail, Rev. Stephen M....II., 234
Valley Forge....II., 443
Valley of the Iron Hill....I., 381
Valuations in 1800....II., 4
Van Allen's Hill....I., 378
Van Bosen, Laurentius....II., 275
Van Boskirk's or Factory Pond....I., 384
Van Buskirk, Abraham....I., 353
Van Buskirk's Dock....I., 313
Van Buskirk Spring....I., 383
Van Clief family....II., 121
Van Dam, Rip....I., 74
Vanderbilt, Cornelius....I., 111
Vanderbilt family....II., 129
Vanderbilt Homesteads....II., 167
Vanderbilt Landing....I., 394
Vanderventer's Point....I., 357
Van Duzer family....II., 121
Van Dyck, Hendrick....I., 38
Van Hoevenberg, Dr. H....II., 350
Van Name, C. D....II., 339
Van Name family....II., 122
Van Pelt family....II., 123
Van Pelt Homestead....II., 178
Van Pelt, Dr. Peter I....I., 312; II., 279
Van Pelt, Sarah....I., 353
Van Wagenen's Pond....I., 387
Varnish Works....II., 474
Vaughn, John G....II., 255
Vinegar Hill....I., 374
Vreeland's Brook....I., 365
Vreeland's Creek....I., 364
Vreeland's Swamp....I., 389
Vroom Creek....I., 366

Wallabout....I., 55, 272
Wallabout Committee....I., 278
Waldenses....I., 40, 49
Waldensian church....I., 40, 43, 45
Wall paper factory....II., 469, 471
Walloons....I., 26, 95
Wandel family....II., 124
Wapp's Park....I., 414
War Committee....II., 390
War of 1812, Cause of....II., 28
Ward Homestead....II., 171
Ward's Hill....I., 375
Ward's Point....I., 358
Warth, Albin....II., 523
Warth, Henry....II., 524
Washington Crescent....I., 401
Washington, Gen'l George..I., 188, 193, 217, 220, 267, 296
Washington Hotel....II., 195
Washington Square....I., 411
Watchogue, etc., Road....I., 398
Watering Place....I., 219, 354, 382, 403
Weir's Mill Pond....I., 386
West Bank....I., 373
West Baptist church....II., 315
Westbrook, John....II., 524
Westermann, Bernard....II., 237
Western Road....I., 400
Westervelt, Dr. J. S....II., 350
Westervelt, Judge T....II., 332
Westervelt's Pond....I., 384
Westfield or S. I. Times....II., 359
West Quarter....I., 404
West Riding....I., 78
Wheeler, James....II., 525
Whigs, The....II., 248, 251
Whigs and Tories....I., 322
Whipping-post....II., 49-51
White lead mills....II., 471
White Rock....I., 372
Widmayer's Pond....I., 386
Willett, Lieut.-Col....I., 234
Willow Brook....I., 365; II., 444
Willow Brook Pond....I., 388
Willow Pond....I., 386
Wilson's Zouaves....II., 388
Wiman, Erastus....II., 235
Winant family....II., 125
Winant Homestead....II., 175
Winant's Lane....I., 401
Windsor Hotel....II., 195
Winter, William....II., 237
Winthrop, Governor....I., 58, 71
Winthrop, Judge....I., 184
Winthrop, Major Theodore....II., 238
Winthrop, William W....II., 238
Woglom family....II., 127
Woglom's Cove....I., 360
Woglum, Abraham....I., 353
Wolfe's Brook....I., 362
Wolf's Pond....I., 386
Woman's Christian Temperance Union of Richmond County....II., 428
Women's education....II., 366
Wood, Capt. Benjamin....II., 31
Wood, Dr. J. W....II., 349
Wood family....II., 128
Wood Pond....I., 385
Wood Road....I., 401
Woodhull, Nath'l....I., 197
Woodrow....II., 443
Woodrow M. E. church....I., 320; II., 294
Woodside Lake....I., 387
Woodvail Road....I., 401
Woolsey Pond....I., 387
Wreck Creek....I., 365
Writs of Assistance....I., 167
Wynant, Abraham....I., 363

Yellow Row....I., 414
Yetman, Hubbard R....II., 257, 369, 526
Yserberg Mount....I., 376

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

3 2044 018 690 131

THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED AN OVERDUE FEE IF THIS BOOK IS NOT RETURNED TO THE LIBRARY ON OR BEFORE THE LAST DATE STAMPED BELOW. NON-RECEIPT OF OVERDUE NOTICES DOES NOT EXEMPT THE BORROWER FROM OVERDUE FEES.

WIDENER
BOOK DUE
JUL 25 1981

CANCELLED
794037
JUL 14 1981

WIDENER
WIDENER
OCT 22 1998
OCT 16 1998
BOOK DUE
CANCELLED

WIDENER
SEP 11 1995
BOOK DUE

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google